绝不嫁有两个丁丁的男人

ding—ding

○杀小丸

Transmigrating into a Mob Character to Rehabilitate the Villain Plan

( )

Sha Xiao Wan ( )

OceanofPDF.com

Summary

In short, this is the tragic tale of a saint-like man who transmigrated into a web novel as a mob character and wanted to rehabilitate the villain, only to realize in the end, he became more and more villainous.

The ludicrous story:

Unable to bear hurting the villain he helped raise, but when it came to compensating with his own body, the unfortunate, straight male reader figured he'd better escape.… …

Many years later, the same unfortunate saint rubbed his neck, asking, "This is a dog collar you put on me, isn't it?"

The handsome villainous boss gave a glance with his elegant, almond-shaped eyes, and then replied with a devious, charming smile, "That's to prevent you from running away again."

"If I stay put, will you refrain from destroying the world?"

OceanofPDF.com

Translators:

Winter Translates

[Volume 1 (Chapter 1 - 29)]

Orange Translations

[Volume 2 (Chapter 1 - 2)]

Helli Translation

[Volume 2 Chapter 3 - 23)]

Bonbon BL translations

[Volume 3 (Chapter 1 - 21), Volume 4 (Chapter 1 - 19) & 5 Extra]

Translations are done by other parties (as listed above), and edited by their respective editors. It is then re-copied, re-typed, re-edited, and complied by Archyr Kentaurosa to create this convenient and better e-book file for those who don't have internet access 24/7.

OceanofPDF.com

Volume 1

In a life where only first impressions are taken into account, someone with a saint-like disposition would easily fall into the enemy's clutches.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 1

In “*Laughing Proudly Under the Heavens in an Alternate World*”, a neither obscure nor popular harem novel, the strongest character is the protagonist, and the second strongest is the villain.

Every time the villain does anything outrageous, it’s always the protagonist who stops him in time.

Having the traits of a ‘Perfect Husband’ archetype, the villain would always persevere, fighting back time and time again. Using even his life for the sake of victory, he was forever locked in a love-hate, mutually destructive relationship with the protagonist in every sense of the phrase.

Today was a very important day. As a die-hard fan of this novel, Ling Xia was prepared to pull an all-nighter sitting in front of his computer, refreshing the novel’s page again and again, waiting for the latest update.

The author said that he’d release the final chapter on time tonight. In other words, after a year and three months of following this story, the battle between the villain and the protagonist had finally reached its thrilling conclusion!

Only, after having reread the final chapter three whole times, eyes almost popping out in disbelief, he suddenly coughed up blood in indignation, spraying it across the computer screen—

The fuck, I’ve been following this for so long, painstakingly voting every month, and turns out it was for this kind of almost-everyone-dies ending?!

That’s right, when writing the final confrontation where the villainous boss gets defeated by the protagonist, the author lost all of his marbles!

In the five thousand words of the final chapter, the protagonist’s immortally elegant and super powerful master died!

The loved by all, incredibly cute and adorable magical beast, also died!

The protagonist's entire group of bros, needless to say, was completely annihilated!

And the worst part is, his favorite member of the protagonist's harem, a goddess excelling in both beauty and kindness, even the charming Mu Rong Xue died when protecting the protagonist with her body!

To be more precise, aside from the protagonist and a few girls from his harem, the entire population of the world was pretty much destroyed by the villain's colossal puppet army!

Because of the villain's Ultimate Destruction Plan, the world's energy circuits were greatly disrupted, causing imbalance among all living things. Finally, because of the Ultimate Weapon, the entire world's continental shelves collapsed into pieces. It's basically a doomsday taken straight out of the apocalyptic predictions of 2012!

It was only through the protagonist's extraordinary luck and power that he was barely able to desperately overcome this crisis and save a piece of holy land and part of his harem.

Because of this, the protagonist was rendered powerless and unable to defend against the villain's next attack. This lead to the goddess of Ling Xia's heart, Mu Rong Xue, throwing herself in front of the protagonist without a second thought to block the villain's heaven-splitting strike. Her beautiful existence was extinguished just like that.

…The fuck, this kind of rage inducing scenario is absolute bullshit!!!

Facing the endless desolation of the destroyed continent and the tragic view of corpses as far as the eye can see, the kindhearted protagonist finally hardened his heart and chose to thoroughly eliminate the villain. This is how the novel described it:

Darkness gradually descended and a loud boom sounded across the sky as large drops of rain began to fall, but when Song Xiao Hu

(protagonist) lowered his head and vacantly stared at Yu Zhi Jue (villain) lying in the mud at death's door, his expression held not even the slightest trace of joy.

Yu Zhi Jue slowly opened his dark, frozen eyes, and his lips tugged into a faint smile. "Finally… …I'm free… …This kind of repulsive world.… …should be utterly destroyed.… …"

Destroyed your frickin' sister!!!

Ling Xia was close to flipping his table, wishing he could crawl through the monitor and spit a mouth full of blood on the author's face.

Did the author write this as a way of lashing out against the world?

Is this kind of ending suppose to imply that the protagonist will take his remaining harem members and repopulate the world, reverting back to a farming society?! Since his favorite goddess-like girl already died, for what reason is the protagonist even still alive? Why didn't they go die together?!

The normally peaceful discussion board had already erupted in flames. One after another, the female fans who liked the villain and the male fans who liked Mu Rong Xue were all posting complaints about being unable to accept this ending.

Ling Xia, also feeling bitter and indignant, grabbed his keyboard and started typing furiously all in one go. After following this novel for so long, what he wanted to read about was not the destruction of the world at the hands of some evil and arrogant villain with loose screws in his head! What he wanted to read about was the protagonist leading his beautiful harem and group of bros, and just as the title says, laugh proudly while adventuring across the world! With everyone dead, like hell there'd be any laughter, much less pride! There's no way he'd ever accept this kind of ending!

The fuck! What the literal fuck!!

This novel doesn't have many die-hard fans, and the author usually sticks to writing only, rarely interacting with the readers. However, this time Ling

Xia’s complaint immediately received a reply from the author:

> *Yu Zhi Jue is my most beloved antagonist and Mu Rong Xue is my favorite heroine, so therefore it’s this kind of ending. →_→ In the first place, I’m just writing for fun, no need to take it so seriously, hehe, *petpet**

…’Hehe’ your frickin’ sister! To hell with that *petpet*!

You might have been writing for fun, but I was passionately, earnestly following this story up until now!

Fine, make the villain you love turn to the dark side and fall into ruin along with the world! Give me back my beautiful goddess first!

It should be noted that all the villains up until now, whether big or small, have either been defeated by the protagonist or ended up getting reformed by the protagonist, later becoming his comrade!

As expected of an author with loose screws in his head, to write this kind of bogus, shameless, shit ending!

Ling Xia’s entire face was red with anger. Compared to this kind of sham ending, he’d rather a preposterous one where the villain falls for the protagonist, and hand in hand, they go off to discover a whole new world together! Even BL is better than tragedy!

At this point, his emotions were no longer within the realm of being heartbroken; he’d already reached the point of wanting to destroy all of society!

The heart of a nerdy male isn’t something to carelessly trample!

Grinding his teeth, Ling Xia stared at this reply from the author for a few minutes, and quickly did a face-heel turn from a fan to a hater.

Aching in his heart and soul, for the first time in his life he began to write a lengthy, hate review. Moreover, at the very end, he left his heartfelt wishes and blessings:

To the author who's lost his mind, let all the instant noodles you eat come without a flavor packet!

When going to the toilet, the only thing you have to wipe with is an instant noodle flavor packet!

All the girls you pursue are sapphists! Ultimately you also end up as a confirmed bachelor!

May your chrysanthemum[1] get pierced thousands and thousands of times!

Transmigrate to another world as a mob! Become cannon fodder for the main character and die as soon as possible!

The angry *clack clack* sounds of keys tapping continued without break for half an hour. After clicking [Reply], Ling Xia once again looked at the screen full of angry exclamation marks, poured a cup of iced beer, and finally felt like he'd vented some of the grief and indignation in his heart. And like so, he went to bed.

Of course, if he had known the destiny that awaited him, he would definitely have chosen to chop off that pair of wretched hands instead of inviting calamity by writing that review. At the very least, he'd leave out the curses about transmigrating into a mob character and getting your chrysanthemum pierced.

The next morning, after being awoken by a cacophony of voices, Ling Xia drowsily rubbed his eyes and thought he was still dreaming. He sluggishly propped himself up, only to discover that surprisingly, he was lying on a pile of straw in a corner while nearby, a dusty dog was in the middle of lifting its leg and peeing.

Ling Xia looked down, only now realizing that his body was amiss. In front of his eyes were a pair of extremely dirty but distinctly thin and weak hands. These definitely weren't his hands!

“… …This dream is really too weird,” Ling Xia mumbled to himself while rubbing his temples, but after he violently pinched himself and almost jumped up from the pain— The fuck, did I end up transmigrating?!

As a nerdy male who preferred staying at home year-round, Ling Xia naturally knew plenty of famous transmigration stories, even if he did always look down upon those lame MCs who went to a different world and curb-stomped everything with their OP cheats. This is also the reason he liked “*Laughing Proudly Under the Heavens in an Alternate World*”, because the protagonist there wasn’t someone who crossed over.

It’s completely absurd how the act of crossing over could somehow transform a loser into a winner in life! When Ling Xia read these kinds of plots before, he had laughed a few times, but now that he’s also joined their ranks, he honestly couldn’t bring himself to utter even a single “haha”.

Despite drowning in feelings of turmoil, Ling Xia still quickly got to his feet. He needed to confirm what kind of place he was currently in. When he saw the tattered, rag-like state of his clothes, his expression turned distraught— Clearly, the status of the person he’d become wasn’t very good.

It’s still early right now, with very few pedestrians walking in the wide, empty streets. Ling Xia pushed the twisted lump of hair in front of his face to the back of his head, turned, and coincidentally saw a store not far away with a large sign bearing the words “LongFei Roasted Pancakes”.

Ling Xia’s heart seized, now completely certain of his hypothesis. The novel began with the protagonist leaving the desert mountains before wandering to a mundane, small town with a very concise and bold sounding name—LongFei[2], the place where the protagonist and the villain met.

Now, should he choose to deviate from the plot or stick with it? It should be noted that staying beside the protagonist is to be constantly exposed to danger. He’s basically a second Conan, incidents occurring anywhere and everywhere he goes, so unless one has the divine protection of an MC, it’s better to stay far away. But, if he ignores the protagonist and disregards the

story line, without a doubt, the end result would be getting destroyed by the villain along with this entire continent… …

Moreover, the most important, most crucial point is, how far has the plot advanced as of now?

Shit! He’s just a techie who preferred staying at home, reading novels in his free time and browsing for certain things online, the same as any other guy. It’s not like he’s ever committed any crimes or acts to offend the Heavens! Isn’t it just a bit of criticism towards an untrustworthy and heartless author, oh great God of Transmigration, why go so far as to throw someone into this kind of dangerous and treacherous, high-strung tragic harem story?

By now, his stomach was growling nonstop, starved for who knows how long and twisting into knots. Ling Xia listlessly rubbed his empty belly, briefly not knowing what he should do.

“ErDan, you’re hungry right? Here’s a roasted pancake.” A dirty hand suddenly reached towards him, gripping a sallow roasted pancake dusted with a few clear, black fingerprints.

Ling Xia raised his head, stunned, abruptly catching sight of a brat that’s around ten years old. Even though his face was black and dirty, obscuring his features, his dark as ink eyes shined exceptionally bright, and on his chubby cheeks, two dimples faintly revealed themselves. When Ling Xia saw the lightning-shaped pendant hanging from a red string around the boy’s neck, he was immediately struck dumb— Holy fuck, the protagonist!

It should be noted that while the protagonist started off as a beggar at the beginning of the story, later on in the novel, his status had reached astonishing and awe-inspiring levels of fame comparable to that of Luffy‘s! This pendant was the crucial proof in establishing his identity, and back when Ling Xia was following the novel, this reveal excited him to the point of chaos, driving him to slap the table and shout in exhilaration.

The protagonist’s appearance may fall a bit short compared to the villain’s, but he has a pair of deep, profound eyes, capable of moving both

holy maidens and demonic enchantresses with its heart-piercing gaze. When faced with these endlessly dark and jewel-like eyes, Ling Xia was rendered speechless.

“He’s a retard, doesn’t even know to eat when hungry. Giving him that’s just a waste.” A very pompous and crisp young boy’s voice sounded from behind, carrying traces of impatience.

Ling Xia stiffly turned around, and as expected, there was another young boy currently side-eyeing him. Unlike the dirty and ragged appearance of the protagonist, although his clothes were also very old, they were exceptionally neat and tidy, and even his extremely fair and delicate face had been washed clean. When he saw the crimson mole beneath the corner of the boy’s right eye, Ling Xia momentarily blanked out— Holy fuck, the villain!

The female fans who followed this sham story pretty much all agree that even if the villain was evil in all sorts of ways, he’s delightfully cute in many other aspects. A clean freak, fanatical, vigorously passionate, gorgeous, and even well-versed in both literature and art. Add to that his exceptionally enchanting mole, he simply possessed all kinds of deadly charm points! (Ling Xia: How I deeply wish to comment on the ridiculousness of the name ‘Yu Zhi Jue’![3])

Looking at the cute, steamed bun-shaped protagonist-and-villain pair before his eyes, Ling Xia moodily brooded in silence— To be involved in the plot so quickly, why this!!!

Looks like the God of Destiny already made the choice for him, and as expected, the purpose of being transported into this novel was probably to personally witness the protagonist and villain love and kill each other… …

[1]: slang for anus, it’ll come up again in the future
[2]: roughly means Dragon Flight, a pretty boss sounding name for a town in the middle of nowhere
[3]: Yu( ) means imperial, to resist, or to govern, Zhi( ) is a possessive article, and Jue( ) means to vanish/disappear, and is also half of the word for despair( ), so as the person who destroyed the world, please infer for yourself

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 2

After shamelessly staring at the roasted pancake for a few seconds, Ling Xia glanced at Song Xiao Hu, then boldly helped himself and silently started to eat. Earlier, when his thoughts were running wild, he finally recognized the strange name of “ErDan”[1] and recalled this body’s identity!

The beginning of this sham novel described in great detail the deep friendship the protagonist and villain formed during their childhood, naturally for the purpose of building the foundation to their future love-hate, mutually destructive relationship. Included in that was also a few scenes containing a certain mob character.

What caused the protagonist and villain to awaken to their respective powers was the shock from a pathetic mob character’s death, and that dim-witted but strong-as-an-ox mob character’s name was precisely “ErDan”. Along with the protagonist, they were homeless children who begged in the streets and had spent a period of time weathering the joys and sorrows of life together. He was basically the protagonist’s loyal hound! Moreover, this embarrassing and weird name of “ErDan” was actually given by the protagonist… …

It looks like his current identity was this pitiful and mentally challenged loyal hound.

While recalling the plot, Ling Xia ravenously devoured his food to the extent of even swallowing the portions stained with dust. He silently comforted himself with the fact that, fundamentally speaking, this was a roasted pancake bearing the authentic fingerprints of an outstanding, powerful genius!

Seeing Ling Xia eat with such relish, the one wearing the sacred halo of the indestructible protagonist, Song Xiao Hu, happily exclaimed, “ErDan, eat a bit slower, don’t choke—”

Before he even finished speaking, Ling Xia clutched at his throat and started to cough in distress. That roasted pancake may have looked fine, but it was very hard and tough, clearly something left out overnight!

Song Xiao Hu quickly brought over the cracked bowl that was in the corner, urging, “Drink some water.”

It was very obvious that the boy was already accustomed to this body’s clumsiness.

On the other hand, Yu Zhi Jue’s face was full of contempt, stepping back a few meters in disdain and wrinkling his delicate eyebrows. “Can this retard possibly get any dumber? Can’t even eat food without choking!”

Ling Xia gulped down a few mouthfuls of cold water, shivered from the chill, and thumped his stifled chest for a breath. He cursed in his heart; sure enough, compared to the born-in-a-good-family protagonist, the villain was already crooked even as a child! Not even an ounce of gentleness or consideration!

He squinted his eyes, scrutinizing the hazy image reflected in the bowl’s water. This face was dirty enough to compete with Song Xiao Hu’s, but it was clear his facial features were conventional and his eyes were animate, contrary to his imagined dim-witted, dunce-like person with crossed eyes and a crooked mouth. He looked to be about four or five years older than Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue.

Secretly letting out a sigh of relief, then continuing to stuff hard roasted pancakes into his mouth while drinking cold water, Ling Xia looked at the future final boss villain and silently mused over his backstory.

As for Yu Zhi Jue’s childhood experiences, it wasn’t something the good-for-nothing author spend a lot of words describing. After all, he isn’t the protagonist, but it could be inferred that he definitely faced all kinds of tragic ordeals, neither cherished by his father nor loved by his mother.

Yu Zhi Jue’s father was a practitioner of dark-arts cultivation methods, the infamous fiend Yu TianXing. His mother, YuNü[2] Sect’s previous

Divine Priestess Yu LingLong, was forced by his father, which lead to Yu Zhi Jue being ignored and abused in various ways ever since birth. Sometime later, that love-hate couple fought and ended up departing for heaven one after another. The young Yu Zhi Jue, who witnessed this entire affair, escaped from the snowy peaks of the holy mountain they were on, and after wandering the world for a long time, arrived at a mundane, small town—LongFei, where he then met the protagonist.

Even towards the pure-hearted and honest protagonist, Yu Zhi Jue never truly opened his heart. Although under the protagonist's influence, he wasn't that gloomy and cold-blooded as a child, but after they turned thirteen and had gone through a few incidents together, his feelings of jealousy towards the protagonist rapidly began to grow.

It's worthy to note that the book established Yu Zhi Jue as a once-in-a-hundred-years prodigy in terms of aptitude, and in the early stages, he surpassed the protagonist by leaps and bounds. After all, he did inherit powerful genes. But in the later stages, he was easily surpassed by the always happy-go-lucky protagonist, so of course his heart and mind became more and more unstable.

After that, following a series of ridiculous misunderstandings and due to interconnected fighting, they slowly drifted apart, until it led to their complete falling out. Eventually, Yu Zhi Jue became more and more cruel and vicious, before finally destroying the world… …

However, no matter what's said or done, looking at the steamed bun-faced boy clenching his fists and pretending to look cool nearby, Ling Xia was unable to associate him with the terrible villain in the novel, so much that he even thought in his heart: Aah, this is obviously just a cocky but endearing little brat!

Yu Zhi Jue quickly noticed Ling Xia's strange gaze. With a look full of disgust, he turned his head and coldly asked, "What's a retard like you looking at?"

"… …" How he wanted to give those cheeks a good pinching.

Ling Xia slowly got up from the ground, and was very pleased to discover that he was taller than the two brats by over half a head.

He looked down at the pair in front of him, and in a very serious manner, extended his index finger and wagged it back and forth. “Don’t call me ‘ErDan’ or ‘retard’ anymore, my name is Ling Xia!”

No matter how amazing and overpowered, or fear-inducing and terrifying they would become in the future, at this moment, the two tender, steam bun-faced brats briefly shared the same expression of: = =

Ling Xia’s crestfallen feelings due to transmigrating out of the blue immediately changed for the better.

That’s right, even if he’s thrown into this deceptive alternate world with its high mortality rate, looking on the bright side, at least there’s a chance he could meet the goddess of his heart! Ling Xia endeavored to pull himself together.

It was evidently very easy to fool the young, pure-hearted, and optimistic protagonist. Obediently sitting cross-legged across from Ling Xia on a pile of straw, he quickly accepted Ling Xia’s explanations, blinking his eyes while listening very intently. Ling Xia pulled out a few clichéd scenarios from dramas, like being kicked out by his step-mother, then hitting his head and temporarily losing his memories, etc.

Full of sympathy, Song Xiao Hu sighed, “Looks like having a mother doesn’t necessarily mean happiness… …But even so, I still want to find my family.”

Ling Xia looked at the protagonist’s dumb and cute, saint-like face that was covered in dirt and spotted like a calico cat’s. Sure enough, in this world, saint-like qualities was the most stunning part of a person’s character… …

That’s right, the protagonist’s primary goal was to find his parents and train his martial arts to develop various forms of strength. Becoming

apprenticed to a master, collecting harem members, defeating the villain, or finding sidekicks and comrades were all secondary objectives.

Yu Zhi Jue listened skeptically, clenched his fists, and gave Ling Xia a glance before asking, “Then, shouldn’t you remember where you were originally from? How did you come by to this place?”

Almost imperceptibly, Ling Xia suddenly felt a faint yet uncomfortable feeling of oppression.

He paused, and looked over Yu Zhi Jue once more.

In contrast to Song Xiao Hu, Yu Zhi Jue’s star-like eyes were full of wariness and antagonism. The crimson mole under the corner of his eye made his skin seem even fairer than jade, his long and smooth, ebony hair was neatly tied behind his head, and perhaps due to being malnourished for a long time, he seemed a bit weaker and thinner than the hearty and robust Song Xiao Hu.

Ling Xia quickly came back to his senses; Yu Zhi Jue was the villainous boss who would destroy the world in the future after all! Just a moment ago, he was unconsciously treating him as just a child… …The story he told earlier was so full of holes, only something capable of fooling the simple-minded Song Xiao Hu at most!

Moreover, after the protagonist is given some time to mature, he probably won’t be so simple-minded and easy to fool either. It should be noted that although this sham novel was neither obscure nor popular, in the discussion boards, the female fans had gleefully fantasized about and written a lot of meta and fics featuring Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu, mostly where the innocent-on-the-outside-but-brutal-on-the-inside Song Xiao Hu topped, and the kind-acting-but-maliciously-dark-two-faced Yu Zhi Jue bottomed (… …)

Ling Xia promptly moderated his carefree sitting position, arranged his features as naturally as possible, and portrayed with all his might an expression of intensely wracking his brain. “Even I don’t really remember

anymore, only that my dad's surname was 'Ling' and was called 'Ling ZhiYuan', and my hometown had 'Fire' in its name or something similar."

Hearing it spoken like this, Yu Zhi Jue began to believe him about 70% to 80%. The previous "ErDan" had wandered to this small town a few years ago, no one here knowing where he had come from, so if Ling Xia had made up a very detailed story, conversely, he would have been suspicious. Letting out a single, noncommittal grunt, he then turned his head away; in the end, there's no way he'd be interested in some dirty retard.

Besides, if it wasn't for Song Xiao Hu taking care of the idiot, he definitely wouldn't have spared this kind street beggar even a single glance.

Song Xiao Hu didn't notice Yu Zhi Jue's wariness at all, simply revealing his cute dimples and laughed, "Then Er… …Ling Xia, why don't you treat me as your family from now on?"

Ling Xia nodded his head and smiled, responding, "Of course, then you'll have to call me big brother. I've long since thought of Xiao Hu as a younger sibling."

He was secretly pleased; this was the protagonist after all! The amazing and mighty protagonist! It's best to worm into his good graces now and secure a powerful backing hahaha!

Song Xiao Hu blinked, smiling so widely even his molars could be seen, and called out in a crisp, clear voice, "Elder brother Ling!"

Ling Xia felt so smug, his ego almost shot into the stratosphere. He couldn't help but reach out to pat the top of the protagonist's head, rubbing with gusto the short and spikey, hedgehog-like hair.

On the other hand, Song Xiao Hu started to feel a bit embarrassed. During his entire journey, from leaving the mountains to arriving here, finding someone who was polite or willing to give him a steamed roll was already considered quite fortunate. Most just scorned and avoided him for being dirty. When had anyone ever treated him so intimately like this? Even if his temperament was sanguine and carefree, he also dearly yearned to

find a family, so right now, the corners of his eyes unconsciously started to sting a bit.

Yu Zhi Jue was already gaping, stupefied by this reverent and affectionate brotherly scene before his eyes. His friendship with Song Xiao Hu was purely because he thought the other's potential was very high, and thus possible to get along with. That's it. Their interactions were also on the nonchalant side; when has he ever behaved this intimately before?

Completely satisfied, Ling Xia withdrew his hand and shifted his gaze to Yu Zhi Jue, looking at him with an expectant expression. Becoming the older brother figure to both the protagonist and the villain, this is what life was truly about! What's more, he's been wanting to poke the villain's cheeks for a long time now!

Sure enough, the innocent-on-the-outside-but-brutal-on-the-inside Song Xiao Hu immediately caught on to his thoughts and turned to Yu Zhi Jue, urging, "Ah'Jue[3], hurry up and greet big brother."

Ling Xia was already doubling over with laughter inside, watching Yu Zhi Jue expectantly with stars in his eyes.

As a result, the great sir villain's face that was full of wariness just a moment ago rapidly turned red in embarrassment.

Yu Zhi Jue angrily bit back, "Call him 'elder brother' all you want, what does that have to do with me?"

He glared ferociously at Song Xiao Hu, then with a flap of his sleeves, left.

[1]: roughly means Second Egg, it's a pretty dumb-sounding name imo
[2]: roughly means Beautiful Fairy Maiden, so unsurprisingly, it's a female-only sect with a lot of beauties
[3]: Ah' ( ) a prefix usually added to the last part of a person's name to make an endearing or familiar nickname; for example, Ah'Jue would refer to Yu Zhi Jue

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 3

Looking at the snobby and endearingly tiny appearance of the future great sir villain, Ling Xia couldn’t help but chuckle.

No matter how twisted and vicious this villainous boss was in the novel, right now he was still a child, only a bit more on the sensitive and suspicious side.

In other words, as long as there was someone to guide him correctly, there’s a strong possibility for that tragic future to be averted… …

Ling Xia’s eyes immediately sparkled; could it be that the reason he transmigrated was for the purpose of rehabilitating the villain, thus saving this entire continent and world?

Actually, before he started working, he wasn’t such a stay-at-home person. In college, he had worked as a home tutor, came into contact with very difficult and hard to deal with brats, and even read a few education and psychology related books.

Thinking positively like this, Ling Xia immediately felt pumped up, realizing abruptly that there was hope for him to return back home.

In some ways, Ling Xia and Song Xiao Hu really did share a few similarities.

Song Xiao Hu, feeling a bit unsatisfied with Yu Zhi Jue’s earlier response, called after him a few times, but the other continued to walk away without looking back. Feeling a bit nervous, he turned his large eyes towards Ling Xia and said, “Elder brother Ling, please don’t be angry.”

Ling Xia rubbed the other’s hedgehog-like hair, stood up once more, and laughingly replied, “Of course I’m not angry.”

Yu Zhi Jue was very particular and difficult, so if he had easily been able to accept a stranger as his older brother, now that would have been weird.

Since he understood the situation more, Ling Xia could no longer ignore the filth that covered his body. In fact, even the simple action of standing up would cause strange smells to reach his nose. Pulling Song Xiao Hu up as well, he asked, “Where is there a river?”

Currently, it was near the end of spring, so the water was still a bit chilly.

Song Xiao Hu brought Ling Xia to his and Yu Zhi Jue’s secret base, a place normally concealed from view. Without any hesitation, Ling Xia stripped off his dirty clothes, threw it to the ground, and while shivering, jumped into the river.

Song Xiao Hu’s body contained fire elemental energy and thus resisted the cold, so even faster than Ling Xia, he had already dived in and started trying to catch fish.

It took great difficulty to wash this body clean, and straightening out the tangled mass of hair alone cost Ling Xia almost an hour of hard work. He also washed both of their dirty clothes, before hanging them to air dry on tree branches near the shore.

The river was very clear, and the distinct reflection of a teenager with bright eyes, a straight nose, and red lips could be seen. Ling Xia was a bit startled; to think that this mob character actually had the setting of a brainless pretty boy.

Song Xiao Hu also dazedly paused, then said with a smile, “Elder brother Ling is really pretty.”

Although Song Xiao Hu was still a child that liked to play, living in the mountains since he was young gave rise to strong survival skills, so very quickly, he caught a foot-long fish with his bare hands. He wanted to immediately cook and eat it, but Ling Xia saw that his body was still dirty, so he had no choice but to push him back into the water to properly wash everything clean.

Song Xiao Hu was very ticklish, therefore every time Ling Xia touched him, he would burst into laughter, splashing Ling Xia with water again and again.

Even so, the soaking wet protagonist was all the more charming and lovable, with his slightly dark skin, hearty and robust look, and dimples that emerged with every smile. He was definitely the type that's really popular with the elderly.

As they were cooking their haul of fish, Yu Zhi Jue also lurked on over from who knows where. Looking at their appearance, his face immediately flushed red with outrage, and sputtered, "Song Xiao Hu, that… …Ling Xia! Do you not even know how to put on clothes?"

Song Xiao Hu crossed his legs and with a mouth full of food, loudly proclaimed, "I'm not afraid of the cold."

"… …Who cares if you're cold or not!" Yu Zhi Jue icily shot back. Nevertheless, he still sat down, grabbed a fish, and took a bite. With a straight back and fastidious movements, his etiquette when eating was actually quite refined.

Ling Xia couldn't help but feel amused. These two who would butt heads in the future, although their personalities clashed like fire and ice, in actuality, they complemented each other quite well.

Song Xiao Hu was pretty skilled in cooking fish, and it was plain to see that Yu Zhi Jue also ate with comparative satisfaction.

From the start, Ling Xia stealthily observed Yu Zhi Jue, and seeing him finish the fish, immediately handed another over. Seizing this opportunity to rub elbows, he offered, "This one's done."

Only now did Yu Zhi Jue spare a cautious glance to size Ling Xia up, and he too paused, just like Song Xiao Hu had earlier. After all, the contrast between Ling Xia's current appearance and his previous messy and dirty, retarded beggar look was way too large. However, when his line of sight

went lower, his feigned look of indifference abruptly broke down. “What in the world is that? So disgusting!”

While saying so, he unconsciously moved a few steps back. That offended look of loathing made Ling Xia feel a bit confused; it’s as if he saw something vulgar… …

He followed Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze and looked down, promptly catching sight of his lower half, and was temporarily rendered speechless.

This body was already thirteen or fourteen years old, so naturally it’s entered puberty.

Ehem, well, the Yu Zhi Jue in the novel, probably on account of being scarred by that father-mother pair, incredibly abhorred anything to do with the birds and the bees, and all the way up until he died, was suspected to be an inexperienced greenhorn. In the book, there were a few girls who liked him, especially one of his female subordinates who’s infatuation came second to none. And the result? In the end, that cold-blooded villain went as far as to kill this cannon-fodder girl by using her as a human shield, the nerve of him!

Countless male readers were full of jealousy and spite, and could only hate that they weren’t able to simply slap the villain dead!

Nevertheless, isn’t this just some pubic hair? You little brat, after two or three more years, you’ll grow it too… …

Aye aye, not only did the villain’s outlook on life need careful reeducation, his twisted outlook on romance also needed remedial teaching.

Song Xiao Hu was slower on the uptake, but also swept his gaze across Ling Xia’s lower half, then immediately asked curiously, “Elder brother Ling, why does yours look different from ours?”

Under the two brats’ gazes, one full of disgust and the other full of curiosity, Ling Xia’s face twisted in distress and embarrassment, automatically moving his hand to cover up his private parts. (… …)

Puberty education in these ancient times was too heavy a responsibility to bear.

Up until he put all his clothes back on, Yu Zhi Jue continued to look at Ling Xia with a very uncanny gaze, and those clear-cut eyes might as well have been glaring daggers. He moved even farther away, leaving Ling Xia all the more speechless.

For the sake of this great sir villain not to hate him even more from now on, Ling Xia could only sigh, then explained, “This is something normal that all men will possess after reaching a certain age. Conversely, not having any would be strange.”

Song Xiao Hu’s bout of curiosity had visibly passed, and with his attention quickly captured by a passing butterfly, didn’t even respond after hearing Ling Xia’s explanation.

On the other hand, Yu Zhi Jue listened intently, but his expression remained unnatural. With the revulsion in his eyes on the verge of bursting, he restated, “It looks really disgusting.”

Ling Xia carefully observed Yu Zhi Jue’s profile and marveled at how neat and delicate it looked, almost like a girl’s. Suddenly, he thought of a frightening possibility.

Once, a long time ago, there was a reader who wrote a long and lengthy post on the discussion board titled, “The Probability of Yu Zhi Jue Being Female”.

The person who wrote this was, without a doubt, male. He persisted in believing that there was no way a guy could have such a temperament, and furthermore, to not even respond when beautiful women threw themselves into his arms, wasn’t that just too strange? On top of that, the way the author described him as full of wiles and provocative in appearance was also suspicious. Therefore, he concluded it was very likely that Yu Zhi Jue was a cross-dressing girl, which also explained his peculiar feelings towards the protagonist.

Of course, after that, the female fans shot him down so hard he might as well have been riddled with holes.

Thinking of that unfortunate guy's commentary now, Ling Xia trembled in anticipation.

Fuck! It couldn't be that this was actually the truth?!

Thinking of the possibility that Yu Zhi Jue, destroyer of the world, could in fact be a girl, Ling Xia felt himself becoming really, really… …excited!

This kind of killer plot twist is a real kicker, you know?

A girl, a female, a lady…. …an overwhelming, domineering queen!

Subconsciously mimicking Song Xiao Hu's way of address, Ling Xia inquired, "Ah'Jue, aren't you going to wash?"

Yu Zhi Jue glanced at him indifferently and let out a short hmph, but didn't move.

Ling Xia clutched his hands in excitement, itching to immediately confirm his suspicions.

…Of course, many years later, after getting pushed down into bed by the villain over a thousand times, the unfortunate mob would lament with a face full of tears: How lovely and wonderful it would have been if the villain was really a girl ahhh!!!

When he finished eating, Yu Zhi Jue carefully washed his hands and face, then narrowed his eyes and said, "Xiao Hu, earlier in the market, I heard that ShaoYang[1] Sect will be recruiting disciples in YouMing soon."

Song Xiao Hu's expression instantly sobered and became serious, and the child-like aura that surrounded him disappeared into thin air.

Ling Xia paused; the two in front of him now, now this was the protagonist and villain who always strove to become stronger and achieved their ambitions through their own strengths!

In the novel “Laughing Proudly Under the Heavens in an Alternate World”, the system of cultivation differed from the more traditional framework. Aside from cultivating the five elementals, the various sects in the world also practiced body cultivation, sword cultivation, energy cultivation, divergent-skill cultivation, and also what orthodox cultivators held in contempt, dark-arts cultivation.

Body cultivation, sword cultivation, and energy cultivation were similar to their traditional counterparts, but divergent-skill cultivation and dark-arts cultivation methods were a lot more convoluted.

Body cultivation mainly improves one’s health and physique, sword cultivation polished one’s sword techniques, and energy cultivators, above all else, focused on stimulating the power elementals in their bodies and strengthening their psychical energy.

Divergent-skill cultivation encompassed power elemental cultivation and dimensional cultivation, along with many others. For example, the protagonist had pure fire and lightning elemental energy and his dimensional cultivation also reached XuanHuang[2] tenth stage near the end of the story, while the villain possessed the comparatively colder, yin-based water element and a dimensional cultivation on par with the protagonist.

The methods in dark-arts cultivation were even more complex and full of abnormalities. Later on, when Yu Zhi Jue followed his father’s footsteps and chose to cultivate the dark-arts, all kinds of bizarre skills got introduced one after another, like the Puppet Technique and the Terminal Modus Formation that were used to destroy the world. Their overwhelming levels of power and arrogance really reached the skies!

The ShaoYang Sect Yu Zhi Jue mentioned earlier was one of the more famous sects in this remote region, and their requirements for recruiting disciples was also relatively low. Of course, it couldn’t even hold a candle next to any of the five largest sects in this world.

However, in regards to the protagonist and villain who couldn’t even be considered novices yet, this sect held an incredible amount of appeal.

In the novel, while the protagonist and the villain did undergo a few trials during their time here, this sect could only be considered a small stepping stone of theirs.

Song Xiao Hu looked towards Ling Xia, a glimmer of expectation shining in his large eyes, and asked, “Elder brother Ling, do you know about the ShaoYang Sect?”

Ling Xia naturally does, and knows even more about how easily the villain wiped them out in the future.

Their experiences in that place couldn’t really be considered interesting, and the treatment they received was also very biased. However, when it came to these two brats, going there to learn first-hand was indeed a very good option. The protagonist would meet the first member of his harem there, too.

But the most important fact, which Ling Xia suddenly realized, was that these two brats would go there regardless of whether or not he objected.

Even though Song Xiao Hu looked innocent and carefree on the outside, he was an extremely obstinate person on the inside, and Yu Zhi Jue even more so. As long as they resolved to do something, no one could easily change their minds otherwise.

Moreover, their desire to become more powerful was also backed by a conviction stronger than anyone else’s.

While recalling the plot, Ling Xia nodded his head and replied, “Although I haven’t heard of them before, but based on the name, it should be a pretty strong sect right?”

Actually, Song Xiao Hu doesn’t know a single thing about this world’s leading sects, having only heard some rumors about ShaoYang Sect during his stay in this small town, and so in his ignorance, naturally imagined a sect with unrivaled strength. However, Yu Zhi Jue had witnessed a battle to the death between two of this world’s most powerful, and therefore didn’t much care for ShaoYang Sect at all.

Because everyone in YuNü Sect considered his birth to be a disgraceful humiliation, his existence and escape were both meticulously hidden from the outside world. But secretly, they never gave up on hunting down and crushing this bane of a vile spawn, and it was because of this that Yu Zhi Jue ran so far, hiding away in this ordinary small town that lacked spiritual power. He had secretly learned a few cultivation methods prior to escaping, but it was merely incomplete, superficial knowledge. In any case, he also knows that going to a large, well-known sect would be very dangerous.

[1]: roughly means youthful sun, it's a pretty nice sounding name
[2]: roughly means the color of the heavens and earth; I assume this is the name of one of the stages of cultivation, tbh I'm not very knowledgeable in cultivation terms

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 4

After listening to Ling Xia's remark, Yu Zhi Jue only gave a snort but didn't say anything. On the other hand, Song Xiao Hu was extremely happy and excited, responding in delight, "Yeah, I heard the people in town say that too."

Ling Xia smiled back, "Since it's like this, I'll come along with you guys."

According to the original plotline, when Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue went to ChongMing City, this idiotic, loyal hound also anxiously followed them. Due to the protagonist being a trouble magnet, no long after, he blocked a blow to the chest meant for the protagonist and died.

However, as for the specifics on how that came to be, Ling Xia really couldn't remember that well. After all, he started reading this novel a long time ago, so he's forgotten many of the details.

Even though Ling Xia really wanted to avoid death, even if he left the protagonist and continued to stay in this small town, a miracle where he magically gets sent home is highly unlikely to happen. All he can do right now is follow these two and take it one step at a time, not to mention in his mind, he's already listed out steps 1, 2, and 3 of his plan to change the villain.

Albeit when reading, the chapters where the protagonist and the villain went all-out against each other in fierce, love-hate battles were his favorite, but now that he's in this world and looking at the steamed bun-faced brats in front of him, he hoped that those kind of scenarios would never happen.

Hearing Ling Xia's words, Yu Zhi Jue didn't actually voice any dissent, only slightly knitting his brows as his almond-shaped eyes flashed, but it was clear that he didn't really approve. When it comes to it, Ling Xia was a stranger to him, and the previously mute retard was something he had ignored.

Usually, both Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue treated wherever they went as their home and wherever they slept as their bed, neither having any belongings that needed packing, thus they planned to set off at once.

Ling Xia, looking at these two kids who were immediately prepared to start their journey, felt his lips jerk, and very uncomfortably sounded out, “We should at least pack some rations?”

As soon as he finished speaking, Song Xiao Hu blinked and replied, “Elder brother Ling, we don’t have any money. What’s more, I can hunt food for us to eat along the way.”

Yu Zhi Jue had glanced at him in disdain but didn’t say anything, and Ling Xia instantly realized how dumb these words of his were.

The two kids before his eyes have basically been living up till now by solely depending on themselves, and their survival skills were obviously a lot stronger than some modern adult who can’t even differentiate between the different types of grains like him. Unintentionally, he looked at the two in front of him with pity and tenderness. When reading these kinds of descriptions in the novel, he hadn’t felt any particular emotions, and all of his focus was spent on the cool and exciting scenes. Only now that he’s experiencing this firsthand, does he understand such feelings.

This alternate world is split into four large regions, and while ChongMing City and LongFei Town are both on the southern continent, they’re separated by over fifty kilometers. Purely depending on one’s two legs to walk, it’s a distance that’s definitely impossible to cover within a short span of time.

Fortunately, the people of this world’s body and stamina were abnormally strong, and even after walking all day on rocky mountain paths, while Ling Xia felt a little tired, neither his feet nor legs were sore. On the road, Song Xiao Hu kept chattering and laughing away, completely uninhibited, and Yu Zhi Jue would also occasionally speak a few words. Furthermore, these two kids were extremely amusing in that neither was willing to take a break first, almost as if they were competing.

Ling Xia watched them, almost to the point of tears; if the villain was a girl, being paired with the protagonist like this would be so heart-throbbingly cute!

Right now, the pair of them were still considered normal children without cultivation, so after rushing for an entire day, they were both tired. As dusk approached, the three of them found a secluded cave and spread a thick layer of tree leaves on the ground. Song Xiao Hu caught a low-level rabbit beast, and they picked some things like wild mushrooms and such for dinner.

Ling Xia and Song Xiao Hu both wolfed down their food, having long been hungry from using up too much of their strength. Yu Zhi Jue started off eating in a refined manner, but after seeing the food gradually disappearing, also picked up his speed. Discovering this, Ling Xia couldn't resist secretly laughing.

There was a small river near the cave, and when Ling Xia went to wash up, inadvertently seeing the swimming figure in the water, his delusion of Yu Zhi Jue being a girl was instantly shattered.

Yu Zhi Jue glared at him after sensing his incomprehensible gaze, and like an angry baby leopard, growled, "What are you looking at?!"

Ling Xia took a look at the little jimmy on Yu Zhi Jue's lower half, and dejectedly walked away.

Back at the cave, the space within was limited, so the three of them had to cram together in order to all lie down.

Song Xiao Hu kicked off his straw sandals and jumped in, the stains around the corners of his mouth not even wiped clean, and full of excitement, he beamed, "Ah'Jue, Elder brother Ling, I want to sleep in the middle."

"… …" Truly, as expected of the future casanova protagonist who operates under the standard of having someone adorn both his left and his right!

Ling Xia lied down and closed his eyes, prepared to sleep, but with a face full of contempt, Yu Zhi Jue continued to stand outside. After a while, he finally stepped over to kick Song Xiao Hu and said, “Go wash yourself.”

Perplexed, Song Xiao Hu replied, “But I’m not dirty.”

Yu Zhi Jue wrinkled his eyebrows; he had never been physically close to anyone before, not to mention, Song Xiao Hu snored, sleep talked, and like to move around, among other things. When they slept under the same roof in the past, even far away from each other, Song Xiao Hu would still wake him up with noise. In spite of being kicked afterwards, Song Xiao Hu would continue to slumber like a dead pig, not responding in the slightest!

He wanted to persevere through the night by leaning against the wall, but Yu Zhi Jue was also afraid of that affecting his condition for tomorrow’s travels; he definitely wasn’t willing to lag behind Song Xiao Hu.

As a result, he reluctantly and unwillingly said to Ling Xia, “You sleep in the middle.” Ling Xia had washed himself, so at least it was unlikely he would have any gross and unpleasant smells.

The tone was a bit standoffish and harsh, yet for no particular reason, Ling Xia heard traces of awkwardness and distress. He was currently trying his best to get on the great sir villain’s good side, so without a second thought, he promptly picked up Song Xiao Hu, moved him over, then patted his other side and invited with a smile, “Come on over.”

The setting where this “ErDan” had colossal strength truly wasn’t just for show; moving Song Xiao Hu to the other side was practically as easy as picking up a small chick.

Yu Zhi Jue paused for a beat, but before Song Xiao Hu could catch on and react, he quickly lied down, squeezing his body as close to the wall as possible to avoid touching Ling Xia. He coldly stared at Ling Xia and warned, “If you turn over and kick me, I will throw you outside.”

“… …” Looking at the villain clad in a self-important, big-headed, and know-it-all aura, Ling Xia really couldn’t help but find it hilarious. Yu Zhi

Jue, who was shrinking and compressing his already petite body, honestly didn't possess a shred of dignified air. Instead, he looked like a small kitten or puppy full of false bravado, harmless and a bit cute.

Forcing down his urge to grin, Ling Xia closed his eyes and murmured, "Understood."

Song Xiao Hu protested a bit, but then pulled Ling Xia into aimlessly chatting about various topics he found entertaining. Yu Zhi Jue was silently glad; in the past, whenever Song Xiao Hu talked too much he'd only end up yelling back in annoyance, but Ling Xia was actually responding and holding a proper conversation.

In order not to ostracize Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia was lying flat on his back, and using his peripheral vision, he peeked at the small, motionless body curled up in the corner, not knowing what the other was thinking about.

Ling Xia cleared his throat and then thought of a question, so he asked, "Xiao Hu, what's your dream? Um, that is, what kind of person do you want to become in the future? Why do you want to enter ShaoYang Sect?"

With sparkles in his eyes, Song Xiao Hu excitedly replied, "I want to become the strongest sword cultivator! I want a lot of people to know my name!"

As expected of a hot-blooded, purebred protagonist! Ling Xia rubbed his hedgehog-like head and reassured, "You'll definitely succeed."

It should be noted that in the future, aside from dark-arts cultivation, the protagonist had mastered all of the other types of cultivation! The radiance of his overwhelming power was basically admired, envied, and hated to no end!

Ling Xia followed up by asking Yu Zhi Jue, "Ah'Jue, what about you?"

Yu Zhi Jue spared him a glance, and after a stretch of silence, gave his chilling response. "I will make all those who have looked down upon me, or humiliated me, know the true meaning of regret!"

His voice was crisp and pleasant to the ear, except, it also held a faint, entirely unchild-like, frigidly mature undertone.

“… …”

Ling Xia’s skull felt numb, unwittingly thinking back to the villain’s maniacal, preposterous last words:

This kind of repulsive world.… …should be utterly destroyed.… …

And that’s why a child’s education is imperative and can’t be delayed! If you can’t set them straight when they’re still young, the world will be doomed ahhhhhh!

After what seemed like ages and Ling Xia still had yet to respond, Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t resist sneering, “*Well*?”

Ling Xia swallowed and carefully replied in a light tone, “Mmhn, that’s a pretty good dream too, haha, Ah‘Jue, you’ll definitely be very impressive in the future!”

He does want to guide Yu Zhi Jue towards an honest life, but currently Yu Zhi Jue still looked at him with all kinds of annoyed and disgusted expressions, so he couldn’t really say much until they became more familiar first… …

Song Xiao Hu was a bit curious though, since Yu Zhi Jue had never talked about himself before. Who were the people that humiliated him? Were they similar to the people that yelled at and called himself a beggar? At the same time, he was also a bright child and knew he shouldn’t pry. Therefore, he restrained himself and didn’t ask.

Having exhausted too much of his strength during the day, Song Xiao Hu quickly fell asleep and drool leaked out of his open mouth. After a while longer, the sound of soft, even breaths also came from Yu Zhi Jue’s side, but Ling Xia’s eyes remained open, completely awake.

Truthfully speaking, he still felt surreal, like this was all just a dream. It was slightly better during the day, but as the night descended, so did the intensity of his own helplessness, crashing over him like a rushing tide.

Although he was lying on top of a thick layer of tree leaves, he could still feel the stiff, cold floor, and the pitch-black darkness of the cave made his heart softly quiver in apprehension. On top of being in a strange alternate world, from time to time, the howls of the unknown, wild beasts outside could be heard.

He blindly groped about until he touched the hands on either side of him; Song Xiao Hu's palm was coarse and hot, while Yu Zhi Jue's body temperature was on the cooler side. Even though both hands were small, nevertheless, Ling Xia felt some degree of comfort in his heart.

Since he's already transmigrated into this strange world, as a fully grown adult, he can't end up being more unreliable than these kids, right?

Despite the fact that Yu Zhi Jue's guard against all things unfamiliar during the day was as high as could be, he was exceptionally peaceful while asleep, subconsciously scooting closer to the source of warmth beside him, and even gently rubbing the top of his head against Ling Xia's chin a few times.

Ling Xia unwittingly smiled at the slightly ticklish sensation. At this time of the night, a tender atmosphere like this was easy to slowly form and develop, and gradually, he also closed his eyes.

Waking up the next morning, Yu Zhi Jue's expression immediately turned dark, as he was currently huddled in Ling Xia's embrace with his entire back plastered against the other's body. Mindlessly, he stood up in a rush.

Ling Xia took note of the boy's aversive and disgusted gaze, innocently waved his hands, and stated, "I didn't do anything."

At first, Ling Xia wasn't able to fall asleep, but after he did, what awaited him was an entire night of torment. Song Xiao Hu not only tossed and turned, but sleep talked incessantly, and while Yu Zhi Jue was silent in the

noise department, he was relentlessly treated as a pillow and tightly clung to! Furthermore, Yu Zhi Jue's body temperature was lower than his by quite a few degrees, and yet no matter how much time passed, it wasn't able to warm up.

The fair skin at base of Yu Zhi Jue's ears was clearly dusted with blush, but he feigned calm and left with a simple, "I'm going to wash up."

When he normally slept alone, he was extremely vigilant and even the slightest disturbance would wake him up. Yet last night, he actually entered such a deep and dreamless sleep, only vaguely relishing that his body was very warm, as if someone kept lovingly caressing his head.

That kind of feeling was extremely comfortable, so much that unexpectedly, he didn't even want to open his eyes and wake up.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 5

After traveling continuously for three days straight, they were able to complete over half of their journey. Fortunately, this mountainous area was relatively flat and lacked spiritual power, so there weren't any dangerous large or medium magical beasts that would attack. Additionally, Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue both had plenty of experience in traveling swiftly, and thus far, they've progressed along quite smoothly. By the afternoon of the third day, they were close to reaching ChongMing[1] City.

Ling Xia was grateful that these past few days, Yu Zhi Jue's attitude towards him had gotten slightly better due to his composed and subtle efforts in currying the other's favor. Even though Yu Zhi Jue still ignored him from time to time, at the very least, his expression wasn't full of rejection and scorn like before.

The small town they were passing through was clearly more prosperous than LongFei Town, and there was a lot more variety in both food and entertainment. After eating roasted meat in the wild for a few days, when the scent of hot, deliciously cooked meals entered Ling Xia's nose, he subconsciously licked his lips. Song Xiao Hu also couldn't resist staring, swallowing down a mouth full of saliva.

There wasn't a form of government in any of the continents of this world. Each region was managed by the largest sect in the area, with the famous, large sects numbering over a dozen, and the smaller sects too numerous to count. As for the ShaoYang Sect that was in charge of the thousands of miles around ChongMing City, it was only considered below average.

The currency here also wasn't made from traditional gold, silver, or copper ores, but from different levels of energy stones. The higher the level of energy stone used, the greater the coin's worth, and ones made from the level-1 energy stones were the most common. Of course, you could also bring the energy stones you obtained to various money mints and exchange it for the common currency.

Energy stones are usually found in places with a high concentration of spiritual energy. They are used in refining both magical tools and medicinal pills as well as in aiding cultivation, and the higher the level, the rarer the stone was. Ling Xia paid careful attention while they traveled, but didn't even spot a single piece of level-1 energy stone.

Ling Xia looked at the two kids beside him; Song Xiao Hu's head seemed slightly large for his frame and appeared hearty and robust, but Yu Zhi Jue was noticeably a bit thinner and weaker than other kids his age. They had both reached an important age in their bodies' development, and if they lived on Earth, they would still actually be elementary school students! But presently, these two were malnourished… …Eating nothing but the rabbits or fish or whatnot they've caught was obviously far too lacking in providing sufficient nutrition.

A simple, written announcement on a wall quickly caught Ling Xia's attention. It said there was a shop currently undertaking a construction job and was looking for temporary workers, offering a pay of 10 level-1 energy coins per day, which was roughly the equivalent of ¥100[2] back on Earth.

Ling Xia's eyes glinted; what his current body did not lack at all, was physical strength. He had already secretly tested it, easily lifting boulders over fifty kilograms, and the cause was very likely because he possessed Herculean Strength.

Of course, this amount strength isn't even worth mentioning compared to what the protagonist and the villain would have in the future, but even so, it's a skill that's rarely seen. If one could cultivate it appropriately, there was quite the potential for growth.

As for doing the job of a low-level physical laborer, Ling Xia doesn't hold any contempt in his heart towards such a thing. During college, he and his classmates often worked as salesmen promoting education related materials on weekends, and in any case, earning one's keep through one's own toils wasn't something shameful.

Ling Xia swiftly called the other two over and told them his plans. In high spirits, Song Xiao Hu cheerfully declared, "Then I'll go with you, I'm

pretty strong too!”

Yu Zhi Jue hesitated for a beat, but also said, “I’m going as well.”

Ling Xia immediately turned down their offers. How could he let elementary kids work at a construction site? Instead, he smiled and rubbed Song Xiao Hu’s head, insisting, “You guys don’t need to go. Go over there and watch that play, and I’ll be back soon.”

At the end of the street, there was a stage set up where a play was taking place. Their performance style was similar to that of Beijing operas, except it was a lot more humorous and contained many more jokes.

Song Xiao Hu longingly looked towards the lively stage, but still stubbornly followed Ling Xia, and without a word, Yu Zhi Jue also trailed behind without a word. Hence, Ling Xia had no choice but to take them along.

There was no way he’d let two minors step up to do manual labor, but letting them stay nearby and avoid getting into any trouble wasn’t such a bad idea.

That shop’s construction site was bustling with a dozen or so workers, and a manager-like person was currently yelling instructions at everyone to carry slabs of stone. Ling Xia instructed the two kids to stand off to the side, and walked over alone.

First, he greeted the man with a smile, and then in a neither deferential nor haughty manner, explained his reason for coming.

The construction supervisor gave him a glance, saw his weak-looking body that was wrapped in shabby clothes, and impatiently snapped at once, “Runts should go play elsewhere, how is this the kind of work you can do?”

Ling Xia looked at his surroundings, rolled up his sleeves, and walked to stand in front of a slab of limestone. Gathering his strength, he suddenly lifted up the one meter long, half a meter thick piece of stone and moved it elsewhere, all the while making it look as easy and effortless as possible.

He didn’t find it very heavy, but since that slab of stone was slightly too large, holding it steady was a bit difficult.

The other workers were all burly and beefy macho men, and at least two of them were needed to arduously complete such a task. Seeing a thin and frail youngster possess such power, they all started to applaud and cheer.

The construction supervisor was very experienced and knowledgeable, and while this youngster looked unremarkable, being endowed with superhuman strength might lead to him becoming a famous sect’s disciple one day, so his attitude immediately became a lot more polite. He smiled at Ling Xia and exclaimed, “One really can’t tell that a kid like you packs so much brute force. Alright, I’ll pay you twenty a day.”

In fact, this wasn’t disadvantageous to him at all. Going at Ling Xia’s pace, it was more than enough to complete two people’s worth of work.

Receiving a higher salary than what he expected, Ling Xia was also very happy, promptly joining the others and busying himself with work.

Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue also hurried over to help Ling Xia, but Ling Xia briskly waved his hands, signaling them to stay out of the way. Disgruntled, Song Xiao Hu bent down to lift a slab, yet no matter how hard he tried, it didn’t even budge, leading him to dejectedly stand off to the side. Yu Zhi Jue watched that display, figured he probably wouldn’t be able to move it either, and with a snort, also moved back.

After steadily and sincerely working for an entire day, by the time they wrapped up, despite Ling Xia possessing colossal strength, his fingers were convulsing from fatigue. The construction supervisor looked at his dusty face and sweat-soaked clothes, and unexpectedly, gave him an extra two more energy coins.

Likewise, Ling Xia did not decline and accepted it with gratitude; in this world, you could buy three or four bowls of noodles with two energy coins.

After he lightly washed his hands and face, Song Xiao Hu ran over and asked, “Elder brother Ling, are you tired?”

Ling Xia shook his head, then smiled back, “Let’s go, first we need to eat.”

Yu Zhi Jue’s mouth was slightly open, silently staring at how Ling Xia’s back was completely drenched in sweat. Ling Xia jingled the coins in his hands a few times, grinned delightfully, then asked him, “What do you want to eat?”

Yu Zhi Jue masked his breathing in defiance, however, his tone held traces of awkward embarrassment as he answered, “Rice.”

Song Xiao Hu was completely carnivorous in his tastes, asking for a large portion of lamb meat with bread and soup, while Yu Zhi Jue merely ordered some rice. Ling Xia looked at the menu and picked a few not-too-expensive but nutritious vegetable dishes, and slowly but surely, Yu Zhi Jue ate from each and every one of them.

This meal cost them 8 level-1 energy coins, and remembering all the hard work that it took to earn, Ling Xia really felt some pain in his heart. In any case, they weren’t far from their destination, so he decided to stay and work for a few more days. The rest of the way to ChongMing City wasn’t guaranteed to be smooth, and at the very least, he needed to earn enough money to buy new clothes for these two kids. There were five more days until ShaoYang Sect would conduct their recruitment, and from this small town, it would only take around a day’s travel to reach the city, so they still had plenty of time to spare.

Ling Xia also had his hands tied; before, he was only a nerdy male working in the tech department, spending his days dealing with computers and code. In this world, those kind of skills can’t even be used to trade for a single apple.

Although this was a world ruled by the strong, these two were still normal children right now, and wearing such tattered and old clothing would inevitably invite the ridicule and derision of others.

Song Xiao Hu probably wouldn’t mind much, but as for Yu Zhi Jue, that brat was unlikely not to take it to heart. Any factors that might push Yu Zhi

Jue to the dark side must be avoided at all costs!

After three days of working hard during the day and sleeping outside during the night, he finally saved up approximately 45 level-1 energy coins, enough to buy two sets of clothes made from ordinary cloth.

Ling Xia specifically led the two kids to take a bath, and then brought them to a shop that sold children's clothing.

The clothes in this world were rather fashionable, having styles that bared the chest or bared the back, along with all sorts of exotic varieties reminiscent of what's seen in online video games. Song Xiao Hu quickly found a blue, gold trimmed short-sleeve shirt he liked, and putting it on accentuated his already hearty and robust look. Yu Zhi Jue chose a very plain, ungarnished, ordinary cotton and hemp garment that covered his slender and fair neck, making his small face seem even more elegant and cute.

After bartering, the total still came up to 36 energy coins, but Ling Xia was very satisfied.

In a bewildered tone, Song Xiao Hu inquired, "Elder brother Ling, you're not going to buy one?"

Yu Zhi Jue also couldn't resist blurting out, "If there's not enough money… …Then I don't want it."

Ling Xia was so moved; this was precisely a perfect opportunity for reeducation! He immediately looked at Yu Zhi Jue with the tender, kind eyes of an elder, and warmly returned, "I don't need to buy anything. The clothes I have can still be worn."

He pondered a bit, then emphatically added, "I'm your older brother, so it's only natural that I look after the two of you."

Song Xiao Hu's heart was simultaneously filled with both warmth and woe. He stared at Ling Xia with a pair of glistening eyes, larger and darker

than the sweetest of grapes, as tears streamed down his face. No one has ever treated him this well before.

On the other hand, Yu Zhi Jue awkwardly turned his gaze to the side, and softly promised, “In the future, I’ll definitely pay you back over a thousand times.”

“Alright, I surely won’t forget,” Ling Xia replied, looking extremely pleased, and reached out to pat Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder. This time, the great sir villain surprisingly didn’t dodge, so he couldn’t help but feel ecstatic.

Yep, he needed to become a benevolent, saint-like father figure who would properly guide and nurture the villain!

[1]: what was previously known as ‘YouMing City’ switched to ‘ChongMing City’ starting this chapter; in case you’re confused, it’s the city that’s their destination
[2]: yuan, the currency used in China, and ¥100 is roughly around $15

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 6

The three of them resumed their journey, and as they got closer to ChongMing City, the roads gradually became wider, and the number of other young travelers also increased. All of them were evidently headed towards ShaoYang Sect to register, and among those seen, there were plenty of noble children wearing gorgeous and expensive clothing.

Quite a few simple tea houses were scattered on the side of the road, but the tea and refreshments they sold were at least three or four times more expensive than usual. As soon as Ling Xia saw the price, he was no longer willing to buy anything. Unfortunately, they couldn't find a creek or river nearby, so he still had to harden his heart and purchase a pot of tea for water, and in this way, the rest of his money was thoroughly spent by the end of the day.

When they reached the outskirts of ChongMing City, Ling Xia was completely struck dumb. The few kilometers surrounding the city perimeter was actually a lake with rippling waves, and countless medium and small boats were anchored near the shore. After asking for the price of a ride, it turned out to cost a startling 10 level-1 energy coins per person. If they hadn't bought any clothes, then there would have been just enough…

Song Xiao Hu also looked to be at his wits' end, involuntarily raising his head and looking towards Ling Xia.

Ling Xia warily peeked in Yu Zhi Jue's direction, fearing for the worst, but fortunately, the other boy only gazed at the water, and not a trace of anger emerged on his face.

Pretending to be calm, Ling Xia suggested, "Well, we can try asking some boatmen if we can help with the rowing."

Except, those boatmen were all strong and sturdy fellows who hoped to use this opportunity to make a quick buck, so why would they need the help of children?

Ling Xia didn’t even finish talking before one from a medium sized ship impatiently waved his hand and snarled, “You’re broke and still want a ride? Stop interfering with my business, shoo!” A few people appeared nearby, looking to rent a boat, and he hastily rushed over to welcome them with a smile.

After asking seven or eight more boats in a row and receiving the same response, Ling Xia inevitably became crestfallen; even if he could find another place to work and earn the necessary money, they were short on time right now!

Suddenly, a clear and melodious sound came from behind, and despite being filled with anxiety, Ling Xia reflexively turned around to take a look, immediately paralyzed by the sight. An enormous animal he’d never seen before was currently trotting at a steady pace and headed in this general direction, carrying a little girl about seven or eight years old on its back. What he heard earlier was precisely the sound of the bell around its neck.

This animal’s head had four horns growing out on top, was as tall as a camel, and had the lips and nose of a hippopotamus. Its dusty brown coat looked smooth and shiny, but its overall appearance was terribly ugly.

On the other hand, the girl was as pretty as a picture, and with a small stature clad from head to toe in pink, the contrast between the mount and its rider was all the more prominent.

“It’s a sinistral-steed,” a few people murmured.

As a die-hard fan, Ling Xia naturally knew about this magical beast, a level-5, considerably rare species that’s very friendly towards humans, swift as a gale in water, and capable of defending against water-based attacks. To ride this kind of magical beast, it’s clear that this petite girl’s status wasn’t common.

Ling Xia couldn’t help but start recalling the line-up to the protagonist’s massive harem, positive that the first harem member was someone Song Xiao Hu met only after he entered ShaoYang Sect… …As thoughts swirled in his mind, the sinistral-steed was already strutting their way.

Ling Xia was certainly confused. They were standing at the end of a dock, but if that sinistral-steed was planning to carry the girl on his back across the lake, wouldn't it be better to go down from the shore? Surely it wasn't planning to jump into the water from over here?

As he was baffled, that young girl jerked the reins, and surprisingly, stopped right next to where they stood.

She pointed the horsewhip in her hand at Song Xiao Hu, and asked in a somewhat haughty tone, "Oi, what's your name?"

… …Eh? What's this?

Ling Xia had no words. Sure enough, even if the protagonist was only ten years old, the formidable pheromone-filled aura he emitted was definitely a deadly weapon that attracted the opposite sex! Even if this girl was truly a bit much too young… …

Haah, the kids of the world really matured at such a tender age! As someone who's lived for twenty-four years and still hadn't even held a girl's hand yet, a certain man with the surname of Ling cried bitter tears in his heart.

Song Xiao Hu stared intently at the horsewhip that was barely a few feet away from his face, and although not very knowledgeable in the ways of the world, he still knew that the other's attitude was one that radiated extreme contempt towards himself. On top of that, at his current age, he honestly didn't have any concepts pertaining to the differences or etiquette in associating with the fairer sex. Instantly taking a step back, he retorted in annoyance, "Why should I tell you? Who are you suppose to be?"

Hearing this, a trace of fury flashed across the girl's face, but she vehemently suppressed it and said, "My name is Cui Yu. Are you all headed to ShaoYang sect for registration?"

She was facing Song Xiao Hu, yet her eyes kept surreptitiously glancing at Yu Zhi Jue.

As soon as Ling Xia heard this name, his head swelled in turmoil! Why was this high and mighty missy showing up right now?

That’s right, Cui Yu was a member of the protagonist’s harem, and putting aside just how prominent her background was, what made her unique among the harem members was that this crafty and unruly, bossy woman’s first love was the villain!

Moreover, she was the type where the more you discouraged her, the more motivated she became, and even though she ended up following the protagonist, Ling Xia felt that the one she loved most in her heart remained the villain. At the time, he was very dissatisfied and extremely annoyed at this turn of events, unable to find that headstrong, violent, and devious rich girl from the novel likable at all. And the way she fell for the protagonist wasn’t the least bit natural all right?

But it’s not like he could do anything about that wretched author being a shit and simply pawning her off onto the protagonist, fuck!

However, looking at the love triangle that’s right about to unfold before his eyes, Ling Xia harbored an undefinable urge to laugh out loud. This was clearly just three elementary students playing some childish ‘I like you, so play with me’ type of game, you know?

Yu Zhi Jue impatiently snapped at Song Xiao Hu, “Hurry up and get over here, we still need to think of a way to get across.”

He only felt loathing and disgust towards this arrogant and overbearing young girl, and after sensing her gaze, detested her even more. Therefore, he had immediately interrupted Song Xiao Hu’s conversation, then walked towards Ling Xia and stated, “Let’s ask around some more.”

Cui Yu saw the way he completely ignored her, and her fair cheeks promptly turned red. In the past, no matter where she went, everyone always welcomed her with a smile while rushing to fawn over her needs. When and where had she ever received this kind of cold shoulder?

She resentfully glared at Ling Xia and snapped the whip in her hands at him with a crack. “Out of the way, you’re blocking my path!”

Ling Xia was stunned, and even though he quickly stepped back in response, nevertheless, the tail end of the whip still slapped across his face, inflicting a stinging, burning pain. That whip was made from the skin of a level-3 magical snake, so in spite of being swung with a young girl’s strength, it left a distinct, crimson lash mark in its wake.

Fuck, who was the one that said all girls were cute? This spoiled rotten, little lass in front of him was obviously very horrid, don’t you see? This was what you call randomly attacking innocent bystanders, you know?

Song Xiao Hu immediately leapt over and angrily roared, “What are you doing? Why are you hitting people for no reason?”

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes turned cold, and a fierce, cruel tint flashed by.

Cui Yu arrogantly looked down at them from high above, and sniffed, “Who told you people to block my path?”

Ling Xia certainly wasn’t going to squabble with a kiddo on the same level as a second grader, and pulled Yu Zhi Jue back with him as he started to move further away. Without giving the protagonist a chance to respond, he urged, “Forget it, let’s think of a way to get across the lake first.”

Yep, he definitely had to properly instruct Song Xiao Hu, after all, what the other lacked in the least was harem candidates! In order to keep relations peaceful in the future, it’d be better not to recruit this one… …

Song Xiao Hu indignantly threw a glare at Cui Yu, and then walked towards Ling Xia all while biting his lips.

Ling Xia rubbed the hedgehog-like head as if to soothe his ire, tugged on the corners of his and Yu Zhi Jue’s clothes, and prepared to leave.

“Hold it!” Cui Yu yelled while staring at Yu Zhi Jue’s back. “I already told you my name, but you haven’t answered my questions yet.”

She was constantly doted upon by the elders she met, and her seniors and juniors also fell over each other to gain her favor, but none of them came even close to this young boy's beauty. Possessing such an enchanting face that bore a demeanor of pride and conceit, and despite the clothes on his body being very normal, he made her heart throb with an emotion she couldn't put into words. (Author's note: Usually, we call people like this, an M.)[1]

Ling Xia's lips twitched; you really can't mess with kids who mature early! Looks like this little Miss-High-and-Mighty wasn't planning to let things go until they handed over their names.

Song Xiao Hu still thought Cui Yu was talking to himself, so he turned around at once, stood his ground, and shouted back, "If you apologize to Elder brother Ling, I'll tell you my name."

"… …" Ling Xia was rendered speechless; ahh, my oh so innocent and adorable protagonist, thou hast clearly mistaken the lady's intentions… …

"Apologize?" Cui Yu snorted, her whip flying out faster than the wind. Song Xiao Hu reflexively dodged to the side, however, the whip changed directions midair and nimbly wrapped around his waist.

Before either Yu Zhi Jue or Ling Xia could react, Cui Yu suddenly dug her heels into the sinistral-steed's sides. Dragging Song Xiao Hu along, it jumped off the dock and into the water, the force of its huge splash instantly overturning a small boat.

By the time Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue ran to the edge of the dock, Cui Yu and the sinistral-steed had shot off like an arrow before stopping a few dozen meters away. Song Xiao Hu was choking on water, spitting and coughing nonstop as he struggled to keep afloat.

Ling Xia was seriously enraged, and cried out, "Xiao Hu, are you okay? Miss Cui Yu, hurry up and bring him back!"

Song Xiao Hu's eyes and throat were both drowning in pain, and thus unable to respond at present. Only after what seemed like an eternity did he

finally spit out a few mouthfuls of water, jerk his head above the waves, and hollered, “Elder brother Ling, Ah‘Jue, I’m okay!”

Looking pleased with herself, Cui Yu tugged on the whip and dragged him closer. She had been cultivating under her father’s guidance since a very young age and was a lot stronger than the current Song Xiao Hu. The intelligent sinistral-steed, quickly understanding her intentions, firmly wrapped its long tail around the boy’s body.

Smiling and waving towards the shore, Cui Yu smirked, “I’ll be waiting at ChongMing City’s largest restaurant for you.”

[1]: aka a masochist, and yes, this author’s note was in the raws

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 7

Watching the silhouettes on the water disappear into the distance, Ling Xia really couldn't keep a lid on his temper.

Even if he knew Cui Yu was only somewhat unruly and willful, and Song Xiao Hu was unlikely to encounter any life-threatening situations, but getting dragged into the water earlier was still very dangerous. If he had been a normal person, he could have very likely lost his life right then and there! What they needed to do at once was to quickly find a way into the city and rescue him from that reckless and bossy, stuck-up little missy.

The other boatmen had already helped the unfortunate, overturned boat's captain back to shore. They had grown accustomed to seeing these tyrannical and lawless disciples of prestigious sects, and once that young girl was out of sight, inevitably started to curse lividly.

This event seemed to have created an atmosphere of the-enemy-of-my-enemy-is-my-friend, so another captain suddenly called out to Ling Xia, "Oi, you lads still looking for a ride?"

Ling Xia was overjoyed, and after thanking him, promptly grabbed Yu Zhi Jue and jumped aboard.

The scenery around this part of the lake was quite beautiful, the water reflecting the sky in a wash of rippling blues. Sitting on the stern as bursts of refreshing and wet winds stimulated his senses was an additional pleasure, thus the fretful knot in Ling Xia's heart gradually loosened as well.

Besides the two of them, four or five other youngsters were also on the boat, probably all headed for ShaoYang Sect to register. Presently, they were chatting up a storm about the registration process, ShaoYang Sect's famous disciples, and other such topics.

Ling Xia diligently listened, and because he had forgotten many of the details written in the novel, committed everything he deemed important to his memory.

This boat moved via manpower, but the pair of oarsmen were strong, robust, and almost two meters tall, so their speed wasn't that slow. After rowing for about an hour, they had reached the center of the lake.

At this precise moment, a large ship came up from behind, traveling at a speed significantly faster than theirs.

Out of curiosity, Ling Xia observed them for quite a while. Standing at the bow of the ship were a few youngsters in embroidered clothing, the oldest looking around twenty years old and the youngest around twelve or thirteen. All of them wore identical, long white robes trimmed with gold, most likely members of the same sect. Ling Xia was partially blinded by the light reflecting off their clothes, and as a result, couldn't clearly see their faces.

However, he never expected that the large ship would actually come rushing straight at them!

The passengers on their boat couldn't hold in their panicked cries as that ship approached in violent waves. It was bigger than their small boat by at least five or six times, so if it crashed into them, wouldn't they end up drowning in the middle of this lake?

Ling Xia couldn't hide his anxiety either, frantically looked left and right, then swiftly gathered Yu Zhi Jue to his chest with one arm while the other wrapped around a wooden cask. He felt the small body in his embrace sharply tense up, so he lowered his head and reassuringly murmured, "Don't be afraid, I know how to swim… …"

Watching that large ship come closer and closer, Ling Xia involuntarily closed his eyes in response, waiting for the moment of impact. However, the anticipated calamity never came to pass.

Unable to endure further, he opened his eyes and saw a pair of flashing, black orbs glaring furiously at him from within his arms.

Yu Zhi Jue's voice was part rigid and part monotone as he gritted out, "Still not letting go?!"

Although he sounded fierce and hostile, his face was slowly turning red.

Ling Xia quickly released him, and turning his head, saw that the large ship had unexpectedly stopped barely a few feet away!

Wearing an expression of having escaped from death by the skin of their teeth, everyone on their boat slowly stood back up. The boatmen looked ready to let loose a barrage of insults, but seeing the clothing and ornaments of the people on the ship, they no longer dared and could only privately curse this rotten luck.

"You punks on the stern!" hollered a young boy about twelve or thirteen, sweeping his gaze across the others on the small boat before swiftly locking onto Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue.

Ling Xia couldn't help but find it strange; they're actually looking for himself? He carefully scrutinized the people on the large ship and confirmed that he had definitely never seen any of them before.

Faced with a complete lack of reaction, that young boy seemed to get angry and roared, "Oi, I'm talking to you two!"

Ling Xia inwardly grimaced, pulling along Yu Zhi Jue to walk closer as he politely inquired, "Fellow traveler, may I ask for what reason you called out to us?"

That young boy deliberately looked at them from head to toe, then turned up his nose and loudly sniffed in their direction, making Ling Xia even more perplexed.

When did he offend this arrogant young master?

On the contrary, the twenty-year-old young man who seemed to be the group's leader asked more courteously, "Have the two of you seen our youngest junior sister? We heard those on the shore say that she left with one your friends. Could you tell us what exactly transpired?"

Even though his tone was genteel, it was as clear as day that he did not have the slightest inclination of introducing himself, nor did he hold the two of them in any regard. Moreover, it was obviously Cui Yu who kidnapped Song Xiao Hu away by force, but coming from his mouth, how did it become the two of them leaving together?

Ling Xia felt resentful in his heart, but at least he finally identified that these people ought to be Cui Yu's fellow seniors. Recruiting disciples was a complex affair for any sect, and every time it happened, they would invite people from neighboring sects as additional support. These people from YunXiao City were probably the ones invited this time.

And Cui Yu's father was precisely the governor of YunXiao City. YunXiao City was one of the most famous cities on this continent, rising to fame from its refinement of magical tools, their prestige far above that of ShaoYang Sect's. In other words, Cui Yu's position was at least equivalent to that of a provincial-level Party Committee Secretary 's daughter.

In the novel, the plot revolving around YunXiao City was essentially cannon-fodder central headquarters, and there was even a senior mob character that liked Miss-High-and-Mighty Cui Yu. Who knows if he's one of the people here or not… …

In any case, fighting with the protagonist over girls is an exercise in futility!

The young man who spoke more politely was YunXiao City's second disciple, Mo Dai. This youngest junior sister of his was dainty and willful, but due to her youth, her cultivation was still in the earliest stages. The entire way here, she kept running ahead on her sinistral-steed while constantly stirring up trouble, making this senior brother who was leading the group to ShaoYang Sect wind up enduring a lot of hardships.

If the darling apple of his master’s eyes so much as bruised herself while walking, it’d result in him suffering the punishment when they returned! He had already made discreet inquiries about what happened at the lakeside and knows that it was his youngest junior sister who provoked others first; honestly, he doesn’t understand what that pampered and spoiled miss was even thinking. Although these two youngsters had very good looks, their clothes were extremely ordinary, especially the older one who was basically wearing the same thing as a beggar! Presumably, they both hailed from the common masses, possessing nothing special or worthy of notice.

As Ling Xia was about to respond, Yu Zhi Jue beat him to the punch and coldly replied, “I didn’t see anyone leave with my friend. However, I did see a vicious woman snatch my friend away by force.”

“… …” Ling Xia experienced a momentarily lapse in strength. Pretending he didn’t hear Yu Zhi Jue’s words, he smiled and answered differently, “Yes, we have. She said she was going to ChongMing City’s largest restaurant. I assumed she’s already reached there by now, so if the rest of you could—”

However, that twelve or thirteen-year-old boy’s complexion had already turned ugly, interrupting Ling Xia’s words as he snarled at Yu Zhi Jue, “What did you just say?”

Yu Zhi Jue gave him a glance but didn’t speak again, simply turning around before calmly and languidly walking away.

“Hold it!” that youngster furiously demanded at once. He twisted his neck and declared to Mo Dai, “Senior brother, that brat’s words were clearly slandering Youngest junior sister. I’m going to teach him a lesson!”

Mo Dai knew that this junior brother habitually and immensely spoiled their youngest junior sister. He did not want to bear the accusation of leading the strong to bully the weak, not to mention, it was truly youngest junior sister who was at fault. Therefore, he appeased, “Shang Yan, forget it. What we should do right now is find Youngest junior sister as soon as possible.”

The large ship began bypassing the smaller boat, but that young boy never stopped glowering at Yu Zhi Jue with indignation and resentment.

Hearing Mo Dai say this somewhat familiar sounding name, the stress lines on Ling Xia's forehead was not limited to just three or four anymore. That's why he was asking, just how early did the troublesome fledglings of this world start maturing?! Wasn't this literally one of the small-fry mob characters who would fight against the protagonist as a love rival in the future?

After the two vessels completely passed by each other, Shang Yan suddenly took out a magical tool, and in a flash, a streak of lightning struck down on the small boat's hull.

This magical tool was a lightning attribute device personally made by the master of YunXiao City and had immeasurable power. Shang Yan's cultivation was still shallow, capable of bringing out less than one tenth of its might, but that was more than sufficient enough to pierce a washbasin-sized hole through the bottom of the boat.

Mo Dai's brows instantly scrunched up, but seeing that no one was struck, proceeded to slap the top of Shang Yan's head as he warned, "You rapscallion, be careful of Master finding out and punishing you!"

Shang Yan hastily lowered his head and put away the magical tool, beaming, "Then I'll have to trouble Senior brother to take responsibility on my behalf!"

Mo Dai helplessly chuckled, and did not look back again.

Watching the large ship gradually sail away, Ling Xia really, really wanted to let loose and curse him till his ears bled. No wonder you're just cannon-fodder trash! Better watch yourself and not get annihilated by my li'l bro, the protagonist!

The oarsmen promptly tried to plug up the hole, but there wasn't anything suitable to use on the boat, and after a short while, the water level had risen to cover one's feet.

This incident more or less originated because of himself, so Ling Xia nimbly lied down to use his own body as a plug as he somewhat sheepishly apologized, “We’re truly very sorry, please quickly set sail. Ah‘Jue, go help with bailing out water.”

The captain started screaming and yelling at Ling Xia, cursing that large ship one moment then Ling Xia the next. The other passengers all stared at the two of them with varying shades of resentment, but currently, they were still far from the shore, so it was obvious that the most important matter was how to safely dock on land.

Without a hint of fearing for his own life, Ling Xia pressed his body downwards while saying to the boatmen, “My apologies. Although we don’t have money at the moment, but after we enter ShaoYang Sect in the future, we’ll definitely repay the full amount of this boat, so please don’t worry.”

One of the other passengers immediately sneered, “You sure talk big! How do you know for certain that ShaoYang Sect will accept you? What’s more, when the boat sinks later, it’s not even guaranteed if we’ll live or die!”

However, cursing was just cursing and complaints were only complaints, and in the end, no one on board ever stopped moving their hands to scoop out water.

Unfortunately, this hole was really too big. By the time they could faintly see the coastline, the water in the ship’s hold had reached one’s knees, and finally, Ling Xia could continue his efforts no more. One after another, everyone else had already jumped into the water, swimming with all their might towards the shore. Left with no other choice, he also got up, grabbed Yu Zhi Jue, and jumped off as well.

Even though Ling Xia currently possessed colossal strength, he only knew an elementary-level dog paddle. After a short while, he ended up dizzy and disoriented from choking on too much water, and his four limbs subsequently began to lose their strength. He looked at how Yu Zhi Jue was swimming ahead, the other’s movements as smooth and lively as if performing an effortless exercise.

He opened his mouth intending to sigh, but with a *glug glug*, ended up swallowing a few mouthfuls of water instead. His nose and mouth fell below the surface, immediately cutting off his air supply. After enduring for another interval, he felt his body grow heavy beyond recognition, as if he was constrained with metal weights that dragged him deeper and deeper……

A hand abruptly braced itself under his armpit and tugged upwards. Ling Xia opened his eyes and struggled, wanting to use that force of momentum to float back to the surface. Unfortunately, the other's strength was really too weak, and the two of them conversely got tangled up, sinking even lower.

Looking at the Yu Zhi Jue that was within arm's reach, the warmth and shock of being blessed by a higher authority practically overwhelmed Ling Xia; to think that the great sir villain actually came to save him? Be that as it may, he had completely run out of oxygen, and his brain was suffocating on the verge of exploding with pain!

Could it be that he transmigrated over just to die at the bottom of a lake, entirely before the plot even started to pick up?

Urged by an intense desire to live, inspiration struck Ling Xia like a crash of lightning as he suddenly remembered a certain fact: Yu Zhi Jue's body contained water elemental energy!

In other words, Yu Zhi Jue was capable of breathing freely under water!

Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he used the last of his strength to pull Yu Zhi Jue towards himself, and pressed his lips forth…

Big bro isn't doing it on purpose, big bro just doesn't want to die! Please forgive this big bro ahhhhhh!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 8

As soon as he raised his head, Yu Zhi Jue saw a pair of large, puckered up, morning glory-shaped lips headed towards himself. Albeit he didn't know what Ling Xia was planning to do, a shudder of dread ran up his back, and his fist started moving before his thoughts could catch up.

A thin, slender right arm swung out at full strength, its sudden and explosive might astonishingly powerful. Yu Zhi Jue's fist smashed directly into Ling Xia's right cheek, immediately sending the other flying many feet away despite the water resistance.

By the time Yu Zhi Jue came back to his senses, Ling Xia had already become a motionless, floating corpse, completely knocked out cold.

"… …" After a moment of silence, Yu Zhi Jue rapidly swam over, gripped Ling Xia's collar, and started kicking his legs to return to the surface.

When he received that shock just a moment ago, the strength within his body that had nearly been depleted was miraculously replenished, as if the water contained countless minute and invisible energy particles that steadily flowed into his body.

In spite of that, Yu Zhi Jue was panting for breath by the time they broke through the surface, and treading water while forcefully slapping Ling Xia's face, he growled, "Oi, wake up! So useless!"

In a daze, Ling Xia slowly opened his eyes, and the first thing he felt was the burning pain in his cheeks, almost as if they were on fire. He was somewhat puzzled, but quickly remembered his present situation. Without another moment of delay, he followed Yu Zhi Jue and started to swim with all his might towards the shore.

From time to time, Yu Zhi Jue would give him a supportive tug, and Ling Xia gritted his teeth and paddled forward as if his life depended on it, until

at long last, they finally reached dry land. The two of them were exhausted beyond all means, sprawling listlessly on the shore without even an ounce of strength left.

Ling Xia touched his face, positive that it must have swollen up to the size of a swine's head! He thoroughly recalled the incident in the water earlier, and then immediately rejoiced to no end.

At that time, he had lost his mind to anxiety, but it was really fortuitous that he didn't end up smacking on a big one! If he actually had, then just having his head turn into a swollen swine's probably wouldn't have been enough to settle that kind of disaster!

He carefully and cautiously sneaked Yu Zhi Jue a glimpse. The great sir villain's hair that was normally tied up neatly had come apart in the water, and the wet and smooth, long, ink black hair fell upon his shoulders in a slightly disheveled manner, plastering against jade-like skin and alluringly pursed lips alike. His almond-shaped, upturned eyes bore a touch of grandeur paired with the crimson as blood mole below the corner of his eye, and even though he was still very young, he already faintly possessed the ambiance of one destined to rule.

Yu Zhi Jue peered back at him, and feeling slightly guilty, Ling Xia lowered his gaze.

The others who were shipwrecked with them had long since climbed ashore and were also resting in the vicinity, each and every one of them cursing up a storm.

One of the boatmen ran over, pointed to Ling Xia, and shouted angrily, "You dirty little brat! I've remembered you! Give me back my boat!"

Ling Xia threw up a few mouthfuls of water, then in a coaxing manner, piled on a bucket-load of kind and flattering sweet-talk while fishing out the remaining few energy coins he had. Even like so, that boatman still relentlessly and invasively searched through his clothes, and only after confirming that he really didn't have any more money, did the matter finally get dropped.

The other boatman headed towards Yu Zhi Jue, intending to search the younger boy next. Yu Zhi Jue frigidly lifted his head, fists tightly clenching in response as a thread of malice flashed through his eyes. This scene struck a chill into both the boatmen's hearts and they hesitated, somehow not daring to continue forward.

Ling Xia, also frightened by how Yu Zhi Jue's glare was fiercer and more vicious than even a savage wolf's, quickly pulled the boy behind his back. He knew without a shred of doubt that if these boatmen advanced, Yu Zhi Jue would definitely retaliate on the spot!

This was also his first time encountering such an awkward situation, so he could only apologize and make promises again and again, continuing his appeal until his throat became dry and parched. In the end, he had to write an IOU signed with his name, and only then did the boat's captain let them leave.

In any case, they'd have to ride a boat in order to leave the city, and furthermore, if they really do get accepted as ShaoYang Sect's disciples, the captain wouldn't have to worry about them being unable to pay him back. Thus, he couldn't force and push these kids too ferociously for the time being.

When they finally made their official entrance into ChongMing City, both Ling Xia's body and mind were extremely worn out, and he felt not even the slightest trace of excitement or energy.

Worried about Song Xiao Hu, he hastily asked where the best restaurant in ChongMing City was, then urgently rushed towards its location with Yu Zhi Jue in tow.

Quite a few people on the roads turned around to stare at Ling Xia in shock, but the person in question didn't notice it at all. While his current skin couldn't compare with Yu Zhi Jue's white as snow and delicate as porcelain complexion, it was still fairer than the average person's, and therefore, the swollen fingerprints blossoming on his cheeks were particularly eye-catching.

Yu Zhi Jue brooded for a while before finally opening his mouth, his tone containing traces of inquiry and suspicion as he asked, “Earlier, under the water, what were you trying to do?”

Ling Xia’s hurried footsteps abruptly slowed, his startled heart slamming against his rib cage as it began to thump faster and louder.

What should he say? That in order to save his own life, he almost took a bite out of the great sir villain’s precious and noble lips? Would he still be able to see the sunrise tomorrow after that? … …

Such an unsuitable topic for children, of course he can’t disclose it to this wee little villain! Besides, how would he explain his knowledge of Yu Zhi Jue having water elemental energy inside his body?

Hence, he solemnly lied, “A fish swam into my mouth, and I wanted to spit it out.”

“… …” Yu Zhi Jue imagined that for a bit, scrunched up his brows in disgust, and then immediately pulled away to increase the distance between Ling Xia and himself.

ChongMing City was very big, and its most famous restaurant was called Cloud Gazing Pavilion. When Ling Xia saw how it was constructed to look like it floated high in the clouds while wrapped in mist, he was inevitably struck dumb for an instant. Something like this was indeed deserving of its phenomenal reputation! Only, the people going in and out of the restaurant were all either children of aristocratic and prestigious families or outstanding and refined members of famous sects, so before Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue could even enter the door, someone came forth and blocked their path, keeping them outside.

Ling Xia promptly revealed a standard, friendly smile and inquired, “Sir, may I ask if there is a young lady with a sinistral-steed currently within this establishment?”

The waiters of Cloud Gazing Pavilion had all cultivated to some extent, and with one look at Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue’s apparel, he knew that they

were children from poor families here for ShaoYang Sect's registration. Noting the fingerprints adorned across Ling Xia's face, his inner contempt grew as he replied lazily, "Indeed, there was a young lady riding a sinistral-steed who came here, but she already left an hour ago."

Ling Xia blinked, then thanked him courteously as the waiter walked back into the building without sparing them another glance. If Ling Xia's hypothesis was correct, the people from YunXiao City must have already come. No matter how unruly and willful Cui Yu was, she feared her father's punishment, so it was highly likely that she was forced to leave with her seniors. Since they came here for the purpose of supporting ShaoYang Sect, he could only go to ShaoYang Sect to continue the search.

Just as he was contemplating, Yu Zhi Jue suddenly spoke up, and a voice evidently laced with criticism questioned, "When they treat you like this, how can you still smile back like that?"

Without thinking any deeper, Ling Xia asked in return, "They?"

"The previous two boatmen," Yu Zhi Jue answered while diligently observing his reactions, "plus the waiter just now."

In addition to that, he had slapped Ling Xia's face so many times earlier, so how could the other not be the least bit angry?

Looking at the great sir villain's slightly narrowed eyes that shined with utmost seriousness, Ling Xia quickly focused his mind in concentration, then slowly replied, "That boat sinking was also partly due to our circumstances. It was those boatmen's means to make a living, so how could they not be mad? That they allowed us to leave is already something to be thankful for. Likewise, did that waiter not inform us of what we asked? They also have the shop's regulations to consider… …"

Noticing how the great sir villain still looked at him with doubts, he quickly smiled warmly and continued, "Even if other people don't treat you well, you still have to give a them smile. Persevering in this way, one day there will eventually be someone who will return your smile! Although a lot

of unfair things exist in this world, most people and matters are nevertheless very wonderful… …”

Ling Xia carefully recalled the YiLin[1] life philosophy books he’d read before, and since this body’s vocal timbre was pretty good, decided to use an even softer and gentler tone to pleasantly persist in his guidance.

…Ahh, my dear, small and cheeky villain, just follow the protagonist and frolic under the sun together! That’s the true path in life you know!!!

The more Ling Xia preached, the more passionate he became, nearly to the point of shedding tears from his own eyes.

However, even though he talked until his mouth was dry and throat was parched, as soon as he earnestly and expectantly focused his gaze back onto the great sir villain, his expression crumbled.

Yu Zhi Jue’s entire face was full of disdain and contempt, looking at him as if he was witnessing something unbelievably moronic as he scorned, “You really can’t tell, huh. Even though you may be older, but your brain is filled with even stupider and more useless things than Song Xiao Hu’s!”

He continued, “If other people don’t treat me well, all I have to do is treat them tens of thousands of times worse. …As for whether other people smile at me or not, are nice to me or not, as if I should care?”

“… …” Ling Xia involuntarily rubbed the fiery, stinging fingerprints on his face as that unforgettable line once again flashed before his eyes:

This kind of repulsive world… …should be utterly destroyed…

Why. Must. You. Be. Like. This!

[1]: I believe this is a brand of educational books in China, correct me if I’m wrong

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 9

In any case, an occupation in education means bearing heavy responsibilities while walking a long road of struggles, so from now on, he had better not lecture about these kinds of broad, general principles that can sound nonsensical. Even when Ling Xia was imparting those words, his brain kept bringing up an image of Missus Ni Ping‘s mechanical look of being bored stiff…

He still had a lot of confidence in his ability to rehabilitate the villain though. While Yu Zhi Jue might say these kinds of words, the boy didn’t abandon him back at the lake and was also concerned about Song Xiao Hu’s safety. This proves that he definitely wasn’t as heartless and indifferent as he claims to be, and at the very least, has a sense of companionship.

The location of ShaoYang Sect’s registration event wasn’t hard to find because all one had to do was head to where it was most crowded. Ling Xia asked around a bit and learned that all the specially invited guests were staying in ShaoYang Sect’s inner VIP rooms. Right now, there was no way they’d be allowed to go inside to search for someone.

Ling Xia could only register first, receiving three talismans labeled with a handwritten registration number that fortunately didn’t come with a fee.

On a different note, the fact that people were bustling around everywhere proved to be quite an inconvenience. Without a cent to their name and failing to find even a single pile of straw, ultimately, the two of them had to huddle in a corner and make do with sleeping through the night in discomfort.

In the middle of the night, Ling Xia noticed how tiny and pitiful Yu Zhi Jue’s sleeping body looked curled up against the wall, so he gently moved the boy to his lap and contributed his thigh as a pillow. When he woke up at dawn, he was greeted with a pair of eyes being rolled at him, and responded to this juvenile, ungratefully rude brat with a tolerant and forgiving smile, all while heavily massaging his completely numbed thigh.

The morning of their second day began with grabbing their registration talismans and going straight to the examination site on empty stomachs. Ling Xia mentally stabilized his spirit and mind, then pulled Yu Zhi Jue along in following the large crowd as it spilled into the venue, constantly glancing in every direction in hopes of spotting Song Xiao Hu's figure.

There were over a thousand people who registered and Yu Zhi Jue was considered one of the youngest. The majority were between fifteen and twenty years old, and a few over thirty had come as well.

The setting of this world was one where the strong ruled over the weak, and also, the stronger you were, the longer you could live. For example, by the time Yu Zhi Jue's parents died, his old man was around two hundred while his mother was a little over sixty; if that wasn't robbing the cradle, then he didn't know what was. Normal people who haven't cultivated can at most live to their seventies or eighties, and usually, whether or not a person was suitable for cultivation was determined before they turned thirty. This time, ShaoYang Sect's age restriction was thirty-five and below.

There wasn't any sort of opening ceremony, and everyone was simply divided into groups and led away by the many supervising disciples. The two of them were split into different ones, but Ling Xia wasn't worried since he knew the first round was just a test of one's fundamental essence and potential, such as if your body contained power elementals or how capable you were physically, similar to a health checkup. But despite having this sense of security, Ling Xia still couldn't resist fussing over Yu Zhi Jue and saying a few words, and albeit the other wore an expression of impatience, his efforts were not rebuffed.

Every group had fifty people, and ShaoYang Sect disciples led each of them to a different small testing station. This world's cultivation process wasn't limited to just the five elementals, so as long as there was a single area you excelled in, you'd be able to pass this test.

Because Ling Xia possessed Herculean Strength, he quickly passed through the first round. In addition to that, when he touched the testing tool that amplified one's energy a hundredfold, the power elementals residing in

his body had reacted, and a small seed appeared within the cup like magic before slowly sprouting two tender leaves.

He was ecstatic, never having thought that this body would also contain wood elemental energy.

Although wood elemental energy wasn't as formidable in attack power as lightning, fire, or water elementals, nevertheless, it was representative of life and a rarely seen attribute. High-level wood elemental divergent-skill cultivators could not only shorten the growth period of spiritual plants, but could also raise its survival and recovery rates. In other words, every high-level wood elemental cultivator could rely on selling spiritual plants to become a bona fide, filthy rich tycoon!

In this world, although taking medicinal drugs wasn't as effective as in other cultivation novels, it still had many benefits that could help with one's advancement.

Of course, receiving a positive feedback for an elemental energy doesn't necessarily guarantee you'd have the strength to leave your mark in this realm, but in his selective optimism, Ling Xia overlooked this point.

In every batch of fifty that were tested, about ten would pass, and after Ling Xia reported his name and registration number, he immediately went to the rest area to meet up with Yu Zhi Jue. Later on, someone will come inform them of the details for the next round of exams.

When Ling Xia spotted Yu Zhi Jue from far away, his scalp promptly started prickling. Yu Zhi Jue was currently in a mutual glaring contest with a fifteen or sixteen-year-old boy who wore extravagant clothing and carried a long sword on his back, surrounded by a crowd of curious, busybody onlookers.

A large section of Yu Zhi Jue's lapel was ripped off, and the person himself seemed on the verge of lashing out… … Ling Xia hurried on over, squeezing his way through the crowd and positioned himself in front of Yu Zhi Jue. He politely cupped his hands in salute and asked, "Fellow compeer, this is my family's younger brother. Has something happen?"

That youngster sized up Ling Xia's appearance and attire in disdain, surmised that he was from a poor family with no backing, and instantly sneered, "Why don't you ask that cute little brother of yours? Clothes like that, it's worth what, at most a few level-1 energy coins? If this much isn't enough, then I don't mind giving you a few more."

As soon as he finished talking, he threw a handful of level-2 energy coins at Ling Xia's feet without a care. Ling Xia looked down, and sure enough, seven or eight genuine coins were littered on the ground.

A level-2 energy coin was equivalent to ten level-1 energy coins; that guy sure was generous with his money.

Although he wasn't sure what exactly happened, but from the looks of it, it shouldn't have been Yu Zhi Jue's fault. Even for Ling Xia, the other's insulting tone and actions irritated and angered him to no end, so when it came to Yu Zhi Jue, whose arrogance and pride could rival that of phoenixes, how could it be different?

Having this kind of asinine attitude, that guy was definitely even more of a mob than the already very mob character "ErDan"… …

Thinking of it like this, Ling Xia's anger rapidly dissipated, and he smiled in response, "That won't be necessary. My younger brother's shirt is only worth a few level-1 energy coins, and your money would be better off safely stored in your own pockets. Besides, we'll be part of the same sect from now on, so by no means would we dare accept these coins."

Finished speaking, Ling Xia tugged on Yu Zhi Jue, planning to squeeze back out and leave this crowded place.

During the first round of exams, Yu Zhi Jue was directly ahead of that youngster in line. He had a very high, rarely found even in a hundred years aptitude, and achieved top evaluations in pretty much all the tests. That youngster was called Xu Yan, and came to ShaoYang Sect on a recommendation from a smaller school. His participation in this qualifying exam was only for show; in fact, it had already been decided behind the

scenes that he would become a disciple to one of ShaoYang Sect's famous sword cultivators.

Xu Yan had always been conceited and was used to looking down on people from high above, so seeing how the boy in front him was much younger but had talents far above his own, feelings of jealousy inevitably exploded. Thus, during one of the tests, he damaged Yu Zhi Jue's clothes on purpose.

Even though Yu Zhi Jue didn't realize it was done intentionally, but thinking back to the scene of an exhausted Ling Xia laboring tirelessly in order to earn money to buy himself and Song Xiao Hu clothes, he inadvertently became furious.

Anxious above all else that the other wouldn't react, Xu Yan deliberately followed up with even more provocative actions in hopes of luring Yu Zhi Jue into fighting back. As long as Yu Zhi Jue threw the first punch, the ShaoYang Sect supervisors in charge of maintaining peace and order would definitely expel him from the examination grounds. As for himself, he already had a back-door pass that ensured his future.

He watched Ling Xia pull Yu Zhi Jue away, but right now, even he didn't have the guts to go too overboard; after all, so many pairs of eyes were observing their every move. Recalling Yu Zhi Jue's fierce and viciously ruthless expression earlier, his heart shuddered lightly in fear. He'd already offended the other party, so if they both remained at ShaoYang Sect, then in the future… …

Finding somewhere quiet and peaceful came with great difficulty, but once they did, Ling Xia immediately started to examine Yu Zhi Jue's body and asked with worry, "Aside from your clothes, are you hurt elsewhere?"

Unaccustomed to the attention, Yu Zhi Jue took a few steps back in avoidance, clenched his fists, and coldly retorted, "As if! Hmph, if it wasn't for you showing up… …"

Ling Xia was also vexed into distress, spontaneously rapping the other's head as he scolded, "Stupid! If I hadn't shown up, were you planning on

fighting with him? He's almost a whole head taller than you, and with one look at the sword on his back, you can tell that he's a sword cultivator, all right? You want to have your qualifications stripped and be expelled from the examination grounds?"

He let out a helpless sigh, rubbed his temples, then sighed again, "Resorting to physical violence, especially brute force, is the stupidest method out of them all! Don't tell me you didn't know that?"

Standing there as if he didn't know what to do, Yu Zhi Jue touched the part of his forehead that was struck and stared at Ling Xia with a touch of disbelief. "You, you actually dared… …"

Seeing this resentfully indignant and somewhat chagrined look on Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia really found it quite funny.

The great sir villain was honestly so childishly cute right now!

This tiny, steam bun-faced brat was currently just a dumb little thing who only knew how to use brute force, that's all. Compared to the ruthless, viciously greedy, demonic, and madly violent tyrant in the novel, their differences were like night and day… …

Yu Zhi Jue grew up in YuNü Sect, a place with strict and old-fashioned rules, and where that mother-only-in-name of his and other disciples treated him worse than dirt. If they weren't hitting him, then they were yelling at him, and even after he escaped, he had wandered around alone for the most part. In other words, Yu Zhi Jue really hadn't encountered that many opportunities to experience and learn how to normally interact with people.

Becoming aware of this fact, Ling Xia felt a tinge of regret and drew back his hand, letting out a single cough. "What I'm trying to say is, you still have a lot to learn. Even if a person is extremely detestable, if you display your emotions so freely on your face, wouldn't that be the same as giving them a chance to guard against you?"

…Shit! That didn't sound like something you're supposed to teach good little children!

Yu Zhi Jue lowered his arm, looking thoughtful. “I see, so that’s why. Even if you usually smile a lot, not all of those smiles were real. If you let other people know your mood, conversely, it becomes disadvantageous to yourself. The best course of action would be to hide your intentions, seek out the most suitable opportunity, and then think of a way to achieve your goal, right?”

Faced with this great sir villain who took two lines of advice and inferred four others in between, Ling Xia momentarily didn’t know how to respond.

As expected, someone like him who only knew theories from books wasn’t qualified enough to shoulder the majestically noble and gloriously honorable position of educating the villain!

Fuck this! ┬┬ ┬┬

After some time, he stiffly nodded his head and replied, “Not entirely correct…but in essence, if people don’t offend you, you shouldn’t offend them. If someone tries to take advantage of you, you should neither be blindly soft-hearted nor indiscriminately heartless. You must keep in mind that there are times when a direct approach may not be as strong or effective as an indirect one, and returning force head-on with force is the most foolish course of action. Moreover, even if you come to stand above others, you must remember that everyone makes mistakes and allow forgiveness when viable. This would also serve in helping yourself gain additional back-up options… …”

Yu Zhi Jue pensively lowered his eyes, and a short while later, raised his head to faintly smile at Ling Xia, and said, “I understand.”

Seeing this rare smile from Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia finally relaxed and exhaled a sigh of relief at long last. He patted Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder and grinned back, “Then that’s good.”

“Elder brother Ling, Ah‘Jue!”

Hearing this familiar voice, Ling Xia turned around like a shot. Sure enough, Song Xiao Hu’s conspicuous hedgehog-like hair was currently

making his way towards them through the crowd in excitement, the two dimples on his cheeks flickering with every smile. What surprised him though was the presence of a charming and cute eleven or twelve-year-old girl that followed behind Song Xiao Hu, someone entirely different from that devious and unruly Miss-High-and-Mighty Cui Yu from before.

Dayum, as expected of the protagonist who attracted girls faster than honey attracted bees!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 10

Dragging along the noisy and uncooperative Song Xiao Hu really irritated Miss-High-and-Mighty Cui Yu, so without much thought, she tied him up and threw him into one of ShaoYang Sect's firewood storehouses. Song Xiao Hu struggled free from the ropes by himself, but he couldn't break down the locked, metal door. As he continuously shouted for help, by a stroke of luck, that young girl heard him while passing by. After she clearly understood his circumstances and why he was there, she immediately brought him to the examination grounds.

Listening to Song Xiao Hu's simple explanation, Ling Xia carefully observed the young girl who wore emerald green clothes. With curved eyebrows and very white skin, and you could tell with one look that she would be a beauty in the future. Moreover, being able to boldly and openly bring Song Xiao Hu into this restricted area, her identity definitely wasn't ordinary.

The young girl, contrary to what one might expect, naturally and unreservedly introduced herself, saying that her name was Feng Luo.

Ling Xia instantly recognized her; she was the first member of the protagonist's future harem! The most beloved treasure of the leader of ShaoYang Sect, the daughter of the governor of ChongMing City. He couldn't resist inwardly retorting, why did all the sect leaders have to have an eligible and unwed daughter?

Song Xiao Hu looked at the surroundings a bit dejectedly and lamented, "Is the first round already over? I still came too late."

Feng Luo grinned, "That's not a problem, I can bring you over to take the test right now. I'll explain things to my senior brother, no worries."

Song Xiao Hu's mouth promptly split into a wide smile as he exclaimed, "Thank you so much!"

Standing to the side, Ling Xiao was full of interest as he regarded this lad-and-lass pair's sincere conversation, sighing in his heart: Sure enough, this is what youth is… …

Looking at Feng Luo leading Song Xiao Hu away, Ling Xia said to Yu Zhi Jue with a smile, "Yep, this Feng Luo is pretty nice, perhaps you can all become good friends."

The great sir villain's warped views on love originated from his love-hate, mutually destructive parents, but if he interacted and came into more contact with enthusiastic, cheerful girls like Feng Luo, it's possible that those views could be corrected after a short period of time.

However, Yu Zhi Jue's reaction was only to frown and wrinkle his brows, directly turning away his head. His entire body language could be summed up in two words: No way.

"… …"

Song Xiao Hu finally came back before the start of the second round, naturally having passed the first round of tests. In addition to that, he said that Feng Luo had promised him that he'd definitely be able to join ShaoYang Sect.

Ling Xia silently sighed in his heart: Ahh, the protagonist really was impressive, to win over a girl this quickly!

The second round of exams tested an applicant's comprehensive abilities, requiring all of them to pass through ShaoYang Sect's treasured Thousands Beasts Forest within 20 hours and either capture a level-3 or above magical beast, find a level-2 or above energy stone, or gather a level-3 or above spiritual plant.

As its name implies, Thousands Beasts Forest has all sorts of dangerous creatures, as well as containing countless rare and precious energy stones and spiritual plants. In consideration to the levels of the applicants, the seniors of ShaoYang Sect set up a boundary barrier within Thousands

Beasts Forest so the examination grounds covered only zones without high-level magical beasts.

Ling Xia was worried about the assigned tasks the most because he did not have a clue on how to recognize any of those so-called spiritual plants or magical beasts, alright? Having grown up in spiritually barren and normal mountainous woods, Song Xiao Hu wouldn't know either… …

As if noticing what he was worrying about, Yu Zhi Jue calmly said, "I know what they look like."

He never forgot anything he saw, and even though the women of YuNü Sect guarded against him in all sorts of ways during his time there, he still saw the spiritual plants they cultivated in the medicine fields and had secretly read some books about energy stones and magical beasts. Of course, he had only the most basic of knowledge since there was no way he could come in contact with any of precious or ancient books collected on Holy Maiden Peak, but it should still be enough to help.

Ling Xia rejoiced immediately, and Song Xiao Hu looked at Yu Zhi Jue with admiration as he praised, "Ah'Jue, you're so amazing."

Under the other two's gazes, Yu Zhi Jue suddenly felt awkward and twisted his head to one side, saying, "This isn't anything to be amazed about, the other people here probably know it too."

Before going inside the forest, everyone received a mid-level transfer talisman, so if someone ran across a dangerous situation they couldn't handle, they could choose to give up. Once the transfer talisman is ripped, one would be able to leave and be teleported back to the starting point.

This was considered a fairly human regulation since during the course of the exam, it was very likely to encounter life-threatening situations. After all, this world certainly didn't have anything like law enforcement, and all the rules were set by the largest sect in charge of the area.

That is what this world was like, where power and survival of the fittest was the law, and one's strength determined everything.

Ling Xia very carefully put his transfer talisman into the inner pocket of his sleeve, while Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue both thoughtlessly stuffed theirs into their lapels. Shaking his head at this scene, LingXia hastily helped Song Xiao Hu place his safely inside a pocket. However, Yu Zhi Jue subsequently flicked his transfer talisman to the ground, then declared, “In any case, I won’t be using this.”

Song Xiao Hu’s eyes widened, and with determination he also announced, “I won’t use it either. If I give up because of meeting danger, then I might as well not go in at all.”

“… …” Ling Xia really didn’t expect that the almighty protagonist and the great sir villain would unexpectedly share the exact same mindset when it came to this matter. Looks like the people of this world’s world views had quite the large discrepancy compared to the people from Earth’s… …

Under Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze of disdain and scorn, Ling Xia still hurriedly picked up the transfer talisman the other threw away, gently and diligently putting it away. If they really do end up in mortal danger, their lives were obviously more important, so this was a critical, life-saving talisman!

As they were setting off, Yu Zhi Jue’s movements suddenly jerked to a stop. Confused, Ling Xia asked, “What’s wrong?”

Yu Zhi Jue slowly shook his head, before replying, “It’s nothing.”

His extremely keen senses had detected someone looking at him from behind, but when he started to pay more attention, that feeling of being spied on had already disappeared.

Three hundred people entered the forest from various small paths. At the beginning, there were still groups of people clustered together on the roads, but gradually, the numbers grew less and less. After all, the more people there were, the harder it was to accomplish the tasks they were assigned.

As for their position in the group, Ling Xia estimated that they were part of the latter half that was closer towards the end. However, they still had a

long way to go, and to start off running fast at the very beginning wasn't necessarily a good course of action.

After two hours, besides the three of them, their surroundings only contained the cries of insects and the whistling of leaves.

With swift arms and legs, Song Xiao Hu quickly climbed a large tree that was a dozen some meters high and looked around in all directions into the distance. Yu Zhi Jue meticulously recalled the information written in the books about where they could most likely find what they were looking for, and commanded Song Xiao Hu from below to search for a nearby stream.

The novel also wrote about ShaoYang Sect's Thousands Beasts Forest. Although it fell short in terms of abundance in natural resources compared to the world's five largest sect's spiritual grounds, it had its own distinguishing characteristics and was famous for having a wealth of the healing panacea Golden Star Grass in addition to bodies of water that produced water attribute energy stones. Therefore, searching along a stream was currently the easiest way to complete their objective.

Growing up alone in the wilderness of mountains, Song Xiao Hu's eyesight and keen senses were on a cheat-like level, and very quickly, he discovered a speck of shimmering, golden light reflected about two kilometers away. Without further delay, the three of them headed towards that direction.

The river they found was so clear that you could see its bottom, filled to the brim with spiritual energy that the fish in its waters were also a lot larger than those found in other mountain streams. Seeing this, Song Xiao Hu's stomach growled a few times, though Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue's conditions weren't much better. They had come to this exam without eating a thing, and after this much time had passed, they've all long been starving.

Abiding by the saying of sharpening one's axe before chopping down a tree, Ling Xia suggested at once, "Let's catch some fish to eat first. Only on a full stomach will we have energy and strength." Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu did not protest, thus the three of them immediately moved to catch their meal.

Only, right when they had lit the fire, sudden gales of wind blew by, so strong that one almost couldn’t even stay standing without wobbling. The sky started turning as dark as the night, and countless thunderclaps boomed near and far, splitting through the thick layers of clouds and making one’s heart tremble in fear.

“Looks like it’ll rain soon! We should find a place to take shelter from the rain!” Ling Xia called out to the other two. He could barely open his eyes in these fierce winds; after all, he’s used to living in a city built with reinforced concrete. Even if he wandered in the wild with these two kids for a few days, he had yet to experience this kind of terrifying mountain weather.

Neither Song Xiao Hu nor Yu Zhi Jue expressed any sort of fear or worry. Despite this kind of nasty weather descending without prior warning, they had long gotten used to seeing this kind of change. In no time at all, they found a cavern that could shelter them from the rain, and by the time they gathered some enormous plant leaves to block off the entrance, the downpour outside had already begun to fall.

Ling Xia wiped off the water droplets on his face, carefully taking a look at this narrow cavern. The inside was an expanse of murky black so he couldn’t see things clearly, but unexpectedly, it seemed to be very deep. His thoughts turned to bears, snakes, and other such animals, and suddenly felt somewhat scared in his heart. The claps of thunder outside still continued one after another, and the torrent of rain did not lessen either.

There were some withered plants inside the cave, so the three of them groped around and found a few pieces of dry tinder, promptly using the flint they carried to light it up. After seeing the light, Ling Xia finally let out of a sigh of relief, gradually feeling more at ease. Despite the confusion moments prior, they were still holding on to the fish they had strung together, so the three of them surrounded the fire and continued their cooking.

The leaves blocking the entrance suddenly shifted with a noise. Yu Zhi Jue vigilantly stood up and snarled, “Who‘s there?”

“Oh, is someone there? I’m also here to take shelter from the rain.” A dark silhouette slowly walked inside, not that tall in height, and by the light from the fire, a very normal-looking twelve or thirteen year old boy that didn’t seem to be carrying any weapons appeared.

Ling Xia exhaled the breath he held; turns out it’s just a kid… He nudged over a bit to yield some room and nodded with a smile, “Please have a seat.”

That young boy wasn’t polite in the least, immediately withdrawing to a corner and sitting down near the shadows, no longer saying another word.

Song Xiao Hu couldn’t resist and asked, “Are you taking this exam by yourself?”

That young boy grunted indifferently and gave Song Xiao Hu a glance as if he couldn’t care less. He slowly looked around, yet when he saw Yu Zhi Jue, it was as if his gaze lingered for a beat. Ling Xia only thought this youngster appeared to be one of those rare but oddly eccentric types and didn’t pay it much mind. When all was said and done, they were currently rival competitors at present.

The fragrance of roasted fish was already wafting out, and Ling Xia’s stomach gave a hungry growl. After handing over fish for both Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue, he asked the other young boy as a passing courtesy, “Do you want to eat one?” Who would have thought that that youngster would actually extend out his hand in expectation, hence Ling Xia could only hand over the fish he held with some traces of regret.

Except, before that young boy’s hand had yet to reach his, Yu Zhi Jue abruptly stretched out his leg and heavily kicked a burning cinder at the boy, rapidly grabbing and pulling back Ling Xia’s hand at the same time.

Ling Xia was a bit dazed, but Song Xiao Hu was already on guard as well. He questioned, “What are you holding in your hand?” Ever since he was small, he had been able to detect the changes in a person’s ambiance, so when this person’s murderous aura leaked out, he was able to sense it in a heartbeat.

That young boy laughed sinisterly, “To think that your perception’s not half bad.” He flipped his wrist and a gleam of cold light flashed, faintly revealing the shape of a dagger.

Ling Xia gave a start, instantly feeling his back tremble with chills, and with great effort, forced himself to appear calm and collected as he demanded, “What are you planning to do?”

Fuck, is the protagonist’s Conan aura finally manifesting itself?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 11

Seizing the opportunity, Ling Xia pulled Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu along and started to run outside. Shit, even though these two also went through some danger during ShaoYang Sect's registration in the novel, there certainly wasn't an assassination scenario!

That young boy swiftly sprung up, throwing the fire attribute dagger in his hand at the three of them. However, it missed its mark and firmly penetrated into the wall, causing the nearby dead trees to catch on fire.

Ling Xia saw this out of the corner of his eye, jolted in fright, and without any hesitation, used the full extent of his strength to throw a few pieces of basin-sized rocks at the young boy to obstruct his actions. It was still heavily raining outside, the downpour of water making it difficult to keep one's eyes open.

"Run, don't just stand there!" Ling Xia bellowed, looking at the two he dragged out here that seemed to be frozen from fright, tugging on them in preparation to keep running.

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly shook off his hand, frigidly snapping back, "Idiot, what are you running for?"

Ling Xia paused, only now becoming aware that Yu Zhi Jue didn't have an ounce of fear on his face, and while Song Xiao Hu seemed slightly nervous, he didn't show a trace of fear either. At this moment, he remembered what kind of world this was.

Fuck, what's with all these belligerent people!

The young boy, already standing at the entrance of the cave, sneered, "Not running anymore? Finally realized you can't escape?"

Yu Zhi Jue gave Ling Xia a look of disdain, then turned to that youngster and asked, "Who are you really? Unless I'm wrong, the fire attribute dagger

in your hand should be made from the rarely seen anti-cloud stone. As someone who can afford this kind of dagger, what need is there to attack people from poor families like us?”

That young boy exposed a mildly astonished expression, and putting the exquisite dagger away with a twirl, coldly replied, “Your eyesight is quite good. And since you’ll be dead in a while, there’s no harm in letting you know who I am.”

Finished talking, he slowly placed a medicinal pill into his mouth, and as the effects of the Appearance Changing Pill gradually faded, a very familiar face revealed itself.

Yu Zhi Jue gave an icy laugh, “The one to die has yet to be decided!”

Ling Xia’s lips twitched, having thoroughly been rendered speechless! During the previous sudden turn of events, he had pondered over of a lot of possibilities, such as an enemy of Yu Zhi Jue’s who came knocking on their door, someone seeing through the protagonist and the final boss villain’s extraordinary physical constitution and becoming jealous, etc. What he never expected in a million years was that this youngster was actually that senior brother of Miss-High-and-Mighty Cui Yu, the sonny boy who almost caused them to drown before, Shang Yan!

That girl was still only ten years old! Not to mention, Yu Zhi Jue has absolutely zero interest in her!! Just because of a dumbass reason like this, you’d go to such extremes as coming all this way after disguising yourself to kill a person?!

Cui Yu had waited at Cloud Gazing Pavilion for a long time, but it was her seniors who arrived first. Filled to the brim with unwillingness, she went back with Mo Dai and the others, grumbling and complaining the entire way while spouting a bunch of demands along the lines of stopping Yu Zhi Jue from applying to ShaoYang Sect and making him follow her back to YunXiao City to become her father’s disciple.

Listening to that made Shang Yan feel endless hate and jealousy, so when he saw someone help and let out Song Xiao Hu, he immediately ate an

Appearance Changing Pill and secretly followed, even knocking out a boy who registered to track them all the way here. Due to the boundary barrier set up by the masters of ShaoYang Sect, using magic tools or techniques that were too powerful would easily result in being discovered, thus up until now, he had hidden himself and only covertly shadowed behind the three of them.

He was the direct disciple of the governor of YunXiao City, and even if he hadn't been cultivating for very long, his strength was already quite exceptional, therefore able to conceal himself with none of them noticing him trailing behind. Taking advantage of the abrupt change in weather, he had decisively revealed himself and attacked.

"Hey!" No longer possessing the energy to retort against this situation, Ling Xia asked directly, "It can't be because of your youngest junior sister that you're here, right?"

As soon as Cui Yu was mentioned, Shang Yan immediately took out his lightning attribute magic tool from within his storage bag, and making use of a boom of thunder from the sky, hurled a streak of lightning at the three of them. He's fully aware of his youngest junior sister's temperament; if he fails to kill these three and she finds out, she'd definitely ignore and never talk to him again in the future!

As soon as Ling Xia saw him reveal that magic tool, he recalled what had happened back at the lake and instantly yelled, "Dodge!" Accompanying this warning, he picked up a huge rock and threw it at Shang Yan. Coincidentally, it crashed into the lightning's path, scattering onto the ground as it exploded into countless smaller pieces.

Both Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu's jumping power was exceptionally good, and they leapt far away in a flash, resulting in the three of them being separated. Shang Yan briefly halted, then wielding his magic tool, rapidly charged at Ling Xia, judging that this guy who was the oldest was also the strongest. When the other had attacked him earlier at the cave, he was sent flying and heavily crashed into a wall, and even now, his inner circulation was still blocked.

Ling Xia dodged in a hurry, but was soon forced into an utterly miserable state. With just a tiny misstep, he was hit on one side and promptly crashed into the ground, his entire body paralyzed and unable to move.

Yu Zhi Jue pulled the half-foot long knife he took when he escaped from Holy Maiden Peek out from under the leg of his pants and threw himself at Shang Yan without a shred of hesitation. He had secretly learned a few techniques, but he did not know how to use spiritual energy yet. Shang Yan, brandishing a magic tool in one hand and holding a dagger in the other, exchanged blows with Yu Zhi Jue, every strike showing off his superior proficiency and deftness.

Song Xiao Hu hastily pulled Ling Xia up, wanting to move him somewhere safe, but his body was still too small, and dragging along someone who was a head taller than himself was particularly strenuous. A streak of lightning struck him from above, and with a shudder, Song Xiao Hu also toppled and fell down.

Seeing that two out of three had fallen, Shan Yan was exceedingly pleased with himself. He put away his magic tools with a smirk, and sliding his dagger along Yu Zhi Jue’s blade, stabbed it deeply into the other’s palm. Yu ZhiYue gave a muffled grunt, and with a clang, his own knife fell to the ground.

Suddenly, Shang Yan nailed Yu Zhi Jue’s hand to a stone wall and taunted, “Weren’t you acting all tough a moment ago? Why so silent now?” As he spoke, little by little, he pushed the dagger even deeper, observing Yu Zhi Jue’s expression of pain as the other bit his lips to endure, and then with a smug look, sharply pulled the dagger out.

“Hurts, huh? Insignificant tramp, you dare fancy my youngest junior sister?” Pressing the dagger to Yu Zhi Jue’s neck, Shang Yan sneered, “You said earlier that it hadn’t been decided who would die. In that case, who would you say is going to die now?”

Raindrops relentlessly splattered on Ling Xia’s face as he was wretchedly drenched, lying helplessly in a mud pit. Although he couldn’t move,

nevertheless, he could hear and see everything that was happening, and his entire body quivered incessantly from heart-break and worry.

He no longer had the luxury to berate himself for thinking about things too naively; he could ascertain from Shang Yan’s savage actions that the other was definitely intending to kill the three of them… …

He continuously commanded himself in his mind, hurry up and move, just move... He turned an expectant gaze towards the protagonist, but unfortunately, Song Xiao Hu’s eyes were currently tightly closed. He was obviously out cold!

Yu ZhiYue coolly glanced at the dagger in close proximity, then glared resolutely at Shang Yan as he said, “This isn’t the end yet." A strange, cruel thread of scarlet flashed across his eyes, and seeing this, Shang Yan gave a start, unexpectedly blanking out momentarily.

Under a surge of furor and distress, Ling Xia suddenly crawled up. With a strength he didn’t know he had, he grabbed a handful of rocks and charged forward with a roaring howl, “Screw your frickin’ sister! The hell is a minor doing playing this kind of criminal underworld game? I’m warning you, you can’t afford these stakes!”

Shang Yan jerked in alarm and swung his leg out in haste. Kicked, Ling Xia staggered few steps back, but in spite of that, he threw the rocks in his hand with all his might and one of them slammed into the corner of Shang Yan’s right eye. All things considered, Shang Yan’s cultivation period was still short, and at the end of the day, he mostly relied on magic tools to defend himself. He had yet to pass the introductory stage in body cultivation, so assaulted by Ling Xia’s tremendous strength, his eye instantaneously became swollen and he reflexively covered it with his hand.

Right at this moment, Shang Yan felt a chill in his abdomen, followed by a sharp pain. Stunned, he lowered his head to discover a knife sticking out of his stomach and a pair of unblinking eyes that glared ferociously at him.

Countless thoughts flashed through his mind. Exactly how did the other move just then? Why did he not notice?… …But before he could think of

an answer, the half-foot long blade inside his body was ruthlessly twisted around several times as indescribable agony and pain robbed him ofithe ability to even breathe.

Then, Yu Zhi Jue abruptly pulled back, and Shang Yan let out a coarse, blood-curdling scream. A trickle of blood leaked out of the corner of his mouth, and holding his stomach, and he raggedly crumpled down, fallen.

Ling Xia slumped to the ground, staring in disbelief at the scene before his eyes.

A bolt of lightning split the sky, and in the instant its light flashed by, he clearly saw Yu Zhi Jue's expression, collapsed against the stone wall and repeatedly gasping for breath. When their eyes met, that still very young and tender face held neither brutal violence nor ferociousness, but was rather brimming with the hesitation and trepidation of a lost child.

A few more claps of thunder sounded, and as if suddenly jerking awake, Yu Zhi Jue looked down at the knife in his hand, at the raindrops washing away the bloodstains, flowing down the weapon's body and towards his wrist. He immediately released his hold, bowed his head as a hand grabbed the stone wall in support, and started vomiting as if trying to throw up every last drop of the bile in his body.

He had poured all of his long accumulated resentment and indignation from the discriminatory treatment he received into that stab just then, but now, all that remained was unending and abominable nausea.

Even though he was completely terrified, Ling Xia still quickly stood up, and while shaking and stumbling, carried the passed-out Song Xiao Hu back into the cavern. Relieved after confirming the other's heartbeat and breathing, and despite his body's uncontrollable trembling, he walked outside without another pause.

From his birth up until now, he had only encountered the deaths of three people, the first being when his grandfather passed away. He was still a child, and seeing the old man on the bed stop breathing, he could only

ignorantly ask his mother who was crying nonstop, “What happened to Grandpa?”

The second was on the road when he saw first-hand a mutilated body being rescued from a car crash by traffic officers, his heart filled with pity and sympathy.

The last was when the girl he was secretly in love with had drowned. He was only sixteen at the time, and when he saw her corpse at the memorial service, he had cried to the point of almost fainting. It was only with the support of two of his classmates that he didn’t break down and collapse to the floor.

However, this was the first time he personally witnessed the process of someone being murdered, and this kind of inexplicable horror was a veritable fact, not a scene from a book. This was the harsh reality of watching a life disappear right in front of his eyes!

But at this juncture, he knows that he can’t abandon Yu Zhi Jue, can’t leave him on his own... …

“This was a legitimate self-defense, otherwise, we would be the ones dead right now... ..." Ling Xia mumbled to himself over and over again, trying his hardest to make each step he took more firm and decisive, backed with more strength.

Before, all his words about saving the villain were merely a form of moral support in response to mistakenly coming to this world. It wasn’t until now, in seeing that heart-rendering expression on Yu ZhiYue’s face, that he genuinely, in all seriousness, had this kind of awareness and resolve:

He must protect this child!

By no means will he ever allow this child to fall into the darkness, to the point of no return!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 12

Yu Zhi Jue was crouching completely motionlessly in a corner, both hands tightly clenched, his long hair disheveled from the fight earlier, dripping wet and plastered all across his face. In the moment he saw Ling Xia, he was like a startled, tiny wolf cub, his small body curling up into a ball. Behind his messy hair, a pair of eyes filled with vigilance and suspicion peered past, and with each of his breaths being extremely short yet heavy, he was evidently still in a state of immense nervousness and high-strung tension.

Ling Xia felt his heart constrict. Slowly and cautiously, he approached while soothing in a gentle voice, “Don’t be nervous… Ah’Jue, you did very well. You saved me and Xiao Hu… …” He repeated such words over and over again, crouching down and looking sincerely and tranquilly at Yu Zhi Jue’s face.

Yu Zhi Jue replied hoarsely, “Is that right? So he died… …”

At this moment, while recalling that particular sensation of being stabbed, Yu Zhi Jue felt his palm throbbing and twitching irrepressibly; he didn’t know whether to label it as agonizing or frightening, but perhaps it was more nauseating than anything else. That disgusting feeling stubbornly rehashing itself again and again inside his mind, haunting him like a eternal, looping nightmare… …

Ling Xia nudge slightly closer, steadily gazing straight at Yu Zhi Jue, and said, “I know that he wanted to kill us, and that’s why you didn’t do anything wrong… … Your hand was injured earlier, let me take a look.”

Yu Zhi Jue slowly and hesitantly extended his hand, and when Ling Xia carefully held it in his palms, he immediately detected how ice-cold Yu Zhi Jue’s shivering body was.

Due to Yu Zhi Jue’s constitution, the bleeding from his palm had gradually lessened, but the wound still appeared terribly malefic. Ling Xia

couldn’t bear to even look at it, his heart stinging as he sharply sucked in a breath.

“Ah’Jue, let’s go back inside the cavern okay? Your wound needs to be treated,” Ling Xia softly advised. Seeing that Yu Zhi Jue wasn’t responding, he gradually moved closer, then wrapped his arms around Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulders, enveloping the other in his embrace.

Yu Zhi Jue’s body stiffened subconsciously reeling in avoidance, but Ling Xia stubbornly glued his own warmer figure to the boy. He gently rubbed Yu Zhi Jue’s back, once, and then twice, stopping only until he felt that the stretched taut muscles were no longer so tense, and with gentlest of movements, picked the boy up.

The body of a child was very light, and to the best of his abilities, Ling Xia tried to hold him in a way that would make him feel secure, one arm wrapped around Yu Zhi Jue’s waist and the other supporting his weight from under his bottom. He hugged Yu Zhi Jue with the care of handling an infant, and then slowly walked back into the cave.

Yu Zhi Jue had never been so intimate with anyone like this before. With his face pressed against Ling Xia’s chest, he could almost hear the other’s robust yet somewhat chaotic heartbeat. He felt a flicker of doubt; why was Ling Xia’s heart racing so fast, and how could the inflection of his words be so gentle, yet have the power to make others want to believe in him?

He tightly grasped Ling Xia’s shoulder with his uninjured left hand, wanting to tell the other to put him down, that there was no way he’d be unnerved just from killing an enemy. But in the end, he didn’t say a thing, only gazing numbly at Ling Xia’s ear, so lost in thought that even when Ling Xia put him down, it took him a moment before he realized.

Ling Xia looked at the cavern that had returned to its former state of darkness, preparing to pick up some dry kindling and remake the fire straightaway. Except, just as he turned around to move, the edge of his shirt was grabbed, and Yu Zhi Jue’s dry rasp sounded, “Where are you going?”

“Your clothes are wet, and it needs to be dried as fast as possible. Also, I’m going to try and find some medicine…” Ling Xia was quite startled by the other’s actions, and using as soft and kind of a tone as possible, promised, “I’ll be back very soon.”

Yu Zhi Jue hesitated for a beat, but little by little, loosened his grip. Ling Xia released a breath of air, then bent over and stroked his moist hair.“Good boy.”

Naturally, the three of them didn’t have anything that could wrap a wound, but since that Shang Yan had a storage bag, there should definitely be medicine inside!

Ling Xia quickly walked over, forcing himself to empty his mind, to not think about anything. Restraining his terror and panic, he flipped over Shang Yan’s corpse and tugged off the storage bag at the waist. During that process, when he touched the other‘s deathly pale, icy cold skin that had been scoured by rain water, he had inadvertently shuddered.

After obtaining what he came to get, he took a deep breath and swiftly walked away. As fast as he could, he reignited the fire and sat back down next to Yu Zhi Jue, finally warming up his freezing body by a few degrees.

There were quite a few things inside the storage bag. Ling Xia didn’t know which were used for healing injuries, but seeing the different pills and ointments, Yu Zhi Jue promptly recognized a commonly used healing salve and pointed it out in a coarse voice, “It’s this one.”

Ling Xia carefully and delicately applied the salve for Yu Zhi Jue, then using a clean cotton cloth, bandaged up the wound. With a faintly aching heart, he lowered his head and saw Yu Zhi Jue’s long, wet eyelashes lightly tremble, and due to blood loss, both his cheeks and lips appeared somewhat ashen and frail.

“I’m going to take a look at how Xiao Hu is,” Ling Xia murmured as he rubbed the top of Yu Zhi Jue’s head again.

Actually, he wasn't that worried about Song Xiao Hu; there was absolutely no way Song Xiao Hu's cheat-like physique would lose out against a single lightning attack. In contrast, he was much more worried about Yu Zhi Jue, because mental damage was a lot more detrimental and serious than physical injury.

Right now, Yu Zhi Jue wasn't clad in his usual air of obstinance, and the dependence and trust in his clear, black eyes was in plain sight as he stared fixedly at Ling Xia, not blinking even once.

In seeing this, Ling Xia felt his heart thud, and he couldn't help but comfort once more in reassurance, "I'll be back very quickly."

Even though Song Xiao Hu's body was currently scalding hot and surrounded by the sounds of minute, faint tendrils of electricity moving about, his breathing was steady. Ling Xia was a bit astonished; in the novel, the lightning elemental energy in Song Xiao Hu's body was only triggered after he was struck by lightning on one occasion. Could it be that the attack by Shang Yan's lightning attribute magic tool caused this awakening to happen ahead of time?

After putting down this worry, Ling Xia immediately returned to Yu Zhi Jue's side, took against his shoulder, and suggested in a calming tone, "You need to rest a bit. Sleep, I'll wake you up later."

As if this voice had a hypnotic effect, Yu Zhi Jue obediently closed his eyes. Yet, as he dozed between the boundary of sleep and consciousness, he felt someone picking his body up before gently placing it on the ground. A jolt of panic ran through his heart—what was Ling Xia planning to do? It couldn't be that he was going to throw away Song Xiao Hu and himself, and leave?

Even so, he did not open his eyes, only tightly biting his bottom lip as his heartbeat instantaneously became wild and erratic.

He heard Ling Xia's deliberately slowed footsteps walk outside, surprisingly stopping a short distance past the mouth of the cave, and after that, came the sound of digging… He suddenly understood.

Ling Xia had left because he thought Yu Zhi Jue had already fallen asleep. He had to summon every ounce of his courage for this,because when all was said and done, something like helping to hide the body of someone your family's child killed really wasn't any sort of happy or pleasant undertaking!

However, he understood even more what Shang Yan being the direct disciple of the governor of YunXiao City meant. If people found out he died by Yu Zhi Jue's hands, then the three of them can simply wait their turn to go play chess with the King of Hell!

Contrary to the storm before, the rain was now gradually subsiding. Ling Xia found two pieces of sharp rocks, and holding one in each hand, started to vigorously dig into the ground. Due to the rain, it wasn't a difficult task since the water and earth had mixed together, but his body was soon covered in mud, filthy beyond belief. He was afraid of startling Yu Zhi Jue if he made too loud of a noise, therefore, his speed wasn't very fast.

After he dug out a hole large enough to bury a single person, he gathered all of his nerves and walked back towards Shang Yan, dragging the body over and dumping it inside. Including the dagger, the storage bag, and as well as Yu Zhi Jue's knife, everything was thrown into the hole.

Biting his lips, he mechanically shoved and piled back the earth, and until the corpse disappeared under the mud and water and the surrounding area became flat, did he finally stop.

He clutched his head, panting heavily as he quietly hunched over, dropping to the ground and silently shedding tears. A tsunami-like wave of nausea washed over him, but in the end, he wasn't able to throw up a single thing.

Fucking hell! What was with this guilt-of-a-murderer kind of feeling?

He staunchly wiped away his tears, and using a nearby puddle of water, washed off the mud on his hands and body, walking back into the cavern only after he made sure he was clean.

Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu were both quietly lying on the ground, the fire close to burning out. Listening to their breathing, the two of them seemed to be sleeping very peacefully, and LinglXia felt relieved at once. Hurriedly, he added more wood to the fire, sitting in front of the flames and shivering as he waited for his clothes to dry.

They had a 10[1] hour deadline… …And no matter how you looked at it, almost 4 of those hours have passed by now.

He let out a deep sigh; *ahh*, fuck!i

[1]: In chapter 10, it said the deadline was 20 hours, so one of them's probably a typo

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 13

Suddenly remembering a certain fact, Ling Xia almost flat-out jumped into the air as he smacked his forehead in shame and regret—When they had unexpectedly met with danger earlier, he completely forgot about the transfer talismans hidden in his pocket!

All three of their transfer talismans were in Ling Xia’s pocket, so if he had just found an interval to tear the transfer talismans, they would have immediately return to the starting point! Furthermore, they could have also reported this to ShaoYang Sect’s supervisors; after all, this Shang Yan came here in violation of the regulations, so even if he’s an honored guest that was invited, it was unlikely that ShaoYang Sect would simply allow him to waltz in while breaking the sect’s rules…

Ling Xia tightly and forcefully gripped these paper talismans, his fingernails digging deep into his palms, the heavy feeling of guilt that instantly welled up in his heart nearly strong enough to knock him down flat.

In that case, Shang Yan wouldn't have died by Yu Zhi Jue's hands! Even now, simply thinking about how it felt to touch that corpse caused his entire body break out in shivers of cold… …

"Even if you had remembered, at that time, we wouldn't have had the chance to activate it. Moreover, neither Xiao Hu nor I would have used it to leave!"

Ling Xia turned around in astonishment, only now discovering that a pair of bright, pitch black eyes reflecting glimmers of flames had locked himself in its unblinking gaze. He didn't know when Yu Zhi Jue had woken and sat up.

Yu Zhi Jue then lowered his eyes, turning that gaze towards his hand, to his palm that was still wrapped in cotton cloth and pu sing with stabs of pain.

He softly murmured, "This wasn't your mistake. Besides, even if we avoided it now, that person would surely find ways to trouble us in the future."

What he didn't say out loud was, this was all his fault for being too weak!

Although the sensation of killing someone was disgustingly nauseating, nevertheless… …A freezing flash of light flickered across his eyes.

While Yu Zhi Jue's face was still somewhat ashen and pale, his voice had resumed its usual composure, but because of how his head was lowered and his bangs covered most of his face, Ling Xia couldn't clearly see his expression. He was rather amazed though; how did Yu Zhi Jue figure out what he was thinking about so easily?

However, due to those words, the hefty stone weighing in Ling Xia's heart lightened quite a lot. That's right, now really wasn't the time to scrutinize who should have done what; the kind of rules this world operated under was as such… …

This world that was completely different from the Middle Kingdom… …

Ling Xia took deep breaths to calm himself, put the clothes that had dried back on, and walking over, gently asked, "Does your hand still hurt?"

Yu Zhi Jue continued to lower his head as he replied, "It doesn't hurt anymore… …I'm just really cold." As he said so, he seemed to shiver, and with his thin, weak body surrounded in shadows, he looked like a small, injured animal.

Could this be due to excessive blood loss? Ling Xia reached out and touched Yu Zhi Jue's forehead. Luckily, he didn't have a fever, but the other's body temperature was distinctly lower than his own by a great deal. Ling Xia hesitated slightly, then as if testing the waters, pulled the boy to his chest, carefully taking note of any adverse reactions. Discovering that Yu Zhi Jue didn't show any signs of resistance, he drew the boy even closer and held him a bit more firmly.

Yu Zhi Jue huddled motionlessly in his embrace, and after a while, unexpectedly mumbled, "Your body is really warm."

Ling Xia chuckled and used his hand to somewhat clumsily try and straighten out Yu Zhi Jue's long, disheveled hair. He had been sitting and drying his clothes in front of the fire for a quite a while now, so naturally his body had been heated up.

Yu Zhi Jue half closed his eyes, resting as still as a statue, his long eyelashes casting soft shadows on h s face as his expression contained traces of pleasure and relaxation.

All of a sudden, Ling Xia recalled the two kittens his grandmother had raised when he was a child. One was the type that was particularly lively and cute, pouncing over as soon as it saw him and acting spoiled while rolling about. In contrast, the other ignored him no matter what he did, just lying on top of things and giving him the cold shoulder. Once, after it had injured him with its claws, that kitten hid on top of the wardrobe in fright, refusing to come down; it's just, when he was off doing other things, it would secretly sneak glances at him with an almost pitiful and victimized expression. When it finally came back down, it had plopped into his lap and staunchly latched onto his clothes, refusing to let go… …

In his heart, Ling Xia liked that a oof and detached kitten more.

The impression Yu Zhi Jue gave him was similar to that kitten's; even though they usually always acted in a super arrogant manner, occasionally, they'd also become this docile, meekly curling up in his lap and obediently letting him straighten their hair… Also, their appearance after being frightened really tugged on his tender heartstrings… …

Suddenly, Song Xiao Hu gave a light groan, as if about to wake up. Yu Zhi Jue immediately scrambled out of Ling Xia’s embrace and distanced himself far, far away. Under the glow of fire, it seemed like he was mildly blushing, and Ling Xia couldn’t help but find this a bit hilarious.

Well, Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu were fellow companions of the same age, and letting a friend see such a childish side of yourself would more or

less result in some embarassment, no?

Song Xiao Hu hazily and disconcertingly opened his eyes. Sitting up in a rush, he swept his gaze across his surroundings before asking, “Elder brother Ling, how did I get here? What happened to that evil guy?”

Yu Zhi Jue cooly got off the ground and remarked, “Stop wasting time already, why aren’t you standing up yet? We don’t have much time left!”

After saying this, he headed directly outside. On the other hand, Lang Xia quickly went over and asked, “Xiao Hu, how do you feel?”

Song Xiao Hu absentmindedly shook his head. "I'm fine."

Ling Xia vaguely and roughly told Song Xiao Hu about what had previously transpired, then specifically emphasized that he must never, ever tell anyone else about this, otherwise all three of their lives would be in danger. Sometimes, Song Xiao Hu would blurt out whatever came to his mind without any filters, which easily led to stirring up trouble.

Song Xiao Hu blinked, but quickly nodded his head and solemnly affirmed, "I understand!"

Ling Xia was finally able to put down one of his burdens. Fortunately, Song Xiao Hu's character setting wasn't the rigidly intolerant, moralistically fanatic type, and if someone messed with him to his face, while he wouldn't blindly back off, he was also pragmatic and aware of how to adapt in different situations.

The thunderstorm had arrived like a shot and left equally as fast. It had already stopped raining outside, but the muddied trails made it much harder to travel on, and coupled with all the countless vines, rocks, and weeds, a single moment of carelessness cou d result in slipping and falling.

The three of them continued to follow the river upstream, the only d fference being that they were a lot more cautious and attentive than before. Song Xiao Hu's cheat-like constitution finally showed its worth, and in no time at all, he discovered a clump with six stalks of Golden Star Grass. A

little while later, Yu Zhi Jue also found two pieces of level-3 water attribute energy stones in the flow ng creek, and with this, they could be considered to have gathered above and beyond the necessary quota.

Ling Xia sighed in relief, carefully splitting up and hiding the spiritual herbs and energy stones between the three of them in inconspicuous locations. W th a few hundred competitors, not necessarily everyone would be as fortuitous as the protagonist and the villain, and it was extremely likely that there would be people who wanted to reap what they didn't sow, lying in wait near the exit for an opportunity to pilfer from others!

Although this kind of method sounds despicable, but in this world's sect competitions, it was definitely permitted, and whether or not one can pass the exam was entirely dependent on one's skills.

Following their completion of this round's assignment was a period of continuous walking as they simultaneously and cautiously took note of possible threats from magical beasts and other examinees. Both Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu's ability to detect danger was exceptionally strong, and along the way, the three of them saw magical beasts precariously attacking participants as well as groups of people in the middle of killing one another. After many daunting brushes with danger that thankfully didn't end in confrontation, at long last, they reached the periphery of Thousands Beasts Forest, and with two hours to spare.

Way up on top of a tree, Song Xiao Hu spotted the rest area built next to the exit in the distance, and instantly rejoiced happily. They had been surrounded by heart-pounding uncertainty the entire route here and merely picked a few non-toxic fruits along the way, so by now, his stomach had already caved in from starvation.

"We must not let our guard down, especially here!" Ling X a warned in a low tone. He remembered that in the novel, these two would encounter some difficulties near the ex t.

Song Xiao Hu nimbly slid down from the tree, yet while he was still in midair, a strong gust of wind rushed towards him from behind!

"Xiao Hu!" Ling Xia cried out in alarm as a roughly ten foot long iron chain swiftly swung to wrap around Song Xiao Hu's waist. Although this iron chain's momentum was fierce, its technique was a far cry from that of Cui Yu's.

Song Xiao Hu's reflexes were agile and he evaded it quickly, but a part of his back was still hit. After rolling once on the ground, he rapidly stood up and assumed a defensive position.

Ling Xia was entirely preoccupied with looking in Song Xiao Hu direction when suddenly, he heard the sound of wind stirring from behind, and a huge alarm instantly blared inside his head. There were more people in the back!

Yu Zhi Jue had already grabbed his elbow and leapt a distance away as another iron chain smashed into the spot where they previously stood, the impact causing broken rocks to fly about n every direction.

"Who's there? Are sneak attacks the only thing you're capable of?" Yu Zhi Jue growled with a grimace. In his agitation just then, he had put too much strength into his right hand and thus, the injured palm had started bleeding again, scorching and burning with pain.

Jeering laughter came from behind the trees, and two similarly dressed, robust, macho men appeared, one in front and the other behind, trapping them in the middle.

These two people both had tough and stocky builds, an appearance that resembled one another, and tanned skin with a beard across their faces. Their arms were bare, protruding with rock-like muscles and thicker than Ling Xia's thighs by a whole size.

In a low, muffled voice, one of the macho men demanded, "Hey, you brats. Unless you want to suffer, you'd better take out everything you found!"

Song Xiao Hu angrily retorted, "We worked painstakingly hard to find those things, why should we give it to you?"

"… …" Isn't this outright admitting that you found energy stones or spiritual herbs? Ling Xia also noticed the blood soaking through Yu Zhi Jue's bandages, and his eyes darkened.

In the novel, these two rascals naturally turned the tables and averted disaster, but at present, Yu Zhi Jue was wounded. Adding to that the presence of his cannon-fodder self, he didn't know what other kind of unforeseen mishaps might end up happening, so the best course of action was to avoid conflict whenever they could.

Without a moment's delay, Ling Xia took out two stalks of Golden Star Grass from his shirt pocket and slowly placed them on the ground. He pulled Yu Zhi Jue along and stepped back a few paces, staring vigilantly at the two men as he said, "These two stalks are enough to let you pass. You can take them, but if you push us too far, then even if I have to risk losing life and limb, I will destroy them so we can all fail together!"

One of the men howled with laughter, cackling, "You really can't tell that this brat is quite an interesting one. Fine, I'll spare you guys, leave."

Ling Xia let out a breath he held. Extremely worried that Yu Zhi Jue would explode in anger, he hastily patted the other’s arm in conciliation and gave Song Xiao Hu a hand gesture, signaling him to come over. Song Xiao Hu’s face still retained a shade of fury and rage but fortunately, he didn’t say another word. Ling Xia made the two of them retreat first as he protected the rear, and it wasn’t until they turned around a bend that he grabbed them both and kicked off into a run.

Song Xiao Hu grumbled, “Elder brother Ling, the things we found, why did you give it to them?”

Ling Xia patiently explained, “In any event, we still have more. We’re almost at the exit now, so it we can avoid these kind of troubles, then we should.”

He glanced towards Yu Zhi Jue since usually, the other would certainly have jumped out and objected faster than Song Xiao Hu. But this time, the boy was silent, almost as if giving a tacit approval of his actions. He faintly

sensed that there was something different about Yu Zhi Jue, but couldn’t quite put his finger on exactly what.

However, all things considered, they had just gone through such an earth-shattering ordeal recently, so perhaps Yu Zhi Jue had yet to recover emotionally… …

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 14

There were ShaoYang Sect disciples doing roll-call at the exit, and after inspecting the Golden Star Grass and energy stones Ling Xia's group collected, they recorded down the quantity and quality. Ling Xia cautiously skimmed what was written on the rest of that page; most people brought around the same amount as they did, but some had brought in a lot more spiritual herbs and stones. For example, the one named "Xu Yan" that was listed right before them, not only did that person find energy stones and spiritual herbs, but they also caught a level-3 magical beast.

When they walked into the rest area, about 60 to 70 people were already inside, including the youngster with a long sword on his back that had clashed with Yu Zhi Jue before. Ling Xia heard someone call him "Xu Yan", only now learning his name.

Xu Yan saw the three of them and sneered from the corner of his lips, "I didn't expect you three could walk in here. Guess your luck's good enough and didn't need to escape halfway with a transfer talisman."

Faced with such a brainless, half-pint youth with the tendency to turn hawkish at the drop of a hat, Ling Xia flat out treated him like air, walking right past him and sitting down at an empty tab e in the back. Everyone who reached this place was basically already guaranteed to enter ShaoYang Sect, so all the nearby supervising disciples were treating them with a lot more courtesy, and as soon as they sat down, someone came over to deliver tea and refreshments.

The refreshments and utensils were both very refined, and there were spiritual herbs that had properties of invigoration and restoration so that after eating, the physical strength they had expended would slowly recover by a large amount. Ling Xia drank a cup of tea first, paused as he felt his energy greatly increase, then ate some refreshments.

Song Xiao Hu was close to starving, inevitably eating a bit on the crude and fast side. Xu Yan saw this and mocked in a low voice, "Truly, you can't

make a silk purse out of a sow’s ear! Some remote, countryside villager actually wants to cultivate in a large sect, how hilarious!”

Ling Xia was quite apathetic towards these words, but gave the two kids next to him a worried glance. The oblivious Song Xiao Hu was currently sitting there engrossed in eating, completely unaware that Xu Yan was talking about himself. Although Yu Zhi Jue was also hungry, his posture was as graceful as always, and if one ignored the cheap clothes on his body, he really had the bearing of an heir from an influential family. But what Ling Xia was please the most about, was that even when hearing those provocative words, Yu Zhi Jue’s complexion remained as composed as before. Looks like after coming outside and experiencing the world, this kid had really matured a lot compared to when they first met… …

After they ate and drank their fill, then waited a while, around ten more people came in successively, and the deadline for this round had arrived at last. The disciples in charge of recording down names counted up their numbers, reaching a total of 92 people.

Even though these 92 people will all enter ShaoYang Sect, it was difficult to say whether they will. become apprenticed to a famous master or stay as a common disciple since they still had to go through the evaluation of ShaoYang Sect's elders.

A young disciple with handsome and bright facial features stood in the middle of the Lounge and smiled as he projected his voice, "Junior brothers and sisters, you've all worked hard. Next, please follow me to the Dueling Hall.”

This was the edge of Thousands Beasts Forest, so they needed to pass through a deep valley full of mist and clouds to reach the arena that he spoke of. Everyone relaxed their minds, and only now did they have the mood to appreciate and admire the beautiful scenery around them.

When they reached the Dueling Hall, seven or eight disciples uniformly dressed in yellow martial arts apparel were already waiting outside. Everyone’s relaxed mindsets immediately became tense once more, and in groups of ten, followed these disciples inside one after another.

Ling Xia carefully observed the hall, bigger than any of the gymnasiums he been to before, and wondered how it was built. The ground was covered in a carpet most likely made from the fur of a magical beast and patterned with varying sizes of ShaoYang Sect’s emblem, all embroidered using thin, gold and silver threads. Just looking at it practically made him dizzy.

Overlooking the hall, many tables and chairs were placed above, and the person sitting in the middle should be young Miss Feng Luo's father and the current head of ShaoYang Sect, Feng ShuMing. Though he only appeared to be twenty-four or twenty-five years old, just by sitting there, he gave off an exceptional air, radiating an oppressive might despite his calm demeanor, looking to the world a man who had overflowing presence. Those on his left and right ought to be the honored guests invited from other sects and many of the high ranking elders. When Ling Xia saw Cui Yu's group, his heart instantly stuttered with a ba-thump.

From the start, Cui Yu was Looking at and scanning everyone walking in, and as soon as she caught sight of Yu Zhi Jue, the bored expression on her face disappeared in a flash as a pair of eyes brimming with irrepressible joy locked onto target. But no matter how long she stared, Yu Zhi Jue never once Looked her way, causing her to unhappily pout on the spot.

She cast her gaze towards Mo Dai and whined in a soft voice, “Second senior brother, that’s who I was talking about, so tell Uncle Feng later that I want to bring him back to be my little unior brother!“

Mo Dai’s headache swelled just from listening; how was this something he could finalize just by saying a few words? This young boy had come to register under ShaoYang Sect, and moreover, he had passed both rounds of exams. How could outsiders like them ask to take someone like this away at present? Besides, that unior brother Shang Yan of h s clearly doesn’t get along with this young boy. Speaking of which, that junior brother had disappeared many hours ago, and who knew where he ran off to… ... Both this one and that one, acting up and caus ng him trouble! As their second senior brother, what a wonderful, burdensome, and thankless assignment he had brought onto himself!

He casually illuded, “Ok, I’ll go inform Martial uncle Feng, so be good and don’t make a ruckus.”

Cui Yu was overjoyed, promptly sitting up all straight and proper, her clever eyes glittering with light, waiting to see Yu Zhi Jue’s upcoming performance.

One of the guiding disciples gave a deferential and respectful bow towards those above, and stated in a luminous voice, “All ninety-two junior brothers and sisters have been brought here. I humbly request Master to decree the next mandate.”

Feng ShuMing nodded, indicated for him to step back, and swept out his wide sleeves gracefully as he composedly intoned to those below, “Today, as thou hast all stepped within our gates, thou must cultivate and persevere assiduously, behave with modesty and prudence… …”

His way of speech was didactic and erudite, and in every ten sentences there were seven or eight that Ling Xia couldn’t understand. One could see that Feng ShuMing had a reserved and serious disposition, which explained how he was able to raise a neither arrogant nor hot-tempered Feng Luo, a daughter who was different from the typical mold of a wealthy family’s young miss.

By the time Feng ShuMing finished his speech, the platform in the center of the hall was very quickly adjusted and prepared so that a total of four matches could simultaneously take place. The ShaoYang Sect elders in charge of assigning groups comprehensively factored in each disciple’s basic constitution, age, aptitude, and other such components, and based on that, split them into pairs. How an individual would perform in combat on the stage will determined where they get assigned.

Of course, it didn’t mean that the ones who were currently stronger would be guaranteed a better placement, as the habits and preferences of the elders in ShaoYang Sect were all different. They would most likely take many aspects into account, so it wasn’t necessarily true that they’d favor and think more highly of a person who won. But naturally, other than Ling Xia, the other participants did not know this point.

Take Yu Zhi Jue as an example. Even though he’s young and weak all around, his results in the first round’s fundamental exam had already attracted the attention of many of ShaoYang Sect’s elders. What’s more, he hadn’t gone through or received guidance from any professional institutions, so just like a piece of unpolished jade, as long as he spends enough time putting his heart and soul into cultivating, his extraordinary talents would definitely shine through, becoming a dazzling piece of priceless jade.

Since he already knew the results from the novel, Ling Xia wasn’t that worried. In the text, the Yu Zhi Jue who possessed endless potential and aptitude was chosen by Feng ShuMing and accepted as his direct disciple, while the currently still very mediocre Song Xiao Hu only followed an average body cultivator as his master.

After listening to the names of the pair-ups, Ling Xia Let out a sigh of relief; Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue's names had been announced separately, so at least the three of them didn't get matched up with one another. However, before that sigh could end, he heard the name of his opponent and nearly violently gushed out tears from his eyes—Xu Yan!

Fuck! Who wants to bet that he'd get robbed blind and then beaten into a pulp by that guy?

Nevertheless, after being on edge for a while, Ling Xia eventually got over it. In any case, under this many sets of eyes, that window-licking child Xu Yan probably wouldn't do anything too outrageous, right? Besides, who cares if he Loses; the stay-at-home club member that he was would never dare to have delusions of becoming as amazing as the almighty protagonist or the great sir villain. It'd be good enough if he can desultorily become an official ShaoYang Sect disciple … …

Ling Xia attentively observed the fights between the people onstage and realized that those above fifteen years of age had all generally cultivated to a certain degree. There were some who used a sword, some who used body cultivation, and also some who used arrays and formations. They were allowed to use a variety of techniques, but so long as one fell off the stage, they lost.

Out of the three of them, Song Xiao Hu was the first to go up. His opponent was a body cultivator youngster who was seventeen or eighteen years old, possessing quick and nimble attacks and arms as hard as rocks, evidently having undergone some body cultivation training. On the other hand, Song Xiao Hu had naturally swift reflexes and a strong yet supple body, but due to his lack in combat experiences, under the opponent's sharp and severe onslaught, he suffered rapid and repeated losses.

Ling Xia knew that Song Xiao Hu wouldn't win, and his heart ached for that stubborn kid whose nose was bleeding a river from the beatings he received, so much that he started praying in his mind for Song Xiao Hu to immediately leave the stage. As in the novel, it'd be fine for Song Xiao Hu to enter ShaoYang Sect as an ordinary disciple.

The protagonist, well, his invincible aura needs to be developed step by step, so it was very normal to have setbacks in the beginning.

That youngster pressed forward with a burst of strength, and Song Xiao Hu nearly flew off the stage. He gritted his teeth and bent his waist, his hands and feet clawing the ground as he slid a few meters backwards, only then finally dispelling the power in his opponent's strike. Having overused his strength, all ten of his fingers were chafed with blood, but at least he didn't fall off.

The youngster facing him reflexively adjusted back into an attacking stance as he declared, "You're not worthy to be my opponent. Hurry up and get off the stage."

Song Xiao Hu forcefully wiped his nosebleed and raised his head, retorting, "I'll never surrender!"

That youngster grinded his teeth and yelled, "Then I won't hold back any longer!"

By the time he started his attack once more, Ling Xia was practically unable to resist closing his eyes, but then suddenly, the situation onstage underwent a complete reversal!

Song Xiao Hu let out a tremendous roar, and in the moment his opponent pushed him down, a fierce and violent electric current burst out from his body, directly striking that youngster and sending him flying out of bounds!

Ling Xia's eyes widened in shock. Fuck, sure enough, the protagonist's impressively awe-inspiring cheat powers had activated ahead of time!

Rest in pieces, the original plotline… …

Even Song Xiao Hu himself was very perplexed, blankly staring down at his hands, visibly confused about the situation. It wasn't until he was reminded by the disciple recording the results that he finally came to a realization, jumped off, and left the arena, laughing as he waved to Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue. Just seeing that look of his, so proud even while sporting a bloody nose and swollen face, made Ling Xia grin and chuckle helplessly.

Not long after, it was Yu Zhi Jue's turn to go up, and Ling Xia refocused his mind to watch meticulously. While walking on stage, Yu Zhi Jue very noticeably turned around to look at him, and without missing a beat, Ling Xia returned his ook with an encouraging smile.

Yu Zhi Jue inhaled a deep breath as he turned back around and clenched his fists, impassively observing his opponent. He appeared calm on the outside, but in fact, Song Xiao Hu's performance earlier had more or less given him a certain amount of pressure. And unexpectedly, his opponent was one of the two macho men they had met near the exit not long ago, the ones who wanted to steal their spiritual herbs and energy stones by force! Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes, scrupulously taking in the enemy's each and every move.

That macho man was clearly also somewhat surprised in seeing Yu Zhi Jue, but his stiff and strained nerves quickly relaxed. His opponent was a little brat who had meekly yielded to him just recently, so what was there to be afraid of? With a shake of his hand, an iron chain began to reveal itself link by link.

He grinned at Yu Zhi Jue and warned with a laugh, "Little punk, if you're smart, then obed ently get off the stage. Uncle's whip doesn't have eyes,

and it’d be terrible if your soft and tender flesh got injured!”

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 15

Comparing Yu Zhi Jue's tiny body to that macho man's ox-like stature made their contrast even more glar ngly obvious. Not only was this something Ling Xia noticed, Cui Yu, who was sitting in the VIP section, also clutched her whip and shouted with a pout, "This is clearly unfair! What if ZhiJue gets hurt?"

She had just learned Yu Zhi Jue's name when the supervising disciple announced it, and had already repeated it in her heart numerous times. Thus, she couldn't help but call him so intimately when she opened her mouth just now, and though she blushed immediately, she inward y felt pleased and delighted. Mo Dai saw this look of hers and his headache got worse, but he did become a bit curious about Yu Zhi Jue, also turning his attention to the boy's figure.

Yu Zhi Jue placed both hands in front of his chest and made a defensive pose, then coldly replied to that macho man, "Let's start."

That man laughed out loud and flung his arm, the heavy iron chain suddenly swinging towards Yu Zhi Jue like a snake. Yu Zhi Jue reacted extremely quickly, dodging with a tilt of his head, and jumped on top of the iron chain. Before that macho man could retract it back, he dashed directly along the chain still suspended in midair until he was right in front of the other, and taking advantage of an opening, kicked the man's jaw head on!

Ling Xia was so excited in his heart; he could understand a little of why Yu Zhi Jue was more popular than the protagonist among the female fans at last! Looking that cool truly held an advantage, you know?

Even though Yu Zhi Jue didn't go through formal body cultivation training, his actions were naturally graceful, and every movement was exceptionally elegant and captivating. When he leapt into the air, a few stray strands of hair brushed past his calm and exquisite face as pair of slightly hidden, starry, and pitch black eyes glittered. Despite his youth, he already appeared majestic and divine.

This counterattack was remarkably beautiful, and Cui Yu could no longer hold back her cheers and applause, but in the end, Yu Zhi Jue's strength was weak so that macho man's body only swayed lightly. However, being kicked in the face by a small child like Yu Zhi Jue in front of so many people made him fly into a rage in shame, his empty left hand promptly grabbing towards Yu Zhi Jue's leg. His momentum was immensely powerful and savage as he roared ferociously like a tiger. One could foresee that if Yu Zhi Jue was caught, the bones in his leg would definitely break!

Yu Zhi Jue flipped in midair and steadily landed on the iron chain, forcing it to drop down by half a foot, barely evading the attack. When he kicked the other's jaw a moment ago, it felt as if he had kicked a slab of steel, his entire foot stinging with pain, and he immediately understood that this opponent couldn't be defeated by depending solely on physical techniques. He vaulted off the chain and jumped backwards about a dozen feet, calmly pondering over what his next step should be.

That macho man furiously and indignantly retrieved his chain, a pair of eyes glaring at Yu Zhi Jue as he loudly swore, "You little rascal, only knowing how to play small tricks!"

The more agitated his opponent was, the more advantageous it was for himself, so Yu Zhi Jue blatantly disregarded those words, deliberately raised an eyebrow and slightly lifted his chin, flaunting a provocative and arrogant attitude.

As expected, that macho man became even more enraged, and figuring that a long distance attack would be avoided by Yu Zhi Jue, directly rushed over with the intention to capture him instead.

Although Yu Zhi Jue's strength was weaker by a far cry, nevertheless, he was remarkably quick and nimble, dodging with a flash of his body as his opponent only pounced on air. Over the course of time, albeit that macho man wasn't able to touch even a corner of Yu Zhi Jue's clothes from beginning to end, Yu Zhi Jue couldn't do anything to him either, merely seeking for openings and striking him a few times.

That macho man, having been kicked by Yu Zhi Jue again and again, flew into an even greater rage. In any case, there weren’t any restrictions on weapons or methods of fighting inside this ring, so thinking that he might as well, he randomly swung and whipped the iron chain all around, shattering the stone floor of the stage. Pieces of rock and stone flew and spun into the air, even forcing the supervising disciple to have no choice but duck for cover.

Ling Xia worried for Yu Zhi Jue while at the same time, adamantly spurned his opponent. Competing against such a young child, was it necessary to seethe in anger and get emotional to this extent? Even if you won, how likely would it be that you’d receive those ShaoYang Sect elders’ favor? These floorboards were all meticulously carved from ornate and expensive water attribute energy stones, and to be destroyed in such a crude manner, do you not see how some of the old men sitting above’s complexion had changed, alright? … …

As he silently cursed, an unforeseen situation already happened onstage. Even if Yu Zhi Jue was quick at evading, broken rocks sharp as a knives were everywhere, and in dodging one too late, his leg was finally cut by a piece of jagged stone. He stumbled, and that macho man swiftly grabbed him by both his arms and lifted him into the air! At once, Ling Xia was so tense his face turned pale.

“Little bastard, you sure run fast!” That macho man was worn out and panting for breath as he gnashed his teeth and clenched his free hand into a fist, smashing it into Yu Zhi Jue’s stomach in one go.

This punch did not contain the slightest trace of mercy and Yu Zhi Jue's body reeled, a trickle of blood instantly flowing out from the corner of his mouth.

"Ah'Jue!" Ling Xia clenched his fists in terror, wishing he could simply go on stage and kick that man straight out of the Milky Way! What the fuck! Being able to Lay your hands on such an adorable child, you bleepin' son of a clocking fish!

On the other side, Cui Yui was also panic-stricken as she widened her eyes, standing up and shouting, "ZhiJue!" She raised the whip in her hands, poised to interfere.

With sharp eyes and quick reflexes, Mo Dai hastily pulled her back, wiping off his cold sweat in fright as he implored, "Youngest junior sister, don't make a scene. Just wait, they're currently in the middle of competing, so how can you go there and disrupt things? Take heed that you don't incur his wrath!"

Cui Yu hesitantly halted her actions, then stomped her foot and snarled, “To dare humiliate ZhiJue like this, I’m going to slice him into mincemeat later!”

Although the macho man onstage wasn’t aware of these eyes glowering at him, nonetheless, a chill went up his spine. Right now, he on y needed to throw Yu Zhi Jue off the stage to win, but he was extremely unwilling, slapping his hand towards Yu Zhi ue’s cheek instead. A stain of purple instantly bloomed across that snow white skin, and half of Yu Zhi Jue’s face swelled up.

“Brat, what happened to that lofty attitude of yours now?” That macho man raised Yu Zhi Jue to his eye level, watching the other’s reactions while feeling somewhat pleased with himself.

Yu Zhi Jue merely shot him a frosty glare, spitting out the piscine blood in his mouth. He loathed this kind of fish-like flavor that was so incredibly, incredibly disgusting… …This taste clearly and unquestionably confirmed how useless he was right now, how powerless and weak!

He vaguely thought that he had heard a familiar voice calling his name anxiously a moment ago, and peeking out of his peripheral vision, immediately caught sight of a pair of pitch black eyes. Those eyes were staring attentively at only himself, full of tenderness and empathy… …

An indescribable power welled up inside his body, as if gradually breaking out of his control… …

That macho man saw his ominous and sinister gaze up close and spontaneously shivered, reflexively lifting Yu Zhi Jue high above his head, wanting to hurl him far, far away!

Yu Zhi Jue slowly closed his eyes; there was some kind of gentle yet chilly presence in the air, countless and invisible, all rushing to gather inside his body — Just like last time in the water, but a lot more intense!

Feng ShuMing had been continuously and silently paying attention, and at this change, faintly nodded his head. This child's aptitude was undeniably second to none amongst thousands, to actually awaken to water elemental energy all by himself, not to mention, the speed in which his psychical energy converged was also the rare find of a century! Many talented people possessed water elementals, but to be so young while not having any cultivation, yet surprisingly able to reach this kind of level... …

Not only were the aptitudes of the disciples sitting below extremely lacking in comparison, even speaking of himself, he was also incomparably inferior at Yu Zhi Jue's age!

On account of the floorboards all being made from water attribute energy stones, Yu Zhi Jue's congregation of water elemental energy doubled in effectiveness. In the split second before that macho man threw him, he seemed to have sensed a kind of intangible and powerful force in the air.

Yu Zhi Jue soundlessly used his psychical energy to guide that force into supporting his back, turning in a beautiful arc midair and solidly landing on the ground! He shot a glance at the dumbstruck Ling Xia, imperceptibly nodded his head, and without an ounce of hesitation while using all his strength, pitched the energy he had gathered in his hand towards his opponent!

As if facing the entire weight of Mt. Tai, that macho man only felt a violent surge of pressurized air rushing directly at him, nearly suffocating right then as his body involuntarily flew backwards!

By the time his consciousness came back, he finally discovered that not only had he left the stage, but he had actually been knocked all the way to

the VIP section!

He gawked in disbelief at the far-off combat arena, gaping as he croaked, "What....."

Its just, before he could finish the rest of that sentence, he realized how all the blood in his body was as cold as ice, how his four Limbs were as good as paralyzed, and against his will, his body fell down with a Loud bang.

"Winner, Yu Zhi Jue!" The disciple recording the results onstage snapped out of his daze, only now loudly announcing the results.

The situation a moment ago had changed too abruptly, and apart from the elders and high-level disciples who had a certain amount of cultivation here, the many Low-Level disciples essentially didn't understand what had happened.

In the instant that Yu Zhi Jue was Lifted up earlier, Cui Yu had rushed below next to the stage, and was now a bit Lost on what to do. Mo Dai noticed the puzzled expressions of the elders nearby, hurriedly wiped another round of the sweat from his forehead, and dragged his youngest junior sister back up. He gave Yu Zhi Jue a somewhat complicated Look; who would have thought that ShaoYang Sect would gain such a capable disciple.....

Ling Xia was basically happier than if he had won himself, but after looking distressingly at Yu Zhi Jue's heavily swollen cheek, he was unable to say any words of congratulations. Speaking of which, the wound on that child's hand must still hurt a lot, right? .....

Song Xiao Hu was in the distant resting area, not able to do much at present, only capable of jumping and yelling with a terribly battered face, "Ah'Jue, you're so strong!"

Yu Zhi Jue ignored everyone’s distinct and varying gazes, and for the sake of concealing that his leg was injured, slowly came down from the

stage. But when he walked by Ling Xia, in the moment that they brushed past, he said two words in a low voice, “Be careful.”

“I will!” Ling Xia nodded his head and silently shed tears in his heart; this kid learned how to worry about others!

Yu Zhi Jue maintained a normal pace and walked towards the resting area, and only he himself knew that his palm trembled uncontrollably. Just earlier, in that single wink of time, he could have chosen to completely kill that macho man, making that disgusting and loathsome face never to appear in front of him again!

He tried to suppress that desire as if his life depended on it, but only with Ling Xia’s smile suddenly flashing across his mind was he able to control this ruthless urge inside his heart, holding back some of his strength so that person wouldn’t transform into a pile of waste under his strike… …

Not only were his abdomen and organs injured right now, but due to overexerting himself, his already wounded palm had once again split open, and his leg was also cut up and scorching in pain.

For the love of god, please don’t read this on an novel aggregate site.
This kind of powerful, wonderful feeling of having control over another person, just recalling it almost made him shiver with ecstasy… …

“Ling Xia! Xu Yan!” A disciple looked at his list and loudly called out the pair of names for the next match.

With a shudder, Ling Xia’s face instantaneously turned twisted and bleak. Fuck, his turn had come up this quickly!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 16

Ling Xia took in a deep breath and walked onstage while feigning calm, but in actuality, his legs already felt a bit weak.

He was different from those mighty and tyrannical Qidian MCs who ruled over the world; he's just a guy who liked staying at home and didn't have any inclination towards those sorts of ambitions or desires to stand above others. From his childhood up until now, it was only in kindergarten that he had gotten into a fight, and even that ended with him beaten to the point of tears by a tiny boy who was shorter… …

Of course, under the gaze of so many people, he had to put on a brave face and force himself to plow through! Right now, Ling Xia deeply understood what it meant to be in over one's head while in dire straights. Especially in seeing the long sword on Xu Yan's back and the storage bag on his waist that contained who knows what kinds of magical tools and weapons, the cowardly side of his mind was magnified even more.

Unlike the tremendously tough Song Xiao Hu or the gifted and intelligent Yu Zhi Jue, what he could rely on was only brute force… Ling Xia silently cried bitter tears in his heart.

Xu Yan lazily glanced at Ling Xia as if looking at an insignificant maggot, disinclined to even pull out his sword as he drawled, "Whatever skills you have, go ahead and use them all!"

Ling Xia sucked in a large breath of air, recalling the Tai-chi he learned during gym class in college, and solemnly drew a decent half-arc in front of his body. He endeavored to appear composed and unperturbed, steadily gazing at his opponent and striving to overwhelm Xu Yan with an imposing aura.

In front of those two kids, as their older brother, he can't go down without a fight no matter what! When those elders and experts took in disciples, aptitude was only a part what they looked for, and there was also

one’s vigor, character, etc. In any case, he must conceal his timid and weak aspects!

The cultivators paying attention to him all quietly shook their heads; this posture was so full of errors and openings that this boy couldn’t even be considered an inexperienced novice.

Xu Yan warmed-up his hands and wrist, his joints making a few pop-pop sounds, and using all five of his fingers, beckoned towards Ling Xia with a motion signifying 'come'. He primarily cultivated in the sword, but also had a certain degree of basics in the other fields. Dealing with the fledgling in front of his eyes, was there even a need to draw his blade?

To be underestimated was precisely what Ling Xia wanted, because only in this way was there a chance for victory! He slightly bent his body, eyes locked on Xu Van, and concentrating his power under his feet, suddenly bolted forward!

His body contained Herculean Strength, so this charge was extremely ferocious. Xu Yan was taken aback, but he did have experience, so he speedily turned to dodge and furthermore, shoved Ling Xia in passing to almost fall off the stage.

Ling Xia clutched at the edge in a rush with his hand, only then barely steadying his form, and he hurriedly turned back around and stood firm again.

Perhaps taking advantage of this just now to fall off the stage and concede defeat would result in less suffering, but as an elder brother and as a man, come what may, he couldn’t let himself lose this easily! Maybe every man, when a surge of boiling blood rushed to their head, had this kind of impulsive, reckless urge… …

Ling Xia slightly widened his stance to let his body stand more stably, and placing both hands placed in front of his chest to protect his vitals, said to Xu Yan with a smile, “Just now, I attacked first. This time, it’s your turn.”

Wouldn’t you say he declared th s in a particularly domineering and gallant manner?

Xu Yan’s eyebrow twitched as he sneered, “You’re courting death.”

Fifteen minutes later, Ling Xia felt his temples buzzing and pounding repeatedly, no longer able to differentiate the figures blurring in front of his eyes. He powerlessly half knelt on the ground, heavily gasping for breath nonstop, his throat filled with an acrid and ammonic taste. His chest was in extreme agony, his abdomen was also in pain, and with his ankle just kicked by Xu Yan, he couldn’t even stand back up… …

Naturally, his opponent wasn’t having that easy of a time either. He finally landed a hit on Xu Yan when he managed to get close; that fist of his was able to split rock and stone, so when he went all-out in releasing that punch, he could practically hear the cracking sound of bones breaking. Ahh, the rush of satisfaction that went straight through his heart! Only, he couldn’t even grin since drawing back the corners of his lips made his mouth hurt, and his face right now was probably unfit to be seen in public.

Xu Yan had basically never met someone this difficult to deal with before, someone who continuously latched his body to the floor and tenaciously clung to the cracks, not letting go despite getting punch and kicked repeatedly. His body cultivation was still in the novice stage, but to pull out his sword or use some other magical tool at this point in time, especially in front of everyone here, there was no way his pride would let that pass… …

Already tired from the fighting, Xu Yan paused and lightly panted, looking somewhat overwhelmed, then snarled, “You’re still not surrendering?”

Both of Ling Xia’s eyelids were swollen as he hunched his back to guard his vital organs. Even he hadn’t known that he actually had such a stubborn temperament, and the words that automatically flew out of his mouth were, “Surrender your frickin’ grandma!“

He was vaguely aware that in the audience below, someone was restlessly fixating their attention on him, but his vision was hazy and he couldn’t tell who it was.

A burst of pain ran through Xu Yan’s fractured wrist, and fuming while gritting his teeth, he rushed forth and put the rest of his strength into a kick towards Ling Xia’s back.

Ling Xia finally couldn’t retain his hold, his fingers loosening and in the wake of that strike, involuntarily flew out of bounds. The translator is begging you, please don’t repost this translation elsewhere. He closed his eyes in exhaustion. At this point, he shouldn’t have lost too shamefully right?

Fuck, damn this effing torment! He hadn’t even been here for that many days and he’s already been assimilated by this world’s terrifying and abnormal mindset! … …

In the moment before his body crashed down and made impact, an unknown person jerked on his back, neutralizing more than half of the momentum, but was then dragged down with him and they tumbled to the ground together. Ling Xia squinted his eyes for a while, cautiously trying to identify the other, and only through the color of their clothes and the shape of their body did he ascertain that that person was Yu Zhi Jue.

He struggled to lift his cracked lips and squeezed out with an ugly smile, “It’s still you two rascals that are stronger. I lost!”

Hearing this, Yu Zhi Jue didn’t say anything, merely clenching his fists silently. He didn’t know how to comfort someone and could only tightly grip a corner of Ling Xia’s clothes with his fingers.

“No, Elder brother Ling is already really strong! In the future, you can definitely defeat him!” Song Xiao Hu had also rushed on over, and when hearing those words, he was stirred up to the point of pounding a fist on Ling Xia’s chest.

“… …That hurts,” Ling Xia weakly moaned as his vision turned black, shamefully fainting on the spot.

The hell, my noble protagonist, do you have a grudge against me?

By the time Ling Xia woke up again, he discovered that he was lying inside a small, clean, and tidy room. The surroundings were exceedingly quiet, not a single person in sight, and the smell of medicinal herbs wafted through the air.

Ling Xia propped himself up, realizing just now that the injuries on his body were already bandaged, and his eyes that were originally swollen shut could now see with clarity as well. His throat was extremely parched, so spotting the tea placed on the nearby table, he promptly and without the slightest hesitation picked it up.

An appall ng figure in a tragic state was clearly and distinctly reflected n the water. The eyes were slanted, the mouth was crooked, and the eyelids were bloated up like a frog’s.

What a sorry and wretched condition he was in; just how miserable of a beating did he receive? At that time, to think that he even pretended to be cool and threw out a smile, that must have been a much more gruesome sight than now, right? He was worse off than a worn out cleaning rag! … …

The door soon opened and a hedgehog-like head bounced inside. As expected of the protagonist with the vitality of a cockroach, Looks Like his wounds from before had already healed for the most part!

Seeing that Ling Xia was awake, Song Xiao Hu was extraordinarily delighted, dashing over in a burst of pitter-patter steps. "Elder brother Ling, you're finally awake! You've already slept for an entire day! The healing salves Feng Luo sent over, she said they're really effective—"

"Where's Ah’Jue?" Ling Xia rubbed the other's hair and peered behind him. "How are his injuries?"

As soon as he asked, he saw Yu Zhi Jue push the door open and walk in. The expression on his face was very calm, not a trace of friendliness or warmth like on Song Xiao Hu's, but it appeared as if he was troubled over something.

Yu Zhi Jue’s voice seemed to carry a trace of awkwardness as he replied, “My injuries have already healed about 50% to 60%. More importantly, the placement results already came out.”

That kind of recovery and constitution was seriously much too impressive! Ling Xia was so envious and jealous; the wounds Yu Zhi Jue had received were even heavier than his own!

He only now realized that Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu both wore the same black uniform trimmed with gold, the symbol of being the sect master’s direct disciple. Song Xiao Hu’s robust and hearty air actually gave the prim and proper clothes a somewhat lively touch, but on Yu Zhi Jue, his posture appeared even more upright, and with skin as white as snow, that petite look of his was unusually charming.

Sure enough, after his outstanding display, the Song Xiao Hu that showed off the protagonist’s superior bearing didn’t end up starting from the bottom in obscurity like in the novel, but was rather taken in by Feng ShuMing together with Yu Zhi Jue! For those two kids to remain intimate and in close vicinity was also good, as it could prevent hostility from growing between them… …

Ling Xia instantly smiled and praised, “I knew the two of you were the best!”

Dimples emerged on Song Xiao Hu’s face, his smile containing pride, but Yu Zhi Jue’s reaction was rather lukewarm.

Ling Xia was quite surprised and inquired, "Ah'Jue, what's wrong?"

Yu Zhi Jue raised his head and gave him a Look, then shifted his gaze elsewhere while saying in a rush, "I'm fine, it's just, you're assigned to Immortal Welcoming Pavilion."

Ling Xia blinked, now understanding the situation.

He had actually thought of this already. This body's aptitude was ordinary, and his performance was also ordinary, so obviously he wouldn't be deeply valued Like these two. He had reckoned that he would simply find a low-class ShaoYang Sect disciple to be his master, and knew that it was impossible to become a direct disciple of the sect master.

In that case, was Yu Zhi Jue worried about him being sad over the huge difference between their treatment and status?

Ling Xia immediately felt touched, patting Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder and reassuring him with a smile, “This is nothing. It’s the same wherever I go, since regardless, we’re all still in ShaoYang Sect and can surely meet at any time.”

Song Xiao Hu nodded his head and exposed a row of pearly white teeth, innocently and happily exclaiming, “That’s right, Elder brother Ling’s clothes were also delivered and placed over there, and from now on, we don’t need to worry about going hungry anymore!”

Ling Xia firmly pinched his cheeks; this tiny, prepubescent version of the protagonist was much too cute! With that said, Song Xiao Hu revealing his remarkable talents ahead of schedule also had its benefits. The villain and the protagonist mutually encouraging each other and improving together, joining their hands as partners and laughing proudly across this alternate world, what a wonderful and beautiful outcome to behold!

He reached over to grab and shake out the dark blue uniform placed beside him. Both the style and material couldn’t match up to the exquisite quality and design of Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu’s clothes, and in comparison, it practically looked like servant attire… …

Ling Xia’s mouth twitched, and unexpectedly felt that the three words “Immortal Welcoming Pavilion” sounded very familiar.

That’s right, the protagonist’s first stop in ShaoYang Sect should have been Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, a place with a ton of annoyances and

where he received a ton of humiliation. That was precisely the time when the protagonist endured to temper and improve himself, a period of blood and tears you know, blood and tears... …

Fuck! It can’t be that it’s now his turn!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 17

The smal room Ling Xia was currently staying in was a temporary residence used to help settle in the sect master's new disciples, and the others had, one after another, already gone to where they were assigned. n other words, being ab e to wholly recuperate here was him basking in the reflected glory of Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue.

Ling Xia was still concerned about the people from YunXiao City, but not wanting to stir up Yu Zhi Jue's bleak memories, he surreptitiously asked Song Xiao Hu instead. Song Xiao Hu immediately replied, "I heard from Feng Luo that those people didn't leave, saying that…their youngest junior brother disappeared nearby, and they'll stay until they find him."

Of course, Ling Xia didn't know that Cui Yu also had a hand in this decision. After the exam ended, Mo Dai had to coax her for quite a while, explaining that right now, Yu Zhi Jue had just entered ShaoYang Sect so requesting Feng ShuMing to hand him over wasn't appropriate, etc. At long last, Cui Yu compromised and asserted that they'll talk again after she goes back and pleads with her daddy. Even though she was unruly, Cui Yu wasn't stupid and also knew that this matter wasn't so simple. She couldn't have hoped more for Shang Yan's timely disappearance, as it just so happened to give them a reason to stay.

Ling Xia felt a violent shiver. Perhaps it would have been better if he had hardened his heart to completely destroy the body and all other traces at that time, but it was too late for regrets now. What's more, even if he was given another chance, he still wouldn't have be able to do so… …He can only pray that Shang Yan's corpse won't be discovered. Then, he carefully warned Song Xiao Hu again, stressing that he must not ever let anything slip and such, and the other boy expressed his compliance.

Feng Luo and Song Xiao Hu had already become very familiar, and in seeing Ling Xia, she also politely nodded in greeting, albeit faintly maintaining a sense of distance. Ling Xia knew that this world's ranking of seniority wasn't based on age, but rather on one's strength and when one

joined a sect, not to mention, the status of being the sect master’s direct disciple was even more distinguishing. According to the rules here, it seems that he actually needed to deferentially call Feng Luo as ‘Senior sister’, and Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu as ‘Senior brother’… …

Ling Xia felt his balls ache with grief.

Moreover, during his rest here, it was clear to see that one can accurately determine another’s rank solely by looking at their apparel, truly the epitome in ‘judging people by their appearance’. Within this batch of disciples of the Pin[1] generation, the sect master’s disciples wore black with a gold trim, the personal disciples of the other ShaoYang Sect elders wore black with a silver trim, the slightly inferior third rank disciples wore long, grey robes, and finally, the outer disciples like Ling Xia could only wear dark blue servant-like clothes.

Although he didn’t have many expectations for this world, Ling Xia was still shaken by this kind of status-separated feudalistic system. Recuperating in this place, no matter how one looked at it, wasn’t very appropriate. Furthermore, his wounds were no longer much of a hindrance, so he decided then and there to report earlier to Immortal Welcoming Pavilion.

After he said this, Song Xiao Hu didn't express any unwillingness or reluctance, only pulling back his lips and grinning, "Then I'll come find you when I'm free. Elder brother Ling, you also have to come see us often."

When all was said and done, Song Xiao Hu was already the direct disciple of an entire sects master, so in front of Feng Luo, Ling Xia didn't rub his hedgehog-like head as usual, and just nodded with a smile as he assured, "Mmhn, I'll come visit you both when I have time

Yu Zhi Jue's reaction was all the more indifferent, glancing at Ling Xia before swiftly turning away as he threw out, "Then you also need to properly cultivate. Don't get beaten up like a pies head next time

"...Ok." Ling Xia was so speechless; was this kid supposed to have a poisonous tongue?

There were many trifling matters to settle when one first entered a sect, like the allocation of rooms, learning the fundamental rules, etc. The things that needed to be done were truly no less than what's required of a young employee who just got hired, so Ling Xia didn't let the two kids accompany him. However, after walking quite a distance, he turned around and discovered that those two kids were still looking in his direction, and suddenly felt a gush of warmth in his heart.

Despite being part of the same sect, the distance between Stonewood Mountain, where those direct disciples of the sect master cultivated, and Immortal Welcoming Pavilion generally took two full hours to travel. The other four disciples who were assigned along with Ling Xia to Immortal Welcoming Pavilion had already followed the administrative disciple and departed after the exam ended. Ling Xia asked for directions the entire way there while hurrying onwards, sometimes fast, sometimes slow.

His foot was injured by Xu Yan in their match, so walking slowly was fine, but moving more briskly would disturb the wound and bring about unbearable pain. Therefore, it was four hours later before he reached Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, and the sky was already dark.

Immortal Welcoming Pavilion was located at the foot of a small mountain within the ChongMing Mountain Range. Even if the name sounded nice, its actual position in ShaoYang Sect wasn't high, and it was mostly in charge of the sect's medicinal fields, firewood, rice paddies, and other such secondary matters. The disciples here do the heaviest labor, but can only receive the most basic cultivation pointers. Compared to being called a disciple of ShaoYang Sect, they're closer to part-time workers in charge of the miscellaneous tasks at ShaoYang Sect, and their monthly pay was the lowest as well.

In the past, Ling Xia had basically skipped and skimmed over this part of the story when he read it. After all, this was supposed to be a feel-good novel, and he had zero interest in the descriptions of the protagonist repeatedly being oppressed. Right now, Ling Xia regretted that a lot, because the misfortunes of the protagonist had turned into what he would have to face.

The two disciples guarding the gate were both thirty some years old, and with one look, you could tell that they've long abandoned cultivating. Ling Xia quickly handed over the tablet at his waist carved with his name, exposing an amiable and friendly smile. "Hello to both senior brothers. Due to my leg injury, I had traveled slowly, and am hoping for senior brothers' pardon and understanding "

Except, the bruises on his face had yet to fade and his eyes were still swollen, so the result of this expression of goodwill was inevitably not very effective.

Those two disciples carefully sized up Ling Xia and surmised that he didn't have anyone backing him. They also didn't see him bring out gifts to curry favor like the other disciples had, and immediately felt a bit unhappy.

The fatter gatekeeper disciple waved his hand somewhat impatiently and barked, "The others all arrived yesterday, why are you the only one late? Martial uncle Guang XuZi is in the main hall, hurry up and go in "

Without further delay, Ling Xia gave a salute and limped away following along the flight of stairs, and going from the front gate to the top of the small mountain took him another hour.

Inside the hall, as expected, the other new disciples had naturally already gone to their assigned rooms to tidy up. The ‘Martial uncle Guang XuZi’ the two disciples at the gate spoke of was this Immortal Welcoming Pavilion’s overseeing manager. He looked about thirty years old, and with a slim build, gloomy eyes, and a slight hook nose, he gave off an impression of someone that’s hard to get along with.

In seeing Ling Xia bow in greeting, he did not immediately tell Ling Xia to get up and instead, lazily lifted his teacup and took two sips, drinking leisurely while he regarded the other from top to bottom. Ling Xia lowered his head and cursed silently; it couldn’t be that he met a douchebag this quickly?

After a long time, only until Guang XuZi had finished his cup of tea, did he tell Ling Xia to get up while absentmindedly asking, “Since you’ve

entered my ShaoYang Sect, you must have some ability, yes?”

Ling Xia promptly and cautiously replied with respect, “This disciple’s body contains Herculean Strength.”

Guang XuZi suddenly let out a chuckle. “Not bad, not bad, they finally sent a useful one. For the time being, you’ll follow Yuan Hui to water that patch of Evening Mist Herbs. Yuan Hui, take your Junior brother Ling to go rest.”

Ling Xia didn’t know what kind of herb this was or the size of a ‘patch’, but he could only withdraw for now. He was also afraid of being taken advantage of by Guang XuZi, so he purposefully exaggerated his leg injury. Plus, he was genuinely in pain from exhaustion, so the way he staggered and hobbled was reminiscent of Iron Crutch Li, though he wasn’t sure if Guang XuZi saw or not.

Yuan Hui was a young man who looked honest and considerate, and Ling Xia’s impression towards him was actually a bit favorable. While the other led the way, he took the opportunity and asked, “Senior brother Yuan, where is everyone’s sleeping quarters located?”

Yuan Hui glanced at him, then answered very slowly, “There aren’t any more empty rooms, so we can only impose upon Junior brother Ling to temporarily live in the firewood shed first. The housing in Immortal Welcoming Pavilion has always been in short supply, and after these busy days have passed, Martial uncle will find people to build another residence.”

Ling Xia blinked, having no choice but to resign himself to his terrible luck, not suspecting these words in the least. In his panic to arrive here, he had ignored his hunger, so he continued to ask, “Senior brother Yuan, sorry for the inconvenience, but where are evening meals usually served?”

Yuan Hui turned around, pointed to a building not far away, and replied, “In there. Every day, three meals are announced by the sound of a bell. The time for today’s evening meal has already passed… …Hmm, I’ll go ask

around in the sleeping quarters and see if any junior brothers still have a steamed bun left.”

“... ...No need to trouble Senior brother, I’m not really that hungry.” No matter how dense Ling Xia was, at this moment, even he became aware of Yuan Hui‘s halfhearted and vague attitude towards himself. He was honestly heavily worn out by these past few days, yet only had a bit of medicine bestowed by Feng Luo on him. In any case, he’s already fully experienced such feelings like starvation by now, and actually, once you endure past a certain point, the hunger ceases to be a bother.

Sure enough, after Ling Xia’s response, Yuan Hui also no longer payed this any mind.

Ling Xia followed the other to the warehouse and received a simple, flimsy mattress. As a cultivator, this kind of thing doesn’t really matter, and together with those two kids, he’d already passed many days sleeping on tree leaves and coarse straw.

Immortal Welcoming Pavilion’s firewood shed was considered quite spacious and had plenty of open space. Ling Xia placed the mattress down and thanked Yuan Hui. Yuan Hui carelessly gave him a look, and without saying another word, turned around and left. Ling Xia sighed; thankfully, the firewood shed also had an oil lamp.

Ling Xia shook out the mattress and spread it out, then after applying a layer of medicine to the wounds on his body and face, blew out the lamp and lethargically lied down.

Even though this place was pitch black and quite chilly, at least it was safe and devoid of both dangerous magical beasts and violent combat… … That said, how were those two kids doing right now? … …He tossed and turned for a long time before falling asleep, and yet for all that, he was jerked awake twice in the middle of the night by bug bites.

The next day, the bell outside woke Ling Xia up very early, and without bothering to wash up, he hastily rushed outside as the the first rays of sunlight barely stretched across the sky. He wasn’t familiar with the way, so

by the time he found the right place, he was late again, and the other disciples were already standing neatly in rows.

Guang XuZi gave him an extremely harsh glare and yelled, “Ling Xia! Come here!”

Ling Xia inwardly bemoaned a not good. This was practically the same as an elementary student arriving Late and running into the principal... ...

He quickly walked over and bowed with the utmost respect. This disciple is slow witted and got lost on the way, thus arriving late, and humbly requests Martial uncle to issue a punishment'

Seeing that his etiquette was meticulous, Guang XuZi's expression cleared up a bit as he nodded and intoned, "Hmm, considering that this is your first day, I won't punish you too severely, but in my ShaoYang Sect, everyone must keep the sect rules in mind. If there is a violator, they must be strictly disciplined. Since I told you yesterday to follow Yuan Hui in taking care of that patch of Evening Mist Herbs, then your penalty will be to water it all by yourself today. Eating is forbidden until you finish?'

Noticing the complicated and somewhat sympathetic gazes a few older disciples cast towards himself, Ling Xia felt a bad premonition.

Ling Xia didn’t know exactly how large a ‘patch’ really was, but once he was led there by another disciple, he almost fainted from anger. What bullshit is this! He originally thought that a patch would be, at most, as big as a basketball court, but the reality was that it’s as large as a soccer field, you know? Looks like this Guang XuZi was enacting a show of power in front of the new disciples, and he happened to be the hapless whipping boy… …

When he saw the two buckets hanging from a pole that he had to use for hauling water, he nearly started to hop up and down in rage. Fuck! Screw you! How many trips would he have to make to finish watering all this?

[1]: in ancient Chinese culture, different generations are assigned certain a word as their generation name.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 18

As if afraid Ling Xia wasn’t shocked enough, the disciple who led him here stood nearby and compassionlessly added, “Evening Mist Herbs must be watered with the spiritually abundant water from the Radiant Healing Spring at the top of the mountain, and ordinary water will not do. Remember that a single stalk of Evening Mist Herb needs one ladle of water, no more, no less.”

"… …Senior brother, thanks for the guidance," Ling Xia sighed, picked up the buckets, and started climbing the mountain according to the directions he was given.

Fuck! This is forcing the horse to run but not letting it eat! Knowing that there's no way to complete this task as instructed, Ling Xia simply trekked forward at a moderate pace while picking whatever fruits he found and eating his fill.

When he finally Located that Radiant Healing Spring, Ling Xia was quite pleasantly surprised. The water was bright and clear and full of spiritual energy, sweet on the tongue, and also seemed to possess the ability to relieve fatigue and replenish one's strength. He drank over half a ladle in one go, then filled up both of the buckets.

Those two buckets were very big, and Ling Xia shouldered them clumsily. Although it wasn't very physically taxing, he couldn't avoid swaying and wobbling, and by the time he walked back, about a fourth of the water had spilled out.

Ling Xia looked at the discontent face of the supervising disciple nearby, hurriedly bent over, and attentively started watering. One of the hobbies of his stay-at-home life was raising plants and flowers, and there were at least ten different potted plants sitting on his balcony at home. One could smell a natural fragrance coming from this Evening Mist Herb, green, lush, and extremely pleasing. Ling Xia gradually became more interested, however,

by the time both buckets were empty, he hadn’t even finished watering a single row.

Ling Xia straightened his back and wiped his sweat. The other disciples were also bustling around the medicinal field, some weeding and some planting seeds. In contrast, that overseeing manager Guang XuZi was quite carefree, sitting in a pavilion far away, drinking tea and eating refreshments, looking entirely like a stereotypical, extremely evil chief foreman, and Ling Xia inwardly raised his middle finger at him.

He went back and forth a few times like this, and before long, it was noon. Ling Xia’s clothes were completely drenched and his strength was entirely spent, but that patch of herbs was only watered one tenth of the way.

The lunch bell rang and the other disciples all went to wash their hands as Ling Xia rubbed his empty stomach with a bitter look. A supervising disciple passed by, saw him standing still, and immediately frowned as he bellowed, “Hurry it up! Unless you finish, don’t even think about eating for the rest of the day!”

Ling Xia could only swallow his anger in silence and carry the empty buckets back up the mountain. In any case, those people all left to eat and there was a small river near the spring, so he planned to secretly catch some fish to roast and feed himself.

Next to that river, Ling Xia rolled up his pants and jumped down. This body’s reflexes were pretty good, and very quickly, he caught two foot-long grass carps. It’s just, the task of roasting the fish was usually done by Song Xiao Hu, and Ling Xia wasn‘t even familiar with how to start a fire. Only after great difficulty d d he get a fire going, but then he kept coughing from choking on the smoke, and in the end, both fish were burnt.

Ling Xia ate one without registering the taste, unable to hold back the occasional groan. He had thought that he generally looked after of those two kids quite well, but in hindsight, the one being taken care of was actually himself… …

Not far away, a rustling sound came from within the underbrush. Ling Xia promptly raised his head, and not far away, a completely snow white, fluffy small animal was currently squinting its eyes and Looking at him. Ling Xia thought it was a rabbit, but upon closer in-spection, he discovered its body more closely resembled that of a stray cats with the exception of ears that were a bit long. Its Long fur was extremely glossy, making people want to reach out touch it at first sight.

Could it be that it was attracted to the smell of roasted fish? Ling Xia pondered. Not having someone to talk to far so long made him quite lonely, so he removed the remaining fish's burnt, outer layer, offered up the well cooked inner meat, and beckoned with his hand as he invited with a smile, "Come here."

That animal's large, amber eyes shot him a glance that faintly flashed with disdain, appearing quite intelligent. Ling Xia stared blankly; unexpectedly, this small animal's expression reminded him of Yu Zhi Jue, and he couldn't help but laugh in his heart.

Right at this moment, footsteps suddenly sounded from behind. Startled, Ling Xia turned around and saw that some distance below, Yuan Hui and another disciple called Yuan Ming were currently walking towards him, and he frantically stood up in a rush. A flash of white light appeared before his eyes, the fish in his hand vanished, and that strange, small animal then speedily jumped into the bushes and disappeared.

Ling Xia paused a beat, then poured water to douse out the fire in haste. Nevertheless, it was already too late, and Yuan Ming’s sharp eyes had spotted the remnant ashes on the ground. Without a moment’s delay, he yelled from afar, “How insolent! Daring to even steal and secretly eat food!”

By the time Ling Xia followed those two and descended the mountain, Guang XuZi had already sat in front of the ma n hall’s front doors for quite some time, wearing a grim expression with crossed legs. The few dozen Immortal Welcoming Pavilion disciples were also all standing inside the courtyard, as if they already knew about Ling Xia’s “secretly stealing food”

incident. Perhaps Yuan Hui had used a communication talisman to inform them of the matter while on the way here.

Seeing the three of them return, Guang XuZi heavily slammed his tea cup on the table and sneered, “Wonderful, just wonderful! My Immortal Welcoming Pavilion has never had such a daring and presumptuous disciple before! Do you know what this Immortal Welcoming Pavilion’s thirteenth sect rule is?”

Ling Xia was forced to kneel on the ground, his heart awfully sullen, and hearing this, he raised his head, looked directly at Guang XuZi, and answered, “This disciple only arrived yesterday and does not yet know the sect rules, nor did any of the senior brothers offer their guidance, and thus can only trouble Martial uncle to please enlighten me.”

Guang XuZi gave a sharp laugh as he huffed, “Ohh, so you feel wronged, though I suppose that I, as your martial uncle, is partially to blame here. Yuan Xin, why don’t you recite the thirteenth sect rule for your Junior brother Ling, so as to let him engrave it into his heart.”

A young man around twenty years old stepped forward, and as expected, he had a loud and clear voice. Precisely enunciating each and every word, he quoted, “Those disrespecting the elders are to be conferred thirty strokes.”

Ling Xia gave a start, his face immediately paling. Originally, he thought this would be resolved by being forced to copy the sect rules. The protagonist had been punished here before, and each time, it was some from of excessive manual labor while once, it was to transcribe the sect rules. Because Song Xiao Hu was illiterate, his inexperienced and blind copying didn’t turn out well , so Ling Xia remembered this section of the nove very clearly.

Ling Xia was full of misery, and in the present circumstances, toughing it out would just lead to more suffering. After all, what fell under the umbrella of ‘disrespecting the elders’ varied greatly depending on interpretation… He swift y lowered his head and implored in a meeker tone, “This disciple s unintelligent, and will never dare to again! I will definitely keep Martial

uncle’s teachings in mind and ask for guidance from the senior brothers more often, never to forget the sect rules, never to make another mistake!”

Guang XuZi let out a pleased chuckle. In any case, this weak young boy will probably be dead, if not crippled, after receiving thirty strokes, and all in all, this was only his second day, so he would be hard pressed to explain that to his superiors when the time came. But, he had privately accepted 2000 energy coins from Xu Yan, so he couldn’t simply drop this matter either… …

Putting on an act, he coughed once, then declared in a benevolent tone, “Considering your immaturity and on account of this being your first offense, I will reduce your punishment by half. Yuan Ming, Yuan Hui, what are you still dawdling around for?”

A wooden bench had already been pulled out and placed behind Ling Xia. Glancing at the two thick, wooden clubs leaning next to it, he took in a deep breath, and then slowly lied down on his stomach on top of the bench. Fuck! Sooner or later, he will have his revenge!

Yuan Hui stuffed a small, round wooden stick inside Ling Xia’s mouth and whispered, “Junior brother Ling, pardon me.” He knew that Guang XuZi was bribed and was deliberately making things difficult for Ling Xia, but this didn’t concern himself, and it was also inconvenient to be loose tongued. On top of that, the bribe-giver was this sect’s famous sword cultivating elder Mo YuanZi’s disciple, someone he couldn’t afford to offend even more than Guang XuZi. He could only lament that this youngster was too unlucky, provoking such a malicious and troublesome guy as soon as he arrived…

Ling Xia had watched a lot of dramas and movies, and knew that this stick was to prevent one from biting one’s tongue when lost in the throes of excruciating pain. He smiled at Yuan Hui as his heart wildly pounded up and down, and wordlessly bit down. Fuck! Why wasn’t he a QD MC?!

When the first stroke fell, Ling Xia’s entire back jerked upwards. Tears involuntarily gushed out, and a wordless, blood-curdling scream clogged in his throat as his body started to tremble uncontrollably!

Fuck, this hurts like hell! When he was naughty as a kid, he had been spanked by his old man, but compared to this, that was akin to being gently caressed fml!

Before he could finish reeling from the initial pain, the second, and then the third stroke heavily fell one after another!

Ling Xia subconsciously arched h s back, wanting to evade, but someone firmly secured him in place as those wooden clubs continued to fall again and again, striking his butt, his legs, and very soon, the clothes on his back were stained red with blood.

By the time the fifteenth stroke fell, Ling Xia's face was white as a sheet and his entire body was soaking wet, looking as if he was just fished up from underwater, eyes blurry and unfocused while in so much agony that he could only silently gasp for air. Despite this, he still had to struggle and get up, prostrate with difficulty towards Guang XuZi, and pay his respects. "Many thanks for Martial uncle's guidance!"

Just watch, I'll "thank" all eighteen generations of your family

Guang XuZi nodded in satisfaction, waving his hand as he ordered, "Yes, as long as you remember. Properly recuperate in the firewood shed these next few days, and once your wounds have healed, you can chop firewood for the time being."

Luckily, two people held him up by his arms and sent h m back. These two were also new disciples that had entered with Ling Xia, and seeing his wrecked state, inevitably felt sympathetic due to the r similar statuses, and even poured him a bowl of warm water.

Ling Xia only felt lightheaded, his whole body in unbearable torment. Sprawled on his bed, he licked his dry, cracked lips, drank the water in one gulp, and expressed his thanks towards those two in a hoarse voice.

By the time only Ling Xia remained in the firewood shed, he couldn't resist gnawing his lips and letting out a few painful wheezes of breath.

He didn’t need to inspect the extent of his injuries, since his dark blue clothes had been dyed closer to a puce red. He was also afraid of the bloodstained cloth drying and clinging to his wounds, making it harder to deal with later, and in any case, Immortal Welcoming Pavilion only had guys. He wasn’t afraid of losing face, so he stripped off his ruined clothes and threw them aside at once, exposing his brutally beaten and grisly backside.

Fortunately, a bit of the medicine Feng Luo had bestowed from before was still eft, and enduring the agony, he laboriously applied it on himself, and somehow, between the dizziness and pain, he fell asleep.

Except, he couldn’t escape even n his sleep as nightmares plagued him by turns. His whole body burned as if he was set ablaze, and every pant seemed to scald h s throat.

During this period, Guang XuZi was also afraid of Ling Xia dying for real, so he dispatched people to deliver some medicine. Ling Xia drank everything without saying a word, muddle-headedly flopping back down as soon as he finished. These medicine were far inferior to what Feng Luo gave, their effectiveness merely so-so.

Not knowing how many days had passed in a blur of haziness and vertigo, Ling Xia opened his blurry eyes and habitually reached for the bowl of water next to his head. After groping around a few times, someone quickly placed the bowl into his hands.

He thought it was one of the people from Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, gave his thanks in a scratchy voice, and gulped it all down at once. Only after it entered his mouth did he detect its peculiarity, as this water was rather pleasingly sweet, immediately relieving his parched throat, and his feverish forehead also felt a Lot more comfortable.

Astonished, Ling Xia followed the sight of black robes and Looked up as a familiar and childish face suddenly entered his eyes. Dumbstruck, he couldn't help but ask, "Atflue? Why are you here?"

Yu Zhi Jue was half squatting on the ground and heavily biting his Lips. Right now, the small face that rarely ever smiled was exceptionally dark and ominous, and a pair of sharp, slighting narrowed almond eyes were currently lingering over Ling Xia's exposed waist and behind, taking in and cataloging the wounds on his body.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 19

Ling Xia immediately drowned in embarrassment. It didn’t matter if this sorry figure of his was seen by other people, but being discovered by Yu Zhi Jue or Song Xiao Hu was appalling on a whole other level. He was their big brother, and this made him appear way too useless… With great difficulty, he hurriedly pulled over the thin quilt to cover himself, his cheeks slightly burning with shame as he muttered, “It’s because I broke a sect rule… These wounds only look scary, it doesn’t hurt at all.”

Ever since he was injured, he had continuously lied on his stomach these days, and his voice was still dry and rough. Right now, his neck was also sore from having to raise his head for an extended period of time, and he couldn’t help but let it drop back down.

Hearing Ling Xia say such words, Yu Zhi Jue felt his heart clench, becoming even angrier yet not knowing how to vent this surge of enmity that threatened to overflow. He took in a deep breath and obstinately pulled off that thin quilt, setting it to the side.

Ling Xia’s legs were long and thin, and Yu Zhi Jue uncomfortably shifted his gaze upwards. His buttocks and a small portion of his thighs were still immensely swollen, the purple bruises even more sinister and frightening when contrasted with the fair and smooth skin below. There were still residue bloodstains, and one could imagine just how tragic it used to be.

“It’s already been five days. I was wondering why you didn’t come visit me, and then this ends up being the first thing I see when I arrive.” Yu Zhi Jue’s tried to maintain his calm as much as possible, but he couldn’t hold back the wrath in his voice as he demanded, “Who exactly did this? I’ll go interrogate the one managing this place!”

Those last few words were filled with traces of a potent fury that unexpectedly made Ling Xia twitch in fright. He hastily struggled to get up and tugged on a corner of Yu Zhi Jue's clothes, urging, "Ah'lue, don't go!"

Yu Zhi Jue was afraid of Ling Xia tearing open his wounds, so he could only stop moving and stand still. only after erasing the ruthless expression on his face did he turn back around and say, "Forget it, apply medicine for you first."

As he talked, he removed the storage bag from his waist, took out a small jade bottle, and smeared some white ointment on his fingertip, poised to spread it on Ling Xia's wounds. This storage bag and bottle were both recently given, and the medicine inside was the best in ShaoYang Sect.

Ling Xia swiftly dodged and insisted, "I'LL do it myself." His wounds were truly Located in too awkward of a Location, and even if it's someone very close to him, it's still too humiliating.

Yu Zhi Jue was also somewhat flustered. Except, when he saw Ling Xia moving with terrible difficulty, he could no longer resist pressing the other’s arm aside and taking over the task. His movements were very light and focused, and with some embarrassment, Ling Xia bit his lips and didn’t make a sound. That ointment was very refreshing, and the places it touched felt extremely good.

Fuck! How shameful! Besides his old man and his mom, it’s been ten some years since anyone had seen his butt. Great, now it’s been displayed in front of so many people… ...

When Yu Zhi Jue finished applying the ointment, for the sake of getting rid of the awkward atmosphere, Ling Xia searched for a conversation topic as fast as he could and asked, “What about Xiao Hu? You must both be very busy, right?”

“He doesn’t have free time,” Yu Zhi Jue answered, not wanting to reveal that he had stealthily sneaked out. New disciples like him were incredibly busy these days, as Feng ShuMing was exceedingly strict, requesting them to memorize three fundamental cultivation books within ten days. In addition to that, they had to write a reflection essay with their thoughts. Song Xiao Hu didn’t now how to read a single word, but luckily for him, that Feng Luo was helping him with memorizing. And due to an odd

feeling, Yu Zhi Jue didn't want to come here with Song Xiao Hu, nor did he expect to see Ling Xia in such a tragic state…

Ling Xia coughed, then continued, "How have you been these days? No one bullied you, right? Those people from YunXiao City…did they leave?"

Yu Zhi Jue gave him a glance; this person was already injured to this extent, why was he still so chatty and inquisitive? He nodded his head and replied, "I didn't see that crazy woman these few days, so they should have left. And I'm not like you, I wouldn't be bullied so easily by others!"

That last declaration finally contained a bit of his usual arrogant manner, and Ling Xia abruptly smiled. After not seeing this kid for a few days, Ling Xia originally thought that he had matured quite a lot, but after a few words, it's obvious that he still hasn't grown up.

The two of them chatted for some time, and as the medicine gradually took effect, Ling Xia became woozy and soon fell asleep again. Yu Zhi Jue helped cover him up, and in a flash, the expression on his face changed as he walked without the slightest hesitation towards Immortal Welcoming Pavilion's main hall.

Guang XuZi had already heard from the gatekeeping disciples that a direct disciple of the sect master came over. Furthermore, it was actually to find Ling Xia, which instantly led to him frantically pace around in circles. Who knew that that poor-looking lad had this kind of backer? A backer whose position was above Xu Yan's!

His Immortal Welcoming Pavilion had the lowest status in ShaoYang Sect, so he couldn't afford to offend any of these bigwigs! He silently cried injustice in his heart. If he had known earlier, he definitely wouldn't have been so heavy handed, but now, he can only think of a way to push the responsibility elsewhere… …

At this moment, a sound came from the direct on of the door, and a youngster wearing all black ambled inside at a unhurried pace, looking as if he was surveying the decorations in the hall. Seeing Yu Zhi Jue's age, Guang XuZi was faintly put at ease, thinking that this ignorant chi d would

be easy to deceive. He swiftly plastered on a huge smile, walked forward, and greeted, “I’ve long heard that the sect master took in a few young talents with outstanding aptitudes, and only in seeing Senior brother Yu today, have I come to realize that the rumors are indeed true! As expected of a promising genius!… …”

All of Yu Zhi Jue’s goosebumps popped up from hearing the other’s flattery, and he coldly interrupted, “Today, I came to find Manager Guang because I have a matter I wish to inquire about. My elder brother Ling Xia was fortunate to be assigned under your noble care, and not knowing where he resides, I was wondering if you could permit us to meet?”

“This…” Guang XuZi knew that Yu Zhi Jue had just come from visiting Ling Xia, and deducing that the boy was being contrary on purpose, immediately stammered, “A few days ago, your elder brother was… reported by the other disciples to have violated the sect rules, requiring a punishment of thirty strokes… Ah, but this humble one took into consideration that it was his first offense, and therefore reduced it by half.”

Suddenly, Yu Zhi Jue smiled, a pair of ink black eyes staring directly at Guang XuZi as he followed up and inquired, “I don’t know which sect rule our elder brother violated? If possible, could Manager Guang please enlighten me? Moreover, he’s actually sleeping in the firewood shed, which is quite strange. After I go back and report to Master, I’ll ask if Immortal Welcoming Pavilion is truly destitute to the point of having no empty rooms.”

That patch of Evening Mist Herbs only required watering twice a month, but every time, it needed ten people to work together, plus, the rear court still had four or five empty rooms, and the punishment for secretly stealing food was merely a three day ban on meals… So at present, being stared down viciously by Yu Zhi Jue, Guang XuZi turned into a stuttering and mumbling mess, unable defend himself in the slightest as cold sweat fervently rolling down his head and back.

Yu Zhi Jue had already guessed that Ling Xia was being bullied here. He had grown up on Holy Maiden Peak from a young age, and had already seen plenty of the types of shady businesses done in these orthodox sects.

Right then and there, a triangular icicle gradually started to form in his hand, and in a voice that contained traces of malice, he stated, “Yesterday, Master taught me how to change the water elementals in my body into ice. Take a look Manager Guang, am I doing it correctly? Here, you are my elder, while I am a newcomer fresh off the boat, and still require much guidance.”

That icicle was extremely sharp, and under the sunlight, it reflected beautiful, fragmented rays of color, making Yu Zhi Jue’s hand seem all the more petite and attractive, his fingernails gleaming like jade.

Even so, Guang XuZi felt his blood run cold for an unknown reason, and involuntarily retreating two steps, he babbled, “Senior brother Yu, you, you’re doing it very well… …Yes, your elder brother is currently heavily wounded and weak, this, this humble one will let the other disciples properly look after him without fail. There is actually a quiet room in the rear court, so I’ll get people thoroughly clean it up straightaway and let your elder brother move n!”

“Then I’ll have to trouble Manager Guang,” Yu Zhi Jue remarked, curving his eyes as he carelessly twirled the icicle around and waved it under the sun, the very picture of childlike innocence. The mole at the corner of his eye shimmered, scarlet as blood.

Guang XuZi held his breath and gave a salute, then hurried out the door to deal with this matter, panicked to the point of staggering and almost falling down. Based on his intuition, he knew that even though Yu Zhi Jue was young, he was much, much more terrifying than that Xu Yan… …

Therefore, when Ling Xia woke up again, he thought he was still dreaming. The room he was in was neat and clean, contained all the necessary furniture, and with the early morning sun shining through the curtains, it appeared peaceful and warm. Yu Zhi Jue was currently curled up and sleeping next to him. The two of them were very close, and he could almost feel the young boy’s soft breaths brushing across his face.

Ling Xia crawled up to a half kneeling position and shook out his limbs, only now discovering that his body’s condition had gotten a lot better.

Those wounds of his also no longer hurt.

He couldn’t help but stare at Yu Zhi Jue, becoming lost in thought. Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes were tightly closed, and the bags under them seemed a bit dark… Was this kid having a hard time cultivating? …

As if noticing his gaze, the boy's lashes trembled a few times before his eyes slowly opened, pure and clear and bright. Ling Xia impulsively reached out and rubbed his hair, asking on a hunch, "Did you say something to that Guang XuZi? How come I'm here?"

Yu Zhi Jue instantly leapt off the bed, straightened his hair, and after giving Ling Xia a once-over, walked to the door as he insisted, "He found his conscience all on his own! I need to hurry and return."

Ling Xia knew that the other didn't want to admit to this, so he just gave him a smile and replied, "Then you must be careful, and don't work too hard... Once my wounds heal, go visit you, and also Xiao Hu." He still remembered what Yu Zhi Jue had said, that he didn't go see them for five whole days.

Yu Zhi Jue's back imperceptibly stiffened, and after a stretch of silence, gave a hmph and left through the door.

After Ling Xia was completely healed, Guang XuZi’s attitude towards him basically did to a complete 180 reversal, only assigning him the most frivolous of tasks and even asking after his well being now and then. Not only was Ling Xia unaccustomed to this treatment, the way the other disciples looked at him also carried varying degrees of envy.

Ling Xia didn’t know what to say. Only a few manager-level disciples with relatively high statuses and seniority were qualified to have their own private room, so him, as a brand new disciple, staying in a single room inevitably seemed bizarre. But the things he needed to do from now on would be inconvenient if he stayed with someone else, thus Ling Xia had no alternative but to shoulder those peculiar gazes and continue living there.

In the days while he recuperated, he had thoroughly thought things through. He must become strong! There’s no way that he could keep relying on two younger kids, you know? Otherwise, he wouldn’t have the face to continue being their older brother!

Ling Xia suddenly thought of the small he met in the mountain when he was secretly roasting fish. Fuck, how did he forget the fortuitoous encounter Song Xiao Hu had here?

That small animal was absolutely not a common wild beast, but rather a level-7 magical beast, a Snow Flamma! A sage of ShaoYang Sect lived in seclusion in one of the valleys near Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, and due to liking Song Xiao Hu's straightforwardness and naivete, gave him a few cultivation methods and pointers. Of course, Song Xiao Hu was not here at present, so naturally, it was no longer possible for this past of the plot to happen.

In the novel, Song Xiao Hu essentially treated the Snow Flamma like a stray cat, chasing after it and the fish it stole, which led him to meeting that sage. Although this elder had a lazy disposition and didn't take Song Xiao Hu as his disciple, later even fussing about him being too troublesome and moving away, and despite being just a passerby that didn't appear in the novel again, he was still considered the protagonist's very first teacher!

One should know, the first step of the protagonist’s growth started here!

Ling Xia inwardly cried tears of joy. Being arranged here by fate, could this all be for the sake of getting him to patch up the plot?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 20

At Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, there was one day of rest each week, on this day, everyone could choose to descend the mountain, read the ancient texts in the library, or even go to the practice arena to train. Ling Xia decided that he would go see Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu in the morning, and in the afternoon, he planned to go find that Snow Flamma.

Ling Xia departed very early in the morning, and on the way, he met quite a few high-level disciples majestically riding magical beasts. Envy bubbled in his heart, and he decided that from now on, he also needed to find an adorable pet of his own.

He soon arrived at Deadwood Mountain, and here, Low-Level disciples Like Ling Xia received a rather cold reception. However, he didn't mind it much and very courteously inquired about where Yu Zhi Jue lived, but as it turned out, Yu Zhi Jue wasn't home.

A male disciple glanced at the dark blue clothes on his body and remarked in a somewhat detached manner, "Eighteenth Junior brother and Nineteenth Junior brother should be at the practice arena. It's normal for them not to come back for days at a time, so it's better if you don't wait."

Yu Zhi Jue was Feng ShuMing's eighteenth disciple, and Song Xiao Hu was the nineteenth.

Ling Xia felt a bit crestfallen, but Deadwood Mountain's practice arena wasn't a place a Low-level disciple Like himself could freely walk into. He pondered for a bit, then asked the other disciple to borrow a brush and paper, drawing a smiley face and writing crookedly: *I'll come see the two of you next time. Even when cultivating, you need to properly take care of your health.*

He forcefully stuffed that piece of paper into the door’s gap, but coincidentally, a sweaty Song Xiao Hu returned right then. Smiling with a

pair of dimples, he distantly spotted Ling Xia and energetically called out, “Elder brother Ling!”

While gesturing excitedly with his hands, Song Xiao Hu chattered on about his recent progress, like the things he’s learned and such, after which, he pulled Ling Xia to go find Yu Zhi Jue. Ling Xia was completely dragged along at the other’s pace and felt inwardly shocked. In just a few days of not seeing Song Xiao Hu, his strength had increased this much!

They quickly arrived at the practice arena, and Ling Xia pulled Song Xiao Hu to a stop as he observed the inner grounds, carefully taking in the figure of Yu Zhi Jue who was currently single-mindedly concentrating on practicing his swordsmanship. Those his age were most suited cultivating the body and the sword, and others such as elemental energy and psychical energy training was best done after learning the first two.

In a soft voice that carried some worry, Song Xiao Hu said, “A few days ago, Ah’Jue left during the period Master had designated for cultivation, and refused to say where he went. Master penalized him to learn a sword technique within 7 days that, I heard a senior brother say, took him 3 months to grasp in the past.”

Ling Xia paused and blinked; this was because of him, wasn’t it? He looked attentively at the Yu Zhi Jue inside the arena, at that child’s stubborn, tightly pursed mouth, at his focused gaze, and at the soulwood sword in his hand. As Yu Zhi Jue went through the steps of that sword technique, he would always stop at a certain pose again and again, clearly having difficulty executing that move.

The sword that cultivators carried on their back must be made from the spiritual stones that they personally acquired. One’s own essence and blood also needed to be added when the forging was on the cusp of completion, and only after pouring in one’s psychical energy, will that sword acknowledge its owner. Before this, all cultivators used soulwood swords as a substitute.

Yu Zhi Jue slowly closed his eyes, going over those moves in his mind. He had memorized every step and form of this sword technique in his heart,

but even after practicing countless times, no matter what, he failed to connect them together. He couldn’t help but feel gloomy inside, and even when it was demonstrated previously, Feng ShuMing only did it once… …

How should he connect these two steps that seemed impossible to link?

Yu Zhi Jue recalled Feng ShuMing’s movements, and with a flash of inspiration, poured water elementals into the moves that had stumped him. The sword’s t p trembled, its extremely tough body curving in an inconceivable manner, and carried by the momentum, he eloquently split the solid rock in front of him in half with a smooth flip of his body, followed by a beautiful whirl as the sword successfully return to its scabbard.

Ling Xia couldn't help but cheer, "Nice!"

Song Xiao Hu's jaw dropped in amazement, murmuring, "Ah'Jue's so awesome! Elder brother Ling, this won't do, I haven't Learned a single form of this sword technique yet. I also need to properly train!" In saying so, he already walked inside the arena without any hesitation, resolved to solely focus on practicing his swordsmanship.

"… …" Ling Xia chuckled and shook his head. These two kids were so similarly obstinate and competitive, truly rivals ordained by fate.

Yu Zhi Jue must have heard his voice earlier because he slowly walked on over, but for some reason, his gaze kept darting off to the sides. Perhaps due to having just exercised, his cheeks also carried an unnatural tint of rouge.

Ling Xia looked at him and smiled, "Millie, your swordsmanship earlier was very beautiful."

Yu Zhi Jue shot him a glance, and then turned his small face away as if he didn’t care at all, using a white handkerchief to wipe the sweat on his forehead. Only, the base of his ears had started to turn red as he somewhat urgently asserted, “Something easy like that? A piece of cake!”

“Of course! I just knew you were the strongest!” Ling Xia generously praised. Feng ShuMing enforced a strict education, but with kids, they needed to receive a lot of compliments too, and beating them down with severity and nothing else could easily lead to the development of personality defects.

Sure enough, in the face of his praise, Yu Zhi Jue blushed ever more deeply, and although he forced himself not to smile, it was obvious that he was very happy.

Yu Zhi Jue turned to vigilantly study Ling Xia's body, his complexion gradually returning to normal, and asked, Have your wounds healed? How come you're here today?"

"…Yes, they've healed:' Ling Xia felt that that humiliating experience will probably become a shame that'll haunt him for the rest of his life, so he hurriedly changed the topic and joked, "Wasn't it Ah'Jue who was pining for me to visit? Naturally, I immediately came over when I had the time."

Yu Zhi Jue's cheeks immediately flushed again as he denied with some awkwardness, When have I ever pined for you to come?"

Looking at this fumbling action of trying to cover up a Lie yet making it all the more obvious, Ling Xia really wanted to continue his teasing, but afraid of angering the other, he changed the topic. The two of them stood and chatted for quite a long time, and only after it was past noon, did Ling Xia leave.

Relying on his memory, Ling Xia found where he previously roasted fish and stealthily relit a new fire.

A fire elemental magical beast, the Snow Flamma‘s setting was a glutton who loved to eat fish, and even though it looked very cute, in actuality, it‘s very dangerous. Because the Snow Flamma’s elemental attribute was the same as Song Xiao Hu’s, it held an innate feeling of intimacy towards him. However, the result of the first examination showed that no relatively pure fire elementals were detected in Ling Xia’s body, so it’s hard to say whether that Snow Flamma will appear again.

Ling Xia had specifically carried a few different seasonings with him, and after butchering two fish and cleaning out their internal organs, he evenly smeared on various spices, striving his utmost to roast these fish as fragrantly as possible to lure out that Snow Flamma.

A level-7 magical beast's vigilance was very high, and although Snow Flamma were not classified as attack-type magical beasts, it will only approach those with familiarity and confirmed to be safe. The subtle tightening of a stranger's muscle, the quickening of one's breath, and even a single unintentional glance could cause it to raise its guard.

Therefore, Ling Xia tried to think carefree and happy thoughts to relax himself, and he slowly began to treat this as a camping experience, unconsciously sticking a piece of grass in his mouth and humming a song. Carrying hints of enjoyment, he propped his chin up and half reclined in the grass, all while roasting his fish.

Bit by bit, the fish's fragrance emanated outwards. Ling Xia certainly didn't expect to succeed in attracting the Snow Flamma on his first try, thus he calmly and leisurely started eating while flipping and roasting the other fish before him.

At the moment he finished eating the first fish and only one remained, a flicker of movement appeared at the top of a tree. Ling Xia lifted his head very naturally, and when the first thing he saw was a snow white tail swaying back and forth, he couldn't help but let out a laugh.

The Snow Flamma's pair of big, amber eyes stared at the fish in his hand, entranced, as its ears trembled at both sides of its head. Its two snow white front paws aimlessly scratched at the bark, evidently struggling in restraining its desires.

Ling Xia very generously raised the last fish up in the air and offered, "Here you go."

Immediately, a flash of white appeared before his eyes, and Ling Xia's hand became empty. He lifted his head and saw that currently, the Snow Flamma's mouth was firmly clamped onto that fish. As a fire elemental

magical beast, it wasn’t afraid of the heat, so gripping the fish with two plump paws, it started eating with gusto, chewing and swallowing even the bones. Its tail wagged back and forth behind it, clearly satisfied to the extreme.

When Ling Xia laughed and stood up, that Snow Flamma instantly placed its front paws in a defensive pose. Ling Xia paid it no mind, going by himself to the river’s edge and jumping down, off to catch more fish in the water. He knew that Snow Flamma were very proud and finicky; the more you tried to get close to it, the further it would retreat, but the more you ignored it, it would conversely approach you instead.

He quickly caught two more fish, used a small knife to carefully cut and wash them clean, and then took out all sorts of seasoning packs, coating them on one at a time. However, when he was about to add prickly ash, a single paw reached over and very bluntly swatted that package away. Ling Xia was caught off guard, so in the blink of an eye, all the prickly ash powder spilled onto the ground.

Ling Xia gaped at the Snow Flamma with some astonishment, and it promptly revealed two tiny canines while retreating backwards, eyes faintly filled with the annoyance of making a mistake. Ling X a was immediately delighted, and after calming his expression and lowering his head, continued his previous actions without batting an eye, abandoning that sp ce.

Looks like this Snow Flamma doesn’t like the taste of prickly ash…

The Snow Flamma stayed on guard for a long time, but seeing that Ling Xia didn’t spare it another glance, huffily retracted its claws and sat back, licking the aromatic remnants on its paws while staring at the fish in Ling Xia’s hand, drooling. It truly loved fish that was cooked, but its owner was too lazy, had terrible cooking skills, and also forbid it to descend the mountain. In the early years, it would go down and steal food, and had been ruthlessly punished for it. Who knew how long it’d been since it last ate something delicious… …

Ling Xia skewered both fish on a single tree branch, returned to the campfire, and squatting down, carefully began turning and roasting the fish in his hands.

A delicious smell gradually emerged. That Snow Flamma watched on anxiously, impatiently turning in circles and dripping so much saliva that the only thing separating it from a puppy was a few hungry barks. As soon as Ling Xia indicated that he was done cooking, the Snow Flamma instantly rushed over, its mouth accurately snatching the food and landing further away. In just a few bites, it swallowed an entire fish into its stomach, giving Ling Xia quite a shock.

He immediately remembered that one couldn’t discern the appetite of a magical beast purely from its body size. If a Snow Flamma wanted to, it could eat many times its weight all in one go with zero problems.

However, by the time the Snow Flamma had finished eating the second fish, Ling X a had started to clean up the campfire in preparation to leave the mountain. Right now, the sky was starting to turn dark, and furthermore, he definitely didn’t believe that this gluttonous Snow Flamma would accept him so easily. Things like this had to be steadily developed step by step.

The Snow Flamma saw him putting out the fire and promptly revealed a dissatisfied expression. It spat the fish head in its mouth off to the side as its round, amber pupils abruptly morphed into dangerous slits.

“Tomorrow, I’ll bring more food tomorrow,” Ling Xia promised, shivering in his heart and swiftly unveiling a slight smile. Emphatically pointing to the bottom of the mountain, he continued, “I’ll bring you something different tomorrow.”

That Snow Flamma’s pupils instantly returned to its previous cute, round state, obviously understanding. It carefully looked at Ling Xia’s face, then nimbly and lightly leapt onto a tree, vanishing with a swish of its tail.

When Ling X a returned, he first went to the kitchens to seek help since he and the people here have already become pretty familiar. The head cook was an ordinary non-cultivator, and because Ling Xia wasn’t like the other

disciples who always acted in an arrogant or domineering manner, treating him politely and courteously instead, he had a very favorable impress on of Ling Xia.

In the past few days, in order display their consideration and care towards the new disciples, the higher ups had handed out this month's pay in advance. Ling Xia secretly slipped a few energy coins to the head cook and whispered, "Uncle, I hope I can trouble you to bring me back a roasted chicken when you go purchase food."

Straightaway, the head cook uncle readily agreed. How was this task difficult? There were frequently disciples who would request him to bring them this or that, and in the many years that he'd stayed here, he had yet to see such a well-mannered and considerate child!

By noon the next day, the head cook uncle indeed brought back one of the city's famous roasted chicken for Ling Xia, and despite being firmly wrapped in a lotus leaf, its savory aroma filled the air. Ling Xia hid it inside his room, and after he finished with his afternoon work, brought it up the mountain.

He arrived at the familiar spot, unwrapped the lotus leaf, and a mouth-watering fragrance rapidly spread outwards.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 21

This time, the Snow Flamma arrived very quickly, sticking out its fluffy head almost as soon as Ling Xia sat down. It impatiently threw itself directly at him, causing him to jump in surprise.

The roasted chicken carried the sweet scent of the lotus leaf, and knowing that this was the only one Ling Xia brought, the Snow Flamma began eating in a rush. Later, it slowed down its speed, and with hooded eyes, chewed thoroughly with relish.

Ling Xia wanted to laugh, but he only sat far away and smiled softly, not intruding on its meal.

When the Snow Flamma finished eating and elegantly used its paws to wipe its oily mouth, it gave Ling Xia a glimpse, arrogantly swung its tail, and then without any indication of gratitude, hopped back into the underbrush and disappeared.

Despite that, Ling Xia didn’t get annoyed, cleaned up the leftover lotus leaf and bones while humming a tune, and descended the mountain.

In the following days, Ling Xia often brought food for the Snow Flamma, sometimes a roasted chicken, and sometimes rabbit meat or other such things. The Snow Flamma ate fruits and vegetables as well, but it was far more interested in meat. Its guard towards Ling Xia also clearly dropped by a lot, and at first, when Ling Xia deliberately scooted closer in the middle of its appetizing feast, the Snow Flamma would bare its fangs and protect its food. Yet as time passed, it began to turn a blind eye to all his actions, continuing to eat by itself.

This lasted until one day, after the Snow Flamma had eaten over half of its chicken, it halted, then hesitantly ripped off one of the legs and placed it next to Ling Xia’s body. The meat’s surface distinctly glistened with drool.

Ling Xia‘s mouth twitched a few times, and pointing to himself, asked, “For me?“

The Snow Flamma swung its tail and cast Ling Xia a glance, its big amber eyes conveying part expectation and part reluctance, evidently aching over this chicken leg in its heart.

Ling Xia took in a deep breath, slightly troubled but also secretly delighted. Looking back on all these days of bribery via delicious food, this little guy finally saw him as one of its own.

He bent down, picked up the chicken leg, and stared at it for a while, endeavoring to steady his nerves. Hmm, strictly speaking, a magical beast’s drool was abundant in natural elementals, and there *shouldn‘t* be any issues. When he was little, he had also shared popsicles with his friends where they each took turns taking a lick. So, he gently tore off a small piece of meat, chewed it a few times, and swallowed. This roasted chicken’s taste was indeed quite good, heavily fragrant and rich while not greasy. Compared to his usual meals, it was better by far…

Seeing that Ling Xia ate it without hesitation, the Snow Flamma’s expression patently relaxed. It swayed its tail aloofly as its fuzzy ears pointed downwards, cute as a snowball. Yet, when Ling Xia’s heart was enticed to the point where he itched to reach out and rub its head, it took a few steps back, and a vigilant air returned to its eyes.

Rather disappointed, Ling Xia retracted his hand and chuckled, “Okay, I’ll be leaving now. I’ll come see you again tomorrow.”

The Snow Flamma drooped its head, as if feeling wronged and vexed. Therefore, as soon as Ling Xia got up and turned around, it bit onto a corner of Ling Xia’s clothes, making him stumble a step.

Confused, Ling Xia looked down and the Snow Flamma let go, lowered its head, and laid down with a look of utter unwillingness, as if saying: *Fine, I’ll let a peasant such as thyself pet me a bit*.

“… …” In other words, this little guy was the same type as Yu Zhi Jue. Ahhh, how could the both of them be so cute?

Ling Xia crouched down and softly stroked its fur, rubbing along the concave curves behind its fluffy ears and gently scratching the bottom of its jaw. He had raised a cat before and knew how to let a kitten feel more pleasant.

As expected, the Snow Flamma’s stretched taut body slowly relaxed. It squinted its eyes and flopped on the ground, satisfied to the point just short of rolling around and cutely begging for more. Ling Xia grinned happily and kneaded its little pads, not receiving any resistance.

In the days that followed, the Snow Flamma and Ling Xia became ever more intimate. Even when Ling Xia’s monthly pay was used up and he came without bringing food, the Snow Flamma didn’t express any discontent. Instead, it lazed around in Ling Xia’s lap as familiar as could be, permitting him to give it rubs and pets.

On this day, as Ling Xia teased and doted on the Snow Flamma, he tried to lift it up high in the air. The Snow Flamma spared him a glance of disdain, then suddenly flipped over and dropped to the ground. A head-on gust of wind rushed past Ling Xia, so strong that he could only barely keep his eyes open, and by the time his vision returned, he was instantly taken aback—Before him was no longer a cute snowball, but a white magical beast that was as huge as a tiger!

The Snow Flamma's originally amber eyes had turned a penetrating, scarlet red, the fur on its body much Longer, and its claws no less than three inches in Length and sharp as blades!

It gave a deep howl and breathed a long, scarlet flame into the air, a clear contrast to the snow white fur covering its body. Ling Xia involuntarily took a few steps back, his heart trembling. Ah, so this was the true form of a level-7 magical beast… …

The Snow Flamma gestured at Ling Xia with its head and lowered its body, its red irises containing not malice, but rather a lively excitement.

Ling Xia immediately felt relieved; does this mean t wanted him to climb on?

He carefully straddled it, sat down, and tried to wrap his arms around its neck. The Snow Flamma gave another low howl, and carrying Ling Xia along, al four of its limbs suddenly exerted out strength as it leapt onto a tree more than 30 feet tall.

The blast of wind that hit his face plus the abrupt increase in height caused a burst of vertigo to assault Ling Xia. The Snow Flamma sensed his nervousness, and incredibly pleased with itself, increased its speed even more, almost as if flaunting. It dashed left and right through the air, startling the birds of this mountainous forest and scattering flocks of them away. Ling Xia's hair was blown into disarray, and he hastily lowered his body as much as possible while tightly hugging the Snow Flamma's neck.

After a while, Ling Xia finally got used to the sensation and straightened his back, peering at the forest that flashed on by. The Snow Flamma's speed was definitely faster than a sports car's! Especially at the moment it threw itself into a jump, when its beautiful body stretched out in midair, one man and one beast were practically flying through the sky.

"You're so amazing!" Ling Xia exclaimed in awe as he rubbed the Snow Flamma's furry ears.

The Snow Flamma proudly turned its head with a smug look, its paws kicking off harder and leaping even higher.

Just as Ling Xia was comfortably enjoying the feeling of the wind, the Snow Flamma's upright ears unexpectedly slumped down. t very obviously cowered and trembled a beat, then with haste, jumped down from the trees and steadi y came to a stop.

As Ling Xia was still puzzled over this turn of events, he heard an extremely deep and resounding male voice exclaim, "*Ah*'Li, it's no wonder you always come home late these days. Turns out, you found a little friend."

Ling Xia blinked, looked all around him, and saw that not far away, a man who had snow white hair and donned a mask carved from peach-wood was currently standing in the shade of a tree.

He stood with his hands clasped together, wore a simple, long plain robe, and at a glance, basically resembled some kind of mountain spirit or spectre. From behind the mask, a pair of sharp eyes were presently staring in their direction.

Knowing that this person must be the Snow Flamma’s owner, Ling Xia hurriedly got off and jumped down.

The Snow Flamma rolled once on the ground, its body shrinking briskly, and had resumed its dainty and cute appearance when it stood up again. It ran over and rubbed up against the masked man, trying to win his favor with a flurry of cute and adorable acts.

Ling Xia knew that this mysterious hermit had a personality that hated troublesome and extraneous things, so without saluting or using honorifics, he simply smiled and said, "I am Ling Xia, a new disciple that entered Immortal Welcoming Pavilion. I first met Ah'Li a few days ago while roasting fish next to the river, though its only now that I've learned his name."

"Oh, so that's how it is." The masked man nodded, then continued, "No wonder these days he hasn't been properly eating at home."

Ah'Li nimbly jumped onto his shoulder, vigorously nudged against him fawningly as a string of whines conveying an unknown meaning purred out of its mouth.

Annoyed by and ignoring being rubbed all over, the masked man questioned dubiously, "Ah'Li very rarely acknowledges outsiders, but ended up liking a kid like you?"

…Of course that's because its a cute glutton for food!

Smiling, Ling Xia replied, “Perhaps it’s because Ah’Li and I are tied by fate. I’m also really fond of him.”

That masked man observed him attentively, his gaze cold and imposing. Ling Xia was slightly frightened, but he calmly returned the other’s gaze with a faint smile, his face revealing not a single hint of cowardice.

All of a sudden, the masked man laughed out loud. “A kid like you is also pretty interesting, so follow me.” As his words fell, his body flashed, vanishing from his original spot.

With zero hesitation, Ling Xia decided to follow. Ah’Li glanced at him and jumped onto a tree, going after that masked man at a much slower pace. Ling Xia regulated his breathing and ran behind it, but after who knows how long, he was completely tired out, panting and gasping for breath. By the time he saw a small thatched cottage appear beyond a bamboo grove, he rejoiced in his heart, knowing that this was their destination.

The man was lazily inclined in a chair, and in hearing their approach, only slightly lifted an eyelid. “Hmm, sure enough, not an ounce of basic cultivation. Speak, you don’t know who I am, so why did you risk following me here?”

Ling Xia cautiously stopped to think. He didn’t know just how many years this man had lived, so it might be better to tell the truth as it is. Therefore, he answered placidly, “I want to become strong. Can you help me?”

In the novel, this masked man had liked Song Xiao Hu’s naivete and straightforwardness along with his tenacity. He’s unable to copy Song Xiao Hu’s naivete, but there’s no harm in acting a bit more steadfast.

“Haha…” the masked man laughed, waved his hand, and with a blur, appeared before Ling Xia’s eyes. In less than a second, his hand had already pressed on top of Ling Xia’s head. Sharply shocked, Ling Xia wanted to move back, but his body felt as if it was fixed in place, unable to move in the slightest. A burst of strange energy poured in from the crown of his head and countless of powerful currents recklessly surged throughout his body.

He couldn’t stop his heart from beating faster and faster, and shortly after, h s forehead was riddled with sweat.

The masked man regretfully withdrew his hand and swiftly lied back down, sighing, “What a pity, your aptitude is very normal. Although your body contains Herculean Strength and small amounts of wood elemental energy, but in my opinion, even if you’re more hardworking than others, it’s unlikely that you’ll become very accomplished.”

“This I know,“ ing Xia replied, his heart stil pounding rapidly. He wiped the sweat on his forehead and solemnly continued, “However, to give up before trying at all, wouldn’t that be what truly leads to not having any hope?“

Fuck! I need to live and survived until those two kids grow up and change the plot. Only then can I be at ease in finding a way to transmigrate back home!

Not expecting Ling Xia to immediately retort like this, the masked man was obviously caught off guard. After a brief pause, he laughed, “Since it’s like this, and as I don’t have any pressing matters, let’s test just how strong your resolution is.”

He swung his leg, and Ling Xia looked on helplessly as out of nowhere, a crack appeared on the ground beneath his feet. Before he even had the time to scream, he fell directly inside.

—Fuck! How come I don't remember this happening to the protagonist in the novel! Don't discriminate against mob characters ahhh!

Only when Ling Xia opened his eyes did he discover that he was now lying on a patch of grass. The air was overflowing with the faint aroma of plants, smelling particularly pleasant, and he jumped up at once to survey the environment around him. His surroundings were breathtaking and dream-Like, with flowers blooming enchantingly, green willows casting soft shades, and not far away, there stood a row of gorgeous buildings, clearly a different world than where he was previously.

What kind of place was this? Ling Xia stared blankly, stunned. The masked man's voice soon reverberated through the air and commanded, "Go to the second house."

Ling Xia jumped, unable to tell from which direction the voice originated, as it seemed to virtually fill this entire space… …

Space? His eyes flashed and immediately came to the realization that he must be inside the masked man’s magical space!

Other than the various elemental powers, this world also had a lot of ridiculously overpowered and cheat-like special abilities, and the ability to create your own space was one of those. A magical space was different from a storage bag or a storage ring; it did not depend on a magical tool, but rather on one’s cultivation, and had almost the same properties as the real world.

In fact, Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue were the most outrageous creators of their own space in the novel. The two of them were both at the legendary XuanHuang tenth stage and able to set up and build a space according to their whims, whether to grow spiritual herbs or manufacture energy stones, even capable of altering the passage of time inside, making it flow faster or slower than the outside world by a hundredfold.

Towards this, Ling Xia would like to express his unfathomable admiration, envy, and hate!

The masked man spoke again in a lazy tone, “Go into the second room and open the bookcase.”

Ling Xia didn’t think twice, and according to the masked man’s instructions, found a yellowing, old-fashioned book deep inside. It was probably about 3 centimeters thick and weighed heavily in his hands.

“Inside the bag outside the door is a single Void Jade Herb seed, and its planting method is recorded inside that book. If you can get it to germinate within 6 hours, then I will acknowledge your conviction.” The masked

man’s voice held an unmistakable trace of schadenfreude, as if in anticipation of a good show.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 22

Ling Xia took in a deep breath, and with the focused concentration of cramming for the NCEE[1], started to speedily flip through the pages, reading ten lines at a time in search for keywords. Fuck! This book didn’t have a table of contents!

A flip flip sound accompanied every page turn, and by the time he finally found the three words 'Void Jade Herb', almost an hour had already passed.

Ling Xia started reading without a moment's delay. Void Jade Herb is a rarely seen wood elemental spiritual herb that had a powerful healing ability. When compound together with other healing oriented medicinal herbs, one can create the extremely precious Void Jade Pill, a pill that's considered a legendary elixir capable of bringing back the dead and reconstructing a living body from a skeleton. But at the same time, this herb was very rarely seen in the wild and nearly impossible to grow artificially, and the book only briefly mentioned a few of its likes and preferences.

Ling Xia put the Void Jade Herb seed in his palm and meticulously scrutinized it. It resembled a very blue marble and was smooth, round, and incredibly comfortable to touch.

The air echoed with the masked man's voice as he yawned with boredom, "Young man, hurry it up."

Ling Xia surveyed his surroundings, then without any reservation, opened a random door and started to search around. Void Jade Herb had ‘jade’ in its name and depended on the gem to grow, so for starters, a jade artifact was absolutely necessary.

The masked man was silent for a beat, coughed once, and said, “Mmhn, you can find what you’re looking for in my storage area, but remember, you’re not allowed to touch the first door on the right.”

“Understood,” Ling Xia chuckled. Hmm, who knows, maybe that room was hiding the masked man’s diary, or a portrait of the person’s he’s secretly in love with, or some other illicit secret… In the midst of his busy rummaging, he let his mind wander and wildly fantasized a bit.

Very quickly, he found an appropriately sized suet jade bottle. He carefully tilted it and slid the seed inside before going outside to seek some suitable soil. Void Jade Herb was extremely fragile and picky, requiring only the most exquisite sandy soil that’s rich in spiritual energy. Inside this space, there was a river with moist and fertile sand dunes full of spiritual energy beside it. Ling Xia feared that the sand was still too coarse, thus he spent a long time grounding it on top of a slab of stone, and only then did he cautiously pour the soil inside the bottle.

The water quality inside this space was also quite good and abundant in spiritual energy, and Ling Xia calculated how much it would take to fully wet the soil without ruining the seed. He had originally liked flowers and plants, so right now, he used 120% of his love in taking care of, watering, and swiftly completing this task.

Except, Void Jade Herbs growing in the wild needed 10 years to germinate, another 10 years to flower, and matured only after a century. In that case, how could he make this seed sprout in just a few short hours?

He wiped the bottle’s surface clean of soil and carefully cupped it to his chest. High-level users with wood elemental abilities could rely on pouring their own wood elementals into plants to shorten the time they needed to grow, but presently, he didn’t even know how to properly utilize the pitifully limited power elementals inside his body… …

A petite, snow white figure suddenly appeared in front of Ling Xia. Needless to say, it was *Ah*'Li, and after walking around him in a circle, it bit onto his pants and tugged. Ling Xia thought that it wanted to play with him like before, carefully protected the jade bottle in a hurry, and reprimanded, “*Ah*'Li don’t mess around. I’ll play with you later.”

Ah'Li squinted its eyes in discontent, gnashed and pulled even harder, and Ling Xia came to a belated realization. Was this *Ah*'Li’s way of trying to

bring him somewhere?

The masked man laughed, “You double-dipping, unfaithful little thing!”

His tone sounded like he was tacitly permitting *Ah*'Li’s actions though, so Ling Xia reassuringly walked forward, allowing himself to be led along until they stopped in front of a particular room.

This room did not appear to be very large from the outside, but once Ling Xia opened the door, he discovered that the interior was abundantly spacious. On both sides of the room were about seven or eight tables, all filled with various kinds of odd and strange household utensils made of different materials placed at even intervals. In the center was a furnace as tall as a grown man, seemingly for the purpose of refining pills.

Ling Xia recalled the cup used during the first exam that detected what elementals his body contained. It was able to magnify the power elementals a person had by a hundredfold, so perhaps there was a similar tool here? If it’s like that, wouldn’t he be able to make use of the wood elementals inside his body for stimulating the seed to grow?

He didn't recognize any of these utensils, but there was a bookcase off to the side, and the books inside all pertained to refining tools or pills. Ling Xia drew his finger across the spines, stopping on a book called "*The Complete Fundamentals in Refining Magical Artifacts*", and quickly began to flip through it.

This book was written with an incredibly illegible and flamboyantly cursive penmanship where each word difficult to identify, thus making it quite the laborious read. But when he saw a certain row of text, his eyes immediately glimmered. That's right, all elemental energy was interdependent, each having its complementing and neutralizing pairs, and by applying this principle, he could totally construct something simple that mimics the examination device he saw that day.

Ling Xia meticulously sized up the household utensils on the desks, and after performing the easy and short attribute measuring test the book described, chose one utensil from each of the five basic elements of gold,

wood, water, fire, and earth. After arranging them according to the basic formation depicted, he solemnly placed the jade bottle in the middle.

Ah'Li watched him bustle about while curled up in a corner, cute as can be.

After positioning everything in its place, Ling Xia took a deep breath, placed his hand on top of the bottle like during the exam, and imagined that the peculiar heat within his body was slowly being poured inside. Only after a long time, did he open his eyes.

He looked down, filled with anticipation and hope, but was instantly disappointed… The soil inside the bottle was still as smooth and level as before, without even a slightest bit of change.

Right at this time, the masked man appeared inside the room and while yawning, thoughtfully looked at the arrangement on top the table and proclaimed, “Time’s up, you didn’t make it.”

Ling Xia nodded somewhat dejectedly and agreed, “No, the seed didn’t sprout.”

The masked man observed his disheartened manner with a face full of smiles, touched his chin, and mused, “So the words you said before about not giving up, looks like that was all to deceive me. All that happened was that it didn’t grow, so is it necessary to be this dismayed? Back when I cultivated a Void Jade Herb, it took an entire year before I got it to germinate. You’re just a kid who fiddled around for 6 hours, and you expected it to sprout? If it did, wouldn’t that be a killer joke?”

“… …” Ling Xia had no words. After what seemed like forever, he glowered at the other and asked, “Then, was Senior doing all this just to make fun of me?”

The masked man giggled, leaned back, and a seat manifested to catch him just in time as he confirmed, “Naturally.”

“… …Haha, Senior is really funny.”

“However,” the masked man continued, crossing one leg over the other and swinging it twice, “when I entered this sect all those years ago, I was a low-level disciple who was screened as lacking in power elementals too. Spent 3 years lingering on a small hillside and sweeping floors, but now, aren’t I also being referred to as ‘Senior’ by you? I feel like you have just a tiny smidgen of aptitude in refining artifacts and growing plants, and if earnestly tutored and cultivated, in a few dozen more years, perhaps you can achieve a minor accomplishment or two.”

“… …Much thanks for Senior’s glamorous praise,” Ling Xia gritted out, unable to refrain from grinding his teeth as his tone took a turn for the worse. How infuriating! He hated being played liked this the most! As expected, it’s much more enjoyable to play other people instead.

Ah'Li, clearly a long-time victim to this kind of suffering, rubbed up against Ling Xia’s shin n sympathy.

When Ling Xia left, he held that *“The Complete Fundamentals in Refining Magical Artifacts”* book in his arms. The masked man had ordered him to finish reading it in 3 days, and in addition, use the provided energy stones to refine the easiest magical artifact.

Ling Xia cried tears in his heart. Sure enough, the life of a mob character was to walk the path of support. What the protagonist received from here was guidance on body cultivation, sword cultivation, and energy cultivation you know!

Furthermore, as the masked man handed *“The Complete Fundamentals in Refining Magical Artifacts”* to Ling Xia, he even proudly added, “This book contains the best knowledge I collected from far and wide, and I personally wrote it all down using my many years of insight in artifact refinement. Whether in the heavens or on earth, there is only this one copy, so you must read it thoroughly! Haha, seeing how out of so many books, this was the only one you chose, it’s clear that you two were destined by fate.”

No wonder that handwriting was so ugly! Ling Xia felt that this book’s credibility needed to be lowered by 50% at the very least. He had spent 6

hours staying in the masked man’s space, but when he came out, the sky had only just turned dark. He waited until he stealthily slipped back to his residence and pushed open the door before sighing in relief at last… No matter what, it could be said that he successfully completed his first objective.

“Where did you go?”

Ling Xia had placed the book in his hands on the table, and right as he was striking the flint to light the lantern, that familiar voice suddenly sounded from behind. Startled, his hand shook, resulting in him nearly burning himself.

With some surprise, he turned around and asked, “*Ah*'Jue, how come you’re here?”

Yu Zhi Jue was currently leaning against the head of the bed, and hearing this, slanted him a glare and angrily growled, “You haven’t told me just where exactly you went yet?”

After dropping these words, he walked over and cast a glance at the book on the table. Ling Xia promptly smiled and answered, “I went to the library here to borrow a book, something related to refining magical artifacts.”

Yu Zhi Jue impatiently countered, “Even so, was there a need to come back this late? I waited here for you for ages!” As soon as these words left his mouth, he felt a bit chagrined, and even his cheeks heated up a notch. Luckily for him, that wasn’t visible in this dim lighting.

Throwing a bag on the table, he then explained, “We received our monthly pay, and Xiao Hu told me to bring this to you.”

Ahh, how the children have grown… Ling Xia was emotional to the point of tears, the very picture of a father who received a present from his kid for the very first time, and excitedly opened the bag. It’s just, when he saw the contents, he didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. Around ten energy coins clanked against each other inside, a mix of both level-2 and level-1 types.

Aye, Song Xiao Hu was indeed a straightforward child… …He should probably save these for the boy to use in the future for finding a wife.

Ling Xia’s mood wasn’t lacking in thrashing waves of admiration, envy, and hate as he thought about the protagonist’s future harem.

He carefully put the bag away, and with a bit of mischief, teased, “*Ah*‘Jue didn‘t think of giving me anything?”

Yu Zhi Jue gave a *hmph*, then hesitantly pulled out a jade hairpin from his sleeves that appeared to be carved with notable delicacy. You always wear that wooden one in your hair, and its beyond ugly! I saw this by chance and thought it was at least passable to Look at."

Every time he saw that wooden hairpin fastened on Ling Xia's head, the exact same make and design as every other low-Level disciple's, his heart would throb uncomfortably. There was no way of changing one's clothes due to this place's rotten rules, but accessories were another matter.

"… …" So, why exactly wasn't the great sir villain a girl again?

Ling Xia received the gift, and with some clumsiness, used it to pin up his hair. Grinning, he declared, "I like it a Lot. Hmm, next month — Next month, I'LL also give Ah'Jue a present."

In another month, he should be able to refine a few simple and basic magical tools, right?

His young, smiling face was pure and open, and in the lantern’s light, radiated the gentle kindness of a saint. Along with a pair of dark pupils that twinkled with the candle’s embers, he was an exceptionally moving sight.

Yu Zhi Jue turned his head away, a little flustered, and mumbled with a huff, “As if I need you to give me anything. You don’t have that much money anyways.”

[1] NCEE: National College Entrance Examination

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 23

This kid, honestly… Ling Xia shed silent tears. His monthly pay compared to Yu Zhi Jue's was probably like the difference between a village teacher's and a city official's, huh… …

"Since I've handed the things over, I'm leaving." Yu Zhi Jue glanced at Ling Xia and directly headed outside.

Ling Xia hurriedly called out, "Wait, I'll send you back." He fished out a paper lantern from the corner and carefully lighted it up. Every time he went to f nd these two kids, they were both either busy cultivating or completing various assignments with basically no free time at all. After the boy returned, there were definitely more tasks waiting. His heart ached quite a bit that a chi d this young had to walk back alone at night.

Yu Zhi Jue looked at the dusty lantern with scorn, took out an artifact for illumination from inside his sleeve, pulled open the door, and refused, "No need. I just learned the Flash Step Technique, so I can go back very quickly."

Although he feigned a calm composure, his tone still faintly divulged his happiness. After saying so, he vanished from his original spot without a trace.

Watching the small body that momentarily disappeared and then reappeared ten meters away, Ling Xia inwardly sighed; as expected, a genius was a genius! He waited until Yu Zhi Jue's silhouette faded into the distance before closing the door and opening his new book, diligently thumbing through its contents.

Earlier today, for the sake of completing the masked man's assignment, he had just given this a cursory read. Only now did he discover that this book was very unique, quite unlike those cryptic and difficult to understand tomes that populated the library. The layout was considerably lively and

fascinating, and it included detailed descriptions on various types of artifact refinement equipment, materials, and other related subjects.

Moreover, what pleasantly surprised him the most was that on every page, possibly because some magic was applied, pictures of energy stones that were nearly as clear and detailed as photos would replace the text that it corresponded to, and after he finished viewing them, the images would morph back into words.

Dipping his own specially created quill pen in ink, Ling Xia took notes in a journal while he read.

With regards to refining magical artifacts, aside from the matter of gathering materials, the elements that were equally indispensable were luck, one's innate talent, and the artificer's proficiency and experience.

Refining artifacts could be considered a magical art. Choosing different types of energy stones, varying the degrees of heat, and even how one was introduced to the field were all factors that could change an artifact's capabilities during its refinement. A single magical artifact could even simultaneously possess multiple functional orientations, like offensive, defensive, support-based, etc. The Shang Yan they met before had used a lightning attribute offensive artifact. Lightning offensive types were formidable in their power, but the success rate of their refinement was extremely low. The one that boy had could be considered a masterpiece.

When refining, high-level artificers were capable of carving their own divine sense onto their creations, using psychical energy to mold the artifact into any shape they wanted, and even designate user limitations.

Ling Xia became completely absorbed in soaking up this knowledge. In middle school, chemistry was his best subject, and he liked hands-on experiments the most. Observing how the combination of different reagents caused varying chemical reactions to occur always gave him a heartfelt sense of thrill. Due to his grades in high school, he studied computer programming instead of chemistry in college, and always found that regrettable. He felt that artifact refinement and chemistry experiments actually had certain minute points of similarity.

It wasn’t until the sky started to brighten and the familiar sound of a bell chimed outside that Ling Xia finally became aware that he had ended up pulling an unexpected all-nighter.

Without his notice, Ling Xia’s impression of the masked man had once again increased by an unknown percentage. In the short 6 hours he spent there, the other was able to determine which areas were best suited for him to pursue. Compared to those ancient, fogey guys who solely relied on the results of an exam, he was indeed a lot more reliable and could absolutely be praised as a teacher who taught to his student’s strengths.

Ling Xia massaged his tired eyes, stretched his body, and rotated his stiff neck a couple of times. Afterward, he properly put away the book and his notes, washed up, and ate a light breakfast before proceeding to his job of tilling so l for spiritual herbs.

Of course, he didn’t spend his days here exclusively repeating such monotonous and routine physical labor. He also did a lot of thinking, observed his surroundings, and often went to look up relevant reference material. He pretty much already grasped the properties, preferences, and planting methods of all the types of spiritual herbs that Immortal Welcoming Pavilion grew. However, the spiritual herbs here were only the tip of the iceberg when compared to the varieties recorded and known, thus he still had to find an opportunity to learn more about those others.

It’s said that ShaoYang Sect’s best spiritual herbs were not at Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, but with a high-level wood attribute divergent-skill elder called Mu QingHe. Ling Xia decided that if he ever got the chance, he must go there to study.

If he became a famous artificer or a wood attribute divergent-skill cultivator in the future, then he wouldn’t need to worry about dragging those two kids down. Haha, those kids can be in charge of laughing hand-in-hand across the lands, and as for him, he’d be their personal artificer slash horticulturist that hid behind the scenes, and maybe even double as an alchemist. Just the money he’d make from selling his creations would be enough build an entire country!

The little guy inside him was already howling with delirious laughter in a hands-on-hips pose. The more he fantasized, the giddier he became, full of energy despite not having slept last night.

The three day deadline quickly arrived. Ling Xia went to the riverside with the book, and as usual, brought Ah'Li a lotus wrapped chicken.

One man and one beast hadn’t seen each other for three days, and to his surprise, for the first time ever, Ah'Li didn’t rush to eat. Instead, it loftily jumped on Ling Xia’s shoulder, then rubbed up affectionately against his cheek. Ling Xia was beside himself with joy; his position in Ah'Li’s heart had finally surpassed that of a chicken!

Ah'Li ate his fill, and then resumed his original form once more, the white as snow, powerful, and vigorous magical beast, the Snow Flamma. Carrying Ling Xia, it swiftly ran towards the masked man’s place.

This time, the masked man was lying on the roof sunbathing. Previously, Ling Xia's image of him was solely based on the novel's flimsy descriptions, but now, he genuinely and wholeheartedly admired this man. He knew the other hated convoluted etiquette, so he merely steadied his footing and greeted with smile, "This disciple has already finished reading your book. Senior is an unbelievably amazing author!"

Hearing his sincere praise, the masked man immediately sat up cross-Legged and boasted with pride, As if there was any doubt! Back in my day, I was called the — …Cough, let's test you a bit then."

Ling Xia was in the middle of straining his ears in anticipation of hearing the masked man reveal his true identity, so seeing that he stopped, inevitably felt somewhat disappointed. In the novel, this masked man only appeared at the beginning, and while Song Xiao Hu had a total of five teachers, this first one that gave him his primer into cultivation wasn't described in much detail. He assumed the masked man was one of ShaoYang Sects elders, since after all, he was Living on ShaoYang Sect's private property.

Ling Xia had thought that the masked man would drill him on the book's contents, but who knew the other would directly take out a jumbled pile of disorganized energy stones from his space and dump it on a table instead.

He smiled and instructed, "Since you said you've finished reading, then come differentiate what attribute these energy stones are, and which ones can be used together in refining."

Now this was a hard test. Ignoring that Ling Xia only had three days to read, even if he did memorize the info of every energy stone in the book, accurately telling them apart would be difficult to achieve without at least a year of practice.

Ling Xia only blanked out for a second before meticulously starting to inspect the heap. He's a quite optimistic person, so he'd just have to try his best regardless.

Soon, he picked out four pieces of energy stones that he felt confident about, and one by one, introduced their origins.

Ling Xia cautiously reported, "This one is called Flaming Cloud Rock, a level-2 fire attribute energy stone. That one is a Merry Gate Stone, a level-1 earth attribute energy stone… …" After that, he picked out five or six more stones, ones his memory was a bit fuzzy on, and following the differentiation method presented in the book, did a few simple tests to determine their attributes. Nevertheless, by the end, he still failed to identify over half of the stones.

Fortunately, the masked man didn't reprimand him and only smiled, "You've already done quite well. Now tell me, of the energy stones you sorted out, which ones can be combined together to refine into a magical artifact?"

Ling Xia gingerly placed two stones together and responded with a grin, "If you put this piece of level-2 water attribute energy stone into a characteristically mild beryl, then you can refine a support-type artifact for water attribute divergent-skill cultivators."

Due to Yu Zhi Jue’s attribute being water, plus wanting to give the boy something of his personal creation, he had reread the section on water attribute energy stones a few extra times, thus his memory on it was particularly vivid.

The masked man leisurely lied back down again. “Yep yep, not too bad of an answer. Since it’s like this, why don’t you go and refine it.”

Incredibly stunned, Ling Xia blurted out, “Right now?”

Currently, he couldn’t even be called a novice low-level artificer yet, and without any psychical energy, he have no other choice but to depend on manual heat control and fire attribute artifacts. However, without a shred of experience, how should he start? One should know, disciples taken in by ordinary artificers generally spent at least 3 years doing odd jobs.

The masked man shot him a glance, closed his eyes once more, and supplemented while rocking his leg, “The tools I used in my youth for artifact refining are placed in the third room from the left. You can use those. Studying theory without actual practice is useless, so go try it out for yourself!”

Before Ling Xia could voice the rest of his misgivings, a familiar crack appeared below and down he fell. He helplessly shook h s head; was this master not afraid of him wasting precious energy stones… …It should be noted that some natural materials couldn’t bought no matter how high a price one offered.

He opened that room’s door, the inside indeed full of books, equipment, and materials related to refining artifacts, and from the shelf with energy stones, found the two kinds he needed. Although these two types weren’t considered valuable, but if he had to buy it himself, he reckoned that one piece alone would burn through half his monthly salary…

Ling Xia bitterly wept inside. Looking at it this way, the masked man was really a generous and bighearted master!

He carefully weighed the two stones, often consulting the artifact refinement book, and following the ratios given, used a small knife to scrape off the extras. He placed them inside the refining furnace and lit a small flame, then slowly and mindfully increased its heat in accordance to the method recorded in the book.

Except, he tried three times and failed them all. Not only did the end result not have a recognizable shape, it was defective to the extent that not a spec of the stones' original colors remained. In his hand, there was just a lump of black, indistinct, garbage-like…thing.

Having been next to the refining furnace for half a day, Ling Xia was left sweltering and drenched in sweat.

The masked man strolled inside, and sighed, "How dumb can you get! Artifact refining is the same as cooking, where using a recipe is just conforming to the norm. If you want to create something new and innovative, there's no way you'll succeed by blindly following instructions."

He casually use his fingers and picked up two stones, assessed their weight in his hand, then threw them into the furnace. He closed his eyes, and using psychical energy, decomposed the two stones' energy, fused them together, and little by little, separated and removed their impurities.

After that, an object that seemed to be made of stained glass came out, and Ling Xia dumbly gaped in awe. It was just too beautiful!

The masked man carelessly threw it into a corner and smirked, "Do you comprehend now?"

What a complete and utter waste! Ling Xia's heart was in anguish seeing that water attribute support-type artifact being treated like trash, and answered with a nod, "Just a little bit… …However, this disciple does not yet possess psychical energy."

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 24

In this world, not everyone had power elementals, but psychical energy was something every person was capable of obtaining by cultivating, though it’s also affected by one’s aptitude, character, degree of effort, etc.

Generally speaking, people with stronger wills improved more easily when cultivating psychical energy. When one’s psychical energy reaches a certain level, not only could it assist in refining artifacts, creating pills, or boosting a l other types of cultivation, but it can even be used as an offensive weapon.

The masked man nodded and agreed, “That does make sense. It’s custom for ShaoYang Sect’s people to discriminate against low-level disciples, but I didn’t expect them to not even teach the most basic of basics… In that case, let’s first conduct psychical energy practice.”

The people of this world’s psychical energy was, for the most part, either inborn or acquired. The naturally talented, when reaching twelve or thirteen years of age, were capable of activating psychical energy by themselves. Those with so-so aptitudes needed an expert to help them kick-start the psychical particles within their body, and afterwards, it was fine to diligently work hard and cultivate on their own.

The masked man put his hand on top of Ling Xia's hair and a gush of extremely pure and soft energy followed along his hand to envelope the younger boy's head. Meanwhile, he gave Ling Xia verbal guidance on how to activate the power of the mind and adapt to this stream of energy.

Ling Xia closed his eyes and adhered to the masked man's words, imagining that inside his mind, energy was condensing and taking shape. A span of darkness filled his vision, but gradually, something that shone like fireflies began to flicker about.

Delight filled his heart, and knowing that these were psychical particles, he patiently gathered these radiant and frail fragments inside his sea of

consciousnesses. Little by little, they slowly converged into a shining ribbon of light, resembling a constellation drifting amidst the vast heavens, an exceptionally beautiful and enchanting sight.

By the time Ling Xia opened his eyes, he was full of vitality and spirit, and his mind was also remarkably clear and sharp. He didn't know when, but the masked man had already retracted his hand and was once more reclining in a bamboo chair.

"Senior, I'll go give it another shot," Ling Xia said, eager to try refining again as he grabbed two energy stones.

While rocking his chair, the masked man chuckled, "How could it be that easy? Right now, the sun's already up, so you better return first. Come back in the evening."

The sun's up? Ling Xia was shocked; how much time had already passed? It should be noted that the time-flow in the masked man‘s space was set at a 10:1 ratio to the real world's! In that case, he's already been in here for multiple days? Alerted of this fact, h s stomach growled in hunger right then and there.

Embarrassed, Ling Xia looked at the masked man and nodded n agreement, "Yes, I should go back first."

Cultivation of psychical energy was different from other forms of cultivation in that one could practice it anywhere. As Ling Xia worked, he condensed his psychical energy around the spiritual herbs, and perhaps it was due to his own misconception, but the ones that had psychical energy poured inside them looked a bit more vigorous than the others.

He didn't know that because of his inability to control and separate psychical energy from power elementals, plus his innate wood attribute, resulted in his psychical energy containing bits and pieces of elemental energy as well. And wood elementals were exactly what plants loved the most.

By cultivating and working at the same time, Ling Xia became exhausted very quickly. He massaged his pounding temples; looks like it might be better to first start with cultivating psychical energy inside his sea of consciousnesses.

Of course, just having psychical energy didn’t mean that all of a sudden, he’d be able to succeed in refining. Ling Xia had to spend a few days in a row at the masked man’s place training in artifact refinement, and after losing track of the number of energy stones he’d wasted, he finally succeeded in refining a water attribute artifact. However, the artifact’s surface had some muddy impurities, and its degree of transparency and fusion synthesis was far from that of the one made by the masked man.

Despite that, ing Xia was still extremely happy. Even if it’s like this, this magical art fact could sell for 100 level-1 energy coins on the market and was most suited for beginner divergent-skill cultivators to boost to their cultivation strength.

The masked man slightly nodded his head, an approval to the fruits of Ling Xia’s labor. Although Ling Xia knew that the other hated etiquette customs, but at this moment, he couldn’t help but give a deep, deep bow.

Every teacher was one’s benefactor in life. How could a mere, meager bow be enough to reciprocate all of the masked man’s completely selfless teachings and assistance?

The masked man slightly knitted his brows, but swiftly smoothed out his expression.

Ling Xia straightened his body and smiled, "Senior, I'll go sell this and definitely buy you a jar of delicious wine:'

Actually, he also knew that the money he'd earn was far from enough to cover the price of the energy stones he'd spent, but he also sincerely wanted to repay this nameless elder in whatever ways he could.

Of course, he did have plenty of suspicions about the masked man deep inside. The man never left this mountain, and he didn't even let Ah'Li leave.

Was this due to some hidden, unmentionable hardships?

Hearing Ling Xia say this, the masked man's eyes brightened and advised, "Well then, you better work hard, lad. The kind of wine that I like costs 3000 energy coins you know."

“… …”

By cultivating psychical energy while learning how to refine artifacts, two weeks flew past, and Ling Xia had already refined five finished products. Two had water attributes, two had fire attributes, and the last had metal attributes.

Among these, four were appraised as level-1 magical artifacts, and the metal attributed one was an authentic level-2 artifact. For a novice who hadn’t even learned for two months yet, this was already a substantially outstanding achievement.

After all, generally speaking, a level-1 artifact needed level-2 energy stones to make, level-2 artifacts required level-3 energy stones, and so on. Using level-2 energy stones to refine something that‘s also level-2, this result could be said to only have a 5% probability of success. Nevertheless, he wasn’t satisfied with using these as presents for those two kids, so he decided to sell them first and wait until he made something better to gift.

When his day off arrived, for the sake of staying inconspicuous, Ling Xia specifically changed out of ShaoYang Sect’s low-level disciple uniform and wore normal clothes made from a common material.

ChongMing City had a very large cultivator trade market, selling all kinds of energy stones, spiritual herbs, magical artifacts, talismans, and other such items inside, attracting many ShaoYang Sect disciples and rogue cultivators to make transactions here.

Ling Xia wasn’t in rush to sell these magical artifacts. Instead, he first wandered the marketplace and surveyed the place. Some of the things being sold weren’t even as intricate and pure as what he refined, yet the price was marked higher than what he expected. He looked at these prices and

memorized them one by one, found the supervisor in charge, and paid 5 energy coins for a vendor’s booth. He took out his five artifacts, laid them out nicely, and not long after, a cultivator came up to ask how much they cost.

Ling Xia’s prices were all reasonable, but seeing that he was a child who also wore unremarkable clothing, some cultivators purposely nitpicked at flaws to try and lower the price. Ling Xia had experience in selling things in college, hence speaking in a level and undisturbed tone, he fended off their haggling. By noon, he had unexpectedly sold three of the artifacts and earned 320 level-1 energy coins.

This many energy coins put together was too eye-catching an amount, not to mention its weight, so Ling Xia took advantage of the lunch lull to buy a storage bag of the lowest grade. It had a capacity of about one cubic meter, yet cost 150 energy coins, making his heart sting as he grimaced.

Storage bags were refined, and its price was determined according to how much it could hold. The larger the space, the more valuable the materials needed in its creation, but the success rate of its refinement also dropped many-fold. Therefore, it followed that the price would increase exponentially as well. He had bought the lowest grade storage bag, and its manufacturing cost was estimated to be, at most, only 20 energy coins.

Ling Xia was resolved that in the future, he must refine a storage bag with an unimaginably massive capacity! n the end, those who could manipulate their own space like the masked man, Yu Zhi Jue, and Song Xiao Hu were the minority within the minority. You’d be lucky to find one within thousands, and the vast majority of cultivators all needed storage bags. If he could refine a bag with a hundred cubic meter storage space, wouldn’t he make more money than he could spend in a lifetime?

Just as he was gleefully fantasizing, a slender, good-looking hand suddenly picked up the the level-2 magical artifact in front of him. Ling Xia knew that a customer had come and instantly exposed a welcoming smile. As he raised his head, he was suddenly taken aback; the person who picked up the artifact was a fifteen or sixteen year old young man with an elegant

appearance, and following at his side was a seven or eight year old cute, small girl with skin as fair as snow.

The young man pointed that artifact at the sun and inspected it, then brought it to his ear, listening attentively to the minute sounds the wind made blowing across its form. Ling Xia saw his actions and couldn't he p but feel somewhat nervous. This young man was a professional!

Presently, he still needed specialized tools to appraise artifacts, but artificers with over ten years of experience were able to use their ears and eyes to evaluate an artifact's subtle details.

The young man tilted his head, gave him a look, and muttered, "Hmm, this used the level-2 Void Spirit Stone, added Moxa Rock for adhesion purposes, and the fusion with psychical energy is quite good. But, it's also evident that the refiner is still a novice… It can't be that these artifacts were all made by you, right?" He skeptically sized up Ling Xia. The other didn't appear to be a member of a rich or influential family judging from his manner of dress.

If that was true, then solely based on this youngster's age, he would be considered a very hard to come by talent!

Ling Xia paused. Right now, he had decided to hide his strength, and on top of that, he also didn't know this young man's identity. Thus, he shook his head and replied, "No, these were refined by my senior brother who's currently cultivating at ShaoYang Sect."

The little girl at the young man's side heard this and curled her lips. "What a waste! In refining magical artifacts, how could ShaoYang Sect measure up to our ShuYuan Dale?"

ShuYuan Dale? Hearing this name, Ling Xia promptly froze.

That's right, this was in the plot. ShuYuan Dale's reputation in refinement was brilliant and famous throughout this entire world. One girl from the protagonist's harem was from ShuYuan Dale, and she was also a high-level artificer.

Hearing the little girl’s words, the young man reprimanded softly, “Shui Ling, don’t speak nonsense!”

When all was said and done, this was ChongMing City and ShaoYang Sect’s territory, so if someone with certain intentions heard, it might even lead to causing unnecessary disputes. Every sect was trying to rope in those who were gifted, and their ShuYuan Dale naturally wasn’t an exception. He gave the youngster selling artifacts a look, and only now discovered that the other was spacing out.

Yep, Ling Xia was spacing out.

He simply didn’t understand. Why were the protagonist’s harem members popping up one after another in lolita form… It’s shattering his fantasies!

Yep, that harem member artificer, was called Shui Ling.

And that gorgeous and charming lady in the novel was currently even younger than those little lassies Feng Luo and Cui Yu… …

The moment Ling Xia sensed that young man’s gaze upon himself, he snapped out of his daze. Standing up, he smiled, “I am called Ling Xia. Fellow compeer, how may I address you?”

The young man politely replied, "I am Shui Yue. One can tell, even though the artifacts your esteemed elder brother refined are lacking in some ways, but there are also several areas worthy of note. If your senior brother has the time and is able to come to our ShuYuan Dale for a study-visit someday, I will surely and happily regale in an exchange of knowledge."

These words he said were considerably modest, since all things considered, ShuYuan Dale was ranked at the very top of the world as one of the most prominent cities in artifact refinement. Yet, he had been willing to humble himself towards a total stranger and even used the phrase "exchange of knowledge".

Ling Xia felt touched, and making a friend like Shui Yue was certainly not bad. He gave a bow at once and returned with a smile, "In that case, I'll offer my thanks on behalf of my senior brother. If the opportunity arises, he will certainly drop by for a visit!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 25

Shui Yue politely cupped his hands and bid farewell; Ling Xia stood and sent this brother and sister duo off with his eyes, inwardly quite happy that his work was certified by a professional. In the afternoon, the last two magical artifacts were finally sold, with the level-2 one nett ng an excellent price of 300 energy coins. Subtracting what he spent, his storage bag actually had almost 600 level-1 energy coins now.

It should be noted that the salary the sect gave him for an entire month's worth of labor and hard work, was only 8 energy coins, or ¥800 in China… Ling Xia patted his storage bag, sighing ruefully in his heart.

The masked man had said that the wine he liked cost 3000 energy coins a jar, but Ling Xia knew that he spoke in jest. In this strange world, the best kind of wine used celestial herbs or spiritual fruits to brew, and they were essentially priceless commodities.

He asked around for the location of the best winery in town, and taking advantage of the daylight hours left, quickly hurried on over. The shop attendant introduced their wide selection very enthusiastically, and Ling Xia spent a long time prudently contemplating his options. In the end, he chose a small jar of the clear, raw, and sweet White Pear Flower, spending 500 energy coins.

Although it wasn't considered the best of wines, this was a token of his gratitude towards his respected teacher. When he passed by a roasted chicken store, he bought two lotus wrapped chickens for the Snow Flamma as well.

It was becoming late, so while half running and half walking, he rushed back and managed to reach Immortal Welcoming Pavilion before the sky completely darkened.

The disciples guarding the gate distantly noticed his arrival and called out, "Junior brother Ling, everyone was summoned to an emergency

assembly this afternoon and told that in the next few days, important guests will arrive. We're in charge of tidying up and arranging where they will all stay. As for your assignment, you should hurry and find Martial uncle Guang to ask for the details."

Separately, Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu had come looking for Ling Xia twice by now. Those gatekeepers recognized that they were both the sect master's direct disciples, so on the surface, they treated Ling Xia extremely courteously. The other disciples who used to look down on Ling Xia were a bit apprehensive, but after seeing how Ling Xia treat everyone politely and amicably without any arrogance or spite, they all gradually felt relieved. Throughout Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, no matter what one's private thoughts were, their current relationship with Ling Xia wasn't bad on a superficial level.

Ling Xia smiled at that disciple and replied, "Understood, many thanks for Senior brother's reminder. I'll go right away."

Guang XuZi didn't reproach Ling Xia for returning late or anything like that, and instead, greeted him with an genial expression before sighing, "Ling Xia, it'll be tough on you this time. You and Yuan Hui both have Herculean Strength, and our time is short. If this errand was assigned to anyone else, I'm afraid it'll delay our other preparations. Rest assured, we will give you and Yuan Hui an extra bonus this month."

Slightly pulling back the corner of his lips, Ling Xia responded, "Martial uncle, there's no need to be so courteous. Please do no hesitate to delegate the tasks that need to be done."

Even though he loathed Guang XuZi's shameless and abrupt temperament changes, he was presently working under the other, and no matter what, he had to give those in charge the proper amount of respect.

Guang XuZi informed him of his duty, and turns out, it was to put the large meeting hall that'll receive the guests in order. After all, VIPs would be arriving, so they needed to display and show off some of Immortal Welcoming Pavilion's spiritual herbs and rare plants. There was one spiritual tree that was right in its flowering season, but handling the density

and rigor of its wood was a huge hurdle. Currently, there was a lack in helping hands, hence the disciples with plenty of physical power were sent to work with those tall trees.

Ling Xia nodded, “Yes, I will go with Senior brother Yuan tomorrow.”

Hearing this, Guang XuZi let out a sigh of relief. Last time, he was scared out of his wits by Yu Zhi Jue, and whenever he saw Ling Xia, a lump of constant unease would stifle his heart as he remembered that sharp and terrifying ice blade. Guang XuZi then offered some words of encouragement like, “When recommending disciples to Elder X's place, we will certainly consider you as a priority”, “You have a lot of potential, if you work hard you‘ll definitely climb up to become a high-level disciple“, and other such empty promises.

After confirming there was nothing else, Ling Xia felt reassured and went to find the masked man. That jar of wine and Ah'Li's present had been placed in his storage bag, so those roasted chickens were still hot and fresh.

The masked man was very delighted to see the wine, laughing out loud and immediately lifting the jar to take a gulp, drinking in a grand and exhilarating manner. Because the mask he wore got in the way, he had slightly nudged it upwards, revealing skin as fair as marble and a chin with elegant contours.

Ling Xia surreptitiously peeked his way. Even if the masked man had snow white hair, one could tell that he surely had the face of a beautiful man.

It was really such a scam that all mysterious experts fell into the same 'hyped up character whose face is hidden' category. Were they not afraid of getting rashes caused by the lack of ventilation… On the other hand, Ah'Li, that glutton, still ate with relish and joy, plopping down after it was full and lying there brimming with content, its eyes hooded.

Ling Xia chuckled, “Senior, then I’ll go and continue to refine artifacts.”

In a half reclined position, the masked man hugged the wine and waved his hand without much care. Random hums escaped from his mouth, resembling that of a short tune.

Ling Xia's goal tonight was to refine a better magical artifact than the best he'd made so far. Not only the functions, but the appearance must a so be pleasing!

He skillfully placed various different types of materials into the furnace, added a bit of supplementary spiritual wood to the fire, and when the items inside began to half dissolve, started to use his psychical energy to break them down.

From the jade hairpin that Yu Zhi Jue gave him, he could tell that the boy liked elegant and exquisite things. Thinking of that stunning and deviously charming final boss villain from the latter half of the novel, Ling Xia felt his lips twitch a few times. Just how much did the author love the villain anyways; every time he appeared, the author would use over half a page of descriptions to immortalize how gorgeous his features were, how gorgeous his attire was, and how gorgeous his troops looked standing in formation……

Before he started refining, Ling Xia had already decided to craft this artifact into a type that could be hung on one's body, something convenient to wear.

Inside the furnace, the various materials had started to coalesce, and Ling Xia concentrated on using his divine sense to control the development. He patiently removed the impurities little by little and the pendant's outline gradually solidified, slowly condensing and taking shape.

By the time he finally stopped, Ling Xia was already dripping with sweat, and due to over-drafting too much psychical energy, his temples incessantly throbbed with pain. But he couldn't bother with wiping away his sweat, and removed the pendant from the furnace first.

The artifact was truly incredibly beautiful, its dimensions half the size of one‘s palm, and exhibited a lovely hue that was similar to jadeite. This

world didn’t have the concept of Chinese zodiacs, so Ling Xia styled the design in reference to a dragon‘s form. As a whole, it was simple and imposing, but its finer details were handled with meticulous care.

He took out another tool to appraise its functions, and the result was also very satisfying. This actually turned out as an high-end level-2 artifact! Moreover, aside from having support-based properties, it had defensive capabilities as well, able to block 20% of all elemental energy attacks.

The masked man had finished taking his nap, and seeing Ling Xia’s ashen face, warned with a frown, “You must always work within your limits. If you excessively overexert yourself, it will damage your cultivation instead.”

Ling Xia let out an embarrassed laugh, then held up the pendant and offered, “Senior, have a look.”

The masked man took the ornamental artifact and turned it around in his hands. “The energy stones’ degree of fusion is quite high, and its support abilities are also not bad… Hmm, it can’t be that you spent this much effort because you wanted to gift this to a cute girl, right?”

That last part was said in a somewhat teasing manner.

“… …It‘s for my little brother.“ Ling Xia was a bit speechless.

Due to the overuse of his psychical energy, Ling Xia was ordered by the masked man to rest for a day before refining again, and he complied. The day after that, he successfully refined a thin, fire attribute chain with defensive properties for Song Xiao Hu, perfect for hanging that lighting shaped pendant of his. While not as amazing as Yu Zhi Jue’s dragon ornament, the final product was still quite good.

At the same time, he was busy with the task of arranging and tidying up the large hall and the gardens. Ling Xia wasn’t interested in who the important guests were; he was just happy that the hall was close to Deadwood Mountain, making it a lot easier for him to go visit those two kids.

Taking advantage of his lunch break, Ling Xia went to find them, and sure enough, Yu Zhi Jue was at the training arena again. Song Xiao Hu wasn’t there because he went out on a mission with Feng Luo.

Ling Xia didn’t go inside and asked someone to call Yu Zhi Jue outside instead. Yu Zhi Jue stepped out with sweat on his forehead, and while the expression on his face may have been aloof and reserved, it was clear that he was very happy Ling Xia dropped by to see him.

Ling Xia looked at the child before him with a broad grin. Possessing red lips, white teeth, and ink black hair, this kid really did have charming looks, so much that it made one want to kidnap him away. Flustered from such a gaze, Yu Zhi Jue angrily demanded, “Why are you so strange today? What are you staring at me for?”

Ling Xing opened his hand and revealed the dragon shaped pendant. "For you."

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes visibly lit up, his face rapidly blushing to light red as he huffed, "Hmph, I didn't ask you to give me anything." Despite saying so, he swiftly tied that pendant on his belt, his actions reflecting a gentle carefulness that exposed an impossible-to-hide delight.

Ling Xia's eyes immediately curved in satisfaction and he added, "This is something I refined. Does Ah'Jue like it?"

Hearing this, Yu Zhi Jue paused, then evoked some elemental energy as a test. Sensing that ornament resonate in kind, he looked at Ling Xia with bewilderment as he asked, "How come you know how to refine artifacts?"

Ling Xia inclined his head and replied, "I learned artifact refining from a senior recently. I've just started, but in the future, I'll definitely make even better ones for you."

Yu Zhi Jue’s expression suddenly turned gloomy. Since Ling Xia was able to make such a delicate and immaculate artifact, he must have studied for more than just three or five days, and yet kept it secretly to himself this entire time…

Ling Xia knew from one look what this child was thinking, so he quickly explained, “I met that senior in an unexpected way. He lives in seclusion on the reverse side of the mountain and doesn’t like people disturbing him. You also know that I’m dumb, and even cultivating under his guidance, might not achieve any progress. So I thought it’d be better to surprise you after I had succeeded.”

In the novel, Yu Zhi Jue’s sensitivity and paranoia was one of the major reasons he became a villain, and consequently, Ling Xia had to prevent any misunderstandings from forming between them.

As expected, Yu Zhi Jue’s complexion cleared up slightly after hearing this. He also recalled that he had seen Ling Xia reading books related to artifact refinement the last two times he went to visit. He lifted his head and stole a brisk look at Ling Xia, and was then shocked to discover that the other seemed thinner than what he remembered…

Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t help but knit his brows and question, “Is there a need to exhaust yourself every day like this? I’ve seen what other people in ShaoYang Sect have refined, and the artifacts created by those with one or two years of experience can’t even compare to yours. In fact, it’d be better if you moved in with me. The equipment and books here are both superior to what Immortal Welcoming Pavilion has, and I can help you find energy stones and materials. There are some very proficient senior artificers in the sect, and I can help you ask about them as well.”

He blurted all this out without really thinking too deeply, and as soon as he finished, his face prompt y burned with heat. He had never gotten used to interacting with people, but if it was with Ling Xia, he probably wouldn’t dislike talking more…

Ling Xia flapped his hands and refused with a smile, “There’s no need for all this, that senior is quite great. Didn’t you also say that those other people were less competent than I am in spite of having studied longer?”

Seeing that Yu Zhi Jue’s wrinkled brows persisted, he thought for a bit, and then compromised, “Give me another month. I’ll move in a month later,

okay?” According to the plot, the masked man’s temporary stay here should last for around one more month.

Hearing Ling Xia’s words, Yu Zhi Jue exposed one of his rare smiles. “Ok, deal.”

Ling Xia couldn’t resist reaching out and petting the other’s head. Stroking this child’s hair felt like caressing silk, its slightly cool and sleek texture truly comfortable to touch… …

After he bid farewell to Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia continued to the gardens, and with the other disciples, began to spruce up the flowers and trees. But when he caught the pieces of a conversation between two disciples that passed by, his complexion instantly became deathly pale.

He rushed over almost recklessly, forgetting to even salute as he beseeched, "Who did you say was coming just then?"

A black clothed disciple gave him a strange look before replying, "YunXiao City's governor, Cui TianCheng, and also Shang YunLing's head steward, Shang Kai."

Ling Xia's heart wildly pounded with deafening thumps, his palms abruptly awash with sweat. It had been two months since that matter, and during this period of time, he had been busy bustling about. Occasionally, he had rejoiced about how they lucked out, about how the people from YunXiao City didn't return to search for Shang Yan, possibly having gone elsewhere to look. About how perhaps, to his family and YunXiao City, Shang Yan wasn't considered an important disciple…

But now, it was clear that they hadn't dodge this bullet, and reality proved just how naive those thoughts of his were!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 26

Ling Xia’s first thought was to take those two kids, pack up, and hit the road, but how viable was that? Right now, Song Xiao Hu was carrying out an assignment elsewhere, and besides, running away was more likely to arouse other people’s suspicions.

This world doesn't really practice the 'a single master for life' custom, and as long as one gets permission from their current teacher, they could become disciples of multiple, more powerful cultivators. However, if one were to depart without getting approval first, they would be treated as a betrayer, henceforth suffering the spurn and disdain of other orthodox cultivators.

A heavy stone weighed upon his heart, but at the same time, he consoled himself that at least this era didn't have the technology for fingerprint analysis. Their opponents might not even find Shang Yan's corpse.

Reassuring himself this way, Ling Xia finally calmed down and followed the other Immortal Welcoming Pavilion disciples back after tidying things up. Currently, he was worried the most about Yu Zhi Jue; that child obviously wasn't aware of this development… …

Ling Xia's deduction was correct, and at present, Yu Zhi Jue did not know anything about the guests to come.

This little brat effortlessly mastered the sword techniques they couldn’t learn and easily surpassed the cultivation levels they spent ages to reach. Even their eternally strict and taciturn master would make no secret of heaping praises on this newly accepted disciple from time to time.

In addition, Yu Zhi Jue had a high and mighty attitude, only occasionally addressing others with a halfhearted ‘senior brother’, and virtually looked down his arrogant nose at the world! He didn’t understand the first thing about respecting one’s elders!

Somehow or other, Yu Zhi Jue had made enemies everywhere in ShaoYang Sect. It wasn't that he didn't notice, but rather, he didn't care in the slightest how those people viewed him.

Being openly and covertly ostracized, Yu Zhi Jue's sources of information were almost nonexistent, though he himself paid it no heed. Therefore, while completely in the dark, he absent-minded y followed behind a group of fellow disciples to greet those important guests.

As a result, when Yu Zhi Jue spied the seemingly familiar Sinistral Steed beast and those too bright, pink colored clothes, his first reaction was to crease his brows. He wasn't as fragile as Ling Xia imagined, and seeing these people from YunXiao City again, especially Cui Yu, didn't cause any guilt or fear in his heart. He only felt disdain.

Cui Yu had not seen Yu Zhi Jue for a long time, though she had repeated his name who knows how many times in her heart. When she spotted him from a distance, her eyes brightened and her small face started to heat up.

Due to living a rare, peaceful everyday life these past few months, Yu Zhi Jue had grown a bit taller, and his facial features also became more refined. Although he was still quite young, but among that group of disciples, he was exceptionally eye-catching.

Cui Yu trotted over on the Sinistral Steed, nimbly hopped off, and left it in the care of a low-level disciple. First, she crisply called out an "Uncle Feng" towards Feng ShuMing, then eagerly walked over to Yu Zhi Jue, staring at him as if entranced, and asked, "ZhiJue, do you still remember me?"

Yu Zhi Jue apathetically shifted his line of sight elsewhere without even looking at her.

Feng ShuMing watched his own disciple blatantly disregard Cui TianCheng's precious daughter and secretly felt pleased, finding Yu Zhi Jue more and more to his liking.

In the past many generations, his ChongMing City's strength was weaker than that of YunXiao City's. Even though they were considered close allies, privately, they acted at odds, and his side was the one yielding more often than not. Last time when YunXiao City's delegation attended his ChongMing City's major disciple recruitment event, they had dared to only dispatch their second best disciple! They were truly mocking and ridiculing his ChongMing City and ShaoYang Sect. Not to mention, under his extended efforts, ChongMing City had already become incomparable to its former days…

Being ignored in front of everyone here, Cui Yu couldn't help but turn indignant. If it was anyone else, with the exception of her senior brothers, she definitely would have immediately swung her whip in retaliation. But while she was angry at Yu Zhi Jue, she was also full of bliss, and just seeing him made her heart jump with joy. So she merely stared at him with a pout, the very picture of one who felt wronged.

The others from YunXiao City showed up soon after, and although the city's governor was leading this trip, they didn't come with great fanfare, but a simple retinue instead. The Shang family's head steward and Shang Yan's father, Shang Kai, was also present.

Feng ShuMing cupped his hands without delay and gave his greetings. Cui TianCheng, an extremely tal and sturdy middle-aged man, s mply nodded in return with a slight aura of oppression, making Feng ShuMing feel ever more resentful in his heart.

He quietly raised his guard; Cui TianCheng very rarely visited to ChongMing City personally, and in his letter, the other only casually wrote a few lines, vaguely hinting that it was still about last time's matter of the disciple who disappeared.

Feng ShuMing refused to believe that Cui TianCheng‘s purpose in coming was purely for this a one. Even though YunXiao City was powerful, they needed to purchase large quantities of spiritual herbs and water attribute energy stones from him… …He doubted that the other would spend this much time and effort for a single, minor disciple.

Everyone chatted away considerably amicably, and when they reached the large hall, Feng ShuMing immediately ordered his disciples to bring out all kinds of meticulously flavored vegetarian and meat dishes to welcome their visitors.

Those acting as hosts were Feng ShuMing, a few of his senior disciples with an abundance of experience in attending to guests, and a couple of the sect's elders. New disciples like Yu Zhi Jue only needed to show their faces as a courtesy before retiring.

Seeing Yu Zhi Jue leave, Cui Yui glanced around and whispered, "Daddy, I'm going outside for a bit."

Cui TianCheng had long heard from his second disciple Mo Dai about how this dear daughter of his was infatuated with some unknown boy from the outback mountains. He saw how Cui Yui's eyes were glued to Yu Zhi Jue from start to finish, and he too had secretly taken note and observed this boy. Seeing that Yu Zhi Jue indeed possessed an extraordinary aptitude that was difficult to come by, he promptly decided not to put a stop to Cui Yu's behavior.

As if half drunk, Shang Kai abruptly stood up and proclaimed while sounding deeply worr ed at heart, "It's been many months since my unworthy son went missing in your venerable lands, and his mother has fallen sick from anxiety and distress. Last time, Sect Master Feng righteously said you'd take responsibility, that you'd absolutely g ve a replication. In that case, I wonder if any clues have been uncovered as of yet?"

Shang Yan had been conceived after he was past his prime, and he always spoiled that child, never willing to beat or scold him in any way. This caused the boy to develop domineering and unruly habits, resulting in his cultivation stagnating. Shang Kai had always maintained a good relationship with Cui TianCheng, thus he sent Shang Yan over, but who knew that in less than ha f a year of following Cui TianCheng, he would meet with this kind of mishap!

Without batting an eyelid, Feng ShuMing put down his cup and responded with concern, “Speaking of this, it is indeed odd. Our sect’s disciples have inquired at the ferry crossing and confirmed that your noble son did not leave ChongMing, but were unable to find the smallest of clues despite searching to today. At the time of his disappearance, we were holding our examination at Myriad Beast Forest, and there are some restricted and abnormally dangerous areas inside. If your son wasn’t careful and entered by mistake, then I’m afraid… Hmm, but this shouldn’t be the case. After all, your son was very close with his fellow disciples, so to do so without a word, now that would be odd. Perhaps Brother Cui has found a lead on his end?”

These words of his were exceedingly clever. There was no denying that YunXiao City’s people had been welcomed as esteemed guests, thus natural y, they should have moved as a group with n the designated locations. However, Shang Yan curiously vanished without rhyme or reason, and even the senior disciple he was closest to didn’t know a thing. If he had trespassed into a forbidden location and met with danger, then it couldn’t be blamed on ShaoYang Sect. Not to mention, wantonly intruding upon a different sect’s restricted regions was a grave and ser ous violation.

Cui TianCheng said pensively, “Yes, I had asked Mo Dai. On that day, Shang Yan did indeed go out alone… Brother Shang, don’t be too anxious. Believe in this child, for the Heavens help the worthy. He is bound to be safe.”

He paused a beat, then continued, “Brother Feng, please do not find fault with our brashness, but as a matter of fact, we also invited people from ShuYan Dale’s Shui family to help with this investigation.”

“The Shu family?” Feng ShuMing blinked. Everyone on this continent had heard of the influential family of artificers, the Shui family, and their name was known far and wide. The Shui family had produced many crafty geniuses throughout their history, as well as those who fell into the path of dark-arts. It's said that they even refined many bizarre artifacts that orthodox cultivators renounced and held in contempt.

But when all was said and done, no one could verify whether or not those things existed for real, and there wasn't anyone who dared to go knocking on this illustrious and famous clan's gates just to ask.

Cui TianCheng confirmed, "Precisely. I reckon they'll soon arrive."

Right on time, a disciple rushed in to announce that the Shui family's representatives had arrived.

An elegant young man walked inside with a tiny, seven or eight-year-old girl. They saluted everyone in the hall and intoned, "Greetings to all the masters present' These two people were precisely the siblings Shui Yue and Shui Ling that Ling Xia happened to meet before.

When Yu Zhi Jue left the hall, he decided to go to the practice arena, but after taking a few steps, the sound of hurried footsteps came from behind as a clear, bright, and feminine voice called out, “ZhiJue, wait for me!”

Hearing this voice, Yu Zhi Jue’s brows instantly twisted. He stood his ground, coldly turned around, and snapped, “Why are you following me?”

Cui Yu was at a loss for how to answer, blushing after a long stretch of silence. She stomped her foot and insisted, “It’s not like I’m following you on purpose! How come you always ignore me?”

She observantly noticed the jade-colored ornament hanging from Yu Zhi Jue’s waist, and taking an extreme liking to it, proceeded to ask, “Where did you get that hanging accessory from? It’s so pretty.”

Yu Zhi Jue evaded the hand she extended over and monotonously asserted, “I’m very busy.” With that said, he got ready to turn and leave.

Seeing the way Yu Zhi Jue carefully protected it, Feng ShuMing’s daughter Feng Luo popped into Cui Yu’s mind, and her suspicions shot up. She had seen Feng Luo and Yu Zhi Jue standing together before, and her senior brothers also complimented Sect Master Feng’s daughter as magnanimous and genuine. It couldn’t be that this ornament was a gift from Feng Luo? Of course, she completely overlooked the other person who was

often next to Yu Zhi Jue, the one who had hedgehog-like hair and a dumb smile.

Hate and jealousy attacked Cui Yu’s heart. She moved to block Yu Zhi Jue’s path in haste and demanded, “Tell me clearly, did someone give that to you?“

Yu Zhi Jue only felt she made no utter sense as he impatiently retorted, “What does this have to do with you? Move.”

Cui Yu instantly grew certain of the fact, and rage boiled within. Without warning, she brandished her whip and aimed it towards Yu Zhi Jue. Yu Zhi Jue wasn’t harmed by her surprise assault, but that hanging ornament was unexpectedly furled away, and by the time he stretched out his hand, it was already too late.

“Give it back!” Yu Zhi Jue hollered, fearing that she would break it, his tone subconsciously emanating a dense aura of fury as he automatically reached for the hilt of his soulwood sword.

Cui Yu was frozen in shock by his cruel and vicious gaze, but she quickly regained her senses and refuted through gritted teeth, "No! What's so good about this thing? Any random artifact in my house is better than this by a hundred times…" She grasped that pendant and shifted her posture as if to chuck it towards a far away rock garden.

Since it's an artifact, it naturally wasn't as delicate as its appearance suggested, but Yu Zhi Jue had already forgotten about this point. In the blink of an eye, he materialized next to Cui Yu, snatching the hanging accessory back with lightning speed, and shoved her at the ground while he was at it.

In his moment of desperation, Yu Zhi Jue had covered his strike with water elementals, so a few bloody wounds now sliced across the hand that Cui Yu used to hold the artifact. She tumbled to the floor, lifting her right arm as she stared incredulously at Yu Zhi Jue, tears swirling in her eyes. Through trembling lips, she stuttered, "You, you… …"

She had been pampered by everyone since she was small, never having received even a single harsh rebuke. When had she ever suffered such a grievance? What's more, this wasn't considered a secluded area, so there were people who peered over upon hearing this disturbance, all of them staring with a peculiar look in their eyes. Flooded with shame and bitterness, Cui Yu found the situation increasingly more difficult to bear.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 27

<

Yu Zhi Jue gave her an indifferent glance, pulled out his sword, and split a stone next to her n half, warning grimly, “There won't be a next time. Otherwise, don’t blame my sword for being ruthless.”

Cui Yu stared blankly at his retreating back, her wounds throbbing with a tremendous and feverish pain. Finally, she couldn’t hold back anymore and started to cry her lungs out while sitting on the ground.

Someone recognized her as YunXiao City's important young Miss and promptly walked over to lend a helping hand, but Cui Yu vengefully pushed them away. After a long time, she managed to restrain her tears and slowly stood up.

This event was reported very quickly back to the large hall. Feng ShuMing creased h s brows as he listened to the messenger whisper in his ear, his expression turning a shade awkward. Luckily, the two Shui family members and those from the Shang family had already left to set up the tracking formation and were not currently present.

Cui TianCheng questioned, “Sect Master Feng, could it be that there’s news?”

Feng ShuMing coughed twice, then explained in a light and trivial manner, “Not quite. It’s just, your beloved daughter and my little disciple seems to have had a dispute and quarreled.”

Cui TianCheng stared laughing out loud. "It's unlikely that Cui'*er* would lose out. Little kids you know, why bother with their affairs?"

You daughter did lose out though… Feng silently retorted.

Sure enough, Cui Yu soon came back with tears in her eyes, trickles of blood flowing continuously from the ferocious-looking cuts on her tender

hand, and droplets of crimson splattered across her pink clothes like stars. Not to mention how Cui TianCheng exploded with rage upon this sight, those senior brothers of hers also noisily hollered in alarm, fussing and helping Cui Yu apply medicine while inquiring about what happened. Cui Yu sobbed brokenly for quite a while before she stammered out an explanation, only saying that she was hurt because Yu Zhi Jue scratched her, yet omitting the reason why. As soon as that group of YunXiao City disciples heard this, they erupted with even more fury and indignation.

Without much delay, Yu Zhi Jue was summoned as well, and Feng ShuMing commanded him to kneel at once. Yu Zhi Jue ground his teeth and stiffly obeyed, his back rigidly straight and his lips pressed stubbornly into a line, glaring with the pride of a young leopard.

Cui Yu's original intention was to show Yu Zhi Jue that she wasn't someone easily bullied, and to force him to stop looking down on her. But at this moment, she also feared that her father wouldn't be willing to forgive him, so she hurriedly gave Cui TianCheng's sleeve a tug. Cui TianCheng didn't pay any attention to her and simply demanded with a smile, "Brother Feng, how do you think this matter should be handled?"

In his heart, Feng ShuMing naturally took his own disciple's side, thus he amicably replied, "Let's do this. I'll make ZhiJue give Cui'*er* an apology, and then penalize him with confinement to the rear mountain's Self Reflection Pavilion, not to leave for a month. What do you think?"

Hearing this, Cui Yu grew anxious and troubled. She had finally gotten a chance to come here, but if Yu Zhi Jue was punished to remain inside Self Reflection Pavilion, then during this period of time, wouldn't it be hard for her to see him?

Cui TianCheng knew of her desires, but he could tell that that boy did not care about his darling daughter at all. With a mind to separate the two, he agreed, "Yes, that would be excellent."

Yu Zhi Jue stood up expressionlessly, gave a bow, and stated in a dull tone, "Junior sister Cui, truly, my apologies."

Although he was apologizing, his eyes were fixed on a point off to the side, his gaze technically not even landing on Cui Yu. Furthermore, as soon as he dropped those words, he left for the rear mountains with an escorting disciple.

Cui Yu was half heart-broken, half enraged, and covering up the hand that was bandaged like a rice dumpling, she stormed off towards the the guest quarters. Cui TianCheng let her be. He obviously wouldn’t take such a small incident to heart, and all in all, this wasn’t the crucial matter at hand.

Not long after that, a communication talisman arrived saying that the formation was set up and ready to go.

This artifact that Shui Yue brought was called ‘Soul Chaser’, and it could pinpoint someone’s whereabouts using their clothes or other items they owned. It needed the collaboration of least three people to activate, and the higher their cultivation levels, the wider the range of its search radius.

When the two sect masters showed up, Shui Yue explained the method for operating this artifact in detail, and the ones stepping up to the plate were of course, Feng ShuMing, Shang Kai, and Cui TianCheng.

One of Shang Yan’s personal belongings was placed in the middle of the artifact, and the three of them poured in their psychical energy. The scenery of the nearby 50 kilometers spun and flashed before their eyes in blurs of light and shadow, fluctuating until it ultimately stopped on an empty plot of land. Not a single person was there.

"Yan'*er*!" Shang Kai wailed with grief, his eyes wide as he took the lead in retracting his energy, then dashed towards that location like the wind.

Feng ShuMing and Cui TianCheng looked at each other, and also understood. It was quite evident that Shang Yan was no longer in this world.

By the time their whole group arrived, Shang Kai had already dug out Shang Yan with trembling hands. After so many days, the corpse had long started to decay, radiating waves and waves of stench. The people on the scene were split into two categories: those who couldn't bear to look and

adverted their eyes, and those who held their breaths while slightly wrinkling their brows.

"Who was it that killed my Vanier? Who?" Shang Kai eyes almost popped out from their sockets, hugging Shang Yan's remains and gnashing his teeth as he snarled, "Who was so malicious? I want them torn into a thousand pieces!"

The cultivators of this world didn't really value biological relationships, and the affections held by father for his child wasn't as deep as what's between an ordinary family either. However, in seeing the son he personally raised from a baby transform a pile of rotting flesh, Shang Yan was still distressed to the point of almost fainting.

As if he didn't smelling the odor, Cui TianCheng walked closer and implored with sorrow, "Brother Shang, please hold your grief. Right now, what's important is to thoroughly investigate who struck down Yan'*er*. There's some other articles in this pit as well, and I recognize the storage bag as Yan'*er*'s, but that knife… …It's design looks somewhat familiar."

Hearing this, Feng ShuMing approached as well and knit his brows. "Indeed… …Perhaps this is something from Holy Maiden Peak?"

As soon as these words left his mouth, everyone became shocked. After all, those from Holy Maiden Peak had long gone into hiding, content to stay in their corner of the world. What's more, there was an entire ocean between them and Holy Maiden Peak, separated by almost a thousand kilometers. How could Shang Yan have provoked someone from Holy Maiden Peak?

Feng ShuMing added, "On that day, this area was part of our sect's disciple selection exam. Guests weren't allowed to enter, so how did Martial nephew Shang appear here?"

Afraid that he would be wrong y implicated, Cui TianCheng sighed n agreement, "Looks like everything can only be solved after finding the murderer."

Shui Yue looked at Shang Kai’s mournful expression and couldn’t resist stepping forward to say with a salute, “Senior Shang, please don’t be depressed. Though this artifact is called ‘Soul Chaser’, its abilities certainly aren’t limited to solely that. This disciple can find out the identity of the one who last came in contact with Shang Yan. As long as that person isn’t more than 50 kilometers away, this artifact will respond.”

Actually, this kind of heaven defying function already deviated from the orthodox path, but seeing Shang Kai so brokenhearted, he couldn’t help but offer this suggestion. Of course, another factor came from his own ego. This artifact that he spent two years refining, he also wanted to know just how far its powers extended!

When they activated the artifact again and three streams of psychical energy entered Shang Yan’s body, the cadaver that was lying flat on the ground unexpectedly began to move on its own!

The corpse’s half-rotten eyes suddenly opened and stared straight at a female disciple, making her lose all color in her face. Terribly frightened, she almost started shrieking as she involuntarily took a few steps back, and the other disciples felt the same horror strangle their hearts. On the other hand, Shui Ling didn’t show the slightest hint of fear and simple looked towards her older brother with a face full of worship.

Shui Yue dosed his eyes and began to utter an incantation: "*Thou who hast died unjustly here, the last to touch thy physical self, please seek them out…*"

He appeared dignified, solemn, and respectful as his lashes veiled his eyes. The technique he utilized didn't resemble that of a forbidden taboo spurned by all the orthodox sects, but rather of a radiant and divine medical art for healing.

Awe inevitably bloomed inside the hearts of the two sect masters present; they had never heard of this kind of summoning technique before. Needless to say, the Shui family's legend and reputation was well deserved!

After a huge amount of psychical energy entered it, the corpse stiffly started to raise its right hand, and one stroke at a time, wrote out two words in midair: Ling Xia.

"Ling Xia! *Ling Xia!*" Shang Yan screamed, his bloodshot eyes bulging.

He stared at the words he inscribed, retracted his hand, and gnashed his teeth as if hating he couldn't devour that person whole!

When he stopped moving, the artifact instantly cease its operations, and Shang Yan's dead body fell to the ground like a block of wood.

Shui Yue revoked the supply of energy, opened his eyes, and clarified, "That's not necessarily the one responsible. This artifact can only detect the remnant psychical energy left on a departed soul's cadaver to identify the last person that touched them. But that person might not be the culprit."

In this world, spells all had their advantages and disadvantages, and even forbidden arts that defied the heavens had their limitations.

When all was said and done, using a taboo spell to summon the souls of the dead was damaging to one's own lifeline. Moreover, those spirits were hindered by the pain and heart-rending fear they experienced at the time of their death, hence unable to directly reveal who killed them. One could only indirectly exploit loopholes to deduce the perpetrator through talismans and amulets, and even that wouldn't work unless the victim knew their assailant's name.

At the time Ling Xia buried him, Shang Yan had already stopped breathing, but the leftover psychical particles in his body still existed and had resolutely memorized the essence of the one who dug its grave.

Feng ShuMing frowned, "This name doesn't sound familiar, but Brother Shang, don't be disheartened. I'll immediately assign someone to check the entire roster list of disciples in my sect. For now, we should send off Martial nephew Shang's soul posthaste."

On this continent, cultivators that died an unnatural death needed to relinquish all of their hate, jealousy, and any other negative emotions if they wanted to reincarnate. Otherwise, their body must be incinerated, and thus forcing them onto the path of rebirth.

Shang Kai took off his long outer robe and set it on top of Shang Yan, wrapped the body up, and gathered the bundle to his chest. His mood kept fluctuating up and down, and he had exhausted large amounts of his psychical energy, but without a trace of weariness, he swore through gritted teeth, “My heart will not rest until I find that cur! I want my Yan‘*er* to see his nemesis die in front of him!“

Everyone returned to the large hall and waited. A short period later, a disciple n charge of the storeroom came n carrying a register of names and nervously reported, “Immortal Welcoming Pavilion has a disciple whose name is Ling Xia.”

Shang Kai stood up at once and slapped the chair beneath him, splitting it into pieces. A disciple attending below hastily brought another one over.

Feng ShuMing slightly creased his brows, then raised his voice and ordered, “MingXu, ride my Ice Cloudburst and bring that person here forthwith!”

At this moment, Ling Xia was currently reading inside his room at Immortal Welcoming Pavilion, but he couldn’t digest the contents no matter what. His eyelids kept madly twitching, and he had the nagging feeling that something wasn’t quite right. After consecutive days of working to finish all the preparations, Guang XuZi had granted them two days of rest.

Just as he was distracted and agitated to no end, a person came to summon him to Immortal Welcoming Pavilion’s main hall. Ling Xia blinked, put down his book, and took in a deep breath, resuming his usual serene complexion.

When he arrived at the hall, an unfamiliar disciple wearing black robes impassively regarded him as if looking at a dead man, and Ling Xia’s heartbeat wildly jumped. Before he could walk forward and give his

greetings, a rope shot out from that disciple's hand and securely tied him up in a flash.

The others who witnessed this scene all froze for a beat, and then Guang XuZi nervously inquired, "Senior brother, Ling Xia is normally prudent and careful. Could it be that he made a mistake with the venue's arrangements?"

"How could his mistake be comparable to merely that?" Flipping onto and straddling the Ice Cloudburst beast, that disciple in black sneered as he hauled Ling Xia up with a tug, "This one sure has a lot of guts!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 28

Although the Ice Cloudburst’s speed couldn’t compare to a Snow Flamma’s, it was extremely fast nonetheless. Ling Xia was dragged along upside down by that disciple, his head throbbing in pain, and even thinking was incredibly difficult. A lot of thoughts ran through his mind, and connecting the situation to those who recently arrived from YunXiao City, it should be that Shang Yan’s matter had been discovered. His chest abruptly seized; in that case, what about Yu Zhi Jue?

They arrived at Deadwood Mountain's main hall very soon, and he was crudely flung into the center. On the bright side, the ropes on his body released themselves, though purple bruises from being restrained wrapped around both his wrists and ankles.

Ling Xia pitifully crawled up, only now realizing that currently, the incomprehensible gazes of those seated above all congregated on his body. Even though he pretended to be calm, his palms were covered in sweat. He swept over his surroundings out the corner of his eyes, and realizing that Yu Zhi Jue's figure was absent, felt the unease and worry in his heart rise.

Seeing him, Shui Ling unwittingly let out a soft, "Ah." Shui Yue was also stunned. Before, he had quite the favorable impression towards this gentle and polite youngster, but he didn't expect that their reunion would end up happening so soon, and in this kind of situation.

Ling Xia swiftly adjusted his posture, gave a salute, and stated, "Disciple Ling Xia greets the Sect Master and the many Elders present.”

Shang Kai’s eyes were blood-red and close to spitting flames as energy converged and took shape in his palms. With the flick of his wrist, he could blow this villain into thousands of pieces!

Cui TianCheng lightly gestured with his hand, signaling for Shang Kai not to be impatient. Please thank your local aggregator site for me dropping

this novel. Feng ShuMing spoke in a stern voice, “Are you aware of matter for which you have been called?”

Ling Xia shook his head and replied, “This disciple does not, and asks for honored Sect Master’s explication.”

Unable to continue holding back his wrath, Shang Kai sharply tore off the cloth covering Shang Yan’s body and exposed a half rotten face. All that was left of his eyes were two black holes, and Shang Kai turned those empty cavities directly towards Ling Xia, shouting brazenly, “You don‘t know? Did you, or did you not, kill my Yan’*er*?!”

He had mentally prepared himself, but nevertheless, Ling Xia drew back a few steps in fright upon suddenly seeing such a terrifying face, his complexion instantly blanching, pale as paper. He looked at Shang Kai's mournful, indignant gaze, his mouth opening and closing as he stammered, "I, I..."

In the face of the deceased's grieving and heartbroken father, even if Shang Yan didn't die by his hand, a profound feeling of guilt still swallowed him up. Unexpectedly, those words of denial just couldn't leave his mouth.

"Kneel!" Feng ShuMing's body radiated a powerful pressure, so heavy that Ling Xia's legs buckled and he automatically knelt on the ground. With Feng ShuMing's perception and experience, he was already positive that, based Ling Xia's reaction a moment ago, this boy had definitely met Shang Yan before!

Ling Xia sagged to the floor and bit down hard on his lips, his heart beating as loud as thunder. He strove to regain his calm, and his brain clocked into overdrive.

That day, Shang Yan had tailed behind them to enter another sect’s restricted domain. That was already his wrong, something he should not have done. They had attacked him for the sake of protecting themselves, and in this world where strength was justice, there was nothing unreasonable about that. Not to mention, Yu Zhi Jue was also Feng ShuMing’s favorite disciple and the one he had the most expectations for.

But on the other hand, that principle only applied in ordinary situations. When circumstances involved those with status or powerful backers, it held less weight than a single energy coin. Even if Feng ShuMing had the heart to protect his disciple, but should YunXiao City blindly apply pressure, he might just hand Yu Zhi Jue over!

Perhaps Yu Zhi Jue would still have a slim chance of survival, but as the representative mob character that also got mixed in, he was doomed to perish like a cannon fodder for sure! No matter what's said or done, Feng ShuMing was obligated to give YunXiao City an explanation and reparation. And he, he was bound to be a part of that. Since it already reached this point, he might as well take a gamble, and at the very least, Yu Zhi Jue won't get dragged into it to boot. Besides, if that haughty and foolish kid was here, the outcome would probably turn out much worse!

If he snuffed it, maybe he'll return home, but that child... He didn't want that boy to received even the slightest harm.

When Ling Xia raised his head anew, his expression had recovered its usual tranquility, and he proclaimed in a clear voice, "Reporting to Sect Master, if you are asking about affairs involving YunXiao City's Senior brother Shang Yan, then this disciple does know a thing or two. This disciple does not dare to conceal any information from the honored sect master."

Shang Kai roared, “Speak!”

Xia straightened his back and disclosed in a grave tone, “The day this disciple came to ChongMing City to sign up for the sect’s registration, we previously had a one-time encounter on the lake outside the city. An unpleasant incident took place, and as for this matter, YunXiao City’s senior brothers had all personally witnessed it.”

After he said this, Cui TianCheng’s second disciple Mo Dai did, in fact, recall this event. On that day, due to Shang Yan’s own willfulness, he used a lightning-attribute artifact to attack a small, ordinary boat, and this youngster before him and Yu Zhi Jue were both on that boat. Mo Dai nodded and confirmed, “Such a thing did indeed happen, but that couldn’t

have been enough for you to bear so deep a grudge as to kill Junior brother Shang Yan, right?”

Ling Xia dispassionately glanced his way, and answered, “Nothing as serious as that. It’s just, later, during the second examination round, I unexpectedly ran into Senior brother Shang Yan again in a small cave within the competition grounds.”

When he reached this point, he gave a bow and addressed Feng ShuMing, “Honored Sect Master, this disciple remains puzzled to this day. Why would Senior brother Shang Yan appear inside our Myriad Beast Forest? Furthermore, he was dressed in disguise, pretending to be one of the examinees.”

With this question of his, some awkwardness emerged on Cui TianCheng and Mo Dai’s faces. Without needing much effort, Mo Dai could guess up to 80% of what happened. It was definitely related to the subject of Youngest junior sister’s crush on Yu Zhi Jue! Therefore, this abnormally headstrong junior brother probably covertly infiltrated the testing site, wanting to murder Yu Zhi Jue, but ultimately ended up getting offed instead.

However, if this was brought to light, it’d probably lead to Shang Kai and Cui TianCheng bearing a grudge, and his master would ferociously chastise him too…

Thus, he walked forward and explained, “This matter is rather embarrassing, and I beg Martial uncle Feng for forgiveness. Junior brother Shang has always been very interested in Myriad Beast Forest, wanting to go explore it. This disciple had tried to stop him many times, and I reckon that somehow, he found a chance to furtively sneak in of his own accord.”

Feng ShuMing sarcastically sneered in his heart; these people from YunXiao City really looked down on his ShaoYang Sect way too much!

However, his merely remarked, “This is no big deal. The curiosity in children is strong, and it’s also hard to avoid.” He then quietly clicked his tongue in wonder at the disciple standing below. Although the boy didn’t

have many years under his belt and was confronted with heavy pressure, he still responded evenly and thoroughly, logically and appropriately, truly one that possessed a seldom seen mettle.

Shang Ka had long become impatient, so he demanded, “Get to the point, was Yan’*er* killed by you or not?”

Ling Xia flicked his gaze at him then turned away, focusing on Feng ShuMing as he continued, “This disciple is incompetent. Following that, due to getting into a dispute with Senior brother Shang, a fight broke out, and I had no choice but to retaliate in self defense. This disciple is endowed with Herculean Strength, and accidentally struck Senior brother Shang. Afterward, my heart filled with panic, and thus I buried him.”

He deliberately left out a majority of the details, and in saying it this way, everybody would naturally assume that *he* was the one to slay Shang Yan.

Shang Kai saw that the other’s eyes were sincere, and correlating what he heard with his own son’s personality, believed about 70% to 80% of this confession. But looking at his son’s remains, the sorrow and anger in his heart was still difficult to quell.

Recalling a different issue, Feng ShuMing sternly asked, “The knife that belongs to Holy Maiden Peak, where did you acquire it from?”

Ling Xia blinked, then calmly replied, “This disciple does not know the origins of such a knife, nor has he ever seen a member of Holy Maiden Peak.” Yu Zhi Jue obviously wasn’t considered a member of Holy Maiden Peak.

After he finished this response, he stood up, lifted his right hand, and vowed, “This disciple is willing to swear a Heart Devouring Covenant that every sentence I just said is true, and if there is even half a lie, may the Heavens end my life.”

At these words of his, the faces of everyone in the hall changed. A Heart Devouring Covenant was the highest of all spells and curses that had the ability to devour its caster. If the person pledging this oath uttered even a

single falsity, they would immediately suffer a deadly consequence, the annihilation of their soul.

Feng ShuMing asked, “You do realize what the penalty for lying is?”

Ling Xia nodded and resolutely confirmed, “Every word this disciple said was true, so what reason would I need to fear?“

Feng ShuMing raised an eyebrow, then proposed, “Senior brother Cui, since he is willing to swear, then why don’t we let Martial nephew Mo write down a Heart Devouring Covenant for him to seal with a mark of blood?” Suggesting it this way was also to avoid arousing unnecessary suspicion.

Cui TianCheng lowered his head in consent, and Mo Dai very quickly drew out the magic spell. He brought it down for Ling Xia to repeat everything he said earlier, followed by stamping it with his blood. No one else seemed to have realized this, but Mo Dai had discerned some hints and possible loopholes within Ling Xia’s words, as if the other wanted to forcefully shoulder all the responsibility alone. He was a bit moved by such actions, for he had never seen this type of person before. And in the end, exposing the other’s omission wasn’t very beneficial to himself, so he kept his silence.

Ling Xia pressed down a bloody fingerprint, and sure enough, there wasn’t any indications of him receiving divine retribution.

Shang Kai knew that his son was at fault, yet he still stood up like a shot and loudly clamored towards Feng ShuMing, “Sect Master Feng, how do you think this matter should be settled?”

Feng ShuMing looked at Ling Xia and secretly sighed. This young man was promising, and if properly nurtured, would undoubtedly become one of ShaoYang Sect’s valuable forces in the future. It was honestly such a pity…

But, he had to give YunXiao City some face.

Standing up slowly, he heavily intoned, “Since Ling Xia caused Martial nephew Shang to pass away, then I shall use a life to exchange a life, and

hand Ling Xia over to Brother Shang."

Hearing this, Ling Xia's breath hitched, and only after a long time did he deeply exhale, lower his head, and murmur, "This disciple accepts his punishment."

Fuck, couldn't you have let me take my own life? I'm afraid of pain ok!

Hearing these words, Shui Yue abruptly interjected, "Martial uncle Feng, Martial uncle Cui, please pardon my manners. There is a certain matter this disciple failed to understand, so would it be possible to inquire a step further?"

Feng ShuMing paused, then consented, "No harm. Esteemed nephew[1], please ask."

Shui Yue gave Ling Xia a look as he questioned, "This disciple only wants to know, if an outsider intruded into ShaoYang Sect's restricted areas, what kind of punishment would they receive?"

With these words, everyone was taken aback for a beat. Feng ShuMing also hesitated a while before slightly raising his voice and declaring, "My ShaoYang Sect's restricted area, how could it be a place where anyone who wanted to enter, could enter? If someone trespassed inside, they will indisputably be treated as a hostile invader and executed as such!" As he said this, he threw a glance at Shang Yan's corpse, fury rapidly accumulating in his heart.

What an excellent kill! What an auspicious death!

Shui Yue nodded as he pensively mused, "In that case, on the day of the second examination, this Junior brother Ling ought to have received permission to enter and compete. Thus, he should have been considered half a ShaoYang Sect disciple, no? However, that Junior brother Shang had, on the contrary, barged in without authorization, no?"

Everyone could understand his implications, and Shang Kai's face changed as he bellowed, "*You!*…" If not for his apprehension towards the

Shui family's prestige, he would have already smacked this little whelp into the dirt for speaking out of turn.

Feng ShuMing faintly inclined his head and affirmed, "Naturally, that is so. As long as one passes our first exam, it is guaranteed that they will become a member of my ShaoYang Sect."

The little lady Shui Ling was exceptionally quick-witted and had long perceived the purpose behind her older brother's words. So putting on an innocent and naive demeanor, she timely chirped, "Oh, in that case, then it should have been that this Senior brother Ling had *protected* the order and laws of ShaoYang Sect instead. Uncles, don't you all agree that what my brother said is correct?"

Hearing this in a young girl's cute and innocent voice, both Cui TianCheng and Shang Kai's complexions twisted, but it wasn't like they could bicker with a little girl.

Feng ShuMing was inwardly pleased, but on the outside, he deplored, "Usually, that is the case, but Martial nephew Shang was still my ShaoYang Sect's honored guest. Granted, his conduct was inappropriate and out of bounds, but he was quite young, and it's a pity that he departed like so."

[1]: in case it hasn't been obvious, none of these people calling each other uncle/nephew are related, and it's just a courteous form of address

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 29

Cui TianCheng saw Shang Kai's expression and very shrewdly stayed silent. Shang Kai's heart ached for his own son's tragic death, and throwing his dignity out the window, sneered with reddened eyes, "Then Sect Master Feng, how do you think this should be handled? Don't tell me you're going to allow my Yan'*er* to die in vain?"

Feng ShuMing nonchalantly answered, "Brother Shang misunderstands, of course that is not my intention. Why don't we change it like so. Let this young man go through the Lashing Penalty, and ten days later, if he is still alive, then we shall regard it as his good fortune. What does Brother Shang think of this?"

Without a doubt, this so-called Lashing Penalty was not as simple as it sounded on the surface. It utilized a whip made from, at minimum, a level-3 magical beast's hide, and the condemned disciple was to be flogged ten times each day, ten days in a row. On top of that, one had to suffer through all ten days under the scorching sun, not allowed to eat or drink.

Generally speaking, most people weren't able to last until the end, and not even three days would pass before one forfeited their life under the sun's burning rays.

On one hand, Feng ShuMing proposed this for the purpose of giving face to YunXiao City, and on the other hand, it could be considered as offering that youngster a chance to live. If that young man persevered through this, it'd also prove his formidable willpower as a distinguished individual who possessed superb strength.

Shang Kai studied the kneeling boy's frail body. Likewise, he knew he couldn't afford not to give Feng ShuMing some face, and after all, his son was in the wrong first. Hence, he coldly snorted, "Fine! Then I'll have to trouble Sect Master Feng to execute this as quickly as possible!"

Even if this youngster survived the Lashing Penalty, sooner or later, he would take revenge for his Yan'*er* via other means!

Shui Yue frowned, not expecting to still wind up with this kind of result. He was extremely dissatisfied inside, but when all was said and done, he was a guest, and could not say too much.

Although Ling Xia did not know the specific details of this punishment, but hearing the words "ten days" and "Lashing Penalty" was enough for him to approximately guess what it entailed. Even though he appeared undisturbed, his heart had already started to break down into tears.

Fuck! Don't be like this! It would have been better to just get the chop! I want to go home!

Not long after, two disciples wearing black robes walked in, and with one on each side, secured and escorted Ling Xia towards the Disciplinary Hall.

Without the slightest delay, Shang Kai carried Shang Yan and followed, wanting to witness Ling Xia's torture with his own eyes.

Shui Yue gave the two sect masters an insipid salute and said, "Since there are no more matters, this disciple will take his leave. My sister is still underage, and not fit to see such a savage spectacle." Right now, any favorable opinions he had of these two distinguished sect masters had completely disintegrated into oblivion, and he faintly regretted using a forbidden art to help them.

Cui TianCheng acquiesced, "Many thanks to Esteemed nephew for this time's aid, and please convey my gratitude to Brother Shui."

Inside the courtyard of the Disciplinary Hall, both of Ling Xia's arms were already firmly bound at his sides, and the dread in his heart was many times more intense than when he got walloped by wooden clubs previously. He gritted his teeth and lowered his head, not wanting to leak the terror in his eyes to those observing, but the violent heaves of his chest still betrayed his distress.

Shang Kai held his son’s corpse and sat nearby to watch, his heart immensely at peace. If it wasn’t for maintaining his Shang family’s reputation, he absolutely would have stepped up to carry out this sentence personally!

The Disciplinary Hall's disciple briefly soaked a thick as a baby's wrist, enchanted snakeskin whip in a clear liquid, and then without a single warning, snapped it through the air with a sharp and crisp crack.

Ling Xia felt a burst of heat across his back, followed by the onslaught of an indescribable pain. His vision turned black, and he couldn't hold back a blood-curdling scream as sweat and tears both began pouring out in waves, impossible to stop.

His castigator obviously wouldn't wait for him to adapt, already proceeding with the next set of rhythmic and steadfast lashes.

Every train of thought inside Ling Xia's mind instantly vanished, and only one word remained—**pain**!

He couldn't even remain resolute as his body instinctively fought to escape, but no matter how he shifted, the whip would continually and relentlessly give chase like a poisonous ulcer that had infested to the bone.

Under the severe pain, he gnawed his lips until they became badly mangled, and each acute torment stemming from the abrasions on his body all stampeded over one other to drill into his mind.

Furthermore, the liquid on the whip had the effect of forcing a person to stay conscious. Even when he could no longer persist and wished to black out, his brain would still keenly process the suffering that came with every strike.

“Ple…*ase*…” Ling Xia inadvertently let out a feeble plea, his voice buried under the cacophony of the whip’s biting slaps.

His body involuntarily started to shake, and Ling Xia numbly prayed for these ten lashes to hurry up and end.

The extras are super fun so please look forward to the new translator. It was as if time had slowed, and in his scattered and broken vision, he vaguely thought he saw Shang Kai’s satisfied and sickening grin.

By the time it finally concluded, Ling Xia powerlessly hung his head, heavily gasping for breath, and it wasn't until he gathered his wits again that he came to realize both the disciple who flogged him and Shang Kai had departed.

With his surroundings a dim and blurry haze, only the violent pain accompanied him in this empty courtyard.

Under the extended radiation from the sun, Ling Xia soon came to understand what was more excruciating, and more terrifying, than the whip could ever be.

In this sweltering heat, the large quantities of sweat that originated from his agony had evaporated into granules of salt, giving his unbearable, aching wounds an additional harrowing and uncomfortable layer of itch. His throat was also excessively parched and on the threshold of rupturing.

He clenched his teeth and used his psychical energy to shield his vital organs, slowly calming down, but every now and then, a weak moan would still escape. As for those flies and bugs that crawled over attracted by the smell of blood, he no longer had the energy to drive them away.

A pair of small and exquisitely embroidered shoes unexpectedly entered his line of sight, along with the hem of a familiar shade of pink. Ling Xia struggled to lift his head, his sluggish vision taking quite a while to focus before he could finally discern his visitor’s face. His lips feebly moved a bit, and croaked, “Cui Yu?”

Cui Yu was evidently intimidated by his injuries and how his entire body reeked of blood, her whole face full of revulsion. She took a step back and asked with swollen eyes, “Was it you who murdered Senior brother Shang? You evil person, why must you be so vicious?”

Although she previously disliked how Shang Yan constantly courted her, but hearing this news still kindled her feelings of camaraderie as a fellow disciple of the same sect.

Ling Xia gave her a bitter smile. Lil' sis yo, yours truly is a damned scapegoat!

Cui Yu cautiously took in his appearance and exclaimed, somewhat astounded, "It's you! You're ZhiJue's older brother, right?"

Seeing him listlessly nod, Cui Yu fell into a stupor. The first thought that flashed across her mind was, if Yu Zhi Jue learned of this, wouldn't he ignore her even more?

Using the last of his strength, Ling Xia finally forced out a single word, "*Water*…"

Cui Yu saw how his drenched-in-blood-and-sweat condition was indeed pitiful, and checking that no one was around, stuffed a fruit from her pouch between Ling Xia's lips.

This fruit was tasty and refreshing, melting once it entered his mouth, and Ling Xia's inflamed and stinging throat swiftly felt better. Heh heh, as expected, the fruits carried by a sect master's most treasured daughter were all exceptional goods.

He looked at Cui Yu and squeezed out a difficult smile. Shit, looks like this mob fate of his still cursed him to become cannon fodder! He just didn't expect that the last person he'd see ended up being neither Song Xiao Hu nor Yu Zhi Jue, but Cui Yu.

A total of ten days. He did not believe that he could last until then. Fuck, if it wasn't because he wanted to leave some words for Yu Zhi Jue no matter what, he definitely would have provoked Shang Kai into smiting him dead with a single whack earlier.

Fuck! This kind of persecution isn't something a human could endure! I refuse to play with these psychos any more!

At present, the thing he couldn't let go of the most, was those two kids…

He hoarsely dragged out from his throat, "Where's *Ah*'Jue, do you know?"

Cui Yu looked at her hand that was wrapped in gauze, pouted with a slightly guilty conscience, and said, "He did something wrong earlier, so Uncle Feng locked him in the rear mountains to reflect for a month. You evil. person, you still haven't answered my question yet"

Hearing this, Ling Xia felt relieved, because now they could avoid the situation of that child stirring up trouble. He stared intently at Cui Yu and his bloodied, chapped lips faintly curved upwards. "Do you like *Ah*'Jue?"

Cui Yu's cheeks immediately flushed with red. The young man in front of her was smiling incredibly gently, and miraculously, she didn't feel repulsed and even shyly replied, "What 'like'? There's only the case of other people liking me, hmph! However… however, *Ah*'Jue never pays any attention to me…"

Speaking up to here, her voice unwittingly diminished. In the past, whenever she wanted something, there was always someone who would take the initiative to g ve it to her. Everyone competed to fawn over her, but she also knew that sometimes, those people didn’t sincerely like *her*, but rather, what came with her identity. And Yu Zhi Jue would probably keep avoiding her all the more due to what happened with Ling Xia this time. Thinking of such a future, her mood instantly plummeted.

Ling Xia nodded, closed his eyes to compose himself, then opened them again. "In that case, please listen carefully to what I'm about say. Please help me pass these words on to *Ah*'Jue, and with this, he won't blame you."

His voice was very tranquil, as if he wasn't in pain at all.

Cui Yu blanked out for a beat, reflexively softened her tone, and whispered, "I'm listening."

"Please inform him that, first of all, I won't die." I'm merely going back to another world.

"Second, tell him that he must properly get along with Xiao Hu, and forever remain as brothers:" Otherwise, I'll die with regrets!

"And lastly, let him know that I didn't feel any pain, and didn't suffer:" Fuck, who in the world would believe this kind of line that sounded like some cliche a Holy Mother would spout? I'm in so much pain that I want to die! I want to wail and cry and bawl my eyes out!

Ling Xia exhausted all his power in arduously saying these things, and sweat dropped like rain from his forehead.

Cui Yu only felt her nose tingle and burn, and a strange idea starting to grow in her heart. A young man this kind, how could he possibly kill someone? She took out all the spiritual fruits in her storage bag and prepared to feed them to him. Please thank your local aggregator site for me dropping this novel. Ling Xia shook his head and declined. He still had to suffer through nine more days of torment; if he ate these and healed, today's anguish would simply repeat, so why bother?

He closed his eyes and disjointedly pushed out with his tattered vocal chords, "Also, from a young age, *Ah*'Jue didn't have a father or a mother. If you like him, then please treat him well. Don't always try to attract his attention by picking a fight. This is all I wanted to say."

Song Xiao Hu was a child with a strong heart and mind, so even without Ling Xia accompanied by his side, he'll still grow up to be very outstanding, make a lot of friends, establish an enormous harem, find his relatives… Thus, Ling Xia wasn't worried about him.

The only one he couldn't put down his concerns for was Yu Zhi Jue, that extremely tunnel-minded, yet terribly adorable child.

Cui Yu's eyes widened in astonishment, ruminating over these new findings, and for the first time ever, began to think about what the word 'like' really meant. She ponderously walked away, but couldn't resist

looking back. The tied up, thin, and frail young man was hanging his head, and with sweat-soaked, ink black hair covering his face, appeared as if he had fallen into a deep sleep.

On the second day of the Lashing Penalty, Shang Kai arrived carrying Shang Yan as before. Seeing him, Ling Xia let out a sigh of relief; he had been afraid that the other wouldn't come. Please respect and support the translator on wintertranslates.wordpress.com. The castigating disciple raised the whip, and just as he was ready to swing it down, Ling Xia suddenly stared at Shang Kai and weakly chuckled, "Senior Shang, I will absolutely survive to the end of these ten days."

Like fucking hell anyone'd be able to endure ten days of this level of torture! I'm begging you, get over here and end me already!

Shang Kai froze upon hearing this, then flew into a rage on the spot. The hand that had grabbed his chair reflexively tightened. Yesterday, this youngster looked like he had given up, accepting this punishment with resignation, and watching that hadn't appeased much of his anger.

So he sneered, "Is that so? What are you trying to say?" He waved his hand, signaling the disciple holding the whip to temporarily halt.

"I only wanted to apologize," Ling Xia feebly responded. "That day, if I didn't accidentally hit him, perhaps Senior brother Shang and I could have become good friends."

Every single word seemed like a stab that gouged out another piece of Shang Kai's heart. He carefully placed Shang Kai on the ground, and one step at a time, stomped over with purpose.

As if completely oblivious, Ling Xia continued in a light tone, "Senior Shang, after you bury Senior brother Shang, rest assured, I will properly atone in front of his grave…"

He never finished this sentence because at the same time that Shang Kai's eyes turned frigid, the man had thrown out countless flying blades compressed from the elemental energy he gathered in his palms!

A streak of dense and mighty flame shot over from the side, canceling out most of Shang Kai's blades, but a small portion still stabbed into Ling Xia's body. With almost imperceptibly parted lips, Ling Xia uttered a single name, "*Ah*'Li…"

The corners of his mouth tugged upwards, and from that point on, he collapsed and moved no more.

The huge, snow white magical beast fretfully looked at Ling Xia, then glared towards Shang Kai with bloodshot eyes that nearly spat fire, baring two rows of sharp, alabaster teeth.

Thunderstruck, Shang Kai muttered, "A Snow Flamma beast?" Magical beasts above level-6 were already a rare find, and this Snow Flamma had, to his surprise, almost reached level-8!

In the brief moment he was stupefied, the Snow Flamma had bitten off the ropes restricting that youngster, picked him up with its teeth, and leapt away, its speed as fast as lightning.

Why did this Snow Flamma show up here to save that young boy? Although Shang Ka was perplexed, he was positive that one of his flying blades had pierced Ling Xia's heart. That boy should no longer have any hope of living.

Shag Kai lowered his gaze, looked at his son's corpse, and murmured, "Yan'*er*, father got revenge for you!"

OceanofPDF.com

OceanofPDF.com

Volume 2

If you're not gay when you're young, you'll regret it when you're old.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 1

Ling Xia blankly opened his eyes. He saw a familiar goose yellow ceiling, and a familiar fragrance of magnolia flowers was in the air. He reached out to feel around the place. Beneath him was a cozy, soft, and large bed and not the hard, thin, and flat bed inside the shed from the other world.

His mind was muddled, and he was sluggish for almost a minute before he suddenly sat up.

The familiar desk with a computer, the bookcase, the phone at his bedside……

He held his head and wailed. After so much trouble, this one really did come back!

He impatiently opened his phone. Unexpectedly, an entire day had passed since he left this world!

If not for the fact that he could still clearly remember severe, nearly unbearable, and throbbing pain, Ling Xia would almost believe that he had made it all up as a dream.

He walked towards the window sill while wearing slippers and pulled open the curtains forcefully. Bright and wonderfully warm sunshine immediately flooded the room.

Although this world’s polluted and impure sky wasn’t as clear and blue as the other world’s sky, it still looked nostalgic……

The most important point was that this world wouldn’t randomly threaten his life with danger! The legal system in this world was superior! Long live China! Ling Xia was internally crying as he thought this.

By the time he had finished watering the plants and calmed down, his memories of the other world had gradually become indistinct, and his memories of this world from yesterday had nevertheless become increasingly distinct.

Maybe it was true that at night, you'd dream about whatever you thought of during the day? Did he just read a novel and didn't do anything other than make up a dream?

Ling Xia tidied his room and deliberately didn't try thinking too much about it, lifting up his briefcase to go to work like he used to do.

He was a programmer at a slightly famous domestic computer software company with a monthly wage of six thousand. Although he wasn't considered someone who had a high income in this major city, he was left with a house and some assets after his parents had divorced, so he could still be considered as part of the white collar social class that had all of the basic necessities.

Sitting on the subway, Ling Xia glanced at his phone out of habit, wanting to browse through some of the latest updates of the novels he had been following for a while. However, he stopped and silently closed it instead.

It didn't matter whether or not those memories were truly real or if they were a dream. They really were—— too cruel! That was why it was still for the better if he gave up on novels and dropped them entirely……

Entering the bustling company, his feelings of unfamiliarity with the place also slowly faded away. In addition, the details of his work gradually became familiar again. All ten of his fingers flew up and down as he threw himself into his work and focused all of his attention into it.

When it was lunchtime, Ling Xia ordered the same take out as he had done before, simultaneously eating and listening to the gossip of his department colleagues and smiling for a while at the right times.

The calm and monotonous days continued for almost a week. Ling Xia's hobby at night had already changed to playing games, from Warcraft and League of Legends to Fight the Landlord and DDTank. Those meaningless and indescribable feelings he had still hadn't faded away, and predictably, there was a completely hollow, empty pain in his heart.

He faced his computer and silently closed the game server. Finally, making a firm resolution, his fingers moved impatiently and found a familiar novel from inside his favorites folder on his web browser; he opened it and quickly skimmed it over.

He held his breath, quickly glancing over the names of the chapters of that novel.

If the plot didn't change at all, that would be proof that he had definitely just made up a dream. But if the plot changed……

His eyes accidentally passed over the bookmarks, and Ling Xia immediately stared blankly out of shock. He remembered very clearly that this work wasn't unknown, but it also wasn't popular; it only had more than four thousand bookmarks. But then, how come there were more than ten thousand bookmarks right now?

Then, looking at the discussion area intensely talking about the situation, Ling Xia suddenly hit the table, nearly cursing out loud.

Fuck! What's with this kidding around!

The reviews section of the discussion area was unprecedentedly lively, and the headings were even more shocking to the point that they could make people faint—

Forget that third person, only the protagonist and the villain are in true love!

I hate those kinds of pure-hearted saint characters the most~~

Villain-sama, please just accept the protagonist's love~~

Little Yu is the best! Only Little Yu tops!

Mn mn, this one thinks that a threesome isn't bad either.
……These weren't hallucinations, right?

Ling Xia was somewhat taken by surprise. Even though those girls liked the villain and typed out their many hopes for the author to queerbait in the fan discussion earlier as well, they were being too fierce about that in these headings right now, right?

Furthermore, what's going on with that saintly mob character mentioned in the headings?

Ling Xia opened the web page, quickly reading through it. As expected, the novel's plot was also different from what he remembered!

At the very beginning of the storyline, in the childhood years of the protagonist and the villain, as expected, a mob character appeared, but it wasn't the idiot mob character from his memories. That mob character's name was never mentioned in the novel, but nevertheless, their personality seemed similar to his own personality!

The rest of the plot also matched up with his memories, but only for the most part, because of the protagonist's limited viewpoint……

Ling Xia deeply breathed in a mouthful of air, his hand slightly shivering as he pressed on the mouse in order to scroll down the web page.

Before, the reason Yu Zhi Jue became the villain was because of countless misunderstandings with the protagonist. Now, the reason practically made people unable to look at it head-on!

Yes, after that mob character died, the villain very mysteriously turned evil!

Although most of the plot was told through Song Xiao Hu's viewpoint with very few portrayals of the villain, you could still guess how the great villain honed his strength by diligently cultivating, having opportunities to

purposefully plan out his goal of eradicating those so-called famous orthodox sects step by step……

Plus, the most frightening thing was that the novel described in detail the scenes where the villain tortured those numerous orthodox cultivators to death. The bloodiest descriptions were written about Yunxiao City. After the villain led his gorgeous battle formation to attack Yunxiao City, the first thing that happened was a massacre. Using the worst torture instruments, the Shang family head and Yunxiao City's sect leader had their flesh gouged and bones picked out a little bit, and ten geniuses were tormented, had their heads cut off, and were subjected to a forbidden technique that trapped their ghosts and sealed them inside a pagoda for generation after generation, unable to reincarnate.

When the protagonist arrived, leading a group of juniors, the river water was already completely dyed red by blood, and only human skulls hung at the top of the city gate.

And compared to the devilishly charming and gorgeous villain from the previous version of the novel, the great villain from the current version of the novel was even colder in three aspects, being cold-blooded, cold in feeling, and cool-headed.

But the ending was still the same as before. The villain was still sorrowfully and hastily killed under the protagonist's golden palm!

Yes, this time, the villain was still eliminated by the protagonist after he destroyed the world!

The script was also different from his memories. Ling Xia remembered very clearly that the line that he had seen for the villain before was: "This kind of repulsive world…… should be completely destroyed……"

It carried a strong meaninglessly unfair kind of pessimistic feeling that was a gorgeous example of literature.

But the current villain's last line was: "This world without him…… was finally destroyed……"

Without him? It really was referring to a male! Which him is this, exactly?!

How come there's this intense queerbait kind of feeling! No wonder all those crazy fan discussions appeared!

This work's about a stud, author-kun!

If you replaced all of the "Yu Zhi Jue" words for the word "villain", Ling Xia didn't have many feelings at all when he looked at these words. He only crazily ridiculed them in his mind. But once he linked these incidents with that proud, pampered, and stubborn child in his memories, his breathing immediately went shallow, and it became difficult for him to calm down again.

If…… all of it wasn't a dream, and all of it was real? He didn't dare to imagine it and couldn't bear to imagine it either.

The current novel only briefly mentioned a nameless low-level disciple who died when the protagonist went to carry out a mission, fulfilling his fate as a mob character.

The novel very vividly described the grief that the protagonist felt when he lost a brother and his determination and desire to change this unfair world. But what the villain thought and also what he decided in his mind wasn't mentioned within the novel.

When the protagonist mournfully shed tears over the loss of his brother, the villain only sneered and voiced a single line: "What use is there in crying?" Once he finished speaking, he indifferently turned and walked away.

From then on, "he" was only mentioned by the villian after the end of the conclusion.

This "him", who exactly was it directed towards?

Ling Xia felt his temple throb with pain and couldn’t help but close his eyes for a while.

If his experiences in that world were all real, then in that case, in order to prevent Yu Zhi Jue from going too far due to his hatred, he had specially trusted Cui Yu to relay three lines along with her to him.

Asking him to not harbor a grudge, asking him to forever be brothers with Xiao Hu, and also telling him that…… he definitely wouldn’t die.

Apparently, that damned child Yu Zhi Jue completely didn’t take his words to heart at all! But, was he really so important to that child?

Or maybe, the person he should be cursing was that ruinous author who controlled people’s fates!

Why did they want to let their own favourite character step onto the tragic path of no return?

Ling Xia suddenly deleted the long comment that he still hadn’t finished typing out and closed his computer.

He couldn’t think about this again. He felt that his head was completely about to burst open because of his chaotic mood.

Lying on top of the bed for a long time, his exhaustion finally hit him, and Ling Xia closed his swollen and aching eyelids.

He faintly made up a dream, where a child shrunk into themselves alone in a dark corner, silently shedding tears.

Very naturally, he faced that child and stretched out a hand……

By the time Ling Xia woke up once again, he almost jumped out of fright. Before his eyes was a disjointed and swaying scenery that seemed to be completely separated from him by a blue translucent fluid. In a daze, he couldn’t see clearly.

He struggled for a while, and only then did he discover that his body couldn’t be moved in the slightest at all. He seemed to be immersed in some kind of liquid just like a specimen soaked in formalin liquid.

Making this mental association, he couldn’t help but tremble in fear for a while.

“Hello? ……” Ling Xia opened his mouth, wanting to breathe, and some of the ice-cold and herbal medicine flavored liquid immediately poured into his mouth. He was incapable of suppressing his coughing and gurgling. Originally, he tried to make very large movements, but in reality, his movements still created very little sound, and his chest only slightly moved up and down.

When he coughed and gurgled, the liquid poured in again, and he couldn’t help but calm down and close his mouth. Luckily, he could also breathe in this liquid. Ling Xia slowly turned his eyes about, sizing up the scenery all around him.

This place seemed to be a simple bamboo house with multiple floors. He was lying down in a huge transparent vessel. The style that this place was built in was really familiar……

A familiar mask-wearing, white-haired man clad in white clothes walked in, and when he saw him, his eyes went wide and he clearly stared blankly out of shock. Very quickly, he nodded his head and said, “Boy, you finally woke up! You wasted the four years worth of panaceas that I bought! If you still hadn’t woken up, I would’ve decided to throw you aside.”

“Senior?” Ling Xia forced a smile as he moved his lips.

Fuck! This one transmigrated again!

That person said that he wouldn’t die.

In that case, I’ll just wait.

Whatever that person said, I’ve done all of it.

One year, two years, three years,

As long as that person returns, then I'll just always listen to him.

Five years, eight years, ten years……

As long as that person returns, I'll just tie him to my side, never to leave me!

Only, that person still hasn't shown up……

As expected, everyone's a liar!

As expected, this kind of world should've ended a long time ago!

Author's Note: Mn mn, the melodrama of the second volume begins! ~\(≧▽≦)/~

After four years, Ling Xia has returned, so Little Yu is fourteen years old now. It's exactly a good time for first love, ahaha.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 2

It wasn’t easy for him to accept the feeling of being a specimen at all, especially when Ling Xia finally realized that he didn’t have a single thread on his body to cover himself up.

It was very clear that, unlike its owner’s spirit, this body hadn’t disappeared; it hadn’t stayed the same. A youthful figure had already begun to appear, the four limbs had become flexible and slender, and the proportions were also very perfect. The only flaw was that this body was too thin and weak because it hadn’t exercised or basked in sunlight for a long time. Furthermore, the skin was also really moist and fair, to the point that it simply was suitable enough to be played on like a piano……

Mentally associating that to how there were young girls fiercely and maliciously calling the cannon fodder character—— a pure-hearted sissy of a saint, Ling Xia felt like he was on pins and needles. He really wished he could immediately jump out and let the sun scorch him so that his skin would become a healthy wheat-like color sooner, and he really wished he could exercise until he had muscles that burst with sex appeal.

Cannon fodder characters had their dignity too, okay?

Ah Li had clearly been guarding Ling Xia every day. Seeing that Ling Xia had woken up, its amber eyes immediately became wide and round, and it hurriedly jumped up onto the vessel’s wall. Excited, its long ears moved quickly in flashes of movement, and it whimpered for a bit with whimpers that sounded like those a kitten would make.

Ling Xia, separated by the liquid, faced towards it and smiled in such a way that even his eyes and eyebrows curved.

Since he had transmigrated back over here again, he should just continue trying hard to change and adapt to his situation then.

Plus, he definitely needed to get better as quickly as possible, find Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu, and tell them that he's alright!

By the time Ling Xia could support himself with the vessel's wall in order to sit up and move around freely, three to four days had already passed.

The masked man had simply, concisely, and roughly explained their current situation. In those years when he had temporarily protected Ling Xia's heart meridian that still had some life left in it, the masked man had departed, carrying him and Ah Li along, in order to avoid the manhunt organized by the people of the ShaoYang Sect.

When Ling Xia heard this, he was both touched and ashamed. He wasn't unaware of how much the masked man in the novel had feared inconveniences. The protagonist had only stayed with him for a little more than a month too, before he just quietly left. Right now, he had unexpectedly brought this burdensome him with him for a full four years……he was especially worried about those two kids right now.

He sized up the scenery outside and inquired, "In that case, Senior, where are we right now?"

Currently, they were located on the side of a cliff. The quality of the vegetation and stones on the mountain outside were very different from that of ChongMing City.

"Holy Maiden Peak." The masked man carelessly said. "Otherwise, where would I go to find people to mend your damaged heart meridian?"

Ling Xia was immediately very alarmed. Holy Maiden Peak? Wasn't that already separated from ShaoYang Sect by a distance of ten thousand Chinese miles? Also, Holy Maiden Peak was the exact reason that Yu Zhi Jue's personality became twisted……

It was important to know that the women that the Yunü Sect of Holy Maiden Peak taught were deceptive and conformist, for the sake of respecting the Holy Maiden. It was said that the sect's founders hated

ungrateful men the most, so the successive generations of Holy Maidens were not allowed to marry. If other disciples wanted to get married, that man needed to pass the current sect's three layered trials.

Holy Maiden Peak had the strongest medical techniques in all of this other world, but if a man came to ask for a cure, he simply wouldn't even reach the summit if he didn't pass all kinds of hurdles and ordeals.

Yu Zhi Jue's mother was the former Holy Maiden, Yu Linglong, who had been sullied by the great devil of the dark art cultivators. This just made many in the Yunü Sect loathe men even more. In Yu Zhi Jue's childhood, when he was growing up in this place, he had been constantly beaten and scolded by a group of extremely freaky women, but the only thing that could be called weird was that he could grow up normally until now.

Although he felt many different variations of resentment towards the Yunü Sect, Ling Xia still became emotional. Because, the goddess-like existence in his heart, the adorable girl Mu Rong Xue, was exactly here!

Yes, Mu Rong Xue was precisely the current Holy Maiden of the Yunü Sect. Mn, later on in the novel, a person who changed the Yunü Sect naturally appeared, and that was just—the protagonist!

So his goddess also became a member of protagonist-kun's harem, even returning to the protagonist to die by the villain's hand when fighting…… Ling Xia was internally crying.

Somewhat failing to sense Ling Xia's mood, the masked man continued to speak. "The very person who mended your heart meridian was the current Holy Maiden, Mu Rong Xue."

H-his goddess saw his naked body?! Ling Xia's face briefly heated up, and his heart wildly thumped. Ashamed, he wished he could crouch in the corner and draw circles on the ground.

The masked man lied down and closed his eyes as he spoke, "Oh, there's still one more thing. Because only mending your heart meridian wouldn't be enough if I wanted to save you, I also added a few things into her

prescription. Make sure you don’t let people find out that your blood has the ability to cure and power things up.”

Ling Xia still wasn’t finished being emotional before he was suddenly stunned. “What?”

The masked man lazily said, “You never woke up, so over the past three years, I just used the methods for refining Human Medicines. See, didn’t you wake up? Haha, kid, don’t make that kind of expression……with your current physique, if you cultivated spiritual power, you’ll be cultivating faster than before by several times. Isn’t that very good?”

Ling Xia was already almost about to cry. Fuck, of course he knew what a deceptive thing like a Human Medicine was!

The great villain once failed an operation when he and the protagonist both staked their lives in a fight where neither side won, resulting in his muscle meridian becoming completely broken. His loyal and beautiful female subordinate spent a lot of effort to catch a Human Medicine who was living in seclusion in a valley to save him and treat his injury. Not only did the blood of a Human Medicine allow people to increase their power, but its curing capabilities were also even better by a notch than the Jade Void Pill, the hardest panacea to refine.

In the novel, how the great villain slowly used his slender finger to gracefully lift up the Human Medicine’s chin and used his pure white and neat teeth to bite down on his neck, completely sucking that poor man’s flesh dry little by little, was very meticulously described!

And those girls who completely destroyed their worldviews, outlooks on life, and morals could only stare at the pictures people drew and loudly shout, “Come suck my blood, great villain!” and “Little Yu’s so cute! The villain’s the best!”

But that group of ignorant girls! Who could understand the sorrow of a cannon fodder character who became a Pepino melon[1]? He definitely didn’t want his flesh to be sucked dry by someone!

Ling Xia practically wanted to cry, but he had no tears to shed. Even his excited mood that was caused by his desire to see a glimpse of his goddess had been annihilated.

This one wanted to cultivate and cultivate! This one wanted to become stronger and stronger!

Whoever wants to suck this one’s blood, be careful, because this one wants your life!

When the masked man went up to ask for a cure, he crashed through the Yunü Sect’s highest ranked Nine Palaces Eighteen Formations, but he wasn’t allowed to enter the main summit of Holy Maiden Peak either. The various kinds of medicinal ingredients that he needed would only be sent to the masked man at a specific time by someone.

In the time that they talked, a beautiful girl who was covered in pure white all over distantly stood outside the door with an expressionless face and said, “Senior, I put the medicinal ingredients at the doorway.”

Ling Xia walked out to take them, politely nodded his head, and smiled. “Many thanks, young lady.”

That girl glanced at him face to face. Her face seemed to redden a little, but she very quickly recovered her expressionless look. “So the son already woke up. In that case, I’ll go back and report to the sect leader, the Holy Maiden, and send Senior and the son off the mountain.”

She spoke very quickly as she sent her well wishes, and her footsteps as she left were clearly not as steady as they were when she came over.

Once Ling Xia saw an inverted image in the fresh water, he realized why that girl blushed. It was because his current appearance was already very different from before. Originally, this shell of a body wasn’t bad, but now the inexperienced and slightly juvenile appearance of this youth had already completely grown up. The outline of his face was rather prominently gentle, his nose was handsome, tall, and straight, his two eyes were black like

drops of lacquer, and his appearance when he smiled was thirty to forty percent similar to this one's appearance.

Just, that skin that let everyone seem feminine and like a sissy……Ling Xia wildly rushed out without the slightest hesitation. He practiced the basic essentials of cultivating one's body that the masked man passed on to him one at a time under the scorching sun, only practicing until he was gasping for breath.

Ah Li looked on as it laid on his stomach on the ground out of boredom, narrowing its eyes as it comfortably basked in the sun.

The work efficiency of Holy Maiden Peak was clearly very high, as they very quickly had two approximately thirty year old female disciples come to send two people off the mountain. Both of the women gazed fixedly, with their bodies wearing white clothes and their faces having the exact same flat expression that didn't even ripple.

The corner of Ling Xia's mouth twitched. From childhood, Yu Zhi Jue was raised until he was grown by these women who were just like robots?

He felt some slight disappointment from not being able to see Mu Rong Xue, but Holy Maiden Peak and ChongMing City were separated by ten thousand Chinese miles after all. He felt some resistance to coming here for one trip and not seeing the goddess in his mind a few times, as he still hadn't expressed his thanks to her face.

But it was comparatively less, as he certainly was more concerned about those two children, especially Yu Zhi Jue. Within four years, what kind of appearance would that child grow up into again? When he sees that Ling Xia was still alive, would he or would he not be very pleasantly surprised? Furthermore, linking back to the deceptive plot later in the novel, it was also necessary for him to rush back as quickly as he could……

At the bottom of Holy Maiden Peak, the masked man handed over a chain to Ling Xia. "This is an eighth ranked space chain that I refined. You won't attract attention when you wear it on yourself. In addition, there are things that I set aside for you inside. Also, I made an appointment with

other people, so Ah Li will be left to you first. I believe that you'll treat it well."

Ling Xia couldn't help but be surprised. Did this mean the masked man wanted to leave him? Ah Li was also expressionless, its amber colored eyes showing a burst of bewilderment.

The masked man looked at the sorrowful, reluctant to part appearance of this one man and this one beast before his eyes and slightly smiled. "We'll have a reunion one day in the future. Cultivate well, you; don't go and have your blood sucked by people, and return this chain to me when the time comes. Ah Li, you follow Ling Xia and obediently listen to what he says; you mustn't utilize your real body willy-nilly either."

Ling Xia heard the preceding sentence and made an embarrassed face, but when he heard the sentence afterwards, he just felt sad. "Senior, to this day, I still don't know who you are……"

"Living in this world, what importance is there in both a name and a surname?" The masked man laughed heartily and said, "You know who I am, so forget it."

Ling Xia seemed somewhat thoughtful, nodding his head. He naturally would remember who this nameless masked man in the novel is forever.

Ah Li definitely didn't agree to a contract with the masked man, but it was still reluctant to part with him now. It only jumped onto of Ling Xia's shoulder after it had rubbed against his face for a short period of time.

The masked man turned around without the slightest hesitation, and in a blink of an eye, his body already appeared in the distance.

"Master!" Ling Xia couldn't help but shout. Although he certainly knew from the start that this masked man didn't accept empty wishes and also never suggested that he had to be respected as a master, in his heart, he actually had already considered him as his own master early on.

The masked man was clearly provoked into stopping for a moment by this title, and after that, he just ran even faster. His white, snow-colored hair flashed under the sunshine, and in practically a flash of movement, he just disappeared.

"……"

Ling Xia held Ah Li as he went down the mountain. In this world, there were very few people who had seen a seventh ranked magic beast Snow Flamma with their own eyes, so occasionally, because Ah Li was cute, there were pedestrians sizing it up with a glance. However, contrary to expectations, their eyes didn't show any peculiar expression.

The space inside the chain that the masked man set aside for Ling Xia was one hundred percent huge. Because a hidden energy stone was added, even if you were an expert at device refinement, if you didn't go through precise detection, even you would be unable to find its clever location.

There were also very many things inside, clearly collected and arranged carefully by the masked man. Not only did it have various kinds of materials pertaining to device refinement, household utensils, and books, but it also had cultivation books pertaining to spiritual power and energy elements, various kinds of spiritual herb seeds that were gathered, and even a large quantity of every different region's energy currency too.

Clearly, the masked man had probably began preparing these the instance he awakened.

Ling Xia felt both emotional and sad. This outwardly restrained and inwardly passionate master……still didn't treat and also regard him himself as a disciple?

To guard against contingencies, Ling Xia specially bought an eye-catching and low-level storage bag and hung it between his waist. In the inside, he put some energy currency.

The road was distant, but fortunately, Ah Li was still around to keep him company. Except for the times that he hurried down the road and the times

that he rested in the evening, he was always diligently cultivating.

Although Human Medicines were abused due to the fact that people treated them like Tang Seng's flesh[2], accordingly, cultivating spiritual power and energy elements would really become easier as well.

Ling Xia simultaneously carried on with studying spiritual power and studying how to lead around the energy elements inside his body. When he thoroughly left the domain of Holy Maiden Peak, he already had a small amount of experience.

He carefully advanced towards the region of the ShaoYang Sect. There were three to four sects of all sizes between Holy Maiden Peak and ChongMing City, which was also equivalent to having a few countries lying in between the two. In addition, there was also a sheet of ocean.

In those years, when Yu Zhi Jue ran away from Holy Maiden Peak, he was only seven or eight years old. He was a very small kid, so how did he walk by so many countries alone, wandering over to the small town that was ten thousand Chinese miles away?

Ling Xia stroked Ah Li's head while lost in thought, wishing that he could be able to see that child immediately.

[1] Eating a Pepino melon would let you live for 47,000 years.
[2] Eating Tang Seng's flesh would grant you immortality.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 3

The area that he is currently in is between QingMengDong, ChuChen Pavilion, as well as other small sects, so the types of people who come around are quite varied. These sects can hardly compare to the Shaoyang sect because the land is rather small and lacks resources, disputes happened quite commonly.

On this day, Ling Xia was eating in an inn, feeding Ah Li some chicken while recalling the artifact refining manual that he just saw.

His current body cultivation and energy element cultivation ability can only be considered in the novice stage, and he is even more ignorant in sword skills, he spent most of his time on refining offense artifacts instead. Even though Ah Li is powerful, but in the end he’s still just a demonic beast and cannot easily be exposed.

There are many types of offense artifacts, but the sword is the most common. Refining a sword has higher requirements compared to other artifacts, and Ling Xia has never tried it. Before he left, the two children were still using wooden spirit swords, he wasn’t sure if they had their own personal sword after these 4 years have passed.

He was designing the shape of the energy sword in his heart when a disturbance came at the doorway. A group of grey-robed ChuChen Pavilion disciples entered and ten people took up three or four tables and hollered for wine and meat. Ling Xia didn’t care, he put Ah Li on the table and slowly started to eat his meal.

After a while, he heard the sound of some demonic beasts, but the ones who entered were a group of green-robed Qingmengdong disciples. The originally small inn was even more crowded. The store waiter hurriedly welcomed them with a big smile. He had spent a lot of time here, and naturally knew the tension between the two sects.

The disciples in front took a look at the inn, and instantly wrinkled their brows, they gave a cold look to the ChuChen Pavilion disciples and entered, looking for an empty seat. Only one table was left, and they couldn't fit with nine people.

The waiter smiled and pointed to Ling Xia's position: "There is only one guest on the table there, customers, how about you share a table with him?"

A green-robed disciple sneered: "Do you not have eyes! When have you seen us Qingmengdong share a table with others?"

Ling Xia hated to see these disputes. He was just about done eating anyway, thus he stood and smiled: "Waiter brother, I have just finished my meal, bill me please, and please give me another two portions of chicken and some dry rations."

The waiter gratefully smiled and hurried to clean up the table.

The matter was settled like so, but a ChuChen Pavilion disciple immediately sneered in a low voice: "Heheh, those who dress in green only know how to bully the weak."

The Qingmengdong disciples immediately stood up, slammed the table and shouted: "Which cowardly bastard, only dares to secretly insult us behind our backs?"

The disciples of ChuChen Pavilion wouldn't stand down and show weakness, they stood up as well to bicker, they suffered a loss at the hands of Qingmengdong in a competition for lingshi(energy stones) and had nowhere to vent.

Lingxia looked at the small inn which had turned into a battlefield, and felt a bit speechless. Sure enough, you can't stop in this kind of universe, stopping would just bring trouble. The waiter who was rushing to prepare his dry rations also got a fright, he stopped and waved: "Excuse me customers."

But right now the two sides were bickering, how could they still notice him?

Suddenly a loud buzzing bell rang, it gave everyone a splitting headache, subconsciously covering their ears, and painfully knelt on the floor.

Ling Xia also felt a bit breathless, and immediately sent his spiritual energy through his body for several rounds, greatly reducing the pressure.

The bell finally stopped, a young girl leaning on the railing laughed: “Heheh, it finally stopped, didn’t you know it’s offensive to disturb someone’s afternoon rest?”

The young girl’s face is very charming, a pair of soul-stirring almond eyes, and tight clothes that reveal a sexy slender clavicle and slender neck. Even though she looked to be about fifteen or sixteen, but her body is a developing one with nice curves, as well as the bells tied to her ankle, Ling Xia was shocked, my god! The villain’s future faithful beauty subordinate, the loyal miss Bi Yun who would take a gunshot for the villain appeared!

So why is a dark arts cultivator appearing in the territory of the orthodox sects?

Bi Yun lazily moved her arms, revealing more of the perfect figure. She did not care about the gaze of the men below, she propped her chin up with her arm and smiled: “If you bother people’s naps again, I won’t hold back!”

The way she said it was cute, a soft voice as if someone was tickling you with a feather, tugging at people’s heartstrings. But Ling Xia knew, if she says it, she’ll do it! The books often described the demonic cultivators as people who treated human lives like grass, orthodox sect cultivators aren’t that great either, only they cover it up in the guise of justice.

Now he should hurry up and leave this place.

Ling Xia immediately urged the dumbfounded waiter: “Waiter brother, can I please get my dry rations, how much is it total?”

The waiter snapped out of it and stumbled: “Seven energy coins.”

When this Female customer entered, he had only stared at her ankles and was dazed for a moment, but the other party smiled and gently said: “I’ll dig your eyes out if you keep staring~~” He couldn’t help but burst into a cold sweat.

Bi Yun was originally scorning the people downstairs, but seeing the Ling Xia that didn’t take notice of her, she suddenly became interested.

To be able to come back to their senses after seeing her beauty, and his looks aren’t bad either, add-on to the fact that her current task was boring, how about a bit of fun?

She saw Ling Xia had already left the inn, and smiled sweetly for a moment, and promptly disappeared from the crowd.

By the time Ling Xia noticed Bi Yun was coming towards him, he couldn’t help but pause, could it be this coincidental? Isn’t she having her beauty sleep in the inn?

While Ling Xia hesitated, Bi Yun knocked onto his shoulder out of nowhere, and fell, with an “Ai yo” she fell smoothly into his arms.

Ling Xia received her subconsciously, and smelled an intoxicating aroma of rouge, and he instantly got lost in thought.

This was his first time receiving such a beauty in his arms, but god damn what is this? Who the hell would believe the “Demon lady” Bi Yun would suddenly fall on the streets?

He stiffly loosened his hold and retreated two steps and smiled: “Miss be careful, did you fall?”

Bi Yun clearly recognized that the man in front of her clearly did not care much for her, and became even more reluctant, with a few wobbled steps she tearfully raised her head, the words from her red tender quivering lips were even more pitiable: “I’ve sprained my leg, what should I do?”

She refuses to believe his heart won’t wane!

What to do? Ignore!

At this time a cart pulled by demonic beasts passed by, Ling Xia quickly waved: “Brother, please stop, there is an injured woman here!”

The unlucky guy lifted the curtain of the car and his eyes instantly widened into circles, hurriedly opened the car door and jumped down: “Miss, where do you live, I’ll take you.”

Bi Yun: “……”

Ling Xia hurriedly left while holding Ah Li.

The one he loves most is his goddess, dark arts girlies are the scariest! Aren’t the minors in this world too horrifying?

But soon, Ling Xia will know what he’s in for after offending a girl, especially a vain woman.

After that he bumped into Bi Yun about three four times, in the inn, the road, the river…… that’s right, when Ling Xia saw the perfect back facing figure bathing in the river, he was so shocked he suddenly learned the body disappearing technique, disappearing as quick as he came.

Bi Yun stiffly held her arm in a sultry pose in the river, so angry that she gnashed her teeth. She’s never seen such an idle man! She loves the type of man who would lose control under her manipulation, then she would leave them in satisfaction, but was this man still a man?

Therefore, for the sake of her damaged ego, Bi Yun decided to forcefully go up to him, she wanted to see, if this man would actually give her a reaction!

At night, Ling Xia found a cave and covered the insides with a thick layer of leaves. Even though there were many beasts in the mountain forest, but because they could feel Ah Li’s aura, none of them dared to go near, and so he slept well.

But deep into the night, once he heard a familiar “Ding dang, ding dang” he was so shocked he quickly sat up, ……Damn! Unsurprisingly, a familiar figure appeared in the darkness!

Ah Li had also quickly woken up, and snarled at Bi Yun, the amber pupils dangerously formed into a line.

He hated this woman, if not for Ling Xia’s constant efforts to comfort him by stroking his fur, he would’ve long turned into his original form and roasted her into dust!

Bi Yun was threatened by Ah Li’s glare, even though she felt a dangerous aura from this cute little animal, she was not scared. She came closer with a smile: “This young master, the nights are long, and I’m very lonely, can’t you accompany me, please?” She dragged the last word really long, trying to tug at his heartstrings. Accompanying her steps, the bells rang a few times.

Ling Xia’s heart was moved for a bit, the word “Sure” almost escaped his lips, but he quickly regained his consciousness. Bi Yun’s specialty are attraction techniques, couldn’t be that he got caught in it too right? Right when he was about to make a sound, he was shocked to find that his body could not move at all, even a noise was difficult to make!

Bi Yun had already started coming closer with a smile, stuck to Ling Xia’s chest and said a few words: “Why are you always so fierce? I don’t like it……”

She was very proud of herself when suddenly she heard a roar, a cold glint flashed by, and she quickly dodged, so frightened that she was covered in cold swear, only now she noticed a new unfamiliar figure of a white demonic beast next to the man!

Ah Li leaned down angrily, eyes becoming a field of red, his canines were exposed, and he aggressively let out a rush of flames. Bi Yun shrieked and dodged, her clothes had already been burned, and her complexion paled.

If not for the high quality defensive artifacts, without a doubt, that intense flame was powerful enough to incinerate her to dust!

Ah Li stared at Bi Yun intensely, as if he were staring at a prey, and when his mouth opened another flame was sent out!

Ling Xia couldn’t help but close his eyes, even though he didn’t like Bi Yun, he didn’t want her to die in the hands of Ah Li. But his body still could not move……

In this moment, a figure blocked in front of Bi Yun, and similarly released an intense flame energy, and he pulled Bi Yun to jump onto a tree with her.

Ling Xia was shocked to find that he could move his body again, he immediately looked towards that big tree and saw a proud and cute hedgehog head.

The other party arrogantly held Bi Yun’s waist and coolly said: “Hey hey hey, brat, you’re pretty good…… but it’s bad to hurt people!”

Damn! It’s my cute and lovely protagonist!

This thorny rose isn’t part of your harem!

Ling Xia teared up.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 4

Ah Li got even angrier after Song Xiao Hu's interruption, and dug his claws into the ground, an even stronger energy fireball slowly formed in his mouth.

Ling Xia hurriedly hugged Ah Li's neck, he rubbed his head and comforted in a low voice: "Ah Li be good, it's alright, he's not an enemy……" Ah Li gradually relaxed after Ling Xia's comforting, but he still stared at the two on the tree, a warning grunt was sent from his throat.

Song Xiao Hu watched Ling Xia's movements in confusion, why does he feel like this good-looking guy's expressions and movements feel so familiar? Just, just like……

Without waiting for him to come up with his answer, Bi Yun promptly grabbed his clothes near the chest, lifted up her face and showed a weeping expression: "Help! This man tried to molest me!"

The burned clothing revealed a big portion of pearly skin and some cleavage, in addition to the smell of rouge from up close, Song Xiao Hu was only 14 years old, his face quickly flushed, he put her down on the tree and defended in front of her: "Is what she said true?"

"……" The protagonist was indeed the gullible and passionate type in the book…… But is it really okay to turn his back on strangers like that?

Ling Xia feared that he had fallen into Bi Yun's plot, thus he straightened up and laughed: "If what she said was true, what will you do?"

Song Xiao Hu was dazed, but quickly assumed an offensive posture: "My master said, men who bully women are trash! And I can't let you go!"

Four years had passed, but the protagonist is still…… so dumb! According to what Song Xiao Hu said, it can be deduced that he has

successfully gone under the wing of the second gentlemanly master, because Feng Shuming would never say such a thing.

Ling Xia looked at Song Xiao Hu carefully, four years of time had really made him grow a lot, He had grown about a head's worth in height, masculine features are now present on his originally nice pinchable cheeks, together with his increasingly arrogant hedgehog head and a pair of exceptionally bright eyes, he could grab attention anywhere. He was really happy inside, couldn't help but feel a rush, with these four years, what will that brat Yu Zhi Jue grow to look like?

He deliberately stood in front of Ah Li and made a defensive movement and said to Song Xiao Hu: "Why don't you give it a try then."

Without finishing his sentence, an overwhelming force emerged. Ling Xia shivered, isn't this damn child a bit too fast, attacking as soon as he said so? He conveniently grabbed a boulder to block in front of his chest, under Song Xiao Hu's attack, the boulder was smashed into pieces, Ling Xia quickly dodged the residual attack, the shockwave spread out amongst the defensive artifacts on his body, but he was still frightened into a cold sweat.

When did this damn child become so scary?

Ah Li roared, and almost pounced over. Ling Xia quickly grabbed Ah Li and appeased him, Song Xiao Hu was really bold, if he really were his enemy, even if he was stronger now, a level eight snow beast in its complete form was still on another level, It was no surprise that the protagonist often got injured, but he could just advance when he got hurt.

Watching Song Xiao Hu leaving Bi Yun's scope of attack, Ling Xia stood straight and smiled: "Stupid Xiao Hu! Can't you figure out the situation before you act?"

Song Xiao Hu heard his own name, and was shocked, he slid backwards and doubtfully spoke after giving him a look: "Who are you? Why do you know my name?"

This body went from thirteen-fourteen to seventeen-eighteen, from adolescence to adulthood, it’s no surprise he couldn’t recognize him. Ling Xia smiled: “It’s me Ling Dage(big brother), Ling xia, do you not remember me anymore?”

As soon as he finished speaking, Song Xiao Hu’s eyes suddenly widened in shock, his mouth hung open and forgot to close. He quickly sized up Ling Xia, and sure enough, even though the appearance had changed significantly, but the faint warm smile on his face was the same as the Ling Dage in his memories……

Ling Xia glanced over to the tree, Bi Yun had already disappeared, this lady slipped away pretty quickly…… When his gaze fell back to Song Xiao Hu again, his expression almost gave him a fright.

The protagonist with the bright aura, the strong future stud male, suddenly puffed his chest, and tears welled up in his eyes with pursed lips, with a face like a child who wanted to cry: “You, didn’t you die? They all said you died……”

Ling Xia’s heart softened, and couldn’t help but approached him and rubbed his prickly hedgehog head, he really had grown, his hand had to be lifted pretty high…… he smiled and said: “I didn’t die.”

He gave Song Xiao Hu a simple explanation, and said that he was saved by an expert, followed him for four years, and only recently woke up.

Song Xiao Hu only just remembered the girl from earlier, but the surroundings were empty, where had that girl gone? he asked quizzically: “Ling Dage, what happened earlier? Why did she say you…… molested her?”

Ling Xia patted his shoulder in amusement: “Don’t be so brash next time! That Bi yun lady from earlier isn’t someone you should offend, you’ve got to be careful when you see her next time. THat being said, why did you suddenly appear here? …… where’s Ah Jue?”

Song Xiao Hu embarrassingly revealed two dimples: “I saw how miserable she looked and believed her, Feng Luo Shijie’s body contracted a strange poison, it requires a very rare demonic beast’s blood to cure, me and Ah Jue, as well as several fellow disciples came here to catch these beasts. Earlier we easily found their traces, but we were separated during the chase, and the beast had also gotten away.”

He paused and hesitated again: “Ling Dage, I feel like Ah Jue changed a lot, but I couldn’t advise him…… How about you try persuading him.”

Ling Xia wept, He came back just for this didn’t he? Even this air-headed Song Xiao Hu noticed, Yu Zhi Jue truly was a concerning child!

The Yu Zhi Jue in the book had defected from the Shaoyang Sect to the demonic cultivation road at the age of seventeen, which means, he still has time!

“Where’s Ah Jue?” Ling Xia hurriedly asked, He wanted to find that damn worrying child immediately, and slap him twice before anything!

Song Xiao Hu and co were living in a small inn, there were also several junior disciples, they were all considered Shaoyang Sect’s most prized young disciples, after all it wasn’t easy to catch this type of demonic beast. Ling Xia felt that his own face had changed significantly these few years, they surely won’t recognize him, besides he was only an irrelevant no-name disciple, so with ease he bravely followed Song Xiao Hu back.

Along the way Ah Li’s animosity towards Song Xiao Hu quickly disappeared, Song Xiao Hu ‘s powerful energy of the same energy attracted him, Song Xiao Hu was also particularly curious about Ah Li. Ling Xia watched this pair of enemy turned friends man and beast, and couldn’t help but laugh.

At the inn, Yu Zhi Jue unsurprisingly had not returned. Yu Zhi Jue’s room was the innermost one on the second floor, Song Xiao Hu beckoned Ling Xia to sit with the air of an adult, and went down to order some food from Xiao Er, Ah Li’s transformation used up a fair bit of energy and also started

to get hungry, he jumped onto Song Xiao Hu's body and followed him down.

While Ling Xia waited alone in the room, his heart suddenly felt a bit nervous, he nervously opened up the windows to let the cool breeze blow in, and only then did he recover slightly.

How should he greet Yu Zhi Jue when he saw him later? Should he say "Ah Jue, do you miss me?" Or should be joke "I'm not dead ha ha, didn't I say I wouldn't die." ?

They both seem inappropriate……

Suddenly the door opened, Ling Xia thought it was Song Xiao Hu returning, and turned back with a smile, but he was faced with a pair of unparalleled phoenix eyes. He was stunned, and his mind was blank for a moment.

Darn! He still hasn't thought of a good opening speech damn it!

But the strange yet familiar face across from him was very calm, even a slight bit of dissonance couldn't be found, but the pupil seemed to shrink.

Ling Xia's lips moved a few times, but he couldn't say anything, only watched Yu Zhi Jue with a smile.

He couldn't call him a child anymore…… Yu Zhi Jue was almost as tall as he is, the head of jet-black hair billowed in the wind, a pair of bright phoenix eyes stared at him, focused to the point where it felt awkward to look at them directly.

Seems like this child had grown very well in these past four years.

After a long time, Ling Xia smiled: "Ah Jue, I'm back."

The air seemed to still, and Yu Zhi Jue slowly walked over, only his every step was taken with caution, almost as if afraid to wake from the dream.

He stiffly held out his hands, and tried to touch Ling Xia’s face, as if he wanted to confirm whether he was real or not.

Ling Xia’s mouth moved softly without shrinking back, his voice slowed, and in a whisper: “I’m back.”

The pair of hands on his face were slender and attractive, but they were colder than ice, so cold that Ling Xia couldn’t help but shivered, the candlelight also flickered at this moment, and crackled, almost at the point of extinction.

“Ah Jue?” Ling Xia felt slightly uneasy, clearly, the water energy in Yu Zhi Jue’s body stirred along with its owner’s emotions, bringing about a bone chilling coldness.

Suddenly, Ling Xia could only feel his body tighten and his sight darkened, and even heard a “crack” sound in his bones from the strong embrace, the air in his lungs were pushed out. He couldn’t resist releasing a small groan from the pain, a bit unsure whether to cry or laugh, it was already annoying before…… isn’t this child a bit too excited?

Yu Zhi Jue roughly put his entire body including both of his arms into his embrace, tight to the point where even breathing was difficult, he couldn’t move at all.

Ling Xia could only feel the rapid heartbeat and the breath on the side of his face.

Isn’t this quite strange, this child was clearly attuned to water but why was his breath so hot……

“Ah Jue?” Ling Xia tried to speak, that being said wasn’t it a bit hot to be stuck like this?

He struggled and moved a bit, watching Yu Zhi Jue’s face up close, exquisite to the point of shock, He could even feel the long thick eyelashes brushing against his face. He felt a sense of brotherly pride, he’ll definitely

turn this dumb child back straight! Let him become an overlord by the protagonist's side!

Even though Yu Zhi Jue's expression was still rather stiff, his body was trembling softly.

Ling Xia's heart suddenly softened immensely, he struggled to move his arms towards Yu Zhi Jue and returned the hug, he smiled and said softly: "Ah Jue, I'm back."

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 5

“Very good, you didn’t lie to me, otherwise……” Yu Zhi Jue finally uttered a sound, but every word seemed to come out between clenched teeth, bringing about an unnoticeable tremor and trembling.

The voice of the boy which was originally crisp and melodious now brought about the coarseness of a teenager going through puberty, but it softened one’s heart.

Otherwise what? You’ll destroy the world like the book?

Ling Xia suddenly said without hesitation: “I would naturally never lie to you.”

He caressed Yu Zhi Jue’s back to comfort him, thinking back to the final declaration of the great villain. This child really was too insecure and stubborn, that’s why it’s easy to go astray……

Besides, hasn’t this hug dragged out for a bit too long?……

Ling Xia loosened his hands and wanted to straighten his body, but the other party was still holding him in a death grip. Upon feeling his movement, Yu Zhi Jue only softened his hold, changed positions and continued hugging.

“……” how did these 4 years make this child so sticky? Hey hey, how would such a sentimental teenager become the villain boss?! Did that damn author make a mistake?

I guess, for him four years passed in a flash, but for these children they were separated for a long time, regrettably they may have even been carrying a sense of guilt…… Ling Xia held Yu Zhi Jue back into his embrace again, and gently sighed.

Song Xiao Hu had already come back with food, Ah Li was sitting on his head, a pair of man and beast pushed open the door and saw the two hugging figures, they were dazed for a moment.

Yu Zhi Jue glanced over with the corner of his eye, and neatly held out his hand to slam the door closed, The plates of food on Song Xiao Hu's hands fell to the floor with a crash, his nose was also hit, he painfully held his nose and knelt on the ground, he angrily huffed: "Damn Ah Jue! If you're not careful I'll go a round with you!……"

Ah Li managed to dodge quick enough, and also roared on the ground angrily, Only with his current small stature, it was no different from a little kitten throwing a tantrum.

"Next time." Yu Zhi Jue said coldly, changed his posture and supported his chin on Ling Xia's shoulder, his eyelashes hung down as if preparing to take a nap in this position.

This person's smell, always seemed to make others feel comfortable……

"……" Ling Xia was slightly weak, and said softly with a smile, "Why don't we sit down, Ah Jue, how have you been passing by these years?"

How had he been passing by? Yu Zhi Jue felt like he was seeing the dim and lifeless afternoon again.

He was confined for a month and finally released, but didn't see that familiar figure, but what he saw was instead that hateful girl. The other party called over to him: "Because of what happened to my shixiong Shang Yan…… Your brother has a few words he wants me to convey to you!"

What do you mean by "I won't die"?

What do you mean by "Get along with Xiao Hu, be good brothers"?

What do you mean by "I'm not in pain at all, I'm not suffering"?

Everything else Cui Yu said with swollen eyes he couldn't hear anymore, he only knew, that person had thrown everything away for himself!

When he rushed to the punishment hall, all he saw were old bloodstains that had turned black on the wood and ropes.

This blood had been bled by that person in his stead……

Just thinking of it, for just a moment, his heart was so anguished that he could hardly breathe.

That person said he wouldn’t die, he would believe it, he will definitely wait for his return!

From that day onward, he only had one goal, that was to become strong!

The bleeding that was caused by others, that person was too soft, he will make them pay him back tens and hundred times more!

By the time he returned, he wouldn’t let anyone else bully him ever again, and he wouldn’t allow him to leave him!

Yu Zhi Jue slowly let go, and stared at Ling Xia with the ferociousness of a wild beast, with a hint of anger in his tone: “I’ve been good these four years, why did you go missing for so long!”

Listening to the familiar tone, Ling Xia was relieved, gave a little smile and held up his hands to help Yu Zhi Jue groom his disheveled hair: “I’m sorry, I’ve also only just awoken”

Song Xiao Hu pushed open the door and entered while rubbing his nose, he scolded with a hint of jealousy: “Damn Ah Jue, Ling Dage hasn’t eaten yet! He he, I’m the one who found Ling Dage first……”

“……” Ling Xia clearly felt that, due to Song Xiao Hu’s airheaded speech, that his family’s meticulous child’s expression was even more gloomy.

That being said is it really worth showing off who saw him first?

Seems like these two children were still rivals after four years…… Ling Xia couldn’t help but laugh.

The meals were quickly sent over again, Song Xiao Hu even ordered a jar of wine. Ling Xia watched him skillfully pour a cup of wine, and was pissed to death, didn't you know underage kids can't drink alcohol?

He quickly stopped him, Song Xiao Hu scratched his hedgehog head in confusion and said: "What's the problem with a bit of drinking? Ling Dage didn't you know, Ah Jue even got drunk twice, and he was punished by master."

Yu Zhi Jue heard Song Xiao Hu expose him but he wasn't ashamed, and only looked to Ling Xia and spoke while pushing away the wine cup: "If you won't let me then I won't drink."

What's more, the two times that he got drunk, it was only so that he could temporarily forget about reality.

He spoke quietly: "Where have you been these past years?"

It's constantly "you you you", if not he would just call him by his name, this damn child had never called him big brother!

Ling Xia skillfully fed the chicken thigh from his bowl to Ah Li, with a smile he said: "I was saved by a senior, it's the one I told you about before, the one that taught me how to refine artifacts. Oh and, this is Ah Li, Ah Li was put under my care by that senior, due to some issues he's not able to care for him now. On that year I suffered an injury to my heart meridian, so that senior spent quite a fair bit of time to help me recover, I came to look for you guys as soon as I woke up."

He deliberately simplified the story, the matter had already passed anyway, the things concerning the holy maiden peak were all glossed over.

Ah Li lifted his head towards Yu Zhi Jue and grimaced, he could clearly feel his body emitting an evil intent toward itself, and the chilly aura emitted by this person was also quite dislikeable.

Yu Zhi Jue coldly gave Ah Li a glance, Ling Xia had never fed him before, why should he feed this beast?

Watching the two similarly disgusted expressions, Ling Xia suddenly felt the urge to laugh. He felt that Ah Li was similar to Yu Zhi Jue occasionally, similar personalities really did clash.

Yu Zhi Jue stared at him and asked: “Then where will you go in the future?…… Do you still want to return to look for that senior? ” his clenched his hand, if Ling Xia didn’t wish to return to Shaoyang Sect then he would leave with him, Shaoyang Sect had never had him in their sights anyway……

Ling Xia couldn’t help but touched Yu Zhi Jue’s head like in the past, and smiled: “I returned naturally to find you guys, I won’t leave.” Even though this child had grown a lot on the surface, but his habits were still the same, he could easily detect the nervousness in Yu Zhi Jue.

Yu Zhi Jue hung his eyes down, his clenched hand had unknowingly relaxed, the joy that had been lost slowly rose up again in his heart.

It was already midnight, Ling Xia sent the half-drunk Song Xiao Hu back to his room, and put the sleeping Ah Li with him as well, to prevent him and Yu Zhi Jue from duking it out. Song Xiao Hu was mumbling something in his mouth, occasionally laughing stupidly. Even though the key point to gathering followers for the protagonist was to be able to drink, Ling Xia still decided, he needs to advise Song Xiao Hu to drink less and eat more, He’s still growing.

While waiting for Ling Xia, Yu Zhi Jue had already removed his outer robe and sat on the side of the bed, wearing a snow-white undergarment, ink coloured long locks were draped over his shoulders. When those phoenix eyes glanced in an angle, even though they were both male, Ling Xia still got distracted by him.

Ling Xia suddenly remembered the words from that ridiculous book. What “Like the most seductive poppy” “elegant and noble” and whatever bunch of descriptions about Yu Zhi Jue’s appearance. It really gets worse as he gets older……

Yu Zhi Jue's chest still held the jade pendant he gave him in the past. the object was slightly large, hanging on his neck really felt quite awkward, but this child really treasured it for so many years…… Ling Xia was slightly moved.

Yu Zhi Jue sensed that Ling Xia's gaze was also quite embarrassed, he took off the ornament and put it next to the pillow: "Aren't you going to come rest?"

Ling Xia took off his outer robe, Yu Zhi Jue's expression clearly showed that he wanted him to sleep inside, did he think he would run? He laughed: "This artifact is not good, next time I will make an even better one for you."

The two lay side by side, and Yu Zhi jue did say a single word, Ling Xia had been tired for half the day and finally fell deeply asleep.

But Yu Zhi Jue kept his eyes open with nary a blink, he felt the smooth and long breaths next to him and turned over, carefully inspected Ling Xia's eyes and lips. This person's expression always brought a faint smile, always kind to everyone, even towards an enemy he seemed to not resent them.

He raised his hand gently and rubbed a finger across his lips, so soft, and warm……

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly felt a hot and unfamiliar sense of longing, He wanted to violently bite onto those lips, to etch the taste of his blood deeply into his heart, and similarly to etch himself into the other's heart.

The moment he saw Ling Xia a sense of unrestrainable sourness roused up in his heart, that taste was stuck in his chest, making him feel extremely uncomfortable, but Ling Xia was still the same as before, treats everyone well, treats everyone the same!

Just like with him and Song Xiao Hu, even with that beast, in his eyes there were no difference!

So would Ling Xia sacrifice himself to save others like he had saved him next time?

Yu Zhi Jue's slightly squinted eyes brought about a sense of bloodthirsty coldness, He didn't want this! Not even if it was for the Song Xiao Hu whom he grew up with!

There was an unknown desire beating in his blood, making his breaths more and more hurried.

A scary thought suddenly roused in his heart, he wanted to confine this person to him, seeing only him for the rest of his life……

He wanted to completely watch him beside him, just like right now, right at his fingertips!

But…… if that were the case, wouldn't he be hated?

Even thinking about the look of hatred in the man's eyes made his chest feel uncomfortable……

Yu Zhi Jue finally calmed down.

He tried to carry Ling Xia's head over to him, sticking close to his chest, and put Ling Xia's arms around his body.

This person really didn't have any sense of alertness, his eyebrows lightly wrinkled, but quickly loosened back into his deep rest.

Yu Zhi Jue hugged Ling Xia's waist contentedly, smelled the familiar scent, and closed his eyes.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 6

Hey, I must be waking up wrong!

Ling Xia was a bit flabbergasted, wasn't Yu Zhi Jue hugging him as if he were a pillow? Although Yu Zhi Jue's young body was a bit thin, but his muscles were firm and hard when you hug them, fortunately he didn't snore.

He gently moved Yu Zhi Jue's arm from his waist to the side, and the person immediately opened his eyes, the eyes under the long eyelashes were exceptionally clear, he seemed to have been awake for a while.

Ling Xia froze for a moment, and smiled: "Ah Jue, morning."

Yu Zhi Jue looked at him for a moment, and sat up unnaturally, he slowly turned around and put on his outer shirt.

They came over to look for that demonic beast, so to avoid grabbing too much attention, they didn't wear the ShaoYang Sect uniform, and instead wore casual clothing.

Ling Xia asked while washing his face: " I heard from Xiao Hu that you guys were here to find a type of demonic beast's blood to use as a cure for Feng Luo's poison?"

"Mm." Yu Zhi Jue nodded, "This demonic beast is quite famous, it's a type of fifth grade electric element beast that's only found here."

This time the disciples from ShaoYang Sect totalled to five people, besides Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu there were Xu Yan, Xu Mingyang, and Liao Ziqing. Ling Xia still slightly remembered Xu Yan, during the competition he was beaten up good by him, but the other party didn't remember.

He was slightly worried that he would recognize him and cause unnecessary trouble, so he thought about taking an Appearance Changing Pill. But Yuzhijue stopped him, after all this type of drug was harmful to the body.

Watching the persistence in Ling Xia, Yu Zhi Jue coldly said: “No need to worry, he won’t look for trouble.”

In terms of strength, he was the genuine senior disciple of ShaoYang Sect, Feng Shuming’s most proud and discredited protégé, Xu Yan was just a simple sword cultivating disciple, naturally he wouldn’t offend him. Yu Zhi Jue still remembered when Xu Yan had humiliated him in the past, if he behaved then that’s fine, but if not……

Listening to how confident Yu Zhi Jue was about the issue, he put down some of his doubts and decided not to change his appearance. He still had a good impression of that young lady Feng Luo, and thinking about it now, he wondered what sorts of artifacts he can refine to help them out.

Their plans were to move at night, so they spent all day resting in the inn.

Ling Xia carefully considered while reading the artifact refining manual, to capture an electric element beast, naturally a wood and wind element artifact was best. He currently had a second tier wood energy stone, and a third tier wind energy stone in his collection, but he also had to think about how to design the artifact.

He used a special quill pen and started writing drawing on the straw paper, calculating the required energy stones, wood, and flame intensity, he designed the schematics for four to five artifacts.

Yu Zhi Jue quietly stood in front of the window and watched Ling Xia, Ling Xia was quite good-looking when he was focused, The normally soft lips were now pursed into a line, his eyes were focused and serious.

Yu Zhi Jue watched him in a trance, a strange and hard to describe heat suddenly arose in his heart, he wished to go over, and hug him from

behind…… this type of impulse made him feel very strange, but inexplicably excited.

Ling Xia had finished designing by midday, and took out the artifact refining furnace as well as the required materials from his storage chain and prepared to start refining.

The capture tool designed by him had taken into account the characteristics of the beast, and specially made it into the shape of a net, he added a special spiritual stone to increase flexibility. Because the materials were more quite assorted, the consumption of spiritual power was also a huge issue, so he took out several extremely previous refining auxiliary stones. Normally he would be reluctant to use this type of lingshi.

The refining furnace soon began to operate, the materials begun to dissolve under the influence of the refining auxiliary stone and Ling Xia's spiritual power, converging little by little. Ling Xia's mental energy cultivation is indeed several times faster than before, but the smelting stage still required a fair bit of energy, sweat was dripping non-stop down his forehead, and his brows wrinkled. His pale skin was looking paler and weaker.

Yu Zhi Jue frowned, he pressed his hand on Ling Xia's back and sent over his own spiritual power.

Ling Xia's eyebrows quickly relaxed, he guided Yu Zhi Jue's spiritual power into the furnace. The masked man had helped him in the same way before, so he was quite skilled at it.

After four hours, the net-like artifact was finished, it was silky and flexible, it was about the size of a fist when bunched up. The problematic part about the artifact was the wind and wood element, most electric element users can do nothing against it.

Ling xia was exceptionally pleased, the blood on his face had not returned: "I'll go with you tonight."

“You better take a rest.” Yu Zhi Jue was dissatisfied, and coldly said, “Actually even without this artifact, I could catch it.”

If I had known that Ling Xia would struggle so much……

Ling Xia laughed, why is this child so stubborn? He nodded, a pair of eyes looked over warmly: “Naturally, I know Ah Jue is the strongest.”

Yu Zhi Jue felt a sudden flush on his face, clearly it was a comforting look full of warmth…… he turned his face stiffly: “Take a good rest first, we’ll talk about it tonight.”

Ling Xia laid down on the bed and closed his eyes to his suggestion, and crossed his arms over his chest, quietly recovering his spiritual power.

Yu Zhi Jue watched him dazedly for a moment, and also rested near the bed.

When night reached, six people separated into two groups and started their search. Xu Yan saw Ling Xia and was stupefied, he quickly figured out Ling Xia’s identity from the way Song Xiao Hu greeted him. After all he had once looked for Guang Xuzi to give Ling Xia a hard time, he could remember him clearer than the others.

But the current Yu Zhi Jue is incomparable to before, He clearly understands his strength. Yu Zhi Jue had once crippled a disciple who had scorned him without hesitation, and Feng Shuming had only lightly reprimanded him, he could see how much he had Yu Zhi Jue in his sights. Besides, he has no bone to pick with Ling Xia, he only detested and felt envious of Yu Zhi Jue.

Ling Xia naturally entered Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu’s team, as well as Ah Li. They were heaps stronger than the other three man team.

Yu Zhi Jue and co had been tracking this demonic beast for several days, and they were very familiar with its habits, the demonic beast had a very good sense of smell and hearing so they had to be careful, that was the reason it slipped away many times.

Song Xiao Hu had nearly caught it once, he led them and jumped around on a tree and spoke: “Ling Dage, I suspect that the cave I met you guys at last night was its lair, let’s go take a look.”

Yu Zhi Jue vigilantly asked: “Last night? Who was Ling Xia with?”

Ling Xia was too slow to catch up with them, so Yu Zhi Jue had been holding on to Ling Xia’s hand and pulling him along, when he heard what Song Xiao Hu said his grip subconsciously tightened.

Ling Xia was pained by his grip and he complained in his heart, but it was a complicated matter after all. Before he could signal to Song Xiao Hu, Song Xiao Hu had already started to speak loudly: “Didn’t I say? Oh, it was pretty funny when I met Ling Dage last yesterday, a bad woman said Ling Dage molested her, I nearly hurt Ling Dage on accident cause of that……”

“Molest?” Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes, “What actually happened?”

Hey hey, is this the kind of tone you should be using on your brother?

Ling Xia rubbed his nose and awkwardly replied: “Actually it wasn’t anything, that lady was just trying to be playful. Besides it was just a misunderstanding, and it led me to meet up with Xiao Hu and I even got to see you again.”

This protagonist is such a blabbermouth! He’s just asking for a beating!

Song Xiao Hu’s memory was really good, and he quickly managed to find that area. Three people stopped on their tracks and held their breath, listening for any movements in the silence while holding onto a branch.

The liao ran beast liked to hunt rabbit beasts, Song Xiao Hu pointed to Ah Li and quietly said: “Ling Dage, Ah Jue, take a look at Ah Li, doesn’t he look like a rabbit from afar?”

Ah Li had a pair of long snow white ears, and due to Ling Xia’s daily feeding as well as lack of exercise it was so fat it looked like a big ball, If you didn’t look closely it really did look quite like a rabbit.

Ling Xia was joyous and gave Ah Li's head a rub: "Mm, that's right, we can use Ah Li to lure liao ran out."

Ah Li quickly understood, and gritted its teeth in displeasure, he was an eighth grade demonic beast, not a little rabbit. Ling Xia rubbed his head to coax him for a while, and Ah Li eventually decided to jump down with grievance, he suppressed his aura and curled up, walking slowly, looking like a snowball under the moonlight.

Ling Xia and the others waited in ambush on top of the tree patiently.

Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu naturally had the patience of a hunter, but Ling Xia was the one shaking his head and nearly fell asleep. At midnight, they finally heard a strange hiss in the air.

Ling Xia's eyes opened with a start, Song Xiao Hu gestured towards him excitedly, without a doubt the target had appeared!

An eagle sized demonic beast flew out from the depths of the forest, and pounced towards Ah Li, it was fast like a meteor. But by the time it reached about a meter away from Ah Li, it noticed that Ah Li's smell was not quite the same as a rabbit, and immediately withdrew itself.

Ah Li gave a fierce roar, and pounced towards the sky with force, but the liao ran was too fast, even though Ah Li managed to jump quite high, he still came down empty.

How would Yu Zhi Jue just let it go, he quickly threw over the energy net from his hands, and he managed to land it on the liao ran's body. Once the net caught onto its target, it quickly bunched up. Liao ran struggled to fly away, but it was difficult to rush out, it struggled to shoot out several bouts of electric, but it was rebound, it turned obedient under Yu Zhi Jue's firm hold.

Song Xiao Hu beamed: "Ling Dage, the artifact you refined is so amazing! Ah Jue also has such a quick reaction time!"

Yu Zhi Jue humphed in disapproval, and threw the liao ran over to Song Xiao Hu.

Ah Li was neglected by Song Xiao Hu, and angrily jumped on top of Song Xiao Hu's hedgehog head and nudged him lightly, and then he returned back into Ling Xia's bosom.

Ling Xia gave him a stroke to appease him, and smiled: "Now that we're done with our task, let's look for the other three and return, after all Feng Luo's poison can't be delayed

The relationship between Song Xiao Hu and Feng Luo had always been very good, he quickly nodded: "Mm."

The three returned along the same path, and after about seven minutes, they suddenly saw a flash of light in front of them, and clearly heard the sounds of clashing swords and offensive artifacts.

Ling Xia frowned, he looked eagerly to Song Xiao Hu and said "Let's take a detour, our primary goal now is to bring the liao ran back."

Song Xiao Hu was a busybody, but he also understood the importance of priorities. What's more they were in someone else's territory, and they were a few thousand miles away from Shaoyang Sect, they had to be even more careful. He nodded, and Yu Zhi Jue did not object either.

Only after they look a few steps, they heard the laughter of a familiar girl as well as Xu Yan's snarl.

Song Xiao Hu suddenly turned back and said: "Ling Dage, it's that lady from last night!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 7

A darkness loomed over Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes and he quickly pulled over Ling Xia and rushed backwards, Song Xiao Hu followed them as well.

When they got there, Xu Yan and co really was around the area. They were surrounded by a group of strange cultivators holding lightning element artifacts, but Bi Yun was away from the encirclement. Judging by their green colored robes, Ling Xia could deduce that they were Qingmengdong Sect disciples.

But why would people from Qingmengdong have anything to do with Xu Yan and the others?

Yu Zhi Jue stopped the Song Xiao Hu who wanted to hop over, and carefully observed the people from behind a tree.

Bi Yun was dressed in a jade colored top that was embellished with several bright pearls, golden bells were tied around her bare ankle, and her hair was loosely secured with a jade clasp, looking exceptionally beautiful. She twirled a few strands of her luscious locks around her fingers happily and tenderly said: “These three shixiong are too insensible, I only asked for the direction, but you treat a girl so fiercely, I don’t like it. Qingmengdong shixiongs, they’re bullying me.”

Ling Xia’s mouth twitched as he watched the scene, this demonic young lady was causing mischief out of boredom again.

The 10 or so Qingmengdong people all looked out of it, seems like they’re all under Bi Yun’s mind control technique’s influence. They lifted the swords in their hands mechanically, and rushed towards Xu Yan and them.

Xu Yan split the two in front with his sword, and gritted his teeth: “You shameless witch! Do you only know how to use these mind control tricks

on people with low cultivation! Watch me bear judgment from the heavens!”

Bi Yun was in a laughing fit from his words: “You’re all pompous, bearing judgment from the heavens? Why don’t you kill them before you kill this poor little girl.”

By the time she finished speaking she was already on the verge of tears, A thought suddenly popped up in Xu Yan’s heart “That’s right, she’s so weak and pitiable, how could she be a witch who knows black magic……” He suddenly noticed that Xu Mingyang, and Liao Ziqing’s movements started to slow down and they started to look a bit out of it, and he was startled, this witch was clearly using black magic again!

He gathered his mental energy and struggled, the energy sword in his hands sent out a long crisp sound, the other two quickly recollected themselves after hearing it. Xu Yan shouted: “You better release them quickly, or I won’t let you off easy!”

If they were near Chongming City, these Qingmengdong disciples would be nothing in Xu Yan’s eyes, but this time they were within other people’s territory, they may not be able to afford the consequences of attacking. With his continuous concession, the low level disciples managed to restrain their actions.

Song Xiao Hu saw the crisis faced by his fellow disciples, and couldn’t resist jumping down from the tree and giving Bi Yun a good smack, only due to the fact that she was a girl, he only used a small bit of force.

Xu Yan and the others immediately rejoiced, due to how weak the Qingmengdong disciples were, their movements suddenly stopped like wooden puppets over to the side.

Bi Yun easily dodged, and by the time she made out the appearance of Song Xiao Hu, she beamed: “So it’s you. This younger brother, big sister still didn’t manage to thank you for saving me yet.”

Her words made Song Xiao Hu blush, and indignantly said: “I nearly fell for your trick! You witch, you nearly made me hurt Ling Dage! And now you’re here to bully my fellow disciples, how evil!”

Bi Yun nonchalantly fixed her hair and looked towards the treetop, a pair of bright eyes were filled with expectation: “Was the Ling Dage you mentioned the guy from yesterday? Is he here today?”

Yu Zhi Jue gently jumped down the tree with Ling Xia and sneered: “Of course he’s here.”

Bi Yun was surprised by the unfamiliar voice, by the time she saw Yu Zhi Jue, her charming actions suddenly came to a halt, and brought about the shyness of a lady.

Sure enough destiny was strong…… Ling Xia tearfully watched the villain sister’s flushed face, and he complained in his heart.

“My name is Bi Yun, and you?” Bi Yun regained her normal expression, a fine pair of eyes stared unabashedly at Yu Zhi Jue, no one else could enter her sights.

Ling Xia suddenly felt like this scene was quite familiar, didn’t the young miss Cui Yu also say those lines?

Yu Zhi Jue didn’t answer her, and only narrowed his eyes at her. Did this woman make fun of Ling Xia yesterday like this? He looked calm, but inside was already at the limits of anger, and energy started to gather at his palms.

Perceiving the cold aura from Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia cried in his heart.

Actually Bi Yun was considered one of the best subordinates in the future villain boss’s troops, only that she was a bit too mischievous, most of the later evils were ordered, she was still quite popular amongst the otaku. Since he was planning on bringing the villain boss back to the good route, this little lady wasn’t considered the worst by nature, only that she was contaminated by bad habits from the diabolic world……

Ling Xia quickly patted the shoulder of Yu Zhi Jue, coaxing him to calm down, and smiled towards Bi Yun: “Miss Bi Yun, this isn’t the territory of dark arts cultivators, you alone are no match for Xiao Hu, so you should hurry back.”

Bi Yun slowly shifted her gaze over, and only now noticed Ling Xia, a disgusted expression emerged on her face.

“……” Ling Xia looked towards the vast sky. He really was no doubt nonexistent in this lady’s eyes next to the great villain, and he could only serve as a background decoration. That being said didn’t this Bi Yun show great interest in him yesterday…… this otaku is a bit hurt.

Bi Yun moved her hair to the back and giggled: “What if I say no?”

This was not the frivolous smile from before, it had become a pure but pitiable smile. If they had not seen her previous expression, one would think that she had come from a good family.

As expected, the power of love at first sight is great, causing people to be blind from imminent danger!

Besides Song Xiao Hu, Yu Zhi Jue was also present. Ah Li aside, even the young Bi Yun could not defeat them.

Before Ling Xia managed to say another sentence, the Xu Yan who had lost to Bi Yun couldn’t resist and unsheathed his sword: “In that case, you better get ready to die, witch!”

He was quite successful in his sword arts cultivation, he jumped over the people from Qingmengdong and straightened his sword and rushed towards Bi Yun in an attack.

Even though Bi Yun mostly excelled at manipulation arts, but she was not weak in other factors, she dodged the attack easily and smiled: “Do you really think you’re qualified, you’re a decade too early to defeat me.”

She swiftly kicked her left foot, aiming right at Xu Yan’s waist, and threw him back a few steps. Her movements were very graceful, the ribbons on her waist billowed along with her movements, making her slender waist look irresistible.

Mm, if it weren’t for Bi Yun’s complicated diabolic status, her character would probably suit that damn brat in his family?

Ling Xia gave the youth beside him a thoughtful look, Yu Zhi Jue was currently staring coldly at Bi Yun, those eyes were clearly similar to that of looking at a rival who wanted to snatch his territory. Ling Xia rubbed his chin, mm, seems like this child has not yet learned to appreciate girls.

Being injured under the hands of a young girl, Xu Yan felt his face flush, he grit his teeth and condensed his energy around the blade of his sword, he flicked his wrist and stabbed his sword straight towards Bi Yun.

Despite his aggressiveness, Bi Yun was not afraid, a golden light flashed in her hand, and a golden thread was wrapped around the sword. She snickered softly: “This sword seems to just be about a third grade water element, let me do you a favor, you can find another better one.” She flicked her hand as she spoke, and the gold line actually twisted the sword into several pieces as it fell to the ground.

Xu Yan stumbled back a few steps, a trace of blood gushed from his mouth, and his face paled.

Song Xiao Hu was furious, he assumed an offensive stature and shouted to Bi Yun: “You really are too despicable!”

Energy swords contained the essence blood of a cultivator, if it was destroyed, it would injure a person’s lifeline, even repairing would only recover about one third of it.

Bi Yun pouted and straightened her countenance and said: “If my technique weren’t good enough, wouldn’t he have just killed me? I only copied what he did, what’s more I didn’t even ask for his life, why would I be considered despicable?”

Song Xiao Hu was dazed by her words, and hesitantly put his hands down.

Yu Zhi Jue sneered and pointed towards the Qingmengdong group controlled by Bi Yun: “Does that mean that if you were not strong, you will be controlled by others? In that case, if you lose to me does that mean you will let me control you?”

Actually he didn’t care even if the green robed people were to die, just that in front of Ling Xia, he could only find a justification to attack her.

Bi Yun’s eyes lit up, and brought a sense of shyness: “Naturally!”

Miss, this talk of control, definitely wouldn’t be as romantic as you thought, this young man definitely wouldn’t show pity towards women…… Ling Xia watched the little miss Bi Yun who almost seemed like she was going for a date, and felt extremely speechless.

He hurriedly tugged at the Yu Zhi Jue who bore a cold aura: “Ah Jue, don’t act rashly, if she manipulates the Qingmengdong crowd to attack us, and we hurt them, it is quite easy to cause a dispute between sects here.”

With his words, Bi Yun shook the bell at once, the group of Qingmengdong men staggered to the ground as if they were drunk. Bi Yun smiled sweetly with the grace of flowers and looked at Yu Zhi Jue: “My duel with you, naturally wouldn’t involve the use of them, but if you lose, you have to do three things for me, and vice versa.”

Yu Zhi Jue moved away Ling Xia’s arm and moved forward several steps, and took out his wooden spirit sword, and sneered: “Sure.”

He slowly lifted his sword, and the cold water energy enveloped it, the temperature around him seemed to drop significantly.

“……”Ling Xia was startled, since both sides had already agreed to fight, this foreign world already considered the fight agreement to be established, he no longer has a reason to stop him. Bi Yun probably wouldn’t hurt Yu

Zhi Jue, he could only hope that Yu Zhi Jue knew to limit himself, and give this little lady a lesson that she will remember in the future.

Of course Bi Yun was not dumb, she shivered inside, and immediately held her golden bell weapon in her hands, and gently shook it. The crisp ring of the bell spread out in the woods, it was truly clear and melodious.

Normally she would only need to give a good shake, and her opponents would relax their minds, but hearing the chime of her bell, Yu Zhi Jue's expression remained calm as always, and there was not a single trace of hesitation in his eyes.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 8

Horrible, truly too horrible……

Tragic, truly too tragic……

Ling Xia turned his head silently, he couldn’t bear to watch any more.

It wasn’t just him, even Song Xiao Hu’s move was left hanging in a daze.

Great Villain! Where has your graceful and magnificent bearing gone? What happened to your immoral style of using people to do your dirty work without needing you to do anything?

It’s seriously ruined…… This is outrageous! That poor girls’ going to be played to death by you……

Ling Xia’s face was covered with tears, and he threw a tantrum in his heart.

That’s right, Yu Zhi Jue had kept his spiritual wood sword, and used body techniques directly!

Yu Zhi Jue was in every factor a genius among geniuses, one by one his attacks were neat and magnificent to watch – In addition, his dextrous moves slipped past the cracks in between the golden thread and aimed straight for the sister’s vitals.

Heart, abdomen, throat…… Although Bi Yun’s performance was erratic, she was actually by nature coquettish, and with a face flushed to the ears her attacks quickly became disorderly, and was ruthlessly turned into a rag doll!

That’s right, a rag doll, there was no way Ling Xia wouldn’t be reminded of the word.

He hadn’t even applauded Yu Zhi Jue’s skill yet, and he already felt unbearable.

If this was the protagonist fighting against a girl, he would most likely be defeated, because he couldn’t do it. This damn child Yu Zhi Jue had not a strand of pity, he would beat and kick, and even heavy-handedly landed a few blows on the sister’s delicate nose and sharp chin!

Not even a bit of appreciation to beauty? It’s crude to the point that it’s scary alright?

She was a fine girl, but she was quickly turned into a pomegranate……

The crucial part was that nobody knew the Return My Beauty punch!

Yu Zhi Jue quickly sent out a beautiful circle kick steadily to the ground without even looking back.

Bi Yun was sent flying a few feet from his kick, and firmly landed on her back. She touched her bruised and swollen cheeks in disbelief, it was depressing and shameful, a cry of “wah” emerged from her mouth. Only that her mouth was beaten till they cracked, and it started to hurt as soon as she cried.

“……” Blessed mother Ling was melancholy, he didn’t know how to face such an overbearing human tragedy.

Seeing the attitude of Yu Zhi Jue towards his future girlie, of course his distorted views of Male and Female relations must be corrected…… Both men and women were clearly the same to him! That’s a girl!

Alright, the fact that the villain used a girl as a meat shield in the book was even worse…….

He can now fully affirm that Bi Yun will no longer show the love crazed expression to Yu Zhi Jue!

Sisters are easily attracted by the graceful and elegant villain boss, they wouldn’t be affected by a simple and crude little devil!

if this scene could be recorded and distributed, Yu Zhi Jue would stay single his whole life, all the sisters in the world would condemn this ruthless man! Not even if he looks like an angel!

Song Xiao Hu finally regained his sense, and shouted: “Ah Jue, you’ve gone overboard! How could you hit a girl!”

Yu Zhi Jue slowly pulled out a silk handkerchief and chucked it to the ground after wiping his hands, he headed straight towards Ling Xia and replied coldly: “Let’s go – Song Xiao Hu, do you want to stay back and see to her injuries?”

Song Xiao Hu flushed at his words, and left first in a huff. Earlier Bi Yun had destroyed Xu Yan’s sword, although he wasn’t close with Xu Yan, but they both came from the same sect, naturally he wouldn’t stand with the enemy.

Xu Yan was supported up by Xu Mingyang and fed a medicinal pill, he glared at Bi Yun and howled: “Yu Shixiong, if we leave this diabolic witch alive, we will inevitably encounter countless troubles!”

Yu Zhi Jue gave him an icy look and said: “If you want to kill her, do it yourself.”

Xu Yan looked at the bell and golden thread by Bi Yun’s side, and in the end he had no courage to go over, thus he retreated discontentedly.

Ling Xia hesitantly took a look at Bi Yun, and turned to catch up with Yu Zhi Jue. The people of this world had ridiculously strong bodies anyway, the fact that Yu Zhi Jue personally acted was even more peculiar, Since it was just a face slapping, he didn’t give Bi Yun any grievous injuries, it almost seemed like his goal was to shame her…… With Bi Yun’s injuries, she probably won’t appear for three or four days?

It was actually good that that missy got to learn this lesson, at least she knows that there are strong people out there, she might stop casually playing with the weak, in case suffering another loss.

Bi Yun sat up abruptly, glared at Yu Zhi Jue’s back with a disheveled look and screamed loudly: ” The one surnamed Yu, I hate you!”

Her voice was sharp and quiet, with a slight quiver, the previous flirtatious cuteness was all but gone.

Yu Zhi Jue didn’t even look back, even though he looked tranquil, his steps were quicker than usual. If he had really beaten that hateful woman to death, he suspects that Ling Xia that uncontentious man would probably argue with him for some time.

He suddenly recalled something from Xu Yan’s words, Ling Xia was surprised.

Bi Yun may have appeared alone, but to perform tasks for the demonic sect with her current strength and experience, it didn’t seem enough, could there be someone else from the demonic sect?

“What’s the matter?” Yu Zhi Jue knitted his brows, it couldn’t be that Ling Xia wanted to go console that woman right?

Ling Xia shook his head: “It’s nothing, the good and bad people are all mixed around in this area, we should probably leave quickly.”

A few hundred miles from here was the seaside, after passing through the vast ocean and Yunxiao City they could reach Chongming City, it should be about a month long trip.

Currently a hundred miles for them was still a day trip, due to Xu Yan’s injury, Yu Zhi Jue decided that he, Ling Xia, and Song Xiao Hu would first return with the Liao Ran, the other three can take their time.

After rushing all night, they managed to reach the sea side by dusk the next day. The ship was quite huge, divided into three floors, they were separated into rooms and shops. Of course Yu Zhi Jue had bought the ticket for the personal room on the topmost floor, a small room that was less than 10 square meters actually cost them a thousand grade one energy coins.

Yu Zhi Jue bought two tickets, which was equivalent to spending 20,000 Renminbi, Ling Xia felt his heart ache as he heard the price. Money shouldn’t be spend in such a way even if you were rich!

Naturally, Yu Zhi Jue and Ling Xia shared a room, and Song Xiao Hu shared the other with Ah Li.

Song Xiao Hu was dissatisfied: “Why? It wasn’t easy meeting Ling Dage, I want to chat with him too.”

Yu Zhi Jue said expressionlessly: “Do you think your sleeping posture is great?”

“……”Song Xiao Hu pitiably drew circles on the ground. His sleeping posture aside, he pulled out several tufts off hair from Ah Li as if it were a roast chicken, and Ah Li angrily clawed his face.

Night had already dawned when they finished their dinner, after rushing for a day everyone started to feel fatigued, and prepared to rest after some simple washing up.

The weather was starting to get a bit hot, and the ship felt like a steamer. Ling Xia opened the windows to let the cool ocean breeze blow in. He gave his waist a pleasant stretch and took off his outer shirt naturally, then threw his undergarment over to the chair at the side as well. Since there was only him and that damned kid Yu Zhi Jue, they were both men so it didn’t matter.

But as soon as he turned around, he saw Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze on his body, that gaze was quite strange, almost as if in a trance……

Ling Xia subconsciously covered his chest, and felt vexed- Even cold boiled chicken has dignity alright?

Although he deliberately tried to cultivate under the blazing sun, the marks of being soaked in ichor for four years wasn’t easy to eliminate, currently his skin was white almost to the point of being translucent, adding to the fact that he hadn’t managed to develop muscles yet, it really – looks quite sissy……

A certain man named Ling had already started to feel inferior, but he pretended to act natural and let go of his hands, he mightily leaned against the bed and said: “Ah Jue, we should sleep.”

Only now did Yu Zhi Jue regain his senses and gave an “oh”,he quietly took off his outer robe, and laid down with his back facing Ling Xia, just that his back looked stiff, and it seemed like he was deliberately keeping a distance between them. If Ling Xia observed him more closely, he would surely notice that Yu Zhi Jue’s ears were flushed with red.

Ling Xia didn’t mind, even though they slept side by side for a night, could it be this child is not used to sleeping with people? He quickly closed his eyes and fell into a dream.

In the middle of the night, he felt his chest sink, as if he couldn’t breathe, he had to open his eyes in pain.

By the time his sight focused, he was dumbfounded, because Yu Zhi Jue was stuck to his chest.

Yu Zhi Jue’s undergarment had also been taken off some time during the night, the naked bodies of the two were tightly stuck together. Seems like he’s been turned into a pillow again……

And Yu Zhi Jue’s arms were tightly hugged around his waist, moist even breaths felt slightly ticklish on his chest. Fortunately Yu Zhi Jue’s body was cool and he did not sweat, so other than the stuffy feeling on his chest, he wasn’t uncomfortable.

Just that Yu Zhi Jue’s body was no longer the same as the childlike one from four years ago, his muscles had an unobvious symmetry but they were beautiful, he had quite the body. Ling Xia felt that the current position of the two of them were a bit too……homoerotic.

He felt nervous but didn’t want to wake up Yu Zhi Jue, he tried to pry his hand away from his waist. Yu Zhi Jue wrinkled his brows, and grabbed on even tighter, as if he were a child hugging his favorite toy to sleep.

"……"As Ling Xia thought of that, he felt joyed. he lowered his head and carefully observed Yu Zhi Jue's sleeping face, long eyelashes quivered, and partially red lips were slightly parted, long straight hair scattered over his shoulders and face, he truly looked like a sleeping angel.

He slowly relaxed, and motionlessly pretended to be the great villain's bolster, and stared out the window to see the star filled night sky absentmindedly.

As he was about to fall asleep again, Yu Zhi Jue's breathing suddenly quickened, and the cool body started to feel hot.

Ling Xia sobered up with a start, what's wrong with this kid?

He wanted to nudge Yu Zhi Jue up, but he was dumbfounded as soon as his hand came in contact with the firm and delicate skin–He very clearly felt a hard object stabbing against his belly.. They were both men, if you said you didn't know what that was then drag him out and slap him a hundred times!

Yu Zhi Jue started to move……

Actually, his movements were quite awkward, every movement brought about feeling of a young man's youth.

Ling Xia's whole body stiffened, damn me! What the hell is this scene of being treated like a blow up doll? It's too mysterious!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 9

One, two, three, Ling Xia had already turned into wood, passively feeling the clumsy movements of Yu Zhi Jue.

What should I do in this situation?

This damn brat Yu Zhi Jue was sensitive and prideful. If he woke him up, it would probably be unbearably embarrassing for him right? Besides this current situation was quite awkward, and Yu Zhi Jue had never received any sort of sex education……

Countless thoughts came into Ling Xia's mind, but he still wasn't sure how to handle the situation.

Yu Zhi Jue's lower part was rubbing here and there, and his forehead was laced with sweat, he could tell that he wasn't feeling very comfortable. In the end he kicked off his pants down to his knees, tightly held Ling Xia's waist, and clumsily rubbed between his legs that were tight due to his stiffness, again and again, he moved with quite some force.

Following his movements, his knitted eyebrows slowly softened, the jade-like skin was dyed with a soft shade of red, the sound of rushed breathing came from his mouth, it was clear that he was starting to feel pleasure.

The hot humid breath brushed against Ling Xia's chest, and the skin between his legs that were heating up from the friction.

Fortunately there was still a layer of clothing……

Ling Xia's mind wandered off, and his face was also starting to heat up. He didn't even dare to move his hands now, he was afraid that if he accidentally woke Yu Zhi Jue up, he wouldn't be able to deal with such an embarrassing situation.

Fuck! What do I do? Just wait for Yu Zhi Jue's that…… to go off?

Even when he couldn't stand it anymore, Yu Zhi Jue still persisted his movements without any notion of stopping, and as he got more into it, his grip on his waist tightened, both of his legs were partially angled, and his speed seemed to increase.

Ling Xia raised his waist in fright, and tears filled his face, are all the men in this world so blessed? The protagonist in the book was huge so his stamina naturally needn't be mentioned, and sure enough his rival could compare with him even in this aspect, Yu Zhi Jue was still just a teen but this aspect was already terrifying, how could a great Chinese shitizen such as I have any more pride to continue on living.

Yu Zhi Jue's mouth lightly moved a few times, but he wasn't sure what he was saying.

Ling Xia just saw Yu Zhi Jue's lips moving and he could feel them rubbing against his chest, as the soft, warm lips touched his chest, a strange numbness filled his body, and he felt a sense of danger—Alright, I've already been a virgin for 23 years, he has never had any romantic experiences before.

So young man you better hurry up and finish!

The skin of the two which is against each other is wet with sweat, Ling Xia could tolerate it no more. Occasionally Yu Zhi Jue's movements would touch against the second brother that he had not touched for a long time, under the warmth touch, a certain disobedient part slowly had the notion of peeking its head…… Damnit! If this continues on it's gonna be bad!

As Yu Zhi Jue slowly got more into the movements, his hands unconsciously started to spread apart Ling Xia's legs, it scared the piss out of Ling Xia!

Fuck! This is too dangerous!

He pressed his legs together hard, and his right hand groped towards the great villain’s precious engorgement, after a while his hand started to move proficiently.

—In any case, it doesn’t seem like Yu Zhi Jue’s about to wake up soon, to prevent an even more awkward situation from arising, he could only secretly give a helping hand.

The moment he held on, Yu Zhi Jue’s breath clearly became more disorderly, the flexible waist that belonged to a young man quickly moved along with his hand, the jerky movement brought a hint of eroticism.

That object pulsed in his grasp, the shape and size……A certain man named Ling teared up silently, Yu Zhi Jue is still a teenager, is this really alright? He made an effort to tell himself, it’s alright, I’m just helping my little brother beat one off……

He recalled his past experiences, moving his hands skillfully, his hand gradually soaked with fluids, giving off an indistinct wet sound.

Yu Zhi Jue finally showed signs of his oncoming release, the sound of his breathing also started to speed up, a shiver suddenly ran down his spine, and his slender legs stretched abruptly.

“……”Ling Xia twitched his eyes and shrunk his hand back, the wet liquid on his hands made him feel rather uncomfortable. He guiltily hurried to wipe his hands on the bed sheets, and struggled to grab Yu Zhi Jue’s pants and pull them up.

Although he didn’t feel any disgust from servicing Yu Zhi Jue, the psychological impact on him was still quite great……

Just that as soon as his pants were pulled halfway up, Yu Zhi Jue’s hands suddenly moved, he’s awake!

Ling Xia’s face was a sheet of white, and he was petrified, he watched Yu Zhi Jue’s confused eyes at a loss.

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes quickly came into focus, a pair of beautiful phoenix eyes was still stained with lust.

The two of them were still stuck together, and there was a faint undispelled fishy smell, but the most crucial point was, his hands were currently wrapped around Yu Zhi Jue’s hip—that poor pair of pants hadn’t been pulled up yet.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly noticed the illicit actions of the two, he didn’t know how to react and felt a bit overwhelmed. His pupils shrank, staring blankly at the Ling Xia who was hugging him tightly, his face flushed red. But as soon as he felt the hands clawing at his bottom, he froze for a moment, and staggered over to the headboard.

“What have you done!?” Yu Zhi Jue’s ears were flushed red, and rushed to pull up his pants, as soon as he noticed the breeze on his exposed bottom region, the tone of his words seemed to be said through gritted teeth.

“……”Ling Xia really wanted to cry, fuck! This child wouldn’t mistake him for a pedophile pervert uncle would he?

“That……” Ling Xia tried to put up a natural front and sat up, he put on his outer robe and said,” Ah Jue, sit down and listen to me.”

Yu Zhi Jue sat down with a flushed face, but it was obvious he was feeling quite nervous, his back was stretched straight, and his eyes was hesitant to meet Ling Xia’s.

In actuality, he had already slowly recalled the feelings in the dream—It was a sensation he had never felt before, so joyful that it was hard to explain…… the person in front, just now…… Yu Zhi Jue felt his whole body start to heat up, and to cover it up he lowered his head, and roughly spoke: “Speak.”

Ling Xia mustered up his courage, and after a moment he spoke in an authoritative tone to hide his anxiety: “Boys will slowly grow bigger, When you reach the age of 18 you will [Wah—] or have [Wah—] dreams, this is normal…… I only tidied up your clothes earlier…… Ah, in the future Ah

Jue you can take care of that when it’s convenient, but don’t doo it too often, it’s bad for your body.”

He silently shed tears in his heart, during those years that Female physiology teacher had also only quickly mentioned it once alright?

He spoke mechanically, and it seemed like Yu Zhi Jue finally understood, with a huff he laid down facing away from him. Even though there was still a hint of embarrassment on his face, but at least the vexation was gone.

Ling Xia wiped the cold sweat on his forehead and laid down, but he still felt bitter inside, he felt more vexed than Dou E……

He remembered it all……

Yu Zhi Jue held his breath, his heart beat violently and chaotically, the sounds were so loud that it surprised himself.

In the chaotic and beautiful dream, Ling Xia was underneath him, the smiling face was clear. The two were very close, so close that he could smell the fresh scent of herbs on his body as soon as he lowered his head, he could see the two good looking red dots on top the chest of the weak pallid skin clearly.

A strange heat roused up in his abdomen, firmly pressing against the taut skin of the other party, overwhelmingly moving, but he couldn’t get rid of the heat no matter what.

Until a familiar hand with thin fingers dexterously held on, moving with just the right speed and strength, allowing him to slowly heighten to a strange but wonderful feeling……

That kind of feeling, made him hot as soon as he thought about it……

That wasn’t a dream, it was real!

Yu Zhi Jue clutched his fists tightly, the afterglow passed, and his eyes gradually sunk down.

Earlier Ling Xia had also mentioned that, when a man orgasms, they would dream about girls or something, and it was normal…… Does that mean that Ling Xia also occasionally dreams about a bunch of women, and doing those kinds of things to them? If it were Song Xiao Hu or someone else, would Ling Xia help them this way as well?

As he thought of this, a bout of heat erupted in his heart, a heat different from the earlier one, this heat made him want to turn over and embrace the man next to him, allowing him to see only himself!

He won't dream of anyone else, no matter in reality or in his dreams, those kinds of things, he will only do it to one person!

Looking out the window, the sky had already started to brighten.

Although this matter was quite awkward, in the end, Yu Zhi Jue still didn't understand anything about the right hand. Besides, what happened earlier was a natural teenage matter, children in this stage are the most sensitive and curious, if you don't lead them carefully, it's easy to walk down the wrong path……

Ling Xia narrowed his eyes, although the ship was moving steadily, it still swayed slightly, he quickly fell half asleep.

At this moment, a sharp cry suddenly came from outside, that voice was particularly loud, spreading across the seas, it really reverberated through the horizons!

Everyone on the ship was startled awake. Ling Xia turned his body, and looked out the window, he was stunned for a moment—there's a strange thing flying towards us!

Even though they were quite far away, but you could see that the speed was shocking! the wings that were spread out resembled a bat, but their body looked like birds. As it got closer, Ling Xia finally noticed a person standing on top of it.

From the shape one could see that it was a man, his hands were crossed and sluggish, a long red robe was draped over his body, the hair that was blowing messily in the wind was the color of maroon.

Ling Xia suddenly thought of a person, and his face paled, he fearfully took a few steps back—Blood Demon Chu Yin!

Blood Demon Chu Yin is one of the right-hand men of Yu Tianxing, since his title was blood demon, that is to say, his cultivation is related to blood!

Perhaps the research material of that damned author was Wei Yixiao from “The Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber”……

The favorite of the blood demons were the pure yang orthodox cultivators, and in the book his nose was so sensitive he could tell apart the blood type of people by smelling, even better than a police dog!

the most most important part was, even though blood demons are arrogant and evil, he was very loyal! This kind of loyalty towards Yu Tianxing and persisted to Yu Zhi Jue, and in the end he perished under the protagonist’s little brother gang for Yu Zhi Jue.

Fucking hell, why are the great villain’s wonderful future harem members showing up one by one?!

That’s right, the doujinshi from that stud novel included many other ships beside the protagonist x villain main pairing, and one of them happened to be the arrogant demon lord x loyal dog subordinate bottom, fucking hell!

Ling Xia touched the high grade artifact on his body that hid his aura, he isn’t able to refine this type of artifact yet, it was the masked man who made it. But he was still afraid, so much so that the thought of it made his neck throb with pain.

Who wouldn’t be! He was a human panacea right now, he was more likely to become the blood demon’s target, he had died once, but to be sucked dry and turned into a human jerky, that was too terrifying! With the

current strength of Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu, they probably can’t defeat him!

Can he just hope that that devil was just passing by? Please?

This was the first time Yu Zhi Jue had seen such a panicked expression on Ling Xia’s face, he quickly went over, and deeply said: “What’s wrong, what kind of person is that man?”

Ling Xia unhesitatingly pushed him down to the ground, pressing himself against his body and whispered: “I heard from that senior, there was a man from the demonic sect that liked to wear red clothes and rides on top of a grade seven demonic bald eagle—Blood Demon Chu Yin! His demonic training required him to drink the blood of three people daily.”

As he said that he gave a forced smile, and whispered closely in Yu Zhi Jue’s ear: “I’m a human panacea now.”

Notes:
—Dou E from the story “Dou E Yuan” is an innocent girl who was framed for murder and executed, she swears that if her blood spills onto her clothes but not the ground, heavy snow will befall on the sixth lunar month and cover her dead body, and the city of Chuzhou will experience a drought for three years, and the three events did end up happening.
—Yu Tianxing is Yu Zhi Jue’s father.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 10

Due to how closely they were sticking to each other, the hot breath puffed against Yu Zhi Jue's ear, his sensitive and white ears quickly reddened unnaturally, and a sense of chaos appeared on his gaze.

But he quickly regained his focus when he heard what Ling Xia had said, naturally he knew what a human panacea is, he grabbed Ling Xia's collar and asked: "What is going on?"

"The senior did it to save me, I'll tell you later." Ling Xia thought about something, and he panicked, if the blood demon finds out Yu Zhi Jue's identity then…… He won't let this damn child follow these terrorists to end the world no matter what!

He hurriedly gripped Yu Zhi Jue's hands and said: "Don't get too close to him– Don't leave my side later."

Yu Zhi Jue dazedly turned his head to the side, and coldly humphed: "Understood, naturally I will protect you, you don't have to be so scared do you?"

"……"

While talking, that bald eagle which was the size of a pterosaur had beautifully dived and landed on the bow of the ship, the large impact caused the ship to shake violently. Yu Zhi Jue reacted quickly and hooked his leg on the window frame to stabilize his body, and held onto Ling Xia's waist with his other hand, only then the two managed to avoid hitting the wall.

There are nearly a hundred passengers, so there was naturally a lot of cultivators on board. Ever since Yu Tianxing's death, the blood demon had gone into seclusion, so many mid to low tier orthodox sect disciples did not know of his strength. But judging from the dangerous atmosphere of Chu Yin as well as the demonic beast he rode on, everyone knew that he wasn't someone who was easy to deal with.

One of the disciples on the boat timidly spoke up: “This disciple Zhuo Qing hails from the Xu Yang sect, excuse me senior……”

Before he managed to finish speaking, he was shocked to find that his body was flying forward involuntarily! By the time he recovered his senses, a cold finger lightly fondled his neck, like the palm of a lover. His body subsequently numbed, there was not an ounce of strength in him to retaliate.

Chu Yin lightly raised his upslanting eyes, and indifferently spoke: “Mm, a healthy yang body, not bad.”

His voice was extremely peculiar, it sounded coarse like a male duck, but it also sounded natural.

Without waiting for everyone to regain their senses, Chu Yin had already started to lower his head towards the artery on his neck and bit down without hesitation, sucking the blood dry quickly, he narrowed his eyes drunkenly as if he were addicted.

Zhuo Qing’s eyes which were wide with fear slowly protruded, his limbs twitched, and at this moment the veins on his face were revealed and his face was white like a sheet of paper.

Chun Yin quickly had his fill, and his abdomen bulged slightly, A radiant red faintly emerged on his unnaturally pale skin.

The other passengers and ship crew did not have time to respond, and were all watching in shock, a strange chill rose up from their hearts, even Zhuo Qing’s fellow disciples had no courage to step forward.

“What are you doing? Let him go!” Ling Xia suddenly heard a familiar voice ring out from nearby. He held his forehead weakly, how did he forget about Song Xiao Hu that daredevil child?

This is currently not an enemy the protagonist can take on! Even on ground they were completely over-classed!

Chu Yin’s swept his eyes across the crowd, and quickly focused on the Song Xiao Hu which was jumping down from the third floor. He laughed roughly, and licked the blood laced edge of his mouth, conveniently throwing the corpse in his hands into the ocean, and sighed regretfully: ” Mm, what a shame, if I had seen you earlier, I could’ve sampled better tasting blood.”

Song Xiao Hu glared at him, there was not a single hint of fear on his face. Ah Li knows that the enemy is strong, and jumped down from his body, and lightly stooped on the ground, the amber coloured pupils narrowed into a line, giving the bald eagle a death glare.

The bald eagle was one grade below Ah Li, but on the current terrain it was not afraid, and even arrogantly gave Ah Li a disdainful look with its soybean eyes, pissing Ah Li off to the point where he gritted his teeth and couldn’t wait to transform into his original form to bite him to death! All the ones who can fly are so bad!

Ling Xia took a deep breath and looked at Yu Zhi Jue: “Seems like the newcomer isn’t nice.”

A killing intent sprouted up in Yu Zhi Jue’s heart, it’s a demonic cultivator again, could he be called here by that hateful woman? As expected, he should’ve ended her right then!

The two of them turned over and jumped down as well, Ling Xia shouted: “Xiao Hu!”

Yu Zhi Jue quickly held the spiritual wood sword in his hand, and wrapped it with water element, he spared some effort to set up a barrier around the area, and encased Ling Xia inside.

Chu Yin saw the three man one beast team which had grouped together, other than the oldest one who looked rather weak, the other two youngsters are remarkable, and there was also that snow flamme……

His slanted eyes were so pleased they were practically glowing red, he looked at Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu one by one, and gave an ear-

piercing laugh: “I’ve finally found you!”

The colour of Ling Xia’s changed slightly. Every weak to strong novel always had a few crazies and perverts. In this book, Chu Yin was the one who took the part of that embarrassing role.

Battle addict, vampire, suspicious shotacon…… as well as that loyal dog behaviour towards the demon lord, all the girls held their face: “Awww, gap moe!”

He really wanted to spit: “A big fuck from me!”

To the protagonist and villain-kun who are being stared at by a pervert, this honorable one is going to be destroyed……

Imagine the human panacea him, as well as all the supporting background characters in the area, completely sucked dry by blood demon-kun…… Heheh.

Song Xiao Hu couldn’t restrain himself under the sticky snakelike stare from Chu Yin, and shouted: “Who the hell are you? Are you from the demonic sect? The orthodox sect won’t have such evil practices as yours!”

Blood demon-kun’s interest was completely caught by Song Xiao Hu’s passionate performance, he used his coarse duck-like voice and lengthened his intonation as he spoke: “That’s right~ So what are you going to do? Mm, good child, what is your name?”

“Song Xiao Hu!” Song Xiao Hu got goose bumps from his creepy speech, and angrily rebuted, “And who the hell are you?”

Chu Yin smilingly played with his long maroon locks: “Me? I’m Chu Yin, mmhmm, it seems your so called orthodox sirs have given me a nickname called blood demon, I think it sounds quite good.”

As he spoke, immediately some people remembered the legend of the blood demon, they were so frightened that they all pulled out their weapons.

The blood demon was a killing addict, compared to the previous demon lord Yu i he was even more cruel. he has great patience, once he had set his eyes on a prey, he would chase them for years!

Chu Yin didn't care about the frightened looks of the masses, a pair of upslanting eyes pleasurably watched Song Xiao Hu's reaction.

Needless to say Song Xiao Hu was not afraid, he just gathered energy on his palms and replied: "I don't care what kind of demon you are, since we've met, don't even think about hurting anyone anymore!"

Ling Xia's eyes watered up. This protagonist is so straightforward sometimes he puts tears in people's eyes, my god, he really wanted to cry now. protagonist-kun, you are durable, but my cannon fodder life is desperate!

Chu Yin thought of something, and laughed: "So who's the one who taught that dummy Bi Yun a lesson? Was it you?"

Yu Zhi Jue froze, so he really was called over by that woman! He stepped forward respectfully, and glared at Chu Yin: "It was I."

Chu Yin's eyes brightened up, a pair of eyes awrily fixed its sights on Yu Zhi Jue's body, he inspected him back and forth, completely from the top of his head to the bottom of his foot.

Yu Zhi Jue's face remained the same, but he was outraged in his heart, he couldn't resist plucking out those two upslanting eyes of Chu Yin!

"What are you waiting for?" Yu Zhi Jue slowly lifted up the spiritual wood sword, "Are you here to take revenge for that crazy woman?"

Chu Yin cackled: "That damn dumbass with weak techniques is better off dead–Of course I'm not here for that. Since I'm bored anyway, and indeed I did not waste effort in coming here."

He looked towards Yu Zhi Jue's neck as he spoke, and took another look at Song Xiao Hu, he gently stroked his blood stained lips with his fingers.

Ling Xia’s mouth twitched, this evil crazy perverted character is really not good to look at!

Song Xiao Hu’s scalp numbed under Chu Yin’s weird gaze, As the fire element converged in his hands, he sent it out forcefully, Chu Yin waved his sleeves, and the fireball was deflected over to the top of the ship, the hull suddenly shook, and the ebony walls were burned.

Chu Yin gleefully cheered: “Not bad! This is going to get even more exciting in a few years!”

Ah Li could hold back no longer, and changed his form with a howl, sharp claws rushed towards the bald eagle and attacked. The bald eagle rushed to the sky, and beat its wings, condensed wind blades shot towards Ah Li, the hull shook even more violently.

“……” Barely balancing as he steadied himself on the ship cabin, Ling Xia hurriedly said. “Ah Jue, hurry and go help Xiao Hu!”

If the ship is destroyed, they were in the middle of a vast ocean, and the opponent’s demonic beast could simply fly away…… So he had to find a way to help Ah Li. If he hurt that bald eagle, Chu Yin would be trapped, and he wouldn’t dare to destroy the ship either.

Yu Zhi Jue gave him a look, he was naturally reluctant to join hands with Song Xiao Hu in his heart, but if the current matter affected Ling Xia’s livelihood…… Water element mixed with spiritual energy quickly condensed into ice, Yu Zhi Jue suddenly erupted, several ice blades immediately flew towards Chu Yin.

Chu Yin casually moved aside, but an unexpected spiritual sword quickly emerged towards his back, he conveniently held onto the tip of the sword, he wanted to have his fill of playing with Yu Zhi Jue.

The intense condensed energy element turned into countless fine needles, Chu Yin didn’t think that the young Yu Zhi Jue’s cultivation was so refined, five fingers were suddenly cut. He wasn’t angry and instead laughed, fervently looking towards YuZhijue: “Ve~ry~good~”

Yu Zhi Jue groaned and forcefully flicked the blade, he had already backed off several meters, the Song Xiao Hu beside him gave a loud “Ah”, and thunder energy followed up.

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes, water element accompanied his attack, fusing with the electric energy, countless sparks of energy sparked on the huge water dragon.

Chu Yin’s eyes darkened, spiritual energy quickly formed a barrier, countless droplets of water fell to the floorboards as the water dragon touched it.

These two youngsters actually managed to force him to defend so quickly…… he cackled cheerfully: “The two of you are great~~ more~~”

Yu Zhi Jue gritted his teeth: “You’re looking to die!”

Since Chu Yin’s personality was to play with them for half a day like a cat teasing a mouse, Ling Xia wasn’t too worried about the two children, his focus switched towards Ah Li and the bald eagle’s side. Those background decorations were now stepping back dazedly, some hid inside rooms, lest they get involved with the battle of that absurdly strong group of three men and two beasts.

Ling Xia currently had artifacts of different elements on him, they were all made during the day, but one that could harm that seventh grade flying demonic beast, it doesn’t seem like he had one.

However, at least he could bait that beast over.

He shrunk himself and hid behind a wooden cask, and pulled out a third grade long range offensive artifact. He made this following the form of a bow, the body of the bow is made of metal energy stones, and the bowstring is made of a rather flexible material. He slowly put an arrow up, gathered his spiritual energy, and aimed at the bald eagle.

The bald eagle was arrogantly circling in the sky to tease Ah Li, he cleverly kept enough distance to avoid Ah Li’s flame. It had good eyesight,

but its hearing is bad. As soon as it heard the splitting of air it was already too late, there was something sharp shooting over with the speed of a meteor, although the arrow could not pierce its skin, he managed to shoot off some feathers.

Its species was quite rare, yet there were more Males than Females, they were a monogamous species, so a big portion of Male bald eagles had to either become bachelors or go gay. When Females choose their mates they paid great attention to their feathers, once the feathers of the bald eagles are damaged, it would take about three years to grow back.

So when it saw that its feathers had been harmed, this straight male bald eagle almost wanted to faint, it gave a long howl, as if it were a sonic boom. It angrily glared at the group of people hiding on the deck with its keen eagle eyes, but did not see any suspicious figure.

(translated as “healthy Yang body”) is a body type that signifies that of a healthy Male(generally) body that cultivates elements with the yang property(generally fire). This type of body is considered quite rare normally, and there’s also a Ying counterpart. Most people generally have no affinity with elements, which is why you don’t see many people cultivate elements they have no affinity to. It’s not that they can’t it’s just hella effort.
There’s a bunch of other shebang relating to when you’re born sort of like being born under some kind of star and different context may also just mean the gender so I’m not gonna go too deep into that.
Either way Yin = Female/dark Yang = Male/light

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 11

Ling Xia had already switched places after shooting the arrow, e took a deep breath, and quietly gave a few whistles.

He and Ah Li are already extremely familiar with each other. As soon as he heard the familiar whistle, he understood what Ling Xia was trying to do, he continued howling and roaring at the sky, reducing the bald eagle's guard.

The bald eagle circled around the air for a long time and couldn't find its target, and could only return his attention to Ah Li again. At this time it had already lost the idea of teasing Ah Li, and just kept going up and down, waiting for an opportunity to send some wind blades over to Ah Li, and send all his grief of losing his feathers towards Ah Li. The wind blades of a seventh grade demonic beast is not to be underestimated, although Ah Li's body was dextrous and didn't get injured, countless cuts of different sizes were strewn across the deck from the bald eagle's wind blades.

Ling Xia took this chance, and sent three hidden arrows made of a camouflaged material towards the bald eagle's back, the bald eagle dodged two of the arrows, but the third one managed to shoot down seven or eight feathers.

The bald eagle could no longer contain the grief in his heart, howled madly, and rushed towards the the direction the arrows shot from recklessly, it crashed onto the ship and the boat dangerously tilted to the side. It landed on the deck, two hawk eyes searched around, and finally found a suspicious shadow behind some wooden barrels.

Ling Xia's was frightened as he saw the shadow coming closer, he bowed his waist and ran out abruptly while avoiding the obstacles. The bald eagle howled and rushed around the enclave quickly, it couldn't wait to tear Ling Xia into pieces!

Flames erpted from Ah Li’s four legs, violently raising his speed and leaped forward, finally rushed to te bald eagle and pressed its body down. the bald eagle use two sharp blade-like claws to claw at Ah Li’s abdominal region, Ah Li blew out some flames and burned off several of the bald eagle’s prideful feathers from its head. In an instant two demonic beasts started a dogfight.

The ship shook left and right crazily, making a creaking noise, from time to time, there were screams from people who accidentally got dragged into the fight.

The situation looks even worse now…… Ling Xia cried in his heart. He looked anxiously at the other side, Chu Yin didn’t care at all what his mount was doing or whether it was in danger, his attention was focused solely on the two youngsters before him.

And what’s worse, was that Chu Yin was sending out provocations from time to time, Song Xiao Hu was clearly displaying the protagonist’s aura, he was so excited by him that even though he was getting breathless, he still held his courage. Although Yu Zhi Jue was also slightly breathless, his expression was extremely peaceful. Chu Yin saw the two youngsters with different performances and felt even more excited, his attacks were more and more ruthless, Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu’s bodies were riddled with injuries.

A dense power surged around the three of them, the ship deck trembled so violently that people found it hard to keep their balance, even though Ling Xia wanted to help, he felt suffocated as soon as he went near.

Before he managed to think up a plan, he heard a loud noise, and the ship was cracked tragically from the center– to be able to hold up for this long already showed that the material of the ship was pretty good.

Ah Li bit onto the bald eagle’s wing resolutely, two demonic beasts rolled into the water, and made a loud “sploosh”.

Ling Xia hurriedly leaned over the side of the ship and called out: “Ah Li!”

the bald eagle saw him from the water, a gush of hate rose up in his heart, and it waved its good wing to send out a wind blade toward Ling Xia. Even though Ling Xia had brought many defensive artifacts on him, five or six cuts still appeared on his hand, the deep red blood dripped onto the deck along the back of his hand.

Chu Yin stopped suddenly, narrowed his eyes and took a deep breath with his nose, wolf-like eyes glanced over to Ling Xia.

Ling Xia froze, his heart beat heavily, and only just noticed the painful sensation coming from the wound on his hand. He couldn't help but trembled, and stepped back in horror.

"Human panacea……" Chu Yin harshly laughed without restriction, In his early ears he had drank the blood of a human panacea, that wonderful taste, even after several decades it was still unforgettable.

He no longer cared about Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue, his hand sucked with force, pulling Ling Xia towards his grasp, and couldn't wait to bend over his body.

Ling Xia could only feel a wet sticky thing constantly moving around his neck, and just realized that it was Chu Yin's tongue, he suddenly struggled in disgust. But a sharp pain suddenly came from his neck, he felt as if he were anesthetized, and suddenly couldn't move, only his body started to grow colder.

Am I going to die here? Ling Xia bitterly laughed, he didn't think that, this time he would die in front of those two kids. He wanted to prevent those two from looking, but he couldn't utter a sound.

The sight before him grew darker and darker……

This time, his death wouldn't be too painful right?……

"Let go of Ling Dage!" Song Xiao Hu hurriedly pounced over, but he was sent into the water with a kick from Chu Yin.

Chu Yin did not even lift his head, and only narrowed his eyes and slowly savored– This type of delicacy, definitely should be savored slowly.

Yu Zhi Jue gritted his teeth and spoke word by word: “Let, him, go!”

An unfamiliar strength surged within his body, this type of energy was cold to the bones, but the strength was unparallelled, so strong that Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t stop shuddering. As he lifted his head, the usually bright black pupils now flashed with a glimmer of purple.

Want to destroy! Destroy the man in red in front of him……

Break him into pieces, let him pray for death!……

“I want to– Kill you!” A black ball slowly emerged into shape on Yu Zhi Jue’s hand.

The previously clear sky suddenly turned dark, violent winds swept through the area, the ship that had been broken into two pieces were shaken, the sea water had formed a whirlpool that spanned a few miles, sucking in the people who did not manage to hide.

Chu Yin felt a shiver run down his spine provoked by the familiar energy, and finally let go of Ling Xia. He suddenly looked up, and just noticed the young man walking over to him slowly on top of the water, although the cold and scary air around him felt as if he were a messenger from hell, the gaze in his eyes were no doubt familiar!

“I, will, kill, you! “A shade of purple loomed in his eyes, the black mist-like energy ball in his hands was violently sent over, shrouding Chu Yin as if it were alive.

Chu Yin quickly bit down onto his own hand, the spewing blood formed a red protective barrier around him, but despite this, some of the black energy seeped in, the area that it touched was immediately dyed with a layer of black ash, in a speed that was visible to the naked eye, Chu Yin’s right hand slowly transformed into charcoal.

Although the scene was mysterious, Chu Yin was not afraid, he glared into Yu Zhi Jue's eyes and felt an unpleasant surprise: "What is your name? Is your surname Yu?"

Yu Zhi Jue clearly could not hear him, and only set his gaze on Ling Xia's body: "Return him– To me!"

As he spoke, the dark air permeating his body grew heavier, the sky crackled with thunder, and large droplets of rain dropped down, quickly turning into a heavy rain.

Chu Yin conveniently threw Ling Xia over, and asked again: "Is your surname Yu?"

Yu Zhi Jue acted as if he did not hear it, and took Ling Xia's head in his embrace, he pressed down on the two teeth marks on his neck– blood was still flowing non stop from them.

Although Ling Xia's face was pale, the arteries on his neck were still beating weakly. Yu Zhi Jue's hand trembled without constraint, this man was nearly lost again……

He was most familiar with such an injury, since there was time anyway.

He looked towards the position of the bald eagle, and easily lifted him from the water with his remaining hand. The bald eagle was injured by Ah Li, and could barely move, Chu Yin stuffed a few recovery stimulating medicinal pills into its mouth, and the man and hawk duo quickly left for the skies.

Yu Zhi Jue hugged Ling Xia tightly and abruptly lifted his head, glaring at the sky, without concealing the murderous intent in his eyes, as long as he raised his hands, he could make that offensive red disappear!……

His brain fell into chaos, that sort of unfamiliar and unfathomable strength nearly caused him to lose control!

At this moment, Ling Xia sneezed from the coldness on his body, he opened his unfocused eyes and half consciously spoke: “Ah Jue, it’s so cold……”

Yu Zhi Jue froze, the killing intent in his eyes immediately disappeared, the evil miasma retreated towards the ocean.

His body was shaking and exhausted, struggling slightly to stand on top of the water, he held Ling Xia and sunk into the whirlpool together.

The sensation of being overwhelmed quickly brought Yu Zhi Jue back to his sense, he hugged Ling Xia tightly and went forward to float tot he top of the water, he conveniently took some strength restoring medicinal pills.

The thunderstorm stopped, the whirlpool in the ocean had also dissipated, but the shipwreck and the crowd including Ah Li and Song Xiao Hu all disappeared, the were obviously scattered by the whirlpool.

Yu Zhi Jue paddled the water with some strength, holding Ling Xia to the front and swam over. But in the vast ocean, he swam towards the sun for almost two hours, and his strength was almost exhausted, but there was still no trace of land. He examined Ling Xia carefully, Ling Xia’s complexion still looked very weak, and the blood loss caused his lips to become pale and dry, both eyes were tightly shut.

The two bodies sunk down slowly, Ling Xia spat out several bubbles painfully due to the asphyxiation, the messy hair floated around the water like seaweed.

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly remembered the water element in his body, he did not hesitate to pull Ling Xia over, and bit down towards his mouth. Yu Zhi Jue simply did not know about kissing, but as they touched, even though it was in the water, his face heated up.

Noticing that air was constantly being sent over from the point of contact, even though he was unconscious, Ling Xia had responded instinctively. He opened his mouth dazedly, pressing even harder, he even stuck his tongue in

in dissatisfaction of the other's clumsy movements, greedily breathing a few mouthfuls, letting out a few sighs of satisfaction.

Yu Zhi Jue only felt as if his head had exploded, his body was instantly stiff.

This type of shocking sensation, numbness, impatience, his body seemed as if it were on fire, but he was in bliss.

He even felt that his exhausted body instantly filled with energy, his tired limbs become peerlessly strong.

He hugged Ling Xia's waist tightly and floated to the top, he went closer to examine the other party's face that seemed as if he were asleep. This person looked the same as always, as if he were constantly smiling, the curvature of his eyebrows also brought a sense of comfort to people.

Uncontrollably, Yu Zhi Jue carefully brushed the strands of hair on Ling Xia's face back, and once again stuck over and tumbled about, slowly closing his eyes.

So soft, so hot…… But it was a bit cracked and dry due to the dehydration. Yu Zhi Jue gently touched them with his lips, moistening the other's lips, his ears were also getting hot.

He remembered Ling Xia's actions from earlier, and tried to squeeze his tongue between Ling Xia's mouth, he explored clumsily for a moment, and finally found the hot and humid tongue and stirred together, a light wet sound was gradually heard.

This kind of never before experienced lip and teeth contact, the intimate harmonious contact made Yu Zhi Jue's hands tremble, he even forgot where they currently were. Because he wasn't used to kissing, the saliva that was hard to swallow slowly ran down the attached lips of the two.

The atmosphere in Ling Xia's lips fascinated Yu Zhi Jue, fresh with a hint of herb smell. He closed his eyes and got more and more excited with he

kiss, his heart beat chaotically, even holding Ling Xia's head with his hands, pressing him forcefully towards himself.

The strange heat from the dream earlier appeared on his body again……

Ling Xia uncomfortably groaned in his daze.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly straightened up in a fright, the white face was stained with a red that was hard to fade. He looked at Ling Xia with an anxious yet anticipating gaze, but Ling Xia only mumbled a few sounds, and then stopped moving.

His heart felt slightly fortunate yet quite disappointed, Yu Zhi Jue's lips touched Ling Xia's face lightly and continued on swimming while embracing him.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 12

As the sun sets to the west, the surface of the sea is dyed with a beautiful field of orange, finally a shore and greenery came to view in the front.

Yu Zhi Jue's spirits stirred, increasing his swimming speed, and finally reached the shore as the reflection of the sun disappeared from the surface of the sea. He languidly carried Ling Xia up the shore, and carefully checked Ling Xia's breathing and pulse, they could still be considered normal.

He carefully called: "Ling Xia?"

Ling Xia was still unconscious, and only made a quiet "Mm" as if he could hear him, Yu Zhi Jue finally felt relieved.

He did not know, that the cause for Ling Xia's unconsciousness was due to anemia, the other reason was that Chu Yin's teeth contained a drug similar to an anesthesia, if he were bitten he would not be able to wake for awhile.

After a short break, Yu Zhi Jue carefully sized up the small island, it was clustered with forests and strange craggy rocks, it wasn't known whether there were any demonic beasts that were harder to deal with. He leaned down to pick up Ling Xia on his back, and decided to enter the island to look for food and water.

Due to the similarity of their heights, coupled with the fact that Ling Xia's current unconscious status, Yu Zhi Jue did not have a hard time carrying him, he didn't need to adjust his hold.

Yu Zhi Jue had about five to six external injuries, he had been bearing with it till now, even though his body was exhausted, he slowly carried Ling Xia, and brought an infinite joy in his heart.

Heading inside, they finally found a small creek in the island, fortunately the water was very sweet, Yu Zhi Jue gave it a taste to check that it was consumable and scooped some water over to Ling Xia with a leaf.

Ling Xia dazedly opened his mouth and drank it, he was extremely thirsty, he drank a bit hurriedly currently, water that he had not been able to swallow flowed down the corner of his lips down to his beautifully shaped chin.

Yu Zhi Jue's heart stirred at the sight, he used an embroidered handkerchief to wipe his chin, and couldn't resist putting his lips towards his again.

The place their lips touched was soft and warm, it felt limp and numb as if a soft current was running through them, but it was indescribably comfortable. Yu Zhi Jue restrained himself from sending his tongue in, even so, his breathing was still getting hotter and faster.

Their lips were affixed for a long time, he lightly and lovingly touched Ling Xia's eyes, and fed him more water.

There weren't any dangerous demonic beasts on the island, Yu Zhi Jue caught a few edible ones, and started a fire. He had done these a lot while he was out wandering before, he was very experienced.

The clothes on both their bodies are wet, but are some sets of clean clothes in their storage bag.

Yu Zhi Jue hesitated for awhile, and finally pulled off Ling Xia's belt slowly, removing his wet clothes.

Seeing Ling Xia's clavicle and chest, Yu Zhi Jue felt a bit dizzy, his hand couldn't help trembling slightly. He took a deep breath and held it for a moment, and changed Ling Xia into a clean set of clothes in a breath, then checked over his condition briefly.

The skin under his hand is warm and smooth, bringing with it a hint of fresh herbal scent, as his fingers accidentally touched the inner section of

Ling Xia’s thighs, his heart jumped.

That day he held Ling Xia and even did ……

With just that quick thought, the hot feeling in his abdomen rose up again.

Yu Zhi Jue remembered seeing Ling Xia’s naked body at an early age, that time he was shocked and disgusted. But now he couldn’t understand why, it didn’t matter where of the other person he was looking at he would feel dazzled, and even wanted to extend his hand to give it a touch, to bite down with his teeth. A sexy clavicle that was prominent due to how slim he was, two pinkish dots adorning his chest, long straight legs…… Even the part that used to look disgusting to him, he wanted to touch them.

Yu Zhi Jue bit down hard on his lower lips, he closed his eyes and took a deep breath to try and restrain himself.

He carefully continued dressing Ling Xia, but his heart throbbed again as he took a look at the other’s flexible waist and full hips, his nose inexplicably heated up.

After getting dressed in a hurry, he helped Ling Xia groom his hair, the roasted meat had already become scorched……

In the end, Yu Zhi Jue looped his arms around Ling Xia’s waist and hungrily laid down next to the fire. In any case, it wasn’t as if he didn’t know what it was like to go hungry.

Hey hey hey, what’s going on?

Ling Xia dazedly opened his eyes, feeling as if he couldn’t breath well. As he finally sobered up, only then did he realize he was being tightly held in Yu Zhi Jue’s embrace.

So, I actually didn’t end up dying this time?

After all he had such a terrible experience in the past, what’s more Yu Zhi Jue is a healthy young man, the lower part stood up in great spirits in the

early morning. Ling Xia got goose bumps from the part poking at him, he couldn't resist wanting to push him away, becoming a blow-up doll again? Or maybe I should just die!

Though Yu Zhi Jue's breathing was extremely peaceful, just that his breathing was slightly heavier than usual due to his exhaustion. Ling Xia took a look at the scenery around him, and felt a bit confused in his heart.

In his last memory, he seemed to see Song Xiao Hu getting kicked by Chu Yin, and he seemed to hear Yu Zhi Jue shouting something, thinking about that voice made his heart ache slightly……

It seems that on this island there is only him and Yu Zhi Jue, so how did that child rescue him from that devil? And where are the rest of the people on board?

He struggled to turn his back over to look at Yu Zhi Jue, the other was sleeping extremely well, a satisfied curve lingered on his mouth, just that there was still an unhealed wound on his face.

Ling Xia's heart softened, stopped his actions, and quietly nestled into Yu Zhi Jue's embrace, frankly Yu Zhi Jue did not do anything too overboard this time.

He felt a bit loss, but at the same time a bit fortunate, fortunate that he didn't die……

If he died in front of these two kids, that would be too cruel.

When Yu Zhi Jue finally woke up, it was already close to noon.

The sun shining through the gaps between the leaves left mottled and swaying shadows, Ling Xia smiles at the childishly dazed look of the great villain, and beamed: "Did you sleep well? Do your injuries still hurt?"

Looking at the other's bright and transparent pupils up close, clearly showed his own sluggish reflection……

Yu Zhi Jue's heart jumped heavily, his face uncontrollably heated up.

He snorted and quickly turned to sit up, attempting to hide the heat on his face: “A bit of injury is naturally fine, but you, really are too useless! Just you watch what I’d do if you go and get killed again!”

“……” Ling Xia watched his tantrum, and felt a sense of indescribable cuteness, he wanted to give Yu Zhi Jue’s head a rub. He couldn’t hear it at all, even though Yu Zhi Jue pretended to speak harshly, his words trembled undetectably.

Ling Xia slowly sat up: “How did you save me? Where’s Xiao Hu and Ah Li?”

In the book Song Xiao Hu encountered numerous troubles, the ones who died were all the cannon fodders or villains around him, he’s constantly improving, so Ling Xia wasn’t too worried.

Yu Zhi Jue frowned: “Let’s not worry about this now, how are you feeling? I’m going to go find something to eat.”

Ling Xia quickly tugged at him, and took out some healing medicine from his storage space: “These medicine are slightly better than the ones from Shaoyang Sect, come over here Ah Jue.”

With a tug from Ling Xia, his body uncontrollably sat down obediently, allowing Ling Xia to rub the unnameable medicine on his face.

Ling Xia’s fingertips quickly smeared over Yu Zhi Jue’s wounds gently, on the areas where the cold medicine was smeared, the hot and painful feeling reduced considerably. But their close distance caused him to lightly feel his breathing on his skin, and heated up even more, bringing a hint of numbness……

Yu Zhi Jue nearly couldn’t control his hand from holding Ling Xia, just like yesterday night, kissing his lips and eyes, but he endured it in the end.

Somehow, he could feel that, if he had done that, Ling Xia would probably get very angry……

The meat was done roasting, and two people dug in. Yu Zhi Jue briefly explained the situation, and didn't talk about the changes in his body, just said that the weather changed, he rushed over to Chu Yin and snatched Ling Xia back, and everyone else was swept away by the whirlpool.

He secretly tried to summon that strange, powerful energy, but never succeeded again.

Yu Zhi Jue had also thought, did that disgusting man in red have any relations with his cheap dad? Is this power related to him??

In his muddled memory, he was called "vile spawn" and "mongrel" every time those women mentioned him, said his dad was a crude. And that mother, had only seen him once from afar, and avoided her eyes coldly.

He only saw his dad once, that was when he died in the hands of that apathetic woman.

A sword stabbed into Yu Tianxing's heart, but he laughed extremely joyously. He pulled out the sword before his death, and similarly stabbed the woman in her chest, with a gentle voice he said: "I still can't let you go, I can only rest assured if you're with me."

Even if Yu Zhi Jue couldn't understand their complications, he could see that, this cheap dad was still terrifyingly strong even if he had suffered a fatal injury, he could still destroy the entire Holy Maiden Peak if he wanted to.

But why would he choose to let that woman stab him?

Yu Zhi Jue couldn't understand then, but now he could understand it a little bit.

Especially when he saw Ling Xia looking at other people with a gentle gaze……

Ling Xia carefully applied the medicine to Yu Zhi Jue's injury, and looked worriedly towards the ocean: "I hope Xiao Hu and Ah Li are both

safe.”

Yu Zhi Jue bit down hard on his lower lip, and spoke in a low and heavy voice: “They’ll probably be fine, but I’m not too sure how we’re going to leave this place.” Actually, it would be great to stay here with just the two of them too……

Ling Xia suddenly opened his eyes, and stood up excitedly: “Ah Jue, there’s a ship!”

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes and looked over, there really was a ship trail.

Ling Xia looked left and right, piled some damp firewood together and lit it up. His movements were hurried, but a field of black flashed in his eyes, and he nearly fell down again.

Yu Zhi Jue frowned and rushed over to help him up, conveniently cut off a few trees and piled them together, black smoke soon rose up in the air.

The ship slowly turned, and came towards them.

Ling Xia became vigilant, the region around this ocean was occupied by miscellaneous sects, He and Yu Zhi Jue were both hurt, naturally they had to be careful.

That ship quickly reached the coast, Ling Xia felt that it wasn’t too good when he took a look– Why are people on the ship dressed in such a strange way? The banner on the ship is also a pattern he had never seen before……

A young girl was sitting on the mast of the boat, with tan skin and full lips, her way of dress resembled that of some ethnic minorities, the clothes on her body were colorful, and there were two blue feathers on her head, she was a quite a beauty.

She crossed her legs arrogantly, her eyes brightened up as soon as she saw the two, and jumped down from the past, clutching her thin waist and madly laughed: “Mo Da, Lu’er, there are two fat sheep here!”

This tone, this hairstyle, this outfit……

Ling Xia’s eyes darkened, fuck, would it kill him to not meet the protagonist’s harem girls?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 13

Generally speaking, from the protagonist's harem girls that Ling Xia had met, Cui Yu is unruly, Feng Luo is mature, Shui Ling is keen, But this oddly dressed Ke Lan MinErBai girl is…… wild.

Yes, this girl is manly. The most important part is, she is a demonic cultivator, and her ability is extremely strong, she is especially adept at the techniques of raising poisonous insects and bodily techniques, otherwise she wouldn't dare to pirate around in the orthodox sect territory for seven or eight years.

Seems like, in the book she wanted to snatch the protagonist who is three or four years younger to be her husband?……

So I say the protagonist's taste is really quite mixed! Ling Xia didn't think that taming this flower was anything great at all.

As Ling Xia's eyes twitched from reviewing the story, Ke Lan MinErBai had already jumped down the ship.

She loudly swayed over to the two, and swung a golden stick threateningly: "Mm, if you're tactful take out the thing from your body."

Yuzhijue sneered, but was patted by Ling Xia on the shoulder.

Ling Xia didn't want to provoke this big lady with a body full of poison, not to mention he and Yu Zhi Jue are injured. He threw his storage bag over, and calmly said: "Miss, this should be fine right?"

MinErBai swayed, knowing that not many things were contained within, and temperamentally asked Yu Zhi Jue. "Yours."

Yu Zhi Jue coldly threw his storage bag over, the disgust in his eyes were hard to hide, naturally he didn't care much for these external belongings.

Yu Zhi Jue was after all a great disciple of the Shaoyang Sect, the items contained within his storage bag was heaps more valuable compared to Ling Xia's which was just for show, there were all kinds of energy stones, medicinal pills, spiritual grass, artifacts, and et-cetera, all sort of things were present.

Ke Lan MinErBai conveniently tied the two storage bags to her belt. Since the other party was so cooperative, she felt a bit bored instead, therefore to fool around a bit she searched Ling Xia from head to toe and said: "Could you still be hiding anything else on your body? If not I'll search you."

After some casual observation from her, only now did she notice the young man in front of her was extremely patient, the young boy next to him was a bit too young, but he had an uncommonly handsome appearance.

Ke Lan MinErBai brightened her eyes and laughingly said: "Since you guys can't leave the island with no money anyway, I'll be a good person and send you back."

Looking at the tomboy's eyes which were glowing green, Ling Xia's mouth began to twitch.

It seems that this girl, didn't care whether it was a man or a woman as long as they were good-looking……

Yu Zhi Jue couldn't resist and held onto his spiritual wood sword, and sneered: "No need."

Ling Xia quickly grabbed his collar, Ke Lan MinErBai is much stronger than Bi Yun, naturally they should avoid it if they can. He smiled graciously at Ke Lan MinErBai:

"Many thanks miss for your good intentions, but my shixiong is here to cultivate under his master's orders, naturally he doesn't dare to disobey his master and leave."

Ke Lan MinErBai laughed handsomely, and glanced over to the flame that nearby that hadn’t been extinguished: “Is that right? Then I won’t force you two.”

As she waved her hands, the two burly men returned to the boat first, and she slowly returned as well.

But as soon as she took a step on the ship, Ling Xia shouted: “Hold on miss!”

He looked indignantly at the hundreds of strange, bright green flying insects around the area that came out of nowhere, and was so scared that he didn’t dare to move.

As a human panacea he wasn’t afraid of poison, but these things had long sharp fangs in their mouths, just looking at them was a burden on his heart!

And if it hurts Yu Zhi Jue……

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes at those disgusting insects, and the murderous aura began to rise from his body.

He shrouded the two of them in spiritual energy, and his sword was slowly enveloped with water energy, forcing back the bugs a few meters.

Ke Lan MinErBai’s spirits perked and beamed: “Mm, this seems interesting!”

Her body blinked, and instantly appeared in front of the two of them.

“You’re not bad.” Ke Lan MinErBai swayed the nun-chucks in her hand, smilingly stared at Yu Zhi Jue and spoke, “Accompany this sister to play for a while.”

He had never heard such a skittish tone of voice before, without waiting for Ling Xia to reject, Yu Zhi Jue had already sent forth an icy wave from his sword.

Ling Xia watched nervously, according to the character of Ke Lan MinErBai, she probably wouldn't kill Yu Zhi Jue, but for this child to be frustrated was natural. After all, in the book Song Xiao Hu had been caught by this scary tomboy once when he was about sixteen or seventeen, it was also related to the protagonist's reluctance to hit women.

After an hour, Ling Xia silently and grievingly carried the YuZhijue who was full of injuries on his back, and slowly boarded the pirate ship.

Yu Zhi Jue's wounds weren't tended to after all, Ke Lan MinErBai is an infamous genius demonic cultivator, and had also cultivated from a young age, Yu Zhi Jue is a bit younger than her, although he managed to withstand for two hours he still lost, and his spiritual wood sword had been broken into several pieces. Of course, Ke Lan MinErBai also broke two ribs from Yu Zhi Jue's kick.

The island which was originally filled with vibrant forests had been ruined…… It really was quite a terrifying battle. If it weren't for that Mo Da-like brawny man helping him up the ship, he might also be affected.

Ling Xia carefully wiped the bloodstains from Yu Zhi Jue, and sighed.

He really was too weak…… He always had to watch these two kids get hurt, as an older brother he really was too lacking.

Mo Da had led him to a messy little hut on the ship, and handed over a small vial to him and laughed: "Captain said, she had taken a fancy to this brat, and is prepared to take him back to take him as her husband. Take good care of him, feed him the jade toad in here, he will recover in a few days."

"……" Ling Xia took the small vial rigidly, his eyes twitched.

What the hell, what is this progression!

Could it be this damn stallion novel is going to progress into an elaborate prime time revenge plot story of the villain and the protagonist over a girl?

After waiting for Mo Da to retreat, Ling Xia opened the vial, and just took a quick glance and immediately threw it into the sea– The thing inside disgusted him as soon as he saw it, he would probably be poisoned to death if he ate it wouldn't he?

Besides, there's probably no medicine better than the him who is a human panacea……

Ling Xia took Yu Zhi Jue's head into his embrace, took a deep breath, and mustered up the courage to lightly cut himself on the blood vessels on his wrist, the vibrant red blood quickly poured out. He probably wouldn't be able to perform such an act of self-mutilation before this…… So to say this it's probably a suffering to stay in such a dangerous world!

The bloody taste of a human panacea is rather light, but Yu Zhi Jue who is still unconscious couldn't drink.

Ling Xia called out in a bit of a hurry: "Ah Jue? Wake up."

He had already lost too much blood before this, and now he was getting dizzy again.

Yu Zhi Jue clearly suffered heavy internal injuries, his bones were possibly damaged as well, hearing his breath his eyelashes only slightly trembled, but did not open his eyes.

Ling Xia sighed, put his fingers in Yu Zhi Jue's mouth, and lightly pried his teeth apart, the trickling blood smoothly flowed into Yu Zhi Jue's mouth.

The fresh cooling blood that brought the taste of herbs flowed into Yu Zhi Jue's body, Yu Zhi Jue unconsciously sucked on the fingers in his mouth, greedily suckling with his tongue.

The soft and slippery tongue curled tightly around his fingers, a strange numbness rushed to his head, Ling Xia couldn't help but tremble, almost taking back his hand.

In the end, he patiently waited until the wound on his wrist stopped bleeding and only then did he take his fingers back, his face was already slightly hot.

Damn! Although he always thought of Yu Zhi Jue as his little brother, but this was too impure.

Yu Zhi Jue's body slowly became hot, human panacea's blood still needed a few moments to take effect. Ling Xia simply bandaged his wrist, and dazedly closed his eyes while leaning on Yu Zhi Jue.

In his slumber, he felt that someone was constantly watching him, that gaze felt piercing, occasionally extremely warm, but occasionally it felt so violent it was scary. He wanted to see who it was, but due to his drowsiness he wasn't able to open his eyes.

He felt a warm soft object gently touching his lips after that, bringing a feeling of clumsiness and cautious temptation, gentle like a catkin.

This refreshing atmosphere felt familiar, and the touch did not feel bad at all.

Did he have similar dreams before?

Maybe that he had gone too long without venting, so that's probably why he kept having spring dreams……

Ling Xia's mouth opened in a daze, and couldn't help responding, he even actively brought the other's intimate sluggish tongue into his own mouth.

He had been alone from a long time ago, maybe subconsciously he had hoped to kiss someone like this……

In the beginning the two's teeth bumped into each other a few times due to their inexperience, after that it may be that they had been kissing for quite a while, and slowly relished it, their hair rubbed against each other's ears and face, and both of their faces are hot.

The soft lingering noises, felt as if they were really ringing at his ear……

Even if he knew it was a dream, Ling Xia still felt more and more into it, his heartbeat accelerated, and he couldn’t help himself from making a satisfying sigh. The other party seemed to be very excited as well, his hold was getting tighter and tighter, he could feel the other’s palm slightly shivering.

Ling Xia felt as if he could hear the consistent heartbeats of the two stuck together.

Until Ling Xia’s hand inadvertently touched the other’s chest, and had a shock– The girl in the dream, though he couldn’t see the face clearly, how is the chest so flat?

But he really was too tired, and only dazedly stumbled upon this idea, and quickly fell into a deep sleep.

By the time Ling Xia woke up, it was already night time.

Yu Zhi Jue sat upright beside him, seeing him wake up his face unnaturally twisted to the side, and spoke hurriedly with a bit of anger: “Why did you let me drunk your blood? Didn’t you know that you’ve already lost too much?”

Ling Xia shallowly smiled: “I didn’t want to keep burdening Ah Jue as well, fortunately my blood still had some use.”

“…… I never said you were a burden to me!” Yu Zhi Jue was melancholy.

He already felt extremely shameful from losing to a woman, to see Ling Xia’s pale face and bandaged wrist as soon as he woke up discouraged him even more.

Ling Xia couldn’t help but touch his hair: “I know, but I also want to help Ah Jue a bit.”

Yu Zhi Jue allowed him to rub his head, and softly spoke: “You don’t have to care about all this, take care of your injuries well, that woman had also been injured. There is a total of nine people on the ship, I will find a good opportunity to seize control of the ship, you don’t have to worry.”

He spoke extremely naturally, but a hint of killing intent loomed in his tone, Ling Xia had a fright in his heart as he heard it. He wanted to make things clear, but suddenly heard a familiar voice hurriedly coming from outside: “You damn woman! Let me go!”

It’s Song Xiao Hu! Ling Xia hurriedly supported himself up with Yu Zhi Jue, and looked out of the window, sure enough he saw a tied up Song Xiao Hu falling down on the mast outside.

Ke Lan MinErBai’s exposed shoulder is bandaged, but was still smiling extremely arrogantly, using her nun-chucks to lift up Song Xiao Hu’s chin: “You don’t look half bad, so marry me and become my husband.”

Hey hey hey sister, where is your moral integrity? You want to bag the two most charming people, and change the story to one with a Female lead?

Ling Xia became speechless.

When he hesitated over whether now was a good time to go out, his eyes inadvertently swam over to the weak and slender figure next to Ke Lan MinErBai. This young lady’s black hair framed her beautiful face, even though her hands were tied behind her she looked discomposed, but he could see her refined temperament.

Even if they had never met, Ling Xia’s heart still almost jumped out of his chest in an instant, so excited that his head almost hit the window frame–The goddess has finally appeared!

Notes:
•Mo Da is a character from “The Smiling, Proud Wanderer” the novel, and “Swordsman” the drama, as for why he’s mentioned I’ve never watched it so I don’t know who the hell he is, but I might consider watching it when I have the time, if I still remember I’ll bring it up.
•Spring dreams – originally C dream in Chinese or “chun meng” it means wet dreams for those of you who didn’t know.

•*“their hair rubbed against each other’s ears and face” – this is an idiom to describe the closeness of two people, it literally means the ear is touching the hair at the temples, there are some pretty strange idioms in Chinese. For those learning Chinese are the four words.*

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 14

Ling Xia felt excited, thinking back on something his face instantly flushed red, he quickly retracted his head back– That, his goddess had probably already seen his naked body while treating his heart meridian……

Moreover this goddess is the saint of the Yunǔ sect!

God damn! Wouldn't Yu Zhi Jue kill the goddess for revenge after finding out?

Seeing Ling Xia go from excited to tense, and peeking out every so often, not at all like his usual calm appearance, Yu Zhi Jue's eyebrows subconsciously wrinkled.

He looked towards where Ling Xia was gazing at, and saw a young girl in a bit of a fluster.

In his eyes, all girls look just about the same, he narrowed his eyes and carefully observed for a moment, he could not see anything special about the young girl.

He quietly asked: "Who is she?"

Ling Xia replied incoherently: "She, she's the benefactor who saved my life Mu Rong Xue, When my heart meridian was injured last time she was the one who treated me…… But why is she on board this ship?"

The slight noise from earlier had attracted Ke Lan MinErBai's attraction, she lifted the rod over her shoulder and went over to them: "Oh, seems I've forgot about you two."

Yu Zhi Jue took a glimpse at Ling Xia, and pushed the door to leave while dragging him along, he sneered: "Is that so? Where are you planning to take us?"

He noticed that Ling Xia's palms were sweaty as a result of being nervous, and his heart churned with an strange, indescribable sense of sourness, he wanted to have that young girl killed immediately, or throw her off somewhere where Ling Xia couldn't see her.

Song Xiao Hu saw the two of them and froze, then called out in surprised: "Ling Dage, Ah Jue! How come you're on this evil woman's ship as well? Where's Ah Li?……"

Ke Lan MinErBai happily patted Song Xiao Hu's face as a signal for him to shut up, then turned her head to say: "Naturally I'm bringing you all to my Ling She island to become my husbands. Mm, this miss doesn't look half bad, if I sold her off to that group of demons, she'd probably fetch a good price wouldn't she?"

She couldn't resist pinching Mu Rong Xue's face as she spoke, and frivolously spoke: "What covetable skin."

Ke Lan MinErBai only said these to tease Mu Rong Xue, seeing that her pure and naive face had not a single thread of reaction from her words, it felt a bit dull, and immediately let go of her hand.

Mu Rong Xue slowly turned her head over, as soon as she saw Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue, the calm face clearly expressed a hint of surprised.

Could it be his goddess had recognized him?!

Ling Xia excitedly cried inside, he was at loss for a moment, and stammered: "Miss Mu, Mu Rong Xue, I, I'm LIng Xia, I never had a chance to thank you properly for saving me all this while……" He stopped halfway through speaking, because his goddess wasn't looking towards him at all! She had been staring at Yu Zhi Jue all this while!

The goddess actually stared at the villain even though the protagonist was right there? It's not scientific!

As expected, the villain's body is the greatest tool to attract girls isn't it?

As Ling Xia enviously looked towards Yu Zhi Jue, only now did he notice the other party was staring wickedly at himself, he looked as if he wanted to eat somebody, he asked in puzzlement: “What’s wrong?”

One could almost hear the cracking of his knuckles from his clenched hands. He coldly turned over to Ke Lan MinErBai and said: “Is that so? That will depend on whether you have the ability to do so.”

Ke Lan MinErBai’s eyes slanted into a smile: “So passionate? Talk to me again when your injuries are healed……”

Ling Xia quickly pulled Yu Zhi Jue, signaling him not to start trouble, they were still at sea. And what’s more, even though the goddess’s healing techniques are peerless, but she was definitely still a gentle sister who needed the protection of others, what are they to do if it affected her?

Song Xiao Hu struggled, and unknowingly flipped halfway in the air, with his back towards everyone he called out: “Ah Jue, this woman can’t even be considered a woman! She’s too shameless!……”

“……” Didn’t it feel like the protagonist’s existence was as low as his right now?

In the end under Ling Xia’s persuasions, Yu Zhi Jue didn’t attack, Ke Lan MinErBai wasn’t afraid that they’d escape in this vast ocean anyway, and conveniently threw in Song Xiao Hu as well, Mu Rong Xue was locked in the room next doors, but at least the ropes on the both of them were finally released.

The injuries on Song Xiao Hu’s bodies weren’t exactly light, but with his sturdy physique, he was still full of energy when he spoke. The both of them briefly explained their situations to each other, it seems that Song Xiao Hu had lost consciousness that day after being injured by the blood demon and kicked into the ocean, after that he got caught by Ke Lan MinErBai, and the stuff on his body were all snatched by her, after that he had always been locked in the warehouse with his mouth stuffed, Mu Rong Xue had been around for even longer than him.

Today Ke Lan MinErBai was quite clearly bored, so she pushed them up to tease them again.

Ling Xia silently touched his forehead, so why did the protagonist decide to take this tomboy into his harem after? Is he not afraid of his other harem sisters getting molested?

He was concerned for Mu Rong Xue, but the ship was constantly being patrolled by the ship crew, and they brought some seemingly fierce and poisonous demonic beasts as well. He could only pick a small hole in the wall using a dagger, and whispered: “Miss Mu Rong, are you alright?”

After a long time, a soft and sweet voice came from the other side: “Thank you for your concern, I’m fine.”

Ling Xia’s eyes glowed with excitement, goddess spoke! with! me!

He’s seen many a scary and violent girl in this strange world, this goddess really is a healing spring breeze……

Yu Zhi Jue coldly spoke: “Your wrist is still injured, why don’t you rest for a while. Are you not worried about Ah Li anymore?”

Ling Xia froze, and his dazed brain promptly sobered up.

That’s right, they still haven’t found out where Ah Li is right now…… So they have to escape from the ship before they reach Ling She Island, and find Ah Li!

As he thought of something, he hurriedly walked over to the wall and gave it a few knocks, and politely said: “Miss Mu Rong, may I ask if you have any healing medicine on you?”

Mu Rong Xue is the current saint of the Yunǔ Sect, although she is inexperienced in worldly matters, she is born with the gift for healing techniques and medicine refining. Although Ke Lan MinErBai may seem bad, towards girls she is actually quite lenient, she probably wouldn’t search Mu Rong Xue’s body.

And sure enough, Mu Rong Xue quickly passed over a jade bottle through the hole: “Take two pills will be fine.”

Ling Xia stared at the goddess’ pale slender fingers, and was entranced for awhile.

Song Xiao Hu took the pills and swallowed them in one go, with a little surprise he asked: “Ling Dage, do you know this girl? She’s like a log of wood, when I was tied up downstairs with my mouth stuffed, I signaled over to her for half a day but she still didn’t come to help.”

A log of wood?! Ling Xia immediately sent a fist down on Song Xiao Hu’s head, this damn child, how dare you describe the great goddess in such a way? You’re looking to be beaten!

Song Xiao Hu held his forehead in disbelief: “Ling Dage, what’s wrong?”

“……” How do I explain to these brats who had just had their pubic hair grow out the feeling of an otaku being so excited at seeing his goddess that he would cry his soul out and add three shouts of thanks to God?

As Ling Xia thought of something, he was suddenly puzzled. Although the plot had been advanced, but as the protagonist of a stallion novel Song Xiao Hu had already met so many sisters, how could he not have met a single one that would tickle his fancy? Even the Feng Luo who had the best relationship with him, they were more like siblings when they were together……

No need to mention Yu Zhi Jue, he probably hasn’t even figured out the difference between a man and a woman, at least the protagonist still had a valiant spirit, he knows not to hit women.

He whispered: “Do you guys not feel that, she’s quite good-looking?” That temperament, is celestially refined and indescribable!

Song Xiao Hu looked blank: “Who? That Miss Mu Rong?”

Ling Xia longingly nodded.

So to say the protagonist in the book really is too terrible, to stud sisters even after meeting this goddess? Could this be the reason the author had Mu Rong Xue killed? That's too terrible!

Song Xiao Hu shook his head no: "She does look quite good, but she's not as good-looking as Ah Jue ah, Ling Dage is also good-looking. Mm……Feng Shijie is also good-looking."

"……" What kind of evaluation is this? Could it be that it doesn't matter whether it was male or female they were all beauties in the protagonist's eye?

Song Xiao Hu scratched his hedgehog head and showed two dimples with his smile: "The ones who are good to me, I think they're all quite good-looking."

"……"

As expected, this protagonist is still a brat, a brat! His aesthetics are hopeless.

Ling Xia turned over to the dark faced Yu Zhi Jue, and endeavored to get him to notice the beauty of girls, it would be even better to be able to reverse his view on love.

He lowered his voice and spoke: "Ah Jue, this Miss Mu Rong, do you not feel jovial when you look at her?"

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes, and the atmosphere around him was even lower.

Ling Xia was unaware, and continued luring: "Girls and guys are entirely different, girls are made of water, and guys are shaped with clay. Xiao Hu not beating girls is right, but it is far from enough, you need to respect and love girls……"

Yu Zhi Jue coldly pointed out the window: “Do you need to treat that girl the same?”

Ke Lan MinErBai was sitting on the mast while shaking her two legs, in her hands she was playing with two palm sized blood-colored spiders.

“……” Ling Xia felt weak.

The ship had been going for half a day, Song Xiao Hu had already recuperated a lot after taking Mu Rong Xue’s medicinal pills, the three were planning, how they were going to seize the ship when the time came.

Ling Xia pondered, Mu Rong Xue is good at healing techniques, and she may even have some medicinal pills that could cure poison. After all the secret of him being a human panacea, the less people who knew the better.

This time Mu Rong Xue answered quickly, and spoke gently: “At my side there are materials to create poison cure pills, but I lack the refining tools.

Ling Xia quickly said: “I have some refining tools here, Miss Mu Rong see if there’s anything you can use.”

He simply cut an average sized window on the wall, and quickly passed over the refining tools.

Mu Rong Xue’s face was unchanging as she received it, after a few hours, she spoke with a bit of fatigue: “It’s done.”

Ling Xia received the bottle carefully, and nervously asked: “Are you okay?”

Mu Rong Xue shook her head: “I’m fine.”

Ling Xia wanted to say a bit more to her, things like thanks for saving my life, do you still remember me and stuff like that, but restrained himself. He secretly scolded himself, this really is throwing away the pride of men from the 21st century!

Mainly because Mu Rong Xue's temperament really was a bit too much like an immortal, just looking at her made one feel lacking……

Yu Zhi Jue scoffed: "Are you not going to return soon?"

Ling Xia took one last look at the icy goddess, and comforted softly: "You don't have to worry, we will definitely protect you well……"

Yu Zhi Jue Yu Zhi Jue slammed the table, that poor table split into pieces instantly. Ling Xia jumped in fright, Song Xiao Hu's face was also filled with shock: "Ah Jue, what are you angry about?"

Yu Zhi Jue held his fists, he wanted to press Ling Xia against the wall, and do those embarrassing things in front of everybody. Give him a good look at himself, feeling only himself……

At this moment, Mu Rong Xue spoke to Yu Zhi Jue: "Do you still remember me? I've been looking for you for a long time."

Notes:
Ling She Island – Spiritual snake island

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 15

“?!!!” Ling Xia’s mouth was so wide he could almost swallow an egg, what kind of progression is this?

Miss Goddess said she…… is looking for the villain?

In front of the protagonist?!

Yu Zhi Jue slowly turned, Mu Rong Xue’s words were also outside of his expectations. He frowned and took a look at Mu Rong Xue, and went straight to the point: “Don’t remember, have I seen you before?”

Based on Yu Zhi Jue’s deep hatred of the Holy Maiden Peak, letting Mu Rong Xue continue on with her words will probably put her in danger!

Ling Xia hurriedly went over and pulled Yu Zhi Jue’s wrist to take him away, he nervously giggled: “How could you have met before? Haha, you must have gotten the wrong person……”

He teared up silently in his heart, based on the age and location, they really could have met in their childhood. Since the goddess could still recognize Yu Zhi Jue after so long, why couldn’t she remember himself?

Mu Rong Xue shook her haid and said obstinately: “I will not remember incorrectly.”

Yu Zhi Jue cast a glance at Ling Xia, and pulled his hand, due to inertia, Ling Xia was pulled directly into Yu Zhi Jue’s embrace. His expression showed that he did not want Ling Xia to cut off Mu Rong Xue’s sentences, in reality, after Yu Zhi Jue smelled the familiar scent, the peeves in his heart had mysteriously vanished.

He hugged Ling Xia and calmly spoke: “Even if we’ve met, what business do you have with me?”

Ling Xia was anxious to hell, when had this damn child become so strong? He feared that he would rush over to kill Mu Rong Xue later, and quickly clung to Yu Zhi Jue tightly with his two hands.

Song Xiao Hu was stunned from the sight, why did he feel that the current situation was a bit weird?

There was not a speck of change on Mu Rong Xue's expression, as if she didn't see the strange scene in front of her, and only gently spoke: "When we were very young I saw you on the Holy Maiden Peak…… I always felt sorry."

As soon as Yu Zhi Jue heard the three words "Holy Maiden Peak" hie entire body froze, he coldly looked at Mu Rong Xue and said: "So you are from the Holy Maiden Peak."

Mu Rong Xue nodded: "I am, a month ago, the holy maiden of divination said……"

As she spoke to that part, a commotion popped up outside, and the ship had also swayed heavily.

Everyone was astonished, and heard the loud voice of Ke Lan MinErBai outside: "Hey, the one surnamed Ming, you hit us on purpose didn't you?"

Song Xiao Hu crawled to the windowsill and looked out, and was also shocked, he turned and spoke: "Another ship came! The people on the ship are strange!"

Ling Xia finally pried himself out of Yu Zhi Jue's embrace, he was afraid that Yu Zhi Jue would hurt Mu Rong Xue, and pulled him over by the wrist. Fortunately, Yu Zhi Jue actually followed him obediently, Ling Xia finally relaxed a bit.

An expressionless white-robed man stood on the ship opposite to them, as soon as Ling Xia took one look at him, two words sourly appeared in his heart– "Pretentious bastard".

That’s right, the man looked about twenty-three or twenty-four years old, very manly and very handsome, causing a certain man named Ling to feel envious. The white-robed man had a look that was the standard of looking cool, with both hands clenched tight, black hair fluttering around in the ocean breeze, a paralyzed face that would make a woman scream faced them.

Connecting the dots from what Ke Lan MinErBai had referred to him as, Ling Xia suddenly thought of a person, his pupil contracted– One of the villain’s six guardians of the White Abyss Law Defender, Puppet Master Ming Ze!

In every book there is a guy with facial paralysis, and Ming Ze is that guy.

Ming Ze as the first of the villain’s six guardians, his cruel, merciless, toxic methods need not be mentioned, he often kidnaps orthodox sect disciples to be turned into puppets, after that a good half of the large puppet army of the villain was also caused by him– Mm, he is the same as the blood demon Chu Yin, towards Yu Zhi Jue they had an almost paranoid loyalty.

So to say shipping them really was too cruel!

Ling Xia carefully observed the ship, and as expected, other than Ming Ze, the other crew members all looked slightly stiff, and their faces were abnormally white. As he thought about how that was an entire ship of walking dead, Ling Xia couldn’t help but feel disgusted.

He hurriedly made a silent gesture to everybody, and supported his ear to listen to the two’s conversation outside.

Hearing the arrogant voice of Ke Lan MinErBai, Ming Ze still looked unfazed, and with an emotionless voice he spoke: “The left elder has given an order, you are to patrol this territory, you must find the man in the portrait– Leave not a single mark on him.”

He passed a scroll over as he spoke.

Ke Lan MinErBai lazily received it and opened it, she couldn't help but feel a bit surprised, because the young man in the portrait had a pair of brilliant phoenix eyes, with a little red beauty mark under the corner of his eye, it really looked quite like Yu Zhi Jue.

Ming Ze had already keenly noticed the change in her expression, and immediately asked: "You've seen the man on the portrait?" Because of the flatness of his voice, all his questions became declarations.

Ke Lan MinErBai rolled up the scroll and conveniently kept it on her body, she smiled: "I was just curious, the left elder had already retired for so many years, why is he looking for a young man? Mm, could he have left an illegitimate child somewhere? Haha. Besides, on the sea I am the queen, why would I need to heed the orders of an old man I've never seen? After the demon lord's death the demonic sect had already scattered, nobody can order this lady!"

Ming Ze's eyes were cold, and rage slowly built up in his heart.

Indeed, Demon Lord Yu Tianxing had been dead for ten years, the demonic sects of the thirty six islands and seventy two caves had already fallen out of order, two elders and six guardians took over the leading position, nobody would submit to each other, these ten years the entire demonic sect were a group run by no one. Ke Lan MinErBai was still young, and inherited her mother's position of Verdan Depths Law Defender, and was even less interested in the demonic sect.

Ke Lan MinErBai happily played with the staff in her hands, and beamed: "Defender Ming, why don't you explain to me the identity of this boy, and if I'm interested, I'll help you take a look."

In Ming Ze's view, Ke Lan MinErBai was naturally his junior, and she actually dares to be so arrogant? The fact about the demon lord's offspring naturally could not be talked about with this unreliable brat, after all the demonic sect nowadays was falling apart, and each had their own thoughts, he could determine that the ones who were truly loyal to the demonic lord only numbered three or four.

If not for the fact that Ke Lan MinErBai was more familiar with this ocean territory as she had pirated around the area for long, he definitely wouldn’t look for this detestable brat for help!

Ming Ze opened his mouth, with his countenance still unchanging he spoke: “You will naturally find out when you meet him. Remember, not a single mark on him.”

Ke Lan MinErBai shook her legs and laughed: “White Abyss Law Defender, if we are comparing positions, you are still below the position of my Verdant Depths Law Defender, what can’t you say? Unless, you don’t trust this lady?”

She had always been a troublemaker, now that she was idle and bored, she wanted to tease this legendary into exchanging notes with her even more.

Ming Ze’s eyes flashed, several nails from his hands hit the give poisonous spiders on the deck that had come out of nowhere. He raised his head to gaze at Ke Lan MinErBai and spoke: “Verdant Depths Law Defender, what is the meaning of this?”

Ke Lan MinErBai smiled: “Comparing by seniority, I still have to call you uncle, your niece was just curious, they all say that the White Abyss Law Defender’s puppet techniques are unparalleled under the heavens, and the eight grade puppets that were refines were no different from real people. Won’t you expand the horizons of this niece of yours?”

Ming Ze spoke: “Just seeing is fine, but if my eight grade puppet were to be taken out, then blood will be spilled.”

Ke Lan MinErBai grew even more interested and laughed: “That’s good, not long ago I easily nurtured an eight grade blood spider, it had really taken a lot of effort on my part. White Abyss Law Defender, why don’t we give it a go, let’s see whether your puppets are stronger, or my blood spiders.”

Ming Ze was too lazy to get entangled with her, and instantly controlled his puppets to turn the ship around, he left one last sentence: “If you want to compare, wait till you’ve found the man in the portrait.”

Watching the ship vanish, Ke Lan MinErBai grinned: “Wet blanket.”

And as expected, the wet blanket uncle was half-dead, it was still more fun to tease youngsters.

She grinned and took out the portrait, turning around and shouted towards the direction of Ling Xia and co: “You’ve been watching for awhile haven’t you? Come out if you want to.”

Ling Xia did not know that Chu Yin had already found out the identity of Yu Zhi Jue, not even after hearing the two’s conversation, he was only worried about what Mu Rong Xue said about looking for Yu Zhi Jue.

In the book there was nothing about any great goddess coming out to look for Yu Zhi Jue, after that Song Xiao Hu and the goddess’ relationship scene had also progressed simply, while Mu Rong Xue was the Holy Maiden who was revered by everybody in the Holy Maiden Peak from when she was young, but in actuality her personality was very simple and kind. Her life in the Holy Maiden Peak was monotonous, so after that she couldn’t resist sneaking down the mountain, she wanted to understand the casual lives of normal people, and when she was faced with danger, she was saved heroically by the protagonist……

Fuck! Damned exaggerated plot!

Ke Lan MinErBai didn’t start a fight with Ming Ze, Ling Xia felt more or less disappointed, because they’d have an easier time escaping if they fought!

Song Xiao Hu had already shouted over: “You think we’re gonna come out if you tell us to? We won’t come out now just because.”

Ling Xia held his forehead, this fourteen year old Song Xiao Hu is just a silly brat, the domineering presence at the back was not present at all, he

obviously couldn’t hold back this future harem sister of his!

He was quite familiar with the personality of Ke Lan MinErBai, in a while he pushed the door open and brought Yu Zhi Jue out with him, he smiled: “I did not expect this lady to have such a grand identity.”

Ke Lan MinErBai smiled and carried her staff over her shoulder and replied: “Mm, identity is not the most important, the important thing is, this girl has a lot of possessions, let’s not say just taking care of three or five husbands, even seven or eighty is not a problem at all.”

“……”How does a conversation with her always end up developing into this direction?

Ke Lan MinErBai swept through all three of their faces, the smile on her face dispersed and asked pensively: “Who are you lot? To be able to move the left elder to the point of putting down an order?”

Hey hey lady, you clearly didn’t have the Elder Law Defender in your sights! Ling Xia’s heart shrunk, the person in the portrait couldn’t be himself could it? Because Chu Yin didn’t suck him dry so he’s longing now?!

Ke Lan MinErBai had already taken out the portrait, she carefully looked at Yu Zhi Jue, and shouted: “The person who drew this portrait must be a girl, Mmhmm, I didn’t expect you to have attracted so many peach blossoms. Tell you what, once you’ve entered my domain, you should forget about doing these sorts of things again!”

“……”The artist couldn’t be Miss Bi Yun could it? She had probably drawn it while gritting her teeth!

Ling Xia felt astonished, why would Chu Yin be looking for Yu Zhi Jue? Unless? …… His chest tightened, quickly took a look at Yu Zhi Jue, currently the other party had lowered his head and lightly frowned, seemingly wondering about it.

In the story, Yu Zhi Jue had finally entered the demonic sect for various reasons, but that was for when he was eighteen, Chu Yin probably still haven't figured out his parentage right?

He couldn't help holding Yu Zhi Jue's hand tight, no matter what, he wouldn't let this child go down that evil path!

Ke Lan MinErBai heroically threw the portrait into the sea: "Don't worry, since you are to become my man, I naturally wouldn't pass you over."

Notes:
•Pretentious bastard – (Zhuang) B or pretending to be badass
•White Abyss Law Defender – Bai Yuan Hu Fa, I'm not sure if I should leave it as Chinese or English…
•Verdant Depths Law Defender – Qing Ming Hu Fa, cyan, deep, protection way…. I don't even know.
With some googling they seem to be dharmapala, or defenders of law, a type of Buddhist wrathful god, but I won't use the term dharmapala because it's the wrong religion and language.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 16

Yu Zhi Jue's face darkened as he heard this, Song Xiao Hu was also pissed and said: "What do you mean by your man? A woman like you…… really knows no shame!"

Ke Lan MinErBai laughed: "Men can force women, so why can't women force men? Besides I can guarantee you a good life if you follow me, what's there to complain about?"

"……Shameless!" Song Xiao Hu didn't know how to refute her, and could only repeat those few lines.

Ling Xia smiled bitterly: "Miss, in the end you can lead a horse to water, but you can't make it drink, you also know that forcing is not right, so why would you still force my brother?"

Ke Lan MinErBai grinned: "If you're unwilling you don't have to be my husband, you get to enjoy freedom with me at sea, isn't this way stronger than joining those so-called elite orthodox sects?"

Ling Xia's heart moved, Ke Lan MinErBai was just doing whatever she liked, compared to the other demonic cultivators, she was at least not as bloodthirsty as them, otherwise she wouldn't be moved by the protagonist and follow his group.

He looked at Ke Lan MinErBai's eyes seriously and pointed towards the Liao Ran at Song Xiao Hu's waist: "To tell you the truth, the three of us are disciples of the Shaoyang Sect from Chongming city, this time we the goal of our visit to the continent across is to catch a Liao Ran to save someone. If we can't reach back in time, that girl will no doubt die! The Miss Mu Rong aboard this ship is proficient in healing techniques, we also hope that you can let her join us."

Ke Lan MinErBai is used to seeing gazes full of hatred, towards this gentle and focused gaze she felt rather uncomfortable, with a kick she lifted

herself up on the mast and spoke: “Heheh, what you said sounds interesting, but I don’t know whether you’re faking it or not, besides, what does that girl you mentioned have anything to do with me?”

Yu Zhi Jue impatiently said: “What need is there to speak so much nonsense with her?”

Ling Xia patted him on the shoulder and smiled: “This lady is not unreasonable, Ah Jue, wait for me here for a moment. Relax, I’ll return soon. ” He turned around after speaking, and also jumped up, sitting not far away from Ke Lan MinErBai.

Ke Lan MinErBai had seen many demonic cultivators come and go, and all the men at her side were all big and rough, she really had no experience dealing with such a gentle and polite man. She pretended to be fierce and said: “For you to stick over to me, are you hoping to become my husband?”

Ling Xia shook his head: “Ofcourse not, I feel that in life, staying as a couple of two forever is the most wonderful. If I had a lover, I would certainly respect her, love her, if she loved me as well naturally nothing would be better, I will marry only her.”

As he spoke to that point, he felt like there were too many misgivings, and smiled faintly: “I know that you are not a bad person, you did not hand over my brother, I feel extremely grateful.”

He spoke sincerely, his voice was warm and pleasant, Ke Lan MinErBai was dazed for a moment, and her face subconsciously heated up. She unnaturally shook her legs: “Hmph, that’s nothing, there has never been anyone capable of taking someone away from me.”

Song Xiao Hu curiously whispered: “Ah Jue, what’s Ling Dage talking to her about over there? This girl…… seems a bit less fierce than earlier?”

Yu Zhi Jue watched the two sitting on top shoulder to shoulder seemingly chatting extremely happily,, and his hands clenched tighter, as if something was hatefully clutching his heart, it felt sour and hard to bear.

Why, why does he treat everyone the same……

Ling Xia continued: “You are a hero among women, to be able to build a career on the ocean at such a young age, I admire you a lot……”

Currently he was cheekily bullshitting, his popularity towards this type of wild mature girl Ke Lan MinErBai was way higher than compared with a group of men, he recalled and used the words commonly used to comment on girls. Actually Ke Lan MinErBai was currently just a little lady who had just reached adulthood, he thought of it as praising his own little sister, and spoke with no pressure. He didn’t hate this type of bold girl in his heart anyway, being friends is still pretty good.

Ke Lan MinErBai was quickly overwhelmed, she turned her face and said: “Hmph, my mother said men excelled at speaking rhetorically, you’re only saying all this to deceive me into letting you lot go.”

……Ain’t that the truth my lady.

Ling Xia smiled: “Naturally I hope that you can let us go, but I’m not trying to deceive you, they’re all spoken from my heart. If this lady doesn’t object, I’d like to be friends with you. If you have any hardships in the future, I will definitely come to your rescue, I won’t go back on my word.”

Ke Lan MinErBai furiously turned her head, a dense killing intent arose from her body. She aimed her staff at Ling Xia’s throat, she narrowed her eyes and sneered: “All this that you’ve said, is all just to deceive me, is it not?”

The scene on top suddenly changed, the Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu below couldn’t help but feel surprised, and immediately readied themselves for a fight.

Ling Xia was surprised as well, the part that was swept by the shock-wave of her staff started to hurt, but his fear did not show on his face. He gazed into Ke Lan MinErBai’s eyes and spoke: “I never lie to women.”

The golden sunshine shone on top of the young man’s pallid skin, a pair of eyes as bright as stars were even more prominent, it no doubt looked peerlessly honest and sincere.

Ke Lan MinErBai’s heart uncontrollably started to beat heavily, with a shake of her hands, the two staffs disappeared without a trace, she hugged her thigh and turned her head once again.

Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief, he slightly pondered, and lifted up his wrist, there was still an unhealed injury: “I already see you as my friend, and naturally I will not hide anything from you, actually I am a human panacea.”

Ke Lan MinErBai was surprised, and repeated: “Human panacea?” she’s a person who cultivates bugs, so naturally she knew how precious human panaceas are. She gently stroked Ling Xia’s arm with a fingernail, and tasted the drop of blood, her pupil couldn’t help but contract.

Ling Xia spoke generously as if he were giving away his life and property: “That’s right, I trust you, and I’m willing to entrust my life to you. Please you have to let my two brothers and Miss Mu Rong leave, saving a life is like putting out a fire, we truly can not delay.”

Ke Lan MinErBai slowly lowered her head, after a moment, she lifted her head and laughed: “I, Ke Lan MinErBai am not a petty person! I will become friends with you!”

By the time Ling Xia and Ke Lan MinErBai came down, the sky had already turned dark.

And so the two watched the moon and stars, from reciting poetry to discussing philosophy.

As an otaku, Ling Xia normally did not talk much, but the books he had read were not less. So to a violent and obviously uneducated little girl, his words still held particular value.

In the end Ke Lan MinErBai drank till she was half-drunk and returned to her room to rest, she gave Ling Xia's shoulder a good slap: "Brother Ling, you…… are a very good friend. Ha ha, I'm not drunk, next time…… we continue drinking!"

Ling Xia was also half-drunk, he softly smiled: "Sure! If the lady invites, I will be there!"

Song Xiao Hu was shocked to see the look of the two who seemed like best buddies, he felt as if he was seeing an illusion.

Yu Zhi Jue carried Ling Xia back to the room with a somber face, Ling Xia was still worrying over Mu Rong Xue, and murmured: "Xiao Hu, where's Miss Mu Rong? She looked very exhausted when she was refining pills, is she better now? Ah Jue what was she looking for you for……"

Yu Zhi Jue clenched his hand, with a slam from his hands he locked Song Xiao Hu outside the door: "Don't come in for now!"

Song Xiao Hu rubbed his nose and wailed: "Ah Jue, what are you being crazy about?"

The force on his wrist was suddenly shocking, Ling Xia frowned and spoke in confusion: "Ah Jue?" What is this child irritated about? Does it have something to do with Mu Rong Xue?……

Before he managed to finish his sentence, pain suddenly spread across his back, he had already been pressed roughly against the door by Yu Zhi Jue.

The close breathing was hurried yet hot, Yu Zhi Jue's two hands were put on Ling Xia's sides and wrapped him into his embrace, the pair of eyes were bright and spirited, Ling Xia promptly sobered up.

The chest of the two were tightly stuck together, Ling Xia felt as if there was a big rock pressing down on top of his body, he could not move at all. he perplexedly asked in a whisper: "Ah Jue?"

“Why?……”Yu Zhi Jue’s voice felt as if he was speaking through gritted teeth, it brought with it an icy chill, “Why did you smile and laugh with that woman when you were deceiving her? I said I would save you from this place! You don’t have to do this!”

Ling Xia felt relieved, so this was what this child was upset about? As expected his self-assertive actions had hurt the great villain’s self-esteem didn’t it?

He tried to move, and was immediately pressed down even harder by Yu Zhi Jue’s body.

“……”Ling Xia smiled and tried to calm him down, “I wasn’t really trying to deceive her, Ke Lan MinErBai is different from the other demonic cultivators, she isn’t that bad. “

As he spoke to this point he still felt rather pleased with himself, could it be he had the mouth of Kong Ming?

He carefully said: “See, isn’t it fine now? She’s agreed to send us back, no blood was spilled, and we even made a friend……”

Such an affectionate way to talk about her! Yu Zhi Jue had already stopped listening to the end of Ling Xia’s words.

Doesn’t matter if it’s what Mu Rong Xue, or Ke Lan MinErBai, or any other person’s name, he doesn’t wish to hear it from this person’s mouth!

Yu Zhi Jue unhesitantly pressed himself on that chattering mouth, because of the force he used he had bitten Ling Xia’s lips.

“???!!!” Ling Xia’s eyes widened in astonishment in the darkness, because he was too shocked, he even let the other party’s tongue pry open his teeth, and stuck itself in.

He had been wanting to do this since daytime, not in his sleep, but when he’s awake……

Yu Zhi Jue firmly embraced Ling Xia, his whole body was heated up, before when he managed to get a reaction out of Ling Xia when he was still unconscious he felt as if he was so happy he was going to explode.

Only until this moment was the smothering sour pain in his heart able to be released……

He kissed him very hard for a while, and noticed that Ling Xia had not response at all, and suddenly recalled that this person seemed to like the gentle type more. Yu Zhi Jue lessened his force, with his hands holding Ling Xia's face they slowly twirled, his face was burning.

Just that the taste of wine lingered in Ling Xia's mouth, as soon as he thought that he had drunk it with that woman, Yu Zhi Jue was so angry he bit down on his tongue softly several times.

The air in his lungs dispersed in a flash, his brain felt dizzy.

By the time Ling Xia finally sobered up, he pushed him away in fright, he actually pushed Yu Zhi Jue two steps back. He held his red swollen lips in horror, he panted, and disbelief he spoke: "Ah Jue, what are you doing?"

To be interrupted suddenly, Yu Zhi Jue was quite unsatisfied, he licked his lips and spoke: "Just like this, like before whether it was in the water, or when you were unconscious, we had been doing this."

Yu Zhi Jue's voice which was still changing in puberty brought a strange hoarseness due to his desire.

That voice spoke indifferently about things matter-of-factually in the dark room, the temperature of Ling Xia's face was so hot he could cook porridge with it.

What do you mean whether in the water, or when I was unconscious?

This, my first kiss was taken by my own brother?!

……Seems that while he was dreaming of kissing somebody, and not only did it feel realistic it also didn't feel bad……

That flat princess is, is Yu Zhi Jue?!……

Ling Xia's brain stopped working, he could not function normally at all right now. Speaking of which this isn't the biggest problem right now isn't it?!

By the time he noticed Yu Zhi Jue getting closer to him again, he was almost shocked, he relentlessly retreated to the side, with a flushed face he incoherently said: "That, Ah Jue, you're not j-joking are you?"

"What joke?" Yu Zhi Jue looked at him and halted his movements, his eyes suddenly cooled, his heart felt slightly irritated, why would this person reject him?

He clenched his fist and said: "When we did this before you looked so happy, and even took the initiative to respond to me……"

Ling Xia wanted to quickly dig a pit and bury himself after listening to his words, why did the other party's complaining feel like he were the one who had started it? This child was probably curious and didn't understand right? Yu Zhi Jue probably doesn't understand what a kiss symbolized……

He turned his heated face over and said exhaustedly: "This isn't right, how could two men kiss?……"

Notes:
•You can lead a horse to water but you can't make it drink – originally "A forcefully twisted melon is not sweet" but that makes no sense in English.
•When describing Ke Lan MinErBai as "not bloodthirsty" the word is actually , blood, blood/fish smell, pervert/abnormal attitude, I thought the words used to describe the demonic cultivators was pretty funny, but it's quite a shame there's not many words I can use to replace that.
•When trying to woo Ke Lan MinErBai into releasing them, Ling Xia uses the first person pronoun of " " to refer to himself, this means "under" as in he is under her, it is an old humble way to refer to oneself when you're buttering people up or if they're your boss or customer.
•When Yu Zhi Jue confronts Ling Xia about his actions he says "Why towards that woman with fake feelings you talked and laughed?" but again Chinese doesn't make sense in English, but it also feels like a lot of the feeling isn't going through. so TIME FOR CHINESE CLASS eye emoji, helli's chinese corner lmfao
•Kong Ming is Zhuge Liang, a famed strategist from the three kingdoms era.
• Taiping Princess, tranquil princess, is a pun. Taiping can mean peace and tranquility but the letters themselves mean "too flat"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 17

“So this is called a kiss?” Yu Zhi Jue licked his lips, his eyes brightened up frighteningly in the darkness, “Why can’t two men do this? Do you want to find that Mu Rong Xue or other women to do this with them?”

Ling Xia didn’t dare to look into his eyes, he explained in a fluster: “That’s not what I mean, just that this is something done by people who like each other mutually……”

Yu Zhi Jue heart clenched, and could only feel an unbearable sour pain, he gritted his teeth: “Does this mean I like you, but you hate me?!”

“……”Ling Xia felt powerless as if he were a chicken talking to a duck, he exclaimed: “That’s not it, of course I like Ah Jue……”

Before he could say the “but” that follows, Yu Zhi Jue had already once again reappear in front of him, and pressed down on both his arms, his lips planted onto his again.

Ling Xia was dumbfounded, he wanted to push Yu Zhi Jue as if he were mad, the other party had already taken precautions and increased his strength, his attempts at speaking were swallowed down by Yu Zhi Jue ending up with a “wuwu”, the space inside his mouth had also been completely invaded.

Fuck! Ling Xia’s scalp tingled, instantly goosebumps raised all over his body. He thought he would feel unbearably disgusted, but in actuality, Yu Zhi Jue’s young and not yet mature taste was extremely sweet, the kiss caused his head to go blank.

Although he can teach Yu Zhi Jue as a senior in other aspects, but in this aspect, he was also a tragic novice……

The tongue belonging to someone else in his mouth is slick and wet, and swept around nimbly in his oral cavity. Ling Xia realized this fact, and

wanted to bite down on it, to let Yu Zhi Jue sober up, But, after hesitating for half a day he was still frozen stiff, he couldn’t bite down– because Yu Zhi Jue’s entire body was trembling, and his heart was beating extremely fiercely.

This child, isn’t joking?

Ling Xia was at a total loss.

After a long time, Yu Zhi Jue finally released him with a bit of reluctance, he rested his chin on Ling Xia’s shoulder and held him firmly in his embrace. the hoarse voice could hardly hide its shaking: “You like me too, I’m so happy……”

“In the four years that you were missing, I practiced obediently every day, I have always been waiting for you to return…… If you really had died like they said, I will definitely kill them all for revenge!……”

Although the words spoken by the young man were bloodthirsty words, they revealed sadness and agitation.

Ling Xia was stupefied as he listened, he thought of the words spoken by Yu Zhi Jue at the end of the book, and a part of his heart felt stuffy and uncomfortable. Even if there is a thousand words to explain, at this moment, he could say nothing.

After he returned, Yu Zhi Jue had only revealed a bit of emotion when they first met again.

This child is too stubborn…… because he had received punishment in place of him, had he always been bringing this feeling of guilt in his heart? An obsession brewed within these four years, so now he had mistaken his feelings as this kind of like…… What’s even more likely was, Yu Zhi Jue probably had never even understood the difference between normal like and love.

It’s probably like that?

In these years other than cultivating his child had been cultivating. he had no experience interacting with girls his age, his circle is too narrow. Meanwhile Song Xiao Hu had friends all around the world, and he was quite careless, so, Yu Zhi Jue is probably quite lonely isn't he?……

In any case, he has to guide him slowly, and let him interact normally with girls his age.

However, this isn't the time to talk about this, they were still in the middle of the sea right now, Chu Yin is also still looking all over for Yu Zhi Jue, and Yu Zhi Jue is currently agitated and gullible…… He can only gradually think of a plan after today.

After a long while, Ling Xia gave Yu Zhi Jue's back a pat to comfort him: "Ah Jue, I know, I will definitely accompany you by your side. Why won't we have a good talk when we're back?"

–Always accompany you, as your older brother.

Yu Zhi Jue felt an unknown joy slowly rising up in his heart, Ling Xia said he would accompany him by his side always…… He looked over to the side of Ling Xia's face and couldn't help but gently touch his cheeks with his lips, with his face flushed he spoke seriously: "You have to abide by your words."

The feeling on his face felt as light as cotton, with a moist coolness, but it made Ling Xia feel more hopeless than the passionate kiss from earlier, his heart beat heavily, and made a "mm" sound in his fluster.

Yu Zhi Jue glanced at his eyes, and quickly turned his gaze away.

Looking at the in-concealable curve on Yu Zhi Jue's lips and eyes that were lit up with shyness, Ling Xia's head was buzzing– This time, the trouble really is too big!

Song Xiao Hu finally broke through the blockade left by Yu Zhi Jue on the door and rushed in, and said with a sense of self-satisfaction:" Haha, Ah Jue, don't think that I'm not able to enter!……"

Speaking to that point, he was stunned to see the two people hugging tightly– This seem strange? Mm, this scene seems quite familiar……

Ling Xia guiltily pushed Yu Zhi Jue away, and dove straight into the innermost part of the small bed to hide: “Xiao Hu, it’s time to rest, Ke Lan MinErBai will send us off tomorrow.” Yu Zhi Jue gave Song Xiao Hu a glance, and unhesitatingly took his boots off and climbed in as well, with the two laying down like that, the small bed instantly became full.

Song Xiao Hu immediately forgot about what just happened, he just stared at them with eyes the size of grapes and asked: “Then where do I sleep?”

Yu Zhi Jue pointed at a corner, and waved to Song Xiao Hu as if he were shooing a puppy.

“…… Ah Jue’s bullying people!” Song Xiao Hu grumbled, but still obediently sat down against the corner and closed his eyes, soon he hung his mouth and slept extremely well.

Ling Xia felt like there were barbs on his back, and uncomfortably scooted to the front more, but his waist was quickly caught by Yu Zhi Jue’s hands. He didn’t dare to turn around and face Yu Zhi Jue, and he was also afraid of waking up the Song Xiao Hu who was had fallen asleep in the corner, his body tightened, and the nervousness made his heart beat faster.

Fortunately Yu Zhi Jue did not make any other movements, he only rested his head tightly against his back, Ling Xia felt his spine tingle from his breaths blowing against him, all kinds of discomfort were felt in his heart.

He really wanted to wipe his tears, what kind of godly progression is this? Although the villain had no ships in the original story, but he didn’t have any gay inclinations either! Breaking a young girl’s heart is unforgivable, but…… what about young boys’ hearts?

He tried to coax himself, because of the previous accidental kisses, and that awkward sex education lesson he had given Yu Zhi Jue last time. kids

at this age gets sexual delusions very easily, because the only person he comes in contact with is himself, only because of that he started having such delusions or mistaking his impulses as love right?……

With his self consolation, he finally calmed down.

When Ling Xia remembered something, his face instantly heated up again, he could not wait to go and die– How had he forgotten? The room next door is the goddess' room!

Not only that but he had also carved out a small window to hand something over?!

He and Yu Zhi Jue had been passionately kissing and embracing earlier, it can't be that she saw it and heard it all could it?!!!

That being said, Mu Rong Xue's room had been strangely quiet since just now……

Crap! Crap! The story is completely ruined! He couldn't have opened a new window into fujoshi-hood for the goddess could he?

Ling Xia shamefully clutched the bed sheets tightly, if not for Yu Zhi Jue hugging him tightly, he could jump into the ocean for the rest of his life and never come out.

The next day, Ke Lan MinErBai really did keep her promises, her pirate crew even had a small base nearby, she brought the few of them directly there, presented them with a medium-sized vessel, and there were even assigned them several shipmates to help.

In addition, she even gave Ling Xia a small bottle and a book, she grinned: "In here is the egg of an eighth-grade spider, Ling Bro, you're a great guy, but your martial arts is no good. Next time if anyone bullies you, just let this spider bite him! The method to breed it is written in the book."

Ling Xia knows Ke Lan MinErBai's temperament, and didn't dilly-dally, he received it and smiled: "It's quite unfortunate I have nothing appropriate

to gift you right now. Let’s meet again another day, and we should chat over a bottle of wine again!”

The ship had moved far away, Ling Xia watched the vague figure of the young girl from afar, and he sighed in his heart. He never thought that the protagonist wouldn’t start any sparks with the girls, while he himself, had become friends with a girl.

Yu Zhi Jue coldly spoke: “How much longer do you want to look?”

Before this Ling Xia always thought that this child was just throwing a tantrum, after experiencing that suffering that made his heart and mind exhausted, he sensitively picked up several unusual meanings from Yu Zhi Jue’s words– Fuck, how long had he been reflecting these hints? How had he never noticed this before?

Ling Xia had an impulse to hit his head on the wall, a child’s puppy love is not a problem, but the key point was, the target of his puppy love was himself!

He pretended to laugh naturally: “Mm, let’s go in first, Miss Mu Rong probably still has something to say.”

Yu Zhi Jue wasn’t as bold during the day as compared to the night, but the shy and sweet look of a young boy in love was present on his face, although his face did not laugh, the joy showing through his brows were hard to conceal.

Even Song Xiao Hu noticed it, and spoke in confusion: “Ah Jue, what’s up with you?”

Ling Xia felt even more guilty.

Mu Rong Xue’s face was the same as usual, Ling Xia didn’t dare to examine her carefully either, and could only pray that the goddess did not notice the things that happened last night.

He was like a mouse crossing the street right now, seeing Yu Zhi Jue made him feel guilty, seeing Mu Rong Xue made him feel guilty, even seeing Song Xiao Hu, made him fear that his eyes that were wide as grapes would expose any clues– Fuck, he didn't do anything bad did he? But it seems, he really had done it……

Mu Rong Xue slowly spoke: "Several days ago when the astrologers from the Holy Maiden Peak were observing the stars, they deduced that the destroyer of worlds had appeared, and it was a Male who had connections with the Holy Maiden Peak."

As she spoke she gave Yu Zhi Jue a quick glance, and spoke quietly: "I do not believe these predictions."

Ling Xia was surprised: "What destroyer of worlds? Could it be Ah Jue?"

Mu Rong Xue nodded her head: "The four great guardians from the Lingxiao Pavilion of the Holy Maiden Peak has already moved out, I alone can not prevent these forces, so I think that no matter what happens I must find him, to give him a notice."

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes were cold, he naturally knew what the Lingxiao Pavilion was. He sneered: "Is that right? I was just thinking when I should take a visit to the Holy Maiden Peak."

Song Xiao Hu was enraged when he heard it: "Which bastard said that? How could Ah Jue be that what destroyer of worlds? Don't speak randomly, Miss Mu Rong.

Ling Xia was startled, how did he not remember that the original story still had the part where the diviners deduced Yu Zhi Jue as the destroyer of worlds? And why did Mu Rong Xue come to inform Yu Zhi Jue? Isn't this equal to her betraying the Holy Maiden Peak?

The Holy Maiden Peak had been searching for Yu Zhi Jue all this time, but due to their pride, they wouldn't do a search on a grand scale, but only secretly. But now what four great guardians, just listening to it felt badass alright? Not to mention the disappearance of the Holy Maiden is a huge

situation for the Holy Maiden Peak, with Mu Rong Xue together with them, the target had become even bigger!

Ling Xia rubbed his hands nervously: “Thank you very much for this lady’s report. Just that Miss Mu Rong, for you to move out alone is very dangerous, why don’t we send you back after reaching the port in front?……”

Mu Rong Xue gently said: “Many thanks, but I didn’t come out this time just for the notice.”

She slowly raised her head as she spoke, and revealed a faint smile: “Everyday is happy when I’m outside, I want to be like that Miss Ke Lan, living a free life, going wherever I please. Let’s part ways when we reach the shore, I’m bringing a lot of medicinal herbs and pills on me, it’s enough to keep me alive, you don’t have to worry about me.”

“……” The book really did not contain a period of the Holy Maiden’s rebellion…… That being said the goddess brought so many things out, and she looked dainty and beautiful, wouldn’t it be weird if she weren’t targeted?

Ling Xia held his forehead: “Miss Mu Rong, you don’t understand the sinister hearts of people at all, it was still fine when you met Ke Lan MinErBai, but if you meet other wicked people…… that……”

Mu Rong Xue curiously said: “I’ll be kidnapped and bullied by bad men? My handmaid had always said that to me.”

She gently smiled as she spoke: “But no matter what happens, I wish to see the scenery outside.”

Ling Xia felt a strong sense of powerlessness, that is true as well, the goddess is still just a naive little girl right now…… Is it possible to not be bored being closed up in the mountain everyday? Just that in any case, he still wanted to advise Mu Rong Xue to return. If the goddess stays there, and progresses along with the plot, a day will come when the protagonist will come to save her.

Yu Zhi Jue coldly took a glance at Ling Xia, he snorted and pushed the door open to leave.

Ling Xia hurriedly faced Song Xiao Hu: “You go take a look at Ah Jue, he’s probably still angry now right?”

Song Xiao Hu also felt worried, and hurriedly followed.

Actually Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze did not show any anger from hearing the news from Mu Rong Xue, even more so it was “Why are you still talking to her? Do you dare say one more word?……”

Ling Xia’s mouth twitched, he was currently very afraid of being alone with Yu Zhi Jue.

In addition, he had also wanted to ask Mu Rong Xue, why would she face such great danger to look for Yu Zhi Jue– Fuck! There’s something between the villain and the goddess? He wouldn’t believe it even if you beat him to death!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 18

When only two people were left in the room, Ling Xia instantly started to feel uneasy, every move he made felt especially uncomfortable. But what he needed to ask still needed to be asked, he carefully spoke: “Miss Mu Rong, were you……familiar with Ah Jue before this?”

Mu Rong Xue nodded her head, with a slightly low tone she spoke: “I’ve seen him when I was young.”

Starting from when she was young, no matter where she went, a group of reverent and respectful handmaids have been following behind her shadow. The furthest distance she had walked was from the Holy Maiden’s palace to the medical room. She had been told not to talk to strangers, leaving the mountain is not allowed, and even making a friend was forbidden– All the people who lived there were all her subordinates.

When she was four years old, on one occasion, she saw several women hitting and scolding a small child she had never seen in the medicinal herb field, this child was about the same age as her, but he was thin and pitiful.

Even though he was surrounded by several adults and was beaten and scolded by them, he kept his mouth closed, and did not make a single noise.

On the edge of his eye was a mole, red like the color of blood.

Mu Rong Xue’s young heart was terrified, and immediately burst into tears. Her handmaid went over at once to order the women to kneel and strike their own mouths a hundred times, and commanded: “Hurry up and send this vile spawn to the back mountain, don’t scare the Holy Maiden!”

That child was dragged off by the collar roughly by someone, Mu Rong Xue was carried by her nanny in her arms and taken back. She saw the look of that child through her tearful eyes, stubbornly gritting his teeth, there was a clear mark of a palm, but not a single tear.

Mu Rong Xue wanted to make that person let go of that child, but she didn’t know how to bring it up.

There was always someone teaching her what to do, but whatever she thought in her heart, were always reprimanded with humility yet lacking in emotion by her handmaids: “This is not allowed, Holy Maiden.”

While returning she asked her nanny which was closest to her: “Granny Cha, who is that child?”

The look in Granny Cha’s eyes were no longer the same kind look, but rather a scorning and hateful look that had never appeared before: “That is a vulgar and hateful man! They only know how to deceive us women, Holy Maiden you must remember you should never interact with these filthy things.”

After that, she finally couldn’t resist her curiosity, and secretly slipped out during her nap, she wanted to see the outside world. Just that as she ran, she had accidentally gotten lost, ended up in the back mountain, and unexpectedly saw the boy again.

The sunlight shining through the awn dyed the ground with a shade of tangerine, the boy was playing with a dog underneath a tree. He took out some steamed buns from his clothes, the expression on his face was different from last time, his expression was extremely warm as he looked at the small dog, as if he wanted to touch it, but didn’t dare to. She could only peep from behind the tree.

She felt that the boy was not as scary as what Granny Cha said.

A big and tall woman suddenly came over, and slapped the boy’s face aside. She conveniently picked up the dog from its neck and sneered: “You inferior thing, not working and you still want to raise a dog? You stole steamed buns from the kitchen didn’t you?” As she spoke, she actually threw the puppy down the cliff.

The boy rushed over to bite her arm as if he were crazed.

Mu Rong Xue's heart was beating loudly, she felt heartbroken. But she gripped the tree trunk tightly, her legs seemed as if they were nailed to the floor, she watched the boy getting beaten by the woman until he fainted without blinking, from the start to the end she never stepped out. Later she was found and carried back, and was disciplined for a good many days, until she pledged to everybody that she would never run off again.

And later, she heard someone report to a guardian that the boy was missing.

As Mu Rong Xue spoke to this point, she slowly lifted up her head, the beautiful eyes as clear as water were filled with remorse: "Do you also hate and despise me after hearing this? I may be revered by the Holy Maiden Peak as the Holy Maiden, yet I couldn't even do a single thing I had wanted to do."

Her voice was very gentle, because she wasn't eloquent her way of speech was very simple, Ling Xia's heart felt even more stuffy, there was a pain in his heart that was difficult to explain. The things she spoke about, was the childhood of Yu Zhi Jue……when the goddess was young she was a lovable child.

He finally pulled out a smile: "Not at all, you were still a child then."

–A child should not bear the sins of adults.

Ling Xia felt that he must make one thing clear, the goddess was such a healing type of gentle girl, if she could develop well with Yu Zhi Jue, he could also eliminate Yu Zhi Jue's obsession towards himself, wasn't that a beautiful thing. He cautiously spoke: "Well, for you to endanger yourself to come out and find Ah Jue, what did you do that for?"

"Probably because I felt sorry, I couldn't believe at all, that that person who had smiled to a small dog, would be a bad person." Mu Rong Xue gently smiled, "Every time I think of this I start to feel ashamed, fortunately, he is doing well now, he still had friends like you whom he could mutually trust."

Speaking to that point, she lowered her head, her gaze quickly swept over Ling Xia's lips, and her face flushed red.

Ling Xia stiffly licked the wound on his lips caused by Yu Zhi Jue's bite, and his heart cried without tears–The goddess has definitely seen it right? Damn! Seems like the possibility of the goddess getting together with Yu Zhi Jue, was destroyed by himself……

Although his emotions felt a bit chaotic, he still thickened his skin and asked one final question: "Miss Mu Rong, why didn't you remember me? I still haven't officially thanked you for saving my life. Do you still remember me? I was the one who was brought to the Holy Maiden Peak by a masked senior to seek medical help……"

Mu Rong Xue lifted her head and stared blankly at him for a moment, she smiled in embarrassment: "It's like this, I was a bit dumber than usual since I was young, I can only recognize people who were close to me and had interacted with me a lot……The only reason I recognized Yu Zhi Jue was due to the mole under his eye."

"……"This is practically thunder on a sunny day! The goddess actually had facial blindness! No wonder she looked at him as if he were a passer-by this whole time!

After saying their farewells and parting with Mu Rong Xue, Ling Xia quickly found Yu Zhi Jue at the stern of the ship.

His wit tells him, that keeping his distance was the best, but he still went over uncontrollably, and watched Yu Zhi Jue with a warm gaze–Hearing about Yu Zhi Jue's childhood from Mu Rong Xue's mouth, he suddenly felt an urge to rub the top of his head.

This is just a stubborn and awkwardly cute young man, not the villain from the book, neither is he any sort of destroyer of worlds.

Yu Zhi Jue's cheeks reddened from his gaze, he felt a bit overwhelmed and turned his gaze elsewhere, he scoffed: "So you finally feel like showing up?"

Ling Xiao couldn’t help but smile: “Naturally, I said I would stay with you always.”

Right now not only was the Holy Maiden Peak looking for Yu Zhi Jue, there were also the demonic cultivators, but luckily neither of the both parties would start a search on a grand scale. As for the other matters, they could only set them aside for the time being.

They had no more bumps in their voyage, and arrived smoothly at Yunxiao city. Within a thousand li from Yunxiao City is the territory of Chongming City’s Shaoyang Sect.

Under Ling Xia’s persuasion, Mu Rong Xue did not leave alone, but rather dressed herself as a boy and joined them on their trip to Shaoyang Sect. Ling Xia looked on the bright side, she just wanted to take a breath of freedom anyway, she came out to see the world but she would still definitely return due to her sense of responsibility. He was also quite worried about this gentle and simple little girl, she was a bit more safer with them.

Walking inside Yunxiao City, Ling Xia couldn’t help but thought of Cui Yu and the others, he unconsciously shouted, back then his last words, were relayed to Yu Zhi Jue by Cui Yu……

Yu Zhi Jue clearly had also thought about it, and his face gloomed significantly.

Along the way, Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue had gotten a fair bit closer, Song Xiao Hu naturally had a personality that was easy to get close to, plus now that Mu Rong Xue was dressed as a handsome young boy, Song Xiao Hu had already started treating her like a bro. Sometimes Ling Xia couldn’t resist and gave Song Xiao Hu a few words of advice, telling him to take note, to prevent provoking peach blossoms.

If he hurts the goddess’ heart in the future, it doesn’t matter whether he’s the badass protagonist, Ling Xia would surely beat him up!

Song Xiao Hu obviously didn’t understand the relationships between men and women right now, and only dazedly asked: “What’s a peach blossom?”

Ling Xia put on an air of seriousness and taught him: “The so-called peach blossom, is the girl. Although it was quite common for a man to marry three to four wives, but a girl’s heart is very delicate, a relationship is best mutual, a heart can not be separated into several pieces, understand?”

To tell the truth just taking a look at a stallion novel was fine, but in reality, he really didn’t want Song Xiao Hu to bring him a big flock of brothers and sisters–with the goddess included!

Song Xiao Hu suddenly blushed: “I’m going to become the most powerful martial god in these lands! How could I still find time to care about those troublesome women? I don’t plan to marry……”

“……” alright then, a strong person being single was better than being gay, protagonist, you can do it!

To avoid anything too awkward from happening, Ling Xia booked separate rooms for all of them, and usually avoided any case of being alone with only two people. Every time Yu Zhi Jue seemed to have any intentions of hugging him, Ling Xia would find an excuse to stop it, So Yu Zhi Jue’s face had gotten darker by the day, Ling Xia guiltily pretended he didn’t notice.

When they were about to leave Yunxiao City, Ling Xia didn’t think that they would meet Cui Yu and seven or eight other Yunxiao City disciples.

He recognized Cui Yu at a glance, because the grown up Cui Yu was still riding that demonic beast steed, a whip was tied to her waist, it seems that Cui Yu had changed quite a lot……to be precise she had grown up, and had become more stable.

Yunxiao City and Shaoyang Sect disciples are quite familiar with each other, the friction between the two years did not end in these years, but on the surface they still seemed peaceful.

Song Xiao Hu could of course stand his ground in the face of outsiders, he courteously exchanged pleasantries with the people from Yunxiao City, Ling Xia consciously turned his faace to the side. Yu Zhi Jue abhorred Yunxiao City, without even glancing at anyone, he stood to Ling Xia's side as well.

Ling Xia was still surprised by Cui Yu, before this Cui Yu that little girl would have a lovestruck look on her face every time she saw Yu Zhi Jue, now she only gave a simple nod at this direction, it seemed like there were no differences between him and Song Xiao Hu.

But this was great too, Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief, he feared that this missy would make another flashy action.

When the two groups of people were about to separate, Cui Yu's gaze swept over Ling Xia's face, and was immediately frozen in place.

A "click" sounded in Ling Xia's heart and he immediately turned his face to the side, his face had changed quite a fair bit in these four years, if he could still be recognized, wouldn't Cui Yu's vision be too toxic?

"You……You are……" Cui Yu had already jumped down from her steed, a beautiful leaping body landed in front of Ling Xia's body. She stared dazedly at Ling Xia, her lips slightly trembling, clearly showing excitement.

Ling Xia's heart suddenly alerted, if Shang Kai and Yu Tiancheng found out he was still alive…… His felt a faint regret in his heart for not disguising himself.

Yu Zhi Jue's spiritual wood sword was broken into pieces by Ke Lan MinErBai before this, and currently he could only secretly gather elemental energy in the palm of his hands–He did not mind preparing for a murder!

But Cui Yu eventually settled down, and did not call out Ling Xia's name.

She quickly walked past everyone, and jumped onto her steed again, she waved the reins and said: "My mistake, I got the wrong person." She turned

her head and once again took a look at Ling Xia, and left straight away with the other disciples.

To tell the truth, this missy's current appearance was even more shocking than her loud shrieking.

Song Xiao Hu was a bit confused: "Ling Dage, did she recognize you just now?"

Yu Zhi Jue's hand turned, and the energy gathered at his palm disappeared without at race, but at the same time his heart filled with monstrous anger and indescribable irritability–The look on that woman's eyes when she looked at Ling Xia earlier……

In actuality, the two did not have any sort of intimate contact since that day. Yu Zhi Jue looked desperately towards Ling Xia, the other party was smiling towards the Mu Rong Xue by his side. This person is always like this, treating everyone so well!

He desired to be able to hold this man at any time, to kiss his forehead and warm lips, to embrace him as they slept……

Yu Zhi Jue rigidly bit down on his lower lips, why is Ling Xia constantly avoiding him despite saying that he would always be by his side?

Notes:
•Holy Maiden's palace – (Qin Gong), the emperor's resting area, or a harem palace, she belongs to neither of those groups and I can't call it royal chambers so Holy Maiden's palace it is. Ayy Helli's Chinese corner LMAO
•He took out some steamed buns from his clothes – the steamed buns were kept in his which means arm/embrace/bosom/chest so I used clothes because chinese people like to keep things in their sleeves/near their belt. Ye boi just drop them buns down your collar.
•A thousand li = about 250 miles, each li is about 418 meters in olden days, one li is currently considered 500 meters in modern times.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 19

After reaching Shaoyang Sect Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue brought the Liao Ran to cure the poison first, Ling Xia and Mu Rong Xue stayed in Yu Zhi Jue's residence and waited. Yu Zhi Jue is currently Feng Shuming's most reliable disciple, his residence had been replaced to one by a small river surrounded by mountains and rivers. Because Yu Zhi Jue enjoyed peace and quiet, nobody else lived in the surrounding area, it was secluded yet at the same time it was peaceful.

The aquamarine river water is beautiful, and full of spiritual energy. Ling Xia watched as Mu Rong Xue sat down at the riverside and played with the water like a child, he couldn't help but feel that it was pretty funny, the goddess in his eyes is currently just a small girl that hadn't grown up.

He watched the hills in the distance, and inwardly pondered over what he should do next.

Firstly Ah Li had not been found yet, he is an eighth grade demonic beast, he wouldn't be killed at sea, but to search for him in the vast ocean is another big problem. Ah Li is the protagonist's companion beast in the book, so it was quite easy to find him if they were to be separated, but currently due to the deviation in the scenario, Ah Li had not entered into a contract with anyone.

In addition, although he had agreed to stay by Yu Zhi Jue's side, but…… The current situation really was quite awkward. And if Yu Zhi Jue were to bring up any requests to kiss and hug, what should he do?

So he still had to find a suitable opportunity to resolve this matter without hurting Yu Zhi Jue.

And the next problem was the matter concerning his cultivation, this path was too hurrying, they had no leisure time at all to calm down.

Currently his body's spiritual power and wood element energy's cultivation is considered to have improved slightly, during this period of time he can ask Mu Rong Xue to teach him about cultivating medicinal herbs more, it should be noted that Mu Rong Xue is in fact a genius healer and alchemist.

After thinking for a while, Ling Xia quietly opened a roll of straw paper, and started designing energy swords with the sketches. The two youngsters still did not own an energy sword that belonged to them personally, energy swords have many more requirements than normal artifacts, the factors he needed to consider were also greater.

The pattern of the sword is slowly designed by Ling Xia, before this he had great interests in online games, and had personally designed many weapons, so this was not a problem at all. Then there's the materials, he needs to consider which materials to use to combine perfectly together, and also to meet the owner's own attributes, so that the defending, supporting, and attacking ability can be used to its full potential.

Ling Xia was absorbed in designing and labeling, until a hand pressed on top of the paper, only then was he interrupted. He looked up in shock, and just now noticed Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu had returned, the sky outside had also started to dim.

Song Xiao Hu's eyes widened as he saw the pictures and beamed: "Ling Dage, martial sister Feng Luo's poison has already been cured. Is this designed for me and Ah Jue?"

Ling Xia nodded, his heart felt content. The famous sword-makers in this alternate world weren't many, but the swords they create are often of the same design, the swords they design weren't as cool as his own. He smiled: "I've never refined swords before, the designing will still take some time."

It was not known when but Mu Rong Xue had entered as well, she quietly sat at the side and read the medical book she had brought with her, at this time she had stood up as well: "I saw that Ling Dage you were too serious, so I did not want to bother you."

As soon as Ling Xia saw her, he immediately thought of something, where is the goddess going to stay tonight? Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu's residences are naturally innapropriate. Feng Luo's place was a good choice, but she still hasn't recovered after curing her poison……

Four people ate a simple meal, and Song Xiao Hu was the first to notice this issue, he laughed: "Tonight I'll bring Miss Mu Rong over to martial sister Feng Xu's place, there are several empty rooms in her residence, I can just say that Miss Mu Rong is my relative."

Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief, and nodded his head with a smile. The protagonist's luck of being a good person is undoubted, especially his luck with women.

Song Xiao Hu quickly left with Mu Rong Xue, and the room promptly quieted down.

……It's strangely quiet.

Ling Xia cleaned everything up with a slightly guilty conscience, during the afternoon he took the chance when Yu Zhi Jue wasn't around to tidy up the unoccupied room next door. While cleaning up he smiled: "Ah Jue you should rest early, "these few days has troubled you enough, I'm going next door to continue read for awhile……"

Yu Zhi Jue watched him silently, beautiful phoenix eyes glowed brilliantly in the dark, an unclear mood flickered in his gaze.

Currently Ling Xia did not quite dare to stare straight at the two clean and clear eyes like winter stars, he even turned around in a fluster to leave, but without waiting for him to take more than two steps, he was hugged tightly from behind. Two hands clasping tightly around his waist, brought a ferverous heat and strength that was hard to ignore.

Ling Xia suddenly froze stiff, is it really ok for him to be in such a girly pose?

Yu Zhi Jue clearly also felt a bit embarrassed, with a wave of his hand a frozen blade was released and extinguished the candlelight, the room darkened in an instant.

The sudden darkness caused Ling Xia's conditioned reflex to shut his eyes, he was then swiftly turned over, Yu Zhi Jue kissed him almost as if he couldn't wait.

Ling Xia felt shocked, and opened his mouth to speak: "Ah Jue, don't do this……mmgh……"

With his attempt to speak, a slippery and agile tongue immediately wrapped inside his mouth, the two lips were pressed tightly together without any space between them.

This child……is quite a genius in this factor isn't he? A shudder ran down Ling Xia's spine, although it was distressing, he had to admit, Yu Zhi Jue's kissing techniques are improving very quickly……fuck!

He pushed Yu Zhi Jue with force, but his struggling allowed this young man to hug him even tighter. he struggled in distress, yet the other's arm had way more strength than his, one of the two retreated while the other advanced and they stumbled around the room, the two lips changed angles but from start to finish they were never separated.

The stool was kicked over, and the candle fell off the table, the painting on the wall had also been torn……

Ling Xia had never felt so lost before, it felt like the person he was dealing with was not the familiar young man, rather a stranger with ridiculous strength who could control him……

In the end Ling Xia was pressed down by Yu Zhi Jue on the bed, Yu Zhi Jue's legs held down his legs, two hands were placed at his sides, there was no way to escape.

His head felt dizzy due to the lack of oxygen, two powerless hands resisted at Yu Zhi Jue's chest, but they could not resist the other's

movements.

Yu Zhi Jue's kiss always had a hint of anxiety and urgency, his breath is fast and hot, only now did it slowly start to calm down, and he resumed his careful touch.

Ling Xia numbingly closed his eyes, his heart quietly dripped with blood–He has thrown away the pride of eighteen generations of his ancestors, he had actually been pressed down by a child and kissed for half a day! Is he still a damned man?

He wanted to say that he was disgusted, but in reality he had even lost himself in the kiss for a moment.

Realizing this fact, Ling Xia felt overwhelmed by sorrow, fuck! He had fantasized about someone overflowing with enthusiasm towards him just like this–but the prerequisite as that she had to be a girl!

Yu Zhi Jue finally stopped, he rested his head on his chest and complained: "Why do you keep avoiding me?"

"……" Ling Xia licked his numb lips, and his Adam's apple bobbed, in the darkness Yu Zhi Jue's breath made him tremble. Currently the young man's tone familiarly brought a sense of dissatisfaction and shyness, he almost thought that what happened just now was just an illusion.

Ling Xia swallowed hard: "I didn't." The two words that came out of his mouth shocked him, because his voice was mixed with hoarseness and an unfamiliar flavor, yet it was sexy in a way that was not shown before.

Yu Zhi Jue was also dazed, and his face started to heat up, he stuck to the side of Ling XIa's ears and whispered: "I want to kiss you like this every day, hold you as I sleep, don't go next door, let's live together……"

Don't request to live together so nonchalantly young man! I really only like……girls!

The warm breath brought a strange sensation to his ear, Ling Xia couldn't help but shudder, following Yu Zhi Jue's words his face was getting hotter and hotter, there was almost a feeling of dizziness.

He shifted his head over in embarrassment, and spoke callously: "Ah Jue, That……I……"

But he couldn't say the words that came after, because Yu Zhjue's hands had been stuck inside his clothes!

He had never had such an experience before, Ling Xia was immediately dumbfounded. By the time he rushed over to resist, Yu Zhi Jue's hands had already nimbly removed his belt, and slipped into his trousers, directly holding his lower part that had perked up after being stimulated earlier!

Yu Zhi Jue's voice clearly stuttered unnaturally: "You said that after awhile men would have to do this……last time you……it made me feel very comfortable……I want to help you too……"

Ling Xia really wanted to go hang himself on a branch facing southeast, what is digging your own grave? Why did the sex ed that he had racked his brains come to this sort of understanding? There are no such inappropriate contents amongst brothers!

"Don't do this……"The skin that had been touched couldn't resist shuddering, the unfamiliar stimulation caused Ling Xia to writhe forcefully. But Yu Zhi Jue had already started moving persistently, Ling Xia was shocked to find that frail part had started reacting to Yu Zhi Jue's movements without a struggle!

For him to be at such a vigorous age, coupled with the fact that he had gone too long without release, and besides for men to be stimulated there it doesn't matter whether they were willing or not there are still natural reactions……

Even if he knew this, ling Xia still felt deeply ashamed, he struggled for his life: "Ah Jue, don't……"

Yu Zhi Jue discovered that the more Ling Xia resisted him this way, the more his blood started to boil.

For this calm and restrained man to become so flustered under his own hands, yet his hoarse voice was extremely pleasant to listen to, the occasional moan made it hard to bear for him.

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly discovered that he was quite obsessed with this feeling.

He lowered his head and planted himself on Ling Xia's lips, his right hand continued to move, and swallowed all the resisting words. He had long cultivated to the point where he could see clearly at night, so he could clearly see this person's dazed expression and cheeks that were so red they looked like they would bleed, that pair of misty eyes and the desperately resisting expression made him love it to death……

His heart felt as if it was stuffed full with something, the dissatisfaction and jealousy from these past few days were all gone, so sweet it almost bloomed……

After an unknown period of time, Ling Xia's back shuddered, his mind was blank, the chaotic creaking of the bed had also stopped.

The fact that he had come under Yu Zhi Jue's hands, made him shocked, he breathed heavily, his chest bobbing non stop, he felt completely overwhelmed.

–Too inappropriate, too inappropriate……

Yu Zhi Jue's hand felt hot, and he was also stunned, Ling Xia's breaths made his heart feel stifled, he almost wanted to swallow this person whole!

Ling Xia reflexively spoke with a sobbing voice: "I'm sorry!"

When he finished speaking he wanted to poke his own eyes out–What's there to be sorry about?I was forced!

The imperial rule states that a minor under the age of fourteen, no matter whether they were forced or not the adult was considered guilty……This is a sin! Has Yu Zhi Jue turned fourteen yet?……

His thoughts wandered wildly, and heard Yu Zhi Jue lowering his head, with a bit of shyness he spoke joyfully: "……How did you feel? Did that……feel good?"

Fuck! Don't ask me so directly my young sir! This is the kind of line you use on your wife the day after your wedding!

Ling Xia's face was so hot he could cook pancakes, for a moment he didn't know how he should reply.

In fact, he felt that his three reflections and life views had been shattered.

Without waiting for an answer, Yu Zhi Jue quickly pulled his hand, and slowly moved it towards his own body: "So, how about you help me out as well."

"……" We really shouldn't be in this sort of relationship……

The young man's spirited area arrived at his palm, the heat almost felt as if it could burn his skin.

Ling Xia cried in his heart, is it a bit too ruthless to reject him now? As if he were a bastard who only knew to receive but not return……

He saw stars for a moment, and was brought on top of Yu Zhi Jue's body, the two of them had switched positions.

Yu Zhi Jue closed his eyes and his face was hot: "Ling Xia, I like you."

Notes:
•Three reflections – World views, values, and outlook on life.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 20

Due to the embarrassment of the young boy the voice in the darkness was as gentle as a feather, yet it was extremely serious, as if it were a vow.

Ling Xia's body trembled unconsciously, this child……is serious.

His hand had already started moving mechanically along with Yu Zhi Jue's……

The young boy's panting that was hard to constrain had sounded in the darkness, illicit and full of temptation, Ling Xia closed his eyes embarrassingly.

This is the last time, I can't do this again……

During the night Yu Zhi Jue hugged Ling Xia's waist and plastered himself to his chest and slept, Ling Xia looked out at the few winter stars outside the window in a daze, he felt extremely bothered in his heart.

Although he had never smoked in his life, he urgently wished there was one in front of him now.

Ling Xia lowered his head, he could faintly see the contours of Yu Zhi Jue's face, the other party breathed evenly, he was clearly sleeping very sweetly. He had never been liked by anyone in such a way before, If Yu Zhi Jue were a girl, it didn't matter whether he was a minor or not, he reckons he would've probably yielded, and then he would wait for her to grow up……

However, he imagined a scene where two men were living together, in mutual love, and his scalp tingled. He remembered that during his university days there was a boy living in the dorms who gave him a kiss on the cheek as a joke, he was so disgusted at that time he nearly threw up. If it were a man, he really could not accept it.

This child is really quite outstanding, he could imagine, after three or four years, he could attract the attention of all the girls. So, he should not be like this……

This is what is called better to hurt for a short while than to hurt for a long time, the later some things are explained, the more cruel it is.

Ling Xia inwardly decided.

The next morning, Yu Zhi Jue noticed that they had slept in an embrace as soon as he woke up, he quickly remembered the nightly endeavors of the two, and his ears blushed red. He tried to act natural and lifted his head, and suddenly saw two panda eyes.

Ling Xia turned his face with a some intent to avoid him, with a slightly hoarse voice he spoke: “Ah Jue, you’ve awoken?”

He couldn’t sleep all night, and now the early morning sunlight had shone in, he could easily see the chaotic state of the room–Due to that fierce make out session last night, the originally tidy room fell into disorder.

Yu Zhi Jue clearly remembered it, he quickly turned his head elsewhere: “Mm……Why do you look so dispirited?” The Yu Zhi Jue during the day clearly was not as gutsy as the him during the night, towards this young man who had just started to understand love, he was so innocent that he could not bear to hurt him.

Ling Xia sat up and briefly tidied up collar that had been torn apart, he paused for a few moments when he saw the red marks on his clavicle, then he quickly stood up and tied up his belt as well.

He mechanically tidied up the room, and slowly tried to speak: “Ah Jue, that, there are some words that I must say to you.”

“Ah Jue, you couldn’t still be asleep are you? I want to come up with a new move, test it out with me at the practice field!”Song Xiao Hu’s spirited yell sounded out from outside.

Ling Xia really wanted to choke the protagonist to death, the lines that he had spent all night mulling over, do you think it’s easy to muster up the courage to say it out?

Yu Zhi Jue quickly walked out, when he reached the door he shot a glance at Ling Xia, and quickly turned his gaze elsewhere.

The early morning sunshine landed on the adolescent’s delicate face, it could remind a person of many beautiful things, such as dewy green leaves, the first lotus to bloom after the rain, the drifting clouds in the azure sky, and so on.

“Wait for me to return in the afternoon, let’s eat together.”As Yu Zhi Jue finished his sentence, the edge of his mouth slightly curved upwards, and he disappeared out the door.

Ling Xia slowly put the candle back on the table, he would very much like to hold a pillar and smash his head in a few times, how did it come to this?

After tidying up the room and having a simple meal, Ling Xia took out the half-designed schematics, but his heart felt so bothered that he couldn’t continue drawing. He went straight out to the river outside, quietly watching the river water in a daze.

His bout of struggling was all so that he could change the final fate of Yu Zhi Jue, not to abduct teenagers to go down the gay road……

Ling Xia miserably sighed in shamelessness, to tell the truth, recalling how frighteningly mighty Yu Zhi Jue’s vigour was last night in the darkness, he even had an urge to run off. He was like a frog caught in the bite of a snake, there was no possibility for him to resist at all……Can he still let this develop on? Thankfully Yu Zhi Jue didn’t know much, otherwise sooner or later his chrysanthemum couldn’t be safe!

Thinking of it this way, Ling Xia would sigh for a moment, and shake his head for another, he had sat dazedly by the river for one morning, till Yu Zhi Jue had returned and he still didn’t notice.

“What’s with you?”Yu Zhi Jue’s brows furrowed, he had been watching Ling Xia for a good while.

Ling Xia stumbled with a start, and reflexively took out a green silk handkerchief to wipe the sweat from Yu Zhi Jue’s forehead, when he saw the faint blush on Yu Zhi Jue’s ears, and only now did he realize that his actions were improper, he could only brace himself and wiped it clean.

“Where’s Xiao Hu?”Ling Xia looked behind.

Yu Zhi Jue carefully observed Ling Xia’s profile: “He’s still at the practice field, why were you sighing just now?”

Yu Zhi Jue had naturally won this battle, Song Xiao Hu didn’t want to accept it, and improved his new move step by step at the practice field, Yu Zhi Jue left him alone.

He also didn’t know why, but they had only separated for four hours, and he had already felt unbearable, he wanted to return even before they had battled, to take a good look at this person.

Ling Xia’s movements had become quite clumsy under Yu Zhi Jue’s bright gaze that concealed a searing heat, he really doesn’t understand, which part of him could attract the other party? Can’t men just mutually admire each other? How could a feeling of love sprout?

Fortunately Yu Zhi Jue didn’t come over to hug him and what not, Ling Xia felt relieved.

Ling Xia quietly put some distance between him and Yu Zhi Jue, watching the surface of the river he inwardly took a deep breath, mustered up his courage and said: “Ah Jue, there’s something I must tell you, you……first promise me you won’t be angry.”

Yu Zhi Jue’s sensitive sixth sense had already noticed his avoidance, and an ominous promonition filled his heart: “What do you want to say?”

“Ah Jue……that, that thing from last night……”Ling Xia didn’t dare to look at Yu Zhi Jue’s expression, he lowered his head and spoke in one breath, “I really don’t like……that isn’t good……kissing, and those other……it’s not right for two men to be together like that……”

The pressure surrounding the area got lower and lower, he couldn’t help but stutter as he spoke, but still bravely: “I really like Ah Jue……But…… Not that kind of relationship……if a man were to be with a man people will laugh, Ah Jue you will find that women are also very wonderful……”

Yu Zhi Jue clenched his fists tightly, his white teeth had almost bitten through the skin of his lips to draw blood, he interrupted Ling Xia’s words and spoke hoarsely: “What do you mean? Are you in love with that Mu Rong Xue?”

Although the adolescent’s voice strained itself to remain calm, it had brought with it anger and sadness that was hard to conceal, Ling Xia felt so guilty he wanted to bury his head in the dirt.

Did he hurt this child in the end?……

Ling Xia forced himself to continue speaking, as he started speaking, his words came out more and more smoothly: “No, I treat her as if she were my sister. But similarly, I treat Ah Jue and Xiao Hu the same, I see you both as my younger brothers……”

In actuality they still were not the same, in his heart he was more partial towards Yu Zhi Jue, he worries for this stubborn young boy, but at this time, he can only say it in such a way.

Yu Zhi Jue’s chest heaved rapidly, he could not believe it at all. At night they had clearly……This man had still held onto him, the two were kissing so intimately, doing things that made one’s face red and heart beat yet extremely comfortable……

He gritted his teeth and interrupted Ling Xia: “I don’t believe it! You promised that you would always stay by my side!”

Ling Xia braced himself and lifted his head, he suddenly saw the two beautiful eyes staring fiercely at himself, at that moment that pair of eyes were sad yet angry, just like an injured little wolf. He reflexively spoke: “I’m sorry!”

Sor……ry?

Last night this man had also said sorry, yet it gave him so much joy that he felt as if he were going crazy, but now……it felt like a big hole had been torn open in his heart, like an empty void, and at the same time it was so painful he found it hard to breathe.

This man, said that he and Song Xiao Hu, and even Mu Rongxue were the same, that there was not a bit of difference……

This man, would be like the others, marry a woman in the future, and live with her?

Absolutely……not allowed!

Yu Zhi Jue’s breathing grew quicker, with a forceful movement from his leg, he had held Ling Xia and fell into the river.

The calmness of the river flow was suddenly broken, Ling Xia was caught off guard, he asked in horror: “Ah Jue?”

The two were quickly consumed by the river water.

Ling Xia’s ears buzzed due to the sudden water pressure, by the time he adapted his eyes to the environment at the bottom of the river, only now did he realize that Yu Zhi Jue is pressing down sternly on his shoulders, in a position that was very close to himself!

The two sunk into the river, they were very close to each other, those beautiful pair of breathtaking eyes stared at himself without blinking…… Ling Xia had even felt that the other party wanted to kiss him.

He twisted his head in embarrassment, but Yu Zhi Jue kept his body steady, he did not make any movements at all.

Ling Xia quickly ran out of air, he struggled to surface from the water, but was stubbornly pushed down by Yu Zhi Jue time by time.

Ling Xia suddenly turned his head again, and only now did he notice the daunting look in his eyes.

This child is trying to drown him?……Ling Xia's heart felt stunned, his whole body trembled.

But he quickly denied the thought, because although Yu Zhi Jue's gaze made one terrified, it was full of sadness.

–He was waiting for him to take the initiative to kiss him!

Ling Xia suddenly understood Yu Zhi Jue's meaning, he yelled in his heart: Fuck! How black-bellied is this child!

He knows, now that he had explained everything, he can not compromise with him no matter what……

It's only going to hurt for this while, it will be fine in the future……

His brain's response slowly became sluggish, both his ears began to ring, his limbs had gone soft, even the scene in his eyes began to waver……

Yu Zhi Jue waited quietly, waiting for that man to close in when he couldn't bear it anymore, then he could kiss him, and pretend that the other party was just making a joke earlier……

As time passed by, he could clearly feel the discomfort that Ling Xia was in, his body had even begun to twitch, yet he had never came over from start to finish.

He watched Ling Xia's eyes that had gone slack as if he were a piece of wood, his heart was in a mess, yet he was thinking back on the scene in the ocean from before.

At that time, even if the other party was unconscious, in his embrace he was so obedient, even if they were drifting around in the vast ocean, he felt

joyed as if the entire world belonged to him.

Now regardless of what this man said, would the other party have only him in his eyes for the rest of his life? Never to see anyone else again?……

But, at the thought of not being able to see this person ever again, his whole body began to shake uncontrollably.

That sort of feeling, he did not want to experience it again……The one in pain was clearly the other party, yet his own chest hurt so much he could barely breathe……

Yu Zhi Jue fiercely pulled Ling Xia and jumped out of the water, he crudely left him at the shore.

Ling Xia's hair plastered messily over his face, he coughed out several mouthfuls of water, and his limbs felt sour and weak–Thank god he had restrained his breath early, if not he really would've died!

But thankfully, his bet was right.

Yu Zhi Jue stood coldly and watched his flustered look, a light smile curved on the edge of his mouth: "As you wish."

He feigned calmness and walked away, but actually his chest felt unbearably painful.

With every step he took, he left this person one step further, he could already feel that unbearable pain.

Ling Xia finally recovered some strength, his face that had gone green had also slowly recovered its redness.

He dazedly watched Yu Zhi Jue's back, He knew how much this stubborn child was suffering right now–just like the him from those days.

After a long time, he mouthed wordlessly: "I'm sorry."

Notes:
•*Chrysanthemum – Butthole*

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 21

In the next week or so, neither of them crossed paths.

Because after all, Ling Xia was afraid that Yu Zhi Jue would feel pained if he saw him, so he consciously went over to Song Xiao Hu's place to stay.

Towards things like falling out of love, takes a few days to get over it, it's better to let him clear up his thoughts slowly by himself.

Song Xiao Hu was not the last bit suspicious, but was rather in high spirits, he enjoyed some liveliness. Later on Ling Xia pretended to not care much and asked about Yu Zhi Jue's situation, Song Xiao Hu replied suspiciously:"Ah Jue? These few days he's been more hardworking–Ling Dage, why haven't you been looking for him?"

Ling Xia casually found a reason to evade his suspicions, and just told him that he needed to be focused while smithing energy swords. But after listening to Song Xiao Hu's words, he felt even more gloomy.

Although he worried a lot for Yu Zhi Jue, and really wanted to go and take a look, but Ling Xia knew that he can't be softhearted now, he focused all his attention on the crafting of the energy swords. By the time he finished smithing the swords through the night without sleep, it had already been a month, he had also lost a fair bit of weight, his eyes were bloodshot, he looked haggard as if he was seriously ill.

The swords were so perfect they exceeded his expectations, and the design need not be mentioned, they are above grade four, and they could still gradually be improved in the future. He knew Yu Zhi Jue liked exquisite things, Ling Xia specially embedded several wind element energy stones in a royal blue color, Song Xiao Hu's sword is a bit simpler in comparison.

Song Xiao Hu was extremely ecstatic to receive his sword, he embedded his blood into the sword as soon as he received it to take ownership of it,

and ran off to the yard to practice his sword techniques. He gave his own sword a name, and called it Nine Days to Fell Demons sword.

Ling Xia's mouth twitched, he felt like he should probably clap his hands and praise the name, but the protagonist's taste has improved a lot, it was way better than the name "Er Dan" he had given himself back in the day.

He quietly slept for an entire day and night, and carefully dressed up a bit, he shaved off the stubble on his chin as well, he felt that the dark circles under his eyes didn't seem that serious, and only then did he grab the sword and left to find Yu Zhi Jue. The two of them had not seen each other for a bit more than a month, Yu Zhi Jue should probably be fine now right?

Just that the closer he got to Yu Zhi Jue's residence, the more nervous he felt, his palms were also faintly getting sweaty.

As he stood hesitantly under the tree, he suddenly heard a familiar voice from behind him:"What did you come here for?"

Ling Xia's back was stiff, and he turned his body slowly, and sure enough he saw Yu Zhi Jue standing not far away behind him.

He carefully observed Yu Zhi Jue's expression, the other party looked extremely calm, and he didn't seem to be in bad spirits.

Ling Xia felt somewhat relieved, he took out the sword from behind his back and smiled:"Ah Jue, this is a sword I smithed for you, Xiao Hu had already taken his……"

Yu Zhi Jue faintly gave it a glance, and had no intention at all to receive it.

After an unbearable silence, Ling Xia awkwardly shrunk back his hand, and put the sword down on the stone next to him.

He quietly squeezed his own arm, desperately thinking of a subject to talk about. The more sensitive obviously should not be brought up, he suddenly thought of something, and hurriedly spoke:"Ah Jue, you know

that both the people from the Holy Maiden Peak and the demonic sect are still looking for you, I mean to say that you are fifteen now, you've reached the age where you can go on a travel, you could try to ask your master for permission to go and avoid things for a while, it's always better to be prepared just in case……"

Yu Zhi Jue quickly interrupted him, and sneered:"Is that so? You don't have to worry about this, I will be waiting right here."

Ling Xia knew that he was scarily stubborn, and chuckled softly:"Then I will leave this sword here, I will take my leave."He inwardly sighed, seems that Yu Zhi Jue had not completely let it go yet. About getting him to leave on a journey, it's better to enlist Xiao Hu's help to persuade him.

Watching Ling Xia's faintly flustered figure, Yu Zhi Jue bit down on his lips brutally.

Did this person really couldn't wait to leave him, not wanting to see him anymore?

In a month's time this man's clothes had clearly become looser, and his face had an obvious hint of exhaustion, seeing him this way made his chest hurt as well. He had constantly been trying his best to control himself, to the point where his hands were faintly trembling. His pride did not allow him to go over, but he knew how much he desired to embrace him, to kiss his lips, ears, forehead……

The time they spent apart did nothing to reduce his pain, rather it had festered instead, seeing that man clearly made his pain even stronger.

Yu Zhi Jue clenched his fist tightly, he watched him with unblinking eyes, but Ling Xia never turned back from start to finish.

This man treats him so well, yet why could he also be so cruel?

He turned his gaze towards the energy sword left behind by Ling Xia, he had only taken a casual glance, but he could already tell how hard he worked on it. He saw the sword on Song Xiao Hu's back at the practice

field during noon, and as expected, there was no difference between him and Song Xiao Hu was there?

He stared at the sword, furiously shot out several ice blades, and send the sword flying into the river.

Alarmed by the sound of water behind him, Ling Xia quickly turned his head back, and saw a silver light shining in the surface of the water, the energy sword had already sunk into the river. He was almost pissed to death, do you think it's easy to make that energy sword? Let's not talk about all the wasted effort, the few energy stones embedded inside were all given to him by the masked man; they were all rare stones that were almost impossible to find in the market……

He took a glance at Yu Zhi Jue, he did not seem to be ashamed or regretful at all, and only stared at him unblinkingly from afar.

There was nothing he could hind from that gaze, the anger welling up in Ling Xia's stomach promptly disappeared without a trace. He turned his gaze to the side, and spoke quickly:"If you don't like it, I'll make you another one in the future."He could not be sure whether Yu Zhi Jue had heard him or not, and left quickly as soon as he finished speaking.

If he continued to stay there, he wouldn't be able to resist stroking that child's hair, to stop him from showing such a heartbreaking look in his eyes……

Watching the familiar figure disappear into the mountain forest, Yu Zhi Jue still stood there unmoving.

After a long time, as if he were shocked awake he turned his gaze towards the river, and quickly jumped in, searching in the depths of the possible area that it had landed, and finally found the sword glowing with a blue luster.

He wiped the sword clean carefully with a clean silk handkerchief, Yu Zhi Jue did not hesitate to embed his own essence blood into the sword.

Even if Ling Xia said that so what?

He said two men getting together would make people laugh, he could just kill those who laugh at them; if he says he doesn't like those methods, he can resist and not do them……

No matter what, he has to stay by his side, forever! Because, he promised!

This man, can only belong to him!

Ling Xia deeply thought about what he should do next. They had been separated for more than a month, the more fortunate fact was that the Holy Maiden Peak and the demonic sects were quite far away from the Shaoyang Sect, there are many other big and small sects scattered between their distance, and besides they didn't dare to search for them in broad daylight, so it gave them time to brace themselves.

The demonic sect was trying every plan to lead Yu Zhi Jue down the path of destruction, meanwhile the Holy Maiden Peak wanted to kill him early to prevent making things harder in the future, no matter which side it was they were all very troublesome.

Before he managed to think of a counter-plan, Song Xiao Hu brought back a message, saying it was from Feng Shuming, they are already allowed to visit the Myriad Beast Forest to train for three months, and find their own demonic beast.

Ling Xia was almost overjoyed, the Myriad Beast Forest was a stretch of a few thousand miles, and the surroundings were protected by the barrier of Shaoyang Sect's elite, so even if those troublesome characters came, Yu Zhi Jue was temporarily safe inside.

In the book Xiao Hu's contracted beast was Ah Li, and Ah Li's growth with him was significantly fast as well, in the end he became an elite beast above grade 10. Yu Zhi Jue became the villain boss, and inherited his father's tenth grade wild elemental elite beast, the two-headed snake.

A cultivator can rear many demonic beasts in their life, but they were only allowed one contracted beast, unless they dissolved the contract or that demonic beast had died they could find another contract beast.

Ah Li and Song Xiao Hu shared the same attributes, and temperament, they were without a doubt the best partners. So Ling Xia thought about it, and cautioned Song Xiao Hu seriously:”Xiao Hu, Ah Li hasn’t returned, but I think he is very fit to be your contract beast, so Xiao Hu when you go in to train why don’t you wait before contracting a beast?”

Song Xiao Hu stared blankly:”Isn’t Ah Li Ling Dage’s demonic beast?”

Ling Xia laughed:”Of course not, not to mention me and Ah Li’s elements conflict, it’s not a good fit no matter what. In Xiao Hu’s three months of training, I will definitely find Ah Li, and bring him back.”

And besides that was Mu Rong Xue, Ling Xia recently learned quite a lot about medicinal pills and herbs from her, she was as Ling Xia had expected, she couldn’t delay returning back to the Holy Maiden any further. Ling Xia decided to help send her back, then he could look for Ah Li along the way back.

Even the harder to heal wounds could slowly be smoothed over with time, in these three months, he hopes that Yu Zhi Jue can recover during his training.

Ling Xia specifically told Song Xiao Hu, telling him not to spread this news to Yu Zhi Jue, he just said he was afraid that he would worry for him, and Song Xiao Hu had agreed.

On the night before Song Xiao Hu and co’s departure, Ling Xia had already excused himself early from Song Xiao Hu and returned to his room. Actually he really wanted to go and see Yu Zhi Jue, but in the end he still restrained himself and didn’t go.

On the second day after watching Song Xiao Hu depart, Ling Xia and Mu Rong Xue had also embarked on their journey. In order to avoid

suspicion, Mu Rong Xue was still disguised as a young boy, matching together as two brothers.

The first few days went well, on the fourth evening, he and Mu Rong Xue came to a small inn to rest. Mu Rong Xue decently ordered a meal, Ling Xia watched her serious look, and couldn't resist laughing. Following their familiarization in these days, Mu Rong Xue had already become close to him like a young neighbor girl in his heart.

While the two were eating, a woman wearing a white cloak slowly walked in, Mu Rong Xue had a sudden change in expression, almost as if she was going to scream, and quickly covered her mouth. Fortunately that woman did not look towards their direction, she just looked straight ahead and continued in.

Ling Xia's heart sank, he used his eyes to signal whether or not that was someone from the Holy Maiden Peak, Mu Rong Xue nodded her head definitely, she dipped her hands into the tea and used it to write a few words on the table–She is the great guardian Bai Shan.

Seeing the guests, the waiter quickly went over and politely asked what she wanted to eat, Bai Shan first laid a handkerchief over the stool before she sat down, and placed a few delicate porcelain plates on the table. Her voice was cold and emotionless like a robot:"I don't want to be waited by filthy men like you, let your womenfolk come over, and use these utensils to serve the meal."

Hearing these words, Ling Xia's hand shook, and the chopsticks fell to the table. He nearly laughed out loud, so this is one of the four legendary guardians from the Holy Maiden Peak? Based on this person's temper, it would be strange if she could even find Yu Zhi Jue.

The waiter was also stupefied, but his reaction was fast, his face was quickly filled with smiles:"Customer, there are only men in this small shop, there are no womenfolk."

Bai Shan gave him a cold stare:"Then forget it."As she spoke she took out some fruits from her storage bad, and slowly started to eat them.

“……Customer, the shop does not allowed outside food, we would like to seek the customer’s forgiveness.”The waiter’s face had already become a bitter gourd.

Bai Shan unfavorably took out two energy coins and placed them on the table:”This should be enough right? Prepare the most secluded room. Mm, have you met a mongrel with the surname Yu? He looks to be under twenty.”

The waiter shook his head dazedly:”This one doesn’t know.”He saw Bai Shan wave her hand impatiently, he was immediately relieved, and retired himself after keeping the money.

Ling Xia’s eyes suddenly became cold as he heard her address, do all these insane women from the Holy Maiden Peak all insult him in such a way? Mu Rong Xue sat across from him, she looked extremely distressed, Ling Xia reluctantly smiled at her.

Watching Bai Shan go up the stairs, Ling Xia still decided to stay here, the sky had already turned dark, Mu Rong Xue was weak and delicate, not the same as the crazy constitution of those two dummies.

After the two bid farewell, Ling Xia returned to his room and read for another moment under the candlelight, and couldn’t help but worry. To tell the truth, although this Bai Shan’s IQ was lacking, but there are only a few days of distance between here and the Chongming sect, it was hard to guarantee that she couldn’t find her way there.

What’s Yu Zhi Jue doing right now?

Notes:
•Nine Days to Fell Demons – Jiu Tian Jiang Mo jian nine days, (cause)surrender, demon
•Er Dan – two egg

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 22

The more Ling Xia thought about it, the more perturbed he got, suddenly a knock came from outside the door, he shuddered in surprise:”Who?”

Mu Rong Xue’s voice rang from outside:”Ling Dage, it’s me.”

Ling Xia opened the door with a bit of surprise, Mu Rong Xue spoke unsettlingly:”Ling Dage, earlier I noticed that Guardian Bai had lit a transmission incense, she is assembling the other three guardians here…… Could it be that they managed to inquire about Ah Jue’s position?”

Ling Xia’s heart sank at once. Yu Zhi Jue could be considered as revealing his talents currently, because if you do things in a low-key manner in the continent of this foreign world, of course you can’t become famous. But as the most promising young genius of the Shaoyang Sect, he is still slightly popular in Chongming City. So if Bai Shan met anyone from Chongming City, it’s not too hard to inquire.

He furrowed his brows and stared at Mu Rong:”Miss Mu Rong, in this case, we need to stay here.”

Mu Rong nodded definitely:”Mm, Ling Dage, we will definitely stop them.”

Bai Shan really stayed in this inn, seemingly waiting for the other three.

Ling Xia was afraid that she would get suspicious, he seldom went out every day, and just stayed in his room to refine the required artifacts to nurture the blood spider. According to Mu Rong Xue’s description, these four guardians all had their own area of expertise, however the four-star array of their four man group can hardly be matched.

The spider egg gifted by Ke Lan Minerbai was laid by a rare eigth grade spiders, although it was not as powerful as its mother, the toxicity was still quite high, most people would die in the time it took for an incense to finish

burning if they touched their silk or were bitten by them, and even if they were a cultivator, their whole body would be paralyzed and their cultivation progress will be greatly reduced.

Originally this spider required ten or so days to hatch, but Ling Xia couldn't care that much, he eagerly irrigated his own blood so that the blood spider can hatch earlier and recognize him as its owner–When it's needed, for Yu Zhi Jue he would not hesitate to harm someone.

At the fourth day of staying around in the inn, the blood spider finally hatched, it was about the size of a bottle cap, and its blood red body looked ferocious, but it executed Ling Xia's orders fairly loyally. Ling Xia was overjoyed, everyday he goes out to buy the meat of low grade demonic beasts to feed it, that blood spider ate more and more each passing day, and it grew pretty quickly. He was afraid of frightening Mu Rong Xue, so he refined a demonic beast bag, on an ordinary day he would put the blood spider into the bag and bring it along with him.

On the seventh day, as expected continuously women wearing mantles arrived, they dressed the same way as Bai Shan. After all they were acquainted with each other, Ling Xia told Mu Rong Xue to go out as little as possible. Because even if the look was changed, but a person's personality is hard to change, it's hard to guarantee that a familiar person would not be able to recognize her.

When the two guardians were gathered, the four immediately departed from the inn, the direction was indeed Chongming City. Ling Xia hurriedly settled the bill and departed as well, he had already prepared a vehicle and other necessities during this time, he and Mu Rong Xue dressed up as merchants and followed the four of them from afar.

The four were dressed quite characteristically, it wasn't hard to catch up while inquiring along the way. Their speed was quite fast, but Ling Xia was fine, only Mu Rong Xue clearly displayed some languidness, but she had never complained at all.

One night, the two had to find a cave in the mountain forest to stay in temporarily. Ling Xia cut off a fair bit off branches and spread a thick layer

on the ground, and let Mu Rong Xue rest on top, in order to avoid suspicion, he slept near the cave to keep watch.

Midnight quickly came, Ling Xia daydreamed while looking at the bright moon in the sky, his heart was in a mess.

These two groups of people weren't ones he could take on right now, he only hoped that Mu Rong Xue could stop the four guardians, then Yu Zhi Jue could steady his disposition, unaffected by the demonic cultivator's allurement. Otherwise, in the future the protagonist really had to search for him across the lands and bitterly try to persuade his villain childhood friend to turn back, until they finally end up in a ridiculous drama love-hate relationship……Ugh.

While Ling Xia was in a daze, he suddenly saw Yu Zhi Jue's figure that shouldn't be appearing here flash past a tree, he was shocked, and couldn't help calling out quietly:"Ah Jue?"

His voice was originally very quiet, almost so quiet that it was inaudible, yet that person turned his footsteps over resolutely, the delicate face faced towards the moonlight expressionlessly, it really is Yu Zhi Jue! On his back was a long sword, it was apparent that it was the one given to him by Ling Xia before.

Ling Xia was a bit surprised, did this child felt reluctant to throw away the sword in the end? But he immediately recalled, those four from the Holy Maiden Peak are just nearby!

He stood up in a panic and whispered:"Ah Jue, aren't you in the Myriad Beast Forest? The Holy Maiden Peak……"

Yu Zhi Jue had already rushed over from the tree in a flash, Ling Xia hadn't managed to finish his sentence yet, and his back made a strong impact on the stone wall, the pain drew a breath out of him. Yu Zhi Jue tightly caught his two hands and pressed them on the wall, his whole body was trembling, the voice was deep yet full of anger:"You lied to me again! Do you plan to run away with this woman and hide from me?……"

A hazy light flashed across his eyes, his whole body was emitting a murderous aura, his gaze quickly fell on top of the body of Mu Rong Xue who was sleeping soundly inside.

Ling Xia felt like his arm was almost broken by that force, and furrowed his brows in pain.

–Is this some kind of ridiculous misunderstanding plot from an angst film? Why is this child so impulsive every time, not allowing him to finish his sentences?

He looked seriously into Yu Zhi Jue's eyes:"That's not it, Ah Jue you've misunderstood, I came out to send her back to the Holy Maiden Peak, and at the same time to find Ah Li–I would never lie to you."

Yu Zhi Jue's back constantly heaved, and the strength on his hand slowly lessened, his head drooped down weakly.

After Song Xiao Hu misspoke, he immediately understood, this man had not even said goodbye to him and left with another woman–perhaps he might never even return!

Realizing this fact, he immediately left the Myriad Beast Forest without regards to his life, searching for him along the way without stopping.

Thankfully……found it.

He lifted his head and stared at Ling Xia, he coarsely said:"You can not like me, but in the future don't……"the two words"leave me"at the back, he bit down harshly on his lower lip, no matter what he could not say it out.

Ling Xia's heart stuffed up, two hands unconsciously wrapped up in an embrace:"I'm sorry, I won't do it again."

Yu Zhi Jue's back shook, he moved his hands and hugged Ling Xia tightly, desperately pressing down the urge to kiss this man.

At this time, a group of birds called chaotically and flew up into the air not far away, a few gigantic trees came crashed down, Ling Xia was

immediately on alert, he quickly pulled Yu Zhi Jue into the shelter.

The guardians from the Holy Maiden Peak clearly did not want to disturb any bystanders, they all chose to pass through the small remote towns around the big city, the surrounding area in this place was quite desolate, and lacking in spiritual energy, there weren't any powerful demonic beasts either, then what was the reason for their actions earlier? And why are those noises getting closer!

Mu Rong Xue was also startled, she quickly sat up, and asked in surprise:"Ling Dage, what is that sound?"

Ling Xia motioned for her not to make any noise, indicating Mu Rong Xue to lay down in the dark and don't move. Mu Rong Xue saw Yu Zhi Jue by his side, and was instantly petrified.

The fighting sounds were getting closer and closer, when Ling Xia finally managed to make out the people who were fighting he couldn't help but doubted wordlessly, because they were actually all people he knew!

The four mantled women were naturally the Holy Maiden Peak's extinction group, and on the other side was the young girl wearing a cyan gown holding a golden bell in her hands, it so happened to be the Bi Yun who had a bit of fate with him! The others standing around taking hits for her had dazed eyes and their bodies seemed stiff, clearly they had already been controlled by Bi Yun.

Ling Xia bent over to Yu Zhi Jue's ear and whispered:"These four are from the Holy Maiden Peak, you must not reveal your whereabouts."

Yu Zhi Jue was startled, and immediately recognized them, naturally he knew who these hateful women were!

Ling Xia heard his breathing speed up, and worried for him in his heart, he reached his hand out to hold his, and gently patted it. He felt a bit confused, why would Bi Yun get caught in a fight with this group of women? These two groups of people may have the same objective, but currently they actually started fighting, it was quite strange.

Bi Yun was ordered to look for Yu Zhi Jue, in her heart it still felt a bit unfair, after all Yu Zhi Jue had beaten her up so bad that she couldn't show her face for days last time, she was made fun of by the demonic cultivators, pissing her off so much she went off to pick many fights.

This time although Chu Yin gathered them he did not tell them a reason, and only said not to harm Yu Zhi Jue, and made her draw a portrait. She was full of complaints with nowhere to vent, she provoked and found trouble along the way, starting many arguments, and only then did she manage to vent her anger.

While she was sleeping out in the outskirts, she happened to meet the few from Holy Maiden Peak, she saw that these women looked suspicious, and manipulated a man to pull off one of their mantles. When the two exchanged hands, she didn't expect them to be so powerful, they actually saw through her identity as a demonic cultivator in an instant! Although she brought several of her master's best artifacts with her, as well the protection of her meat shields all around her, she still barely managed to escape to this area, the hair on her temples were scattered and she seemed distressed.

The people from the Holy Maiden Peak detested demonic cultivators, and their killing moves came out continuously, the four person group were even stronger together. Bi Yun had not a single thread of ability to return the favor, her body was cut several times by their blades, and her clothes were barely covering her.

She had already secretly sent out a transmission incense, and she deliberately ran her mouth to delay:"Why are these Female seniors so angry? You are clearly good-looking as well……ah!"While talking she was hit by another guardian's sword from the gap again.

Bai Shan angrily exclaimed:"The demons of the demonic cultivation sect, are the best at using flowery words, everyone is allowed to execute them!"The tip of her sword flashed, and cut down one of her puppets, the impact of the sword had also cut off a cluster of hair from Bi Yun's head at the same time. That man's shoulders were cut and after half a moment he regained his consciousness, in so much pain that he rolled around on the ground.

Bi Yun was furious, before this she had also suffered a loss under Yu Zhi Jue, how had she been forced to that point? Just that now her manipulation techniques that she excelled at were no use against these women, she gritted her teeth bitterly and kept her resilience–The White Abyss Guardian from the demonic sect, puppet master Ming Ze is close!

Mu Rong Xue could not bear to watch any more and not help, Ling Xia hurriedly waved at her, signaling for her not to worry. She also knew that she could not expose herself, and resisted the urge to go out, but her eyes were red.

Bai Shan was about to go up and give this demonic cultivating witch one final blow, but suddenly an object as hard as gold came out from the ground and blocked in front of Bi Yun, when the energy sword landed, it made an ear-piercing noise. She was surprised and ordered the other three:”Retreat!”

Bi Yn was overjoyed, and shouted:”Guardian Ming Ze!”

That object glowed green, it’s eyes were white, and its sharp nails were about five to six inches long, it’s a puppet corpse!

It opened its mouth and emitted a screeching laughter, the white teeth under the moonlight were extremely frightening, during the moment when the group from Holy Maiden Peak were stunned, countless energy needles shot out from its mouth, the needles emitted a bright blue glow under the moonlight, they were clearly dipped in poison!

The four women immediately waved their swords to knock down the needles, Bai Shan angrily spoke:”Being so sneaky, only knowing how to plot against people, this really is the despicable means commonly employed by the demonic sect!”

She inwardly raised her awareness, and ingested a detoxification pill.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 23

A white-robed man slowly walked out from the darkness, with one look Bi Yun turned starry-eyed, she held the wound on her shoulder and yelled:”White Abyss Guardian!”

Ming Ze did not even spare a glance at her, and just scorned:”Useless.”

“……”Bi Yun pouted to herself, and quickly moved far away to bandage her wound.

Ming Ze’s puppet techniques are considered peerless under the heavens, he was in a state of caution, after all they were currently in the territory of orthodox sects, the three puppets he brought were all his strongest. One of them is a newly cultivated eight grade thunder element puppet, it was especially rare.

Bai Shan shouted:”Which scoundrel are you?”

Ming Ze did not care to reply, and just flicked the energy thread in his hands, manipulating the sixth grade puppet to attack the four.

Bai Shan was not afraid, the Holy Maiden Peak’s medical techniques are unparalleled, this includes detoxification techniques. She knows that the enemy is strong, and immediately shouted:”Careful!”

The few of them had not left the mountain for a while so they did not know of Ming Ze’s prowess, so they were just astonished, how could they have so casually met such a difficult person to deal?

That puppet’s body is hard like metal, and the nails are sharp, it quickly waved off the energy swords thrust towards it by the women. The four attacked in sequence for a long time, and they actually did not manage to cut off even a nail! Sand and stone were scattered and flying through the surroundings, it hadn’t even been fifteen minutes and their surrounding lush greenery had already been destroyed.

With one slip of their movement, one of the guardian’s shoulder was cut open by the puppet’s nails, even though she took a detoxification pill earlier, she still felt dizzy.

The three hiding in the cave could also feel the hurricane blowing, and they were all astonished. Mu Rong Xue covered her mouth tightly, she knows that currently she can do nothing to help, but she was still worried.

Bai Shan shouted:”Position!”The four had been working together for a long time, and immediately kept their energy swords, and jumped away from the puppet’s attack range.

Ming Ze flicked his hand, but did not give chase, he narrowed his eyes, inwardly pondering about where the four’s sword techniques originated from, how could they still show no reaction after being poisoned by his puppet for half a day?

The four held their energy swords and sat on the ground, unmoving, a strange aura was formed in the surroundings.

Ming Ze felt that it was strange, and tried to manipulate the puppet to grab one of the women, that woman still did not move, but she disappeared without a trace suddenly, the puppet continuously sent out lightning attacks, but they came out empty.

Bai Shan opened her mouth, and slowly chanted a line quietly, the other three followed her recitations and condensed their elemental energy non-stop, the aura covering the area swiftly expanded far away, enveloping a hundred meters of distance.

The four-man technique is called the”Four Star Array”, As long as anything was within a hundred meter scope of the circle, they will all be under the control of the four, the aura turned around them, extremely powerful.

Following the release of their technique, the four women were slightly surprised, why are there the auras of three people in the cave over there? Could it be other enemies waiting to ambush?

Ming Ze keenly sensed the danger, and immediately raised his spiritual energy by fifty percent, and manipulated his puppet to attack the women non-stop, but these four women mutually helped each other, their power was enhanced several fold, within the spread out circle the four could feel every single movement within, as if they were psychic, so although the puppet's movements are fast and chaotic, they all missed their target.

The four-star array from back then had even managed to trap Yu Tianxing for an hour, Even though the strength of the current four guardians could barely compare to the four from those days, they still inherited most of the important parts. Ming Ze tried to have his puppet leap into the air, before he even managed to fly up a few meters he felt an oppressive barrier on top, and was quickly repelled.

Bai Shan opened her eyes and shouted:"Break!"

The four uniformly put their hands together in front of their chest following Bai Shan's orders, and uniformly sent their spiritual energy to her body, Bai Shan fiercely ejected a dense energy ball with a wave of her palm, accurately attacking towards Ming Ze.

Ming Ze's legs flickered to evade, those energy balls could actually turn back as if they had grown eyes, he covered his whole body with qi, and his lips lightly moved:"Interesting."

With a wave of his hand, the puppet blocked behind his body, following a few muffled sounds, the puppet's touch body was actually shattered by the energy ball and fell to the floor. Ming Ze did not move his stature, and only spilled a bit of blood from the corner of his mouth.

Bi Yun called in astonishment:"Great guardian!"

Ming Ze casually wiped it off with his hand:"This should be the four-star array of the Holy Maiden Peak."

Bai Shan did not think that he could call out the name of their technique, and was slightly caught off guard, she immediately calmed her heart:"Since you know it is powerful, why don't you obediently let yourself be caught?"

Ming Ze said coldly:”I would like to see for myself today, how powerful this technique really is.”With a shake of his hand, he had already revealed the precious eighth grade puppet.

The eighth grade puppet had a face that looked alive, the appearance of this puppet is that of a handsome youth, with abnormally pale skin, exquisite like a doll made with human skin, with wandering eyes and brows it looked even more like a living person. Just that its movements were a bit stiff, and a cold air that was hard to describe surrounded its body, both Ling Xia and Mu Rong Xue couldn’t help but shudder.

Now that Ming Ze’s battle intent had been completely stimulated, he immediately noticed the aura around the surroundings, he and the four of the Holy Maiden Peak were similarly misunderstood, they both thought they were people from the opposing side, the thin thread on his hands shook at once, the eighth grade puppet’s mouth send out a thunderbolt towards the mouth of the cave.

Yu Zhi Jue blocked it with his sword, and his body numbed, he was pushed two steps back by the shock of the thunderbolt, the thunderbolt that was sent out had caused half of the cave to cave in. Ling Xia did not have much time to think, and protected Yu Zhi Jue underneath his body, the rubble on top rustled down, even though he had already transported his spiritual energy towards his back, it had still caused him to grit his teeth and emitted a few sounds of pain.

With an “ah” from Mu Rong Xue, both of her legs had already been smashed, she immediately fainted from the pain.

Mu Rong Xue had not taken any appearance changing pills at night, both her voice and her looks remained as normal, the four from the Holy Maiden Peak immediately recognized her, and exclaimed:”Holy Maiden!”

Yu Zhi Jue quickly recovered his body, he held Ling Xia and jumped out without thinking, both of them were covered in dust, and looked very embarrassing.

Bi Yun was also shocked when she saw Yu Zhi Jue, she spoke in surprised:”Guardian, this is Yu Zhi Jue!”

Ling Xia’s head buzzed, and steadied himself on the ground, he suddenly did not know what to do.

To face two groups at once, what a mess……

He knows that Mu Rong Xue got caught by the rubble, and he felt very worried, the four from the Holy Maiden Peak had already pounced over to save Mu Rong Xue, only then did he breathe a sigh of relief.

Ming Ze’s pupils shrunk, and glared fiercely at Yu Zhi Jue, completely disregarding Ling Xia.

Ling Xia vigorously held the palm of Yu Zhi Jue’s hand, his heartbeat quickened. Yu Zhi Jue could feel his nervousness, he quickly swept his gaze towards Ming Ze, and tightened his grip on the energy sword in his hand.

–Actually, he did not feel that there was anything bad about the demonic sect, but if Ling Xia doesn’t like it, might as well not go.

“Very good……”Ming Ze suddenly raised his head and laughed. Bi Yun jumped in shock, who had ever seen this man with facial paralysis laugh?–There was a saying that everyone who had seen it all died……

The four from the Holy Maiden Peak had quick reactions, they put the unconscious Mu Rong Xue in between the four of them and spread a protective barrier, quickly reforming their array. Bai Shan carefully observed the two brats that were with the Holy Maiden, the one holding the sword was about fourteen years old give or take, even though his face was covered in dust, they could make out about one third of similarity to the predecessing Holy Maiden, add on tears deep red like the color of blood……

She was furious:”It’s that mongrel named Yu! What did you do to the Holy Maiden just now?”

Ming Ze heard her words and a cold glint appeared in his eyes, he furiously kicked aside the hem of his robe aside and knelt down to offer Yu Zhi Jue a great salute:”Lord, although the former demon lord had ordered us not to attack the Holy Maiden Peak, but she insulted the Lord in front of everyone, crimes must be punished! Requesting for the Lord to stay back, your subordinate will settle this quickly!”

……I have many complaints.

Didn’t you just attack your “Lord” just now? And who promised to be your villain leader? Turning into a loyal dog with a paralyzed face is not cute at all alright?

Ling Xia looked unnervingly at Yu Zhi Jue, waiting for his reply.

Yu Zhi Jue acted as if he didn’t hear it, and just carefully observed Ling Xia’s forehead, he gently touched the scratch on his forehead with his fingertips:”Does it hurt?”

Ling Xia quieted down, did this child not know how dangerous it is right now?

Ming Ze gave a cold glance to Ling Xia, and Ling Xia could only feel the coldness creeping up his body, his breathing had gotten more difficult as well. He subconsciously moved closer to Yu Zhi Jue–He felt a strong killing intent earlier!

Fuck, in doujinshis I’m a side pairing just like you, don’t turn your gaze towards me!

Bai Shan coldly sneered, she gloomily spoke:”With the Holy Maiden here, don’t a single one of you demonic cultivator scraps run off!”

The four changed their statures, the body of Mu Rong Xue in the middle faintly emitted a glimmer.

Ling Xia was startled, Mu Rong Xue did not have a chicken’s worth of strength, so what if she’s in there? But he quickly discovered an anomaly,

the surrounding qi seems to have gotten……stronger? The abrupt increase in pressure made it hard for him to breathe, his body crumpled onto the ground in pain, Bi Yun who had been injured was affected even more intensely, she held her head in pain and howled. Yu Zhi Jue gritted his teeth and exerted strength to support himself, his leg faintly wobbled.

Ming Ze's eyes suddenly became red, with a shake of his hand he quickly infused his energy, a strange smile appeared on the edge of the eighth grade puppet's mouth, and sent out several countless compressed lightning strikes towards the four.

Bai Shan shouted, struck out both of her hands, and sent out many formless energy light waves, a fierce energy shook inside the barrier, the ground broke apart in an ear-piercing blast, everyone stumbled.

By the time Ling Xia opened his eyes again, his pupils shrank, he felt as if his breathing was about to stop–the position of Yu Zhi Jue's heart had been pierced through!

Yu Zhi Jue's gaze slacked, but even so, his face did not reveal any pained expression, he was still tightly holding the energy sword that he had given him in front, blocking this terrifying power for him!

Ling Xia's heart felt pained, he desperately tried to stop up Yu Zhi Jue's wound, his other hand rushed to find some injury healing medicine from his storage bag in panic. But his hands couldn't stop trembling, his heart was felt impatient, he casually threw the bottle to a side, he cut his hand on the energy sword, and did not hesitate to stuff it towards Yu Zhi Jue's wound.

The two forces earlier were evenly matched, a great deal of the delicate face of the eighth grade puppet had been destroyed, Ming Ze almost looked like a blood person, Bai Shan had also spat out blood heavily, she lowered her head and coughed incessantly, clearly showing heavy injuries. Mu Rong Xue's long hair scattered on the ground, the faint light on her body had also disappeared, it was unclear whether she was dead or alive.

Ling Xia did not care any more about the others, he held Yu Zhi Jue in his embrace, he whispered lightly as if he were afraid of starling him:"Ah

Jue? Don’t sleep.”

Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze has lost its focus, it seemed to have taken him half a day to recognize him, his lips moved faintly but he did not know what he was trying to say.

Ling Xia desperately suppressed the choking in his throat, and spoke hoarsely:”I know all of it, you can tell me slowly in the future, I’m sorry!”

He was full of himself and made a self-assertive move, yet he had harmed this child instead……

Yu Zhi Jue could not swallow down any more, blood trickled down his chin staining everything, Ling Xia forced his jaw open, and forcefully poured his blood in, when his cut had healed he opened up another cut again.

His heart had been pierced through, could a human panacea’s blood still save him?

Ling Xia’s lips grew paler, a spell of dizziness had started to set in. At this moment he deeply prayed for Yu Zhi Jue’s recovery, even if he were taken away by the demonic cultivators!

After a long time, Bai Shan slowly sat up, with a gasp she sneered:”Evil really does not prevail, just you wait demonic cultivator scraps, watch my Holy Maiden Peak bear judgment on behalf of the heavens today!”

Ling Xia’s heart sank, Ming Ze clearly had not recovered!

He secretly held the blood spider in his palm, holding Yu Zhi Jue’s sword he stood swaying and faintly laughed:”What scraps? Why should the grudge from the previous generation be involved with the present? With that being said Ah Jue still had half of the Holy Maiden Peak’s blood running through his veins, what are you going to say to that? What had Ah Jue done?”

Bai Shan was furious, with a strike of her sword she struck the sword from Ling Xia's hands away and stabbed him in the shoulder. Ling Xia gritted his teeth and forcefully held onto the blade, the flesh and blood on his hand mixed together as his hand was cut by the sharp blade. The blood spider quickly took the opportunity to crawl past the blade and bit into Bai Shan's wrist.

Poisonous and at the same time bringing great pain, Bai Shan shrieked, she immediately fell kneeling on the ground, the four-star array that was already incomplete broke!

The other three guardians were stunned and shouted in unison:"Great guardian!"

The oppressive energy finally dissolved, Ming Ze could finally move, he shook his two hands, manipulating the destroyed puppet to stop the three women's offense.

Ling Xia could no longer stand still, and suddenly sat to the ground, he could only feel his slight slowly darkening.

"Ah Jue……"He managed to find Yu Zhi Jue's hand in a stumble, and carefully hugged it to his embrace, he could no longer hold on and fell unconscious.

Bai Shan gritted her teeth and shouted:"Bring the Holy Maiden away first, you are not allowed to continue fighting! That evil brat's heart has already been pierced through he can live no longer!"

The three women did not hesitate, one stepped back, one picked up Mu Rong Xue, and the other picked up Bai Shan, they quickly disappeared into the forest.

Ming Ze spat out a few mouthfuls of blood and stood up with force, walking straight towards the unconscious Yu Zhi Jue.

He kicked Ling Xia aside, and carefully inspected Yu Zhi Jue's pulse, a strange smile appeared on the edge of his mouth:"Just as the left guardian

said, The Lord has already awakened great power, how could he die so easily?”

He looked sick of Ling Xia, so this is the human panacea who had the greatest influence on the Lord that was mentioned by the left guardian?

To leave him, would be an obstacle!

Ming Ze let the puppet keep away the blood spider, he casually struck out fiercely with a hit of his palm on Ling Xia’s chest.

For the Lord, he alone is enough!

OceanofPDF.com

OceanofPDF.com

Volume 3

If you were to decease to be resurrected once again, you'll have to face and devote yourself to dog blood[1] for ten thousand years!

[1] : (literally:) Dog blood, (figuratively) Melodrama, unbelievably cliche, absurdity.
In ancient Chinese culture, (black) dog blood was considered the antidote of black magic. There are many records on this in historical notes and fiction works.
In a modern context, (dog blood) means something unbelievably cliche/ embarrassing/maladroit/exaggerating that needs to be neutralized with dog blood.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 1

Ling Xia clutches his chest as he suddenly opens his eyes. His mouth was trembling as he inhales large gulp of air. The pain in his stomach from that time that almost crushes him had already passes.

He stares at the familiar yellowish color of his ceiling. Don't tell me that I died again and have come back? Did I die because of too much blood loss? What about Yu Zhi Jue?

He puts his slippers on but not changing his clothes, then jumps on top of his bed barefoot and charges to his computer. He boots it up and waited for the continuous circulating loading logo for about ten seconds, furiously pounding the computer table clean.

Why did he come back again during at a crucial time!? If Yu Zhi Jue died, he will definitely crawl outside the author's computer screen and scare him till he pee!

He opened the browser in haste, then Ling Xia clicks on the bookmarks, but as he opened it — webpage not found!

Ling Xia curses, was the website been removed? He tried it on other browsers but it was futile.

He then search the author's blog, only to find the author's post leaving only eight big words.

TIRED AND NOT FEELING THE LOVE, GOODBYE WORLD!

T/N: Its an actual 8 Chinese characters and I did my best translating it in exact 8 English words...

The following post was the contents from the novel he knows well, to his surprise the book is not the one he is so familiar with and was a fake book.

Ling Xia spurts out a great mouthful of blood, are they toying with him?

He furiously pulled on his hair, how did it come to this? Could it be that the author applied for the removal?

The website's forum suddenly flashes in his mind and checks it without delay. The clam he desperately looks for that he could find could be answered by the comments of the readers.

As expected, the website's hot page has an astonishing amount of ten pages of topic to rummage through, and the titles are—opinions on the jj's great poisonous *spinach and chicken egg soup* cover up and disappearance, what the fuck!*, rotten author writes a melodramatic and heartbreaking drama to indulge himself?!

T/N: jj could be a fictional website where the where the author publishes their work

T/N: *A Chinese Internet slang

Archyr Kentaurosa's note: Original raw text uses " " which is pun/homonym (pronunciation-wise, 'wo cao') for " " which is similar to 'wtf' in varied aspect.

That's right, *spinach and chicken egg soup* is none other than the pen name of the author. The corner of ling Xia's month twitched, now that the plot finally chance, the author suddenly left all hanging?!

Ling Xia quickly opens the post, inside were rows of common grieving comments.

—Boo boo, We got cliffhanger-ed by the author, maybe he's outside the country and haven't come back yet to update?

*—Great author please come back quickly, *kisses from your fan*!*

*T/N: * * - If anyone can give me a great translation of this that would be great-*

—Sob, sob, sob, do Xiao Yu and Xiao Hu not get a happy ending? Why is Xiao Hu left all alone? Why is Xiao Yu always thinking about that insignificant cannon fodder? If only he'll look back at last, be

would find Xiao Hu still waiting for him at the same place! That white lotus-like mistress is annoying!

T/N: Grievance of a Yu Zhi Zhu x Song Xiao Hu fan...

T/N: White lotus is the term for those side characters that seduces the Main Lead from the Main Character.

"—What the fuck!" Ling Ma curses out loud when he read this comment So it's saying that the current plot progresses and Song Xiao Hu was left on his own? How did it come to that?!

He leaned forward on his computer table limply and stayed motionless until his cellphone started ringing

He pressed the answer button, and the usual deliberate and low voice of his department senior Li rang out: "Where the hell are you? The meeting's about to start! Today the new boss will take office so you can't be late!"

Ling Xia who was distraught with anxiety, reluctantly cheers himself up and replied: "En, on my way to work. I'll be there shortly."

He hovered his mouse pointer to the lower sight area of the monitor. As expected, he remembers correctly that it's only the next day from the night before he left

And so Ling Xia went to his workplace in an empty stomach. The meeting has already started for half an hour. The newly sat department manager is operating the projector while currently making a speech.

Ling Xia gave and apologetic smile as he silently sits on the provided chairs, his mind still wandering. He did not notice that the new boss was looking at him several limes.

He was in a trance, all day long Ling Xia didn't know what to do. By the time that the office hon. is over, the new boss suddenly stood before him and said: "Hey, schoolmate, do you still remember me?"

Ling Xia was somewhat astonished, he cautiously examined the other person. Well dress and confident elite appearance, however he is not really giving him any impression. He apologetically replied: "It's embarrassing to say, I totally can't remember."

The other person did not mind it too much, and solemnly introduces himself, well as his college major. Ling Xia finally had a bit of impression.

The new boss's name is Ping Min Chang, two years older than him, also his school senior.

That time he just entered the university when be was guided by the other person to the dormitories.

However, he kept a low key profile at College. He did not participate that much on the activities. So he is really not familiar with this out-going person.

The other person invited him to a meal. Ling Xia was not really in the mood, reluctantly smiled and said: "Maybe some other, Manager Ping.... I'm sorry for the inconvenience. I'm feeling a bit unwell right now I'd She to go home early?

Ping Min Chang was not at all arrogant, and said at once: "No wonder you look a bit dispirited, I'll drive you back to your home — don't call me manager, it's better to call me *ge* privately."

TIN: ge - like hyung in korean. Informal term for older brother.

Ling Xia felt a bit , quickly shakes his hand in refusal. He gave a tiny smile and said "I'll just take the subway to get home, then walk the rest of the way?"

Ping Min Chang was a little disappointed. He reluctantly backs down, and simply smiled and said: "That's goal then, I'll invite you soon for a meal then?"

Half a month passes by dis-concertedly, Ling became more and more nervous.

It goes without saying that his job is very dull and simple as busy and faintly gloomy days passes by. He's getting by just fine, and his previous senior are supposedly watching over him She a junior. His workload suddenly lightens, due to Ping Min Chang being very skilled. Every time they had a meal, he also always being treated, making him feel uneasy.

When the evening arrives, Ling Xia lire down on his bed and frequently suffers an insomnia. And the emptiness be felt was not the same as when he first came back The memories are more exceptionally real and distinct than the seemingly current real world.

He find everyday's busy work tolerable. But as the night has arrived, be will think of Yu Zhi Jue, thought of Song Xiao Hu, thought A Li, and lastly his mask wearing master...

But without a doubt, Yu Zhi Jue filled his mind the mast.

When they separated before, Yu Zhi Jue words, and his heart broken and obstinate expression made his stomach twist terribly.

He promised to absolutely stay with him and never leave him...

Ling Xia pulled the blanket up to his head with unease.

The first time he came back he could easily say, that he could return again if he prays for it. But this time, the moment for him to transmigrate will never come! Yu Zhi Joe will find out he died and will definitely end the world... wipe it clean, and become a tyrannie villain!

He always wishes to transmigrate again every night before he closes his eyes, but get disappointed in the end

It will be soon two months, Ling Xia loses weight and is a shut in. He was not eating properly and regularly that his complexion was very pale. He kept making the same mistakes at work.

That novel was already in a definite hiatus.... He don't know if be could ever transmigrate again. Arriving at this conclusion, Ling Xia's stomach twists in pain.

What is he gonna do from now on? Will he continue to spend his remaining life in depression?

He requested for a leave from work to recuperate, use this time to go out there and mend his broken heart Ping Min Chang was worried about him a lot and allowed him. He ordered him to go back home and take a good rest

Ling Xia was carrying a mountain backpack on his own, touring around china's popular mountains. He went to the temple and just imitated and followed the tourists, devoutly kowtowing and lighting an incense praying to to gods and Buddhas to grant him blessing to be able to transmigrate again. But the miracle as always never arrived.

However, his mind's state has re-stabilized in any case. Ling Xia desperately buried the memories deep in his mind, painstakingly not touching it The days bad finally resumed its monotonous tranquility.

That afternoon, Ping Min Chang invited him to an exceptional and quiet western restaurant. Ling Xiao is aware, that this is an expensive restaurant He neatly replied in haste, staring straight in to Ping Min Chang's eyes and replied with earnest: "Senior, please let me invite you this time."

Ping Min Chang's eyes lit and said with a smile: "Ok."

Inside the restaurant, Ling Xia let Ping Min Chang to order. Ping Min Chang ordered beer, and then ordered a few of the restaurants specialties. The two people talks about their college days, as well as their past relationships.

Halfway to their eating time, Ping Min Chang suddenly held Ling Xia's hand and quietly observes it: "Ling Xia, I find you're hands attractive."

Ling Xia works as a programmer all year long, and he practices piano during his childhood. His fingers were evenly slender, better looking than

the average man. He uneasily draws back his hand. He felt that Ping Min Chang's action were somewhat odd.

He squeezes out a reluctant smile: "I'm actually jealous of those basketball player's hands, I can't grab well."

Ping Min Chang immediately laugh: "Well I can, do you like playing (basket)balls? Then lets set a match one of this days.

After finishing the tied, Ping Min Chang insisted on sending ling Xia back home. Ling Xia was unable to decline and takes a seat in the car. But it was only at the outskirts of his neighborhood when Ling Xia wanted to get off from the car. Ping Min Chang suddenly held his shoulder, and unexpectedly kisses him!

Ling Xia quivered, and shoves him away with a vicious expression as be wipes his lips. He can't possibly bend and be gay? He hurriedly opened the door and jumps out of the am

He restrained his anger and speaks: "I'm sorry, Manager Ping. I don't like men?"

He composedly rolls down the car window and wawa his hand and said with a smile: "For now you don't, see you tomorrow."

He watches as the Audi abruptly drives away, Ling Xia was disgusted and curses out loud foul swear words. 'For now' your sister! Isn't the great me a proper straight man?

He shut the entrance door of his house, then lied down on his bed after washing his face. Should he still go to work later?

—Because of his troubles with Ping Min Chang, He can't help but remember Yu Zhi Jue once again.

That young man's passionate but inexperienced kisses at night. That scent of his... Ling Xia's face unconsciously burned up. He could vividly remember that feeling as he closes his eyes....

Stop it! Stop it! How could he thirst for his younger brother and fantasize about him?

He gets up weakly, the turned on his computer to search the Internet a for a tantalizing and passionate movie. that are known and praised. When he finally found some, he played it on low volume and places a roll of toilet paper at the side of the table, every preparation was in older.

But as he starts playing it, Ling Xia was startled, and almost flipped the table — on the screen are two naked and fully exposed bodies entangled with each other. Aren't this pairing clearly both men?

He was flustered and wanted to close the video. But he accidentally clicked the full screen which was focused on the flush face as the loud moans ensues: "Husband ~ harder ~ En ~ so good ~~~"

Ling Ma's hand trembled, he immediately whacks the computer off. How can you still all that as a man?

He did not feel disgusted, be started feeling good on the contrary?

Sigh, its really bad luck to have watch this porn! Ling Xia listlessly went back to his bed to sleep. And after rolling a lot for a long time that finally fell asleep.

He wakes up the next day freezing. The chilling air seeps into the very marrow of his lone, Ling Xia uncontrollably shivered a lot. He forced himself to open his eye, and a white snowy world entered his vision. He dumbly bowed his bead, to find that he is lying inside a crystal ice coffin. On his body were neat clothes but definitely out of this world.

Did he transmigrated back into a preserved corpse.....? Ling Xia felt awesome and was smiling from ear to ear, can it really be that he successfully transmigrated?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 2

The cold was really unbearable, making his train of thoughts freeze as well. He was shivering so bad that he want nothing else but to leave here. But his body was weak and could not muster any strength. His fingers was halfway rigid, while his body cannot bend despite all efforts.

Ling Xia took great effort to open his mouth and shout, his lips only manage to squirm for a while, yet unable to say any words. It was as if he was frozen all over, only his eyes can move around. His surroundings were extremely quiet, as if god had forgotten this place exists, not a single sound can be heard.

Is there anyone there?

Somebody?

The great me is quickly freezing to death here! He could only cry his eyes out.

Ling Xia suddenly remembered something, he condenses his spiritual strength and energy element. But it quickly dissipated as soon as it accumulate. The internal energy inside his body were completely empty, he could only do one thing and that is to weep and weep till he's unable to as the same frigid climate stabs into him.

Everywhere is covered with ice and snow, and it seems that inside resembles a cavern.... Last time it was his masked master rescued him, is it him again this time? Is Yu Zhi Jue also here? Could it be it's an another freaking 4 years time skip?

But his pose right now is evidently more serious than the last time. Both of his hand is serenely folded on top of his belly and his skin color of green-ish white can scare a man. He could imagine his face and body are both in bad condition. He reckoned that he was preserved in the same pose as a

dead corpse—and not of a living person. He guesses that he's more likely at a place like mortuary for dead people.

Ling Xia wanted to cry but unable to for who knows how long—because every passing minute becomes more and more intolerable. Then at last, a noise came from outside, a sound like a door opening up. He heard the sounds of a light and uniformed footsteps coming from a far then gets nearer and nearer to him. He hurriedly closes his eyes, as he still don't know the current circumstances. It's better to not act blindly without thinking.

It would be really awkward like when he went missing the last time, referring to the actual events of being submerged in a pool of liquid naked. But then the same plot won't happen. And there's a great probability that he and Yu Zhi Jue are in the same place

The sound of footsteps finally stops besides him, Ling Xia's stiff and frozen heart slowly beats for a while—He felt a stare congealed on his face.

Soon, a lukewarm hand extended down and touched his forehead. Warm fingernails slowly traces the contour of his high bridge nose. Then it fell on top of his stiff frozen lips, lightly caressing it with an unfathomable tenderness.

It's movement was extremely ambiguous, that Ling Xia was suddenly embarrassed, not knowing if he should open his eyes to see the other person. And at the perfect timing, the other person talked—

"Ling Xia, you've been sleeping for a long time."

This voice clearly belongs to a young man, it was attractive and sexy, and was magnetically deep and low, like playing a cello. It was actually very peculiar as it echoed in his ears. He really couldn't place his mind on who's voice is it, but it still made Ling Xia's heart immediately beating at a quick pace.

He didn't dare to move, as he tried his best to recognized the man. He was so sure that he had not heard this voice before

But frankly speaking, he was quite jealous of this man's voice. Won't it be easy to attract young girls with this kind of voice?

Don't know how much time had passed, when that person finally turned around slowly, about to leave.

Ling Xia quickly opened his eyes, and concentratedly fixed his pupil to look at that person. He could only catch a glimpse of his grandiose purple clothes. On the back is embroidered with an alluring golden tree peony flower. A belt imbued with jades is tied on his waist, making his back and shoulder seemingly broader. It was somewhat overly stunning, even if its matching that is the other person's messy spill of black hair draped on its tall and straight back side, the look was perfectly harmonious anyway.

It was as if he is influenced to respond, that person suddenly turned around. Two person's line of sight collided momentarily. Ling Xia caught a glimpse of his dark red eyes and a tear drop birthmark as his pupil suddenly constricted its a grown up Yu Zhi Jue!

He was dumbstruck, he could only stupidly stare, momentarily not knowing how to respond. But of course, his face and body are currently frozen, he definitely cannot produce any expressions at all.

From his point of view, he could not clearly see Yu Zhi Jue's face. He can only see the other person slightly raised the corner of his eyebrows, and the entire blurry silhouette of the young man's face.

His heart abruptly clench tight -- Ling Xia knows, that the one in front of him is Yu Zhi Jue, who had already became a villain!

But what does that have to do with anything anyway?

It doesn't matter if his a villain or Shao Yang sect great disciple, Yu Zhi Jue is still the same him....

His throat slightly choked with sobs. Ling Xia finds it somewhat strange, it's been a while so why is Yu Zhi Jue still not coming over? He tried so hard to speak, but he could only let out a puff of air.

It was as if Yu Zhi Jue had just woken up shortly, unable to take his eyes off Ling Xia as he stares at him, and slowly walks to his side, his stride is slow and graceful. Ling Xia finally able to see his face clearly, he thought it was somewhat dazzling

This child, Yu Zhi Jue, is now.... more sinister than what the book describes!

His face was clear and has the quality of a precious jade, his pair of eyebrows with the shape of a double edge sword slanted up, a pair of long, narrow, and profound red phoenix eyes that no one would dare to look upon.

His previously limpid eyes has now a great overcasting darkness that no one can see through it, yet it was actually heart-rending. His lips were perfectly thin and a bit erotic with a hint of blush on his cheeks, plus his ink coloured hair that droops down on his shoulder. He looks even more perfect than what was described in the online novel...

Ling Xia had nothing more to say, is it thanks to *spinach egg and chicken soup*'s favoritism to the villain? This damnable picture like appearance of Yu Zhi Jue, won't it be a problem if the protagonist's whole harem of young girls mob him?

As he saw Yu Zhi Jue walks nearer, he tenses up more and more.

Yu Zhi Jue's appearance was around eighteen to nineteen years old, could it be that I was gone for four years again? You must be joking with me!

T/N: Jn - The author uses this a lot hahah! It's an internet slang that means that one is being tricked.

What should he say?Fine, It's better to deal with the cold

first then think of something to say then!

Yu Zhi Jue finally a reaches the side of the ice coffin, his eyes narrowed, and still not showing any reaction.

Ling Xia's eyes moves about, he gasps out a few breath with difficulty— Don't just stare foolishly! Bring me out of here ASAP! I'm freezing to death!

As if the words from his lips were read, Yu Zhi Jue abruptly takes off his outer robe and wrapped him with it. And then he held out his hand and seizes his shoulder, the extended the other hand under his knees, and held him tightly in his bosom as he lifted him in a princess carry style.

" Ling Xia was embarrassed to death, isn't this posture too

feminine? It's better to be carried on the back, or be carried on the shoulder is good as well!

Two grown man like this is really not a bit romantic got it?!

He really wanted to struggle, but his body was like an ice sculpture and can't move at all. He could only weakly lean on the warm pit of Yu Zhi Jue's stomach and closes his eyes as if he was dead.

Yu Zhi Jue lifted his feet at a flash, his swift speed is simply astonishing!

Ling Xia feel that the strong wind that blew on his face was a bit painful. His was watching the rapidly passing scenery in reverse. It seems that current location is at a mountain range.

Approximately half a stick of *incense burned, the snow land had disappeared at last, and gradually change in to a lush of greenery. Then after passing through that green scenery, Yu Zhi Jue went uphill. Ling Xia could even hear the sound of his(YJC) heart beating fast, so he felt a bit guilty, after all his body is not that light.

On the road appeared a coordinated group in the same black clothes clad in armor, an army with sword clasps on their hands. It is definitely the mighty army that the villain leads depicted in the novel...

Ling Xia tenses all of a sudden, he wish to dig a hole and bury his head inside but he's unable to. It was unbearable to him, for them to see their

demon king still princess carrying him, a man. Can he still save face?

Afterwards, he was stunned when these group of people kneels on the ground without the slightest hesitation, and unanimously bowed their head, it made him not dare to take a peek.

It seems that Yu Zhi Jue had really grown up... Fuck! Please tell me that it's just a joke that the plot had already advanced to the point where he and Xiao Hu burned bridges and love to kill each other now?

A magnificent and secluded palace like building gradually appeared as if it was slowly rising. Yu Zhi Jue increases his speed, making Ling Xia dizzier. He closes his eyes when left with no alternative—anyway he won't be seen by other people at all with this speed.

Yu Zhi Jue finally come into a halt, then wave his sleeve and issued a command: "Leave!"

All the subordinates and servants inside the palace hall withdraws in a neat and orderly fashion. Ling Xia started to look around, and came to conclusion that this must be Yu Zhi Jue's resting quarters or something like that. On the wall, and on the table..... The corner of his mouth slightly droop down, this grown up villain still fond of elegant styles? Why is there so much extravagant ornaments and treating it as mainstream decorations? Should he be glad that there's not much on the air but the smell of perfume invading his nose?

Yu Zhi Jue carried him directly inside, then Ling Xia caught sight of an unbelievable thing. He don't know in what way to ridicule it—That impressive king size bed is big enough to fit in five to six people rolling about on top, exquisite bed curtains with string of pearls was hooked at the edges of the bed canopy—Does Yu Zhi Jue already have a replacement for him?

This villain's gorgeously evil charm is not moe, is not cool, but rather a sickness! Ought to be cured!

Yu Zhi Jue gently and carefully stoop down and lays Ling Xia on the bed, firmly gazing at him, with a pair of deep and serene eyes. Ling Xia could not read his mood at the slightest.

Being stared by him made Ling Xia uncomfortable all over. He knows that his current image might not be looking good, like that of a zombie.

The corner of his(YZJ) mouth pulls up the same way he did it in the past, Yu Zhi Jue smiled.

As always, it took a couple of moments before words come out of him. But no matter how many years he faces Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia always feel—greatly oppressed!

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly moves, he swiftly started untying Ling Xia's sash. Ling Xia turned pale with fright, his scalp felt numb -- what the hell is he doing?

Yu Zhi Jue was taking his clothes of at the same time he's talking: "Your body was placed in the Thousand Years Cold Ice Palace for five years, so you shouldn't move around for a short while. I must think of a way to undo the frozen state of your body."

Ling Xia felt relieved. The cold to the bone feeling had not yet disappeared from his body. He was as he saw Yu Zhi Jue undressed him thoroughly in just a few seconds—The speed of the adult villain's undressing skill is truly praise worthy!

Afterwards he thought that Yu Zhi Jue will call out to his subordinate to bring in hot water or that he will be tuck in inside the quilt. But the next move of the other person made his heart race all of a sudden—Yu Zhi Jue took of his clothes, in a faster rate than a moment ago.

Ling Xia suddenly feel that it was a bit difficult to breath, and embarrassingly averted his eyes.

Yu Zhi Jue's body right now, fuck! And that six pack that he absolutely dreams to have!

This man's great body should totally just go to hell!

Yu Zhi Jue quickly goes to bed, and wrapped his arms around his body like an octopus. Their stomach sticking to each other, and their head are facing each other. Yu Zhi Jue reach out his hand and embraces his waist, his legs presses on top of his(LX) legs. The two people's distinct hair tangling together, its quality is like a smooth, supple, and strong cloth, but not losing its luster.

Even if his skin has become numb and sluggish, when Ling Xia closes his eyes he could still feel the mature man's body weight, smooth and supple skin, implicit firm and solid impressive muscles pressing down on his body.

He was thankful beyond compare as Yu Zhi Jue can't see his face right now. He was never in a predicament like this before, isn't this too wicked? —This was not in the novel's plot!

But Ling Xia soon finds out, that Yu Zhi Jue's body is covered with layers of chi(energy). His body's temperature was higher than usual, and countless fine threads of energy drilled through his pores and into his body. Making him comfortable and almost wanted to sigh.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly lowered his head, his voice filled with magnetic sex appeal echoed in his ears: "You'll recover faster this way."

Ling Xia stiffened, he felt that a somewhat soft and warm object blocks his lips—it was indeed the other person's lips.

His heartbeat thuds in disorder, many years had already passed by. Did Yu Zhi Jue still kept those inclinations?

Yu Zhi Jue breath remained steady, his mouth simply grazing lightly and slowly deepens, in a rather unruffled manner.

His teeth was quickly pried apart by the other person's tongue,a moist warm and nimble object push its way in. Ling Xia shuddered—his tongue cannot move at all, so why his sense of taste still not lost?

The taste of the kiss was exactly the same as he remembered. He was at loss and cuts a sorry figure, as he did not felt disgusted once again....

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 3

Ling Xia did not dare to open his eyes to look at Yu Zhi Jue's expression, well he can't move anyway. Even pinching his muscles won't make a difference, he's still frozen stiff.

Fortunately, Yu Zhi Jue did not go overboard, and merely kept him warm. He also pulled his tongue back soon enough, and Ling Xia breathes an air of relief. Yu Zhi Jue did not say anything else, he only held him tight. He(LX) ignored the ambiguous posture of them hugging each other, since so much skin in contact with each other is rather comfortable. Ling Xia unconsciously fell asleep to his surprise.

As soon as he had woken up once again, he find himself lying on someone's naked embrace, and arm outlined in a smooth shape was fastened on his waist, under his butt is a firm but strong sensation, a robust and powerful pair of legs. The couple had change location, a cloak of mist lingers around, giving the impression of a hot spring.

Oh, on a hot spring….

If not for his body still not having strength, Ling Xia will stand up for sure. He wanted to scream so bad, why is it that every time he transmigrated back every moment are all heart-breakingly hard to endure.

Yu Zhi Jue seemed to noticed that he had awaken, coils his other hand around, and placed it on his(LX) stomach. The contact of two moist skin brings out an indescribable silky yet prickly sensation. Even though its merely an up down movement of washing, Ling Xia's felt like his throat had turned a bit dry, and awkwardly swallowed his saliva.

Not only Yu Zhi Jue's extremely proficient, he was almost certain,that during the time he was sleeping like a corpse, the great villain had wiped him clean countless times before…

“Don’t….I…..Wash…..Myself.” He noticed that he could move his tongue, so he tried hard to speak out a few words.

Yu Zhi Jue suddenly paused, but did not stop, rather indifferently retorts: “You can move now?”

Ling Xia tries to raise his hand, but it was heavy as if it was five hundred kilos, he could barely swing it a bit, so he just let it dangle again.

Yu Zhi Jue’s throat seemingly quivered a few times, Ling Xia cannot form coherent thoughts and wanted to laugh at himself, suddenly remaining silent. Frankly speaking, he repeatedly hold off and avoided confronting this big boss Yu Zhi Jue’s feelings toward him. The previous Xiao Yu Zhi Jue is a lot more adorable, randomly taking liberties with him, then flare up his proud and spoiled trait…..

He(YJC) slowly traces his thin and callous beautiful hands from his chest down to his lower stomach, his movements are natural but it carelessly brings an erotic and and enticing meaning. Ling Xia’s back trembled, he wanted to stand up and escape.

He uncomfortably inclined his head, then he saw his skinny and pitiful appearance. an appalling scene, that he nearly jump in fright. Maybe he’s thinking too much,this weird and ugly appearance, Yu Zhi Jue simply wants to cure it for him.

T/N: lit. translation not like people nor like ghosts

Yu Zhi Jue sensed his resistance, then calmly explained: “I have no other choice on removing the cold air on your skin. This hot spring’s spiritual energy is very sufficient, but it can only be absorbed slowly, and I’m helping you absorb it faster.” “There’s…. no…. need….” Ling Xia in an instance felt that his tongue was already tied in knot, and was incessantly embarrassed.

The great villain is clearly used to deciding and acting on his own now, delicately and playfully caressing his abdomen, then the thighs.

Huge warm hand was applying chi, the spring water’s spiritual energy converging up, following the sliding movement on every spot of the skin, bringing with it a shuddering tactile sensation.

Then those hand move towards the inner side of his thighs, the flesh on that spot is too sensitive. Ling Xia stifled a moan,almost wanting to cry crocodile tears—should not grope again, or else and accident really is bound to happen!

He imagined himself turning into a Buddha statue, he tried hard to find a way disperse this inappropriate mood as this is not in accordance to his feelings. But what should he say? He was full of questions, and he wanted to ask these to Yu Zhi Jue in the past, is it still ok to ask him……

But to ask a lot seems excessive. The novel did not always write all the thoughts the villain had in his mind, so he wanted to know.

A part of his stomach twists in a insufferable pain.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly turned him around, then parted his legs so he could sit on his lap, two people directly facing each other.

Ling Xia’s disorderly mind breaks off at once, replaced with stimulation and confusion. Isn’t this posture gone way overboard?

Ling Xia’s face heats up boiling hot, he lowered his head not daring to look at Yu Zhi Jue. He was only bold enough to avert his line of sight to the other person’s wide and thick chest. Maybe this hot spring have some side effect, he feels that his breathing becomes a bit laborious, and his head started to spin.

Yu Zhi Jue soon takes him into his embrace, he started to use moderate strength to wash his back.

His touches carried a hint of electric like current, very soft yet prickly sensation slowly tracing down along his backbone. Ling Xia leaned on Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder and felt like crying, he strenuously asks in a hoarse voice: “Are you done?”

A magnetic and pleasant voice resonated at the side of his ear, as if carrying a restrained tone: “You have a reaction.”

Ling Xia’s face was painted with red—**boss**, if you grope someone for a long time no matter who they are, there is no man who would not have a reaction, ok?

T/N: The author actually wrote the '**boss**'

He stuttered as he defensively replied: “So-Sorry!”

Holy shit! Why is down there still not limp when he was in that freezing place for many years? why is down there still not limp when he was in that freezing place for many years? why is down there still turned limp when he was in that freezing place for many years? Why! ! !

Ling Xia’s heart was bleeding in rage, his body is still sluggish. That place is actually just slightly risen up that’s all, but it was enough for him to feel insanely shameful.

“It’s doesn’t matter.” Yu Zhi Jue was almost speaking closely besides his ear, “That place will soon restore its function.”

Fuck! It’s not what he’s thinking, ok?

Without having the chance to refuse, his big hand already started to grope its way down, very naturally holding his, the up and down jerking frequency is just perfect. The originally slight reaction in that place is now standing up with vigor due to the other person’s actions. Even if the situation below is not visible to others, the stirring of the water produces noise, it was enough for Ling Xia to not raise his head.

Ling Xia was panting a lot, almost all of him are held in Yu Zhi Jue’s embrace. He just gave up and let himself go as he snuggled onto Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder. Fine, they already did this kind of things before anyway…….

Yu Zhi Jue crooked his own head, and slowly kissing its way to Ling Xia's(lips), gently caressing and licking using his lips and tongue, as if he was drawing him with his lips. Ling Xia contained his moans and did not dare to utter a word—then he was french kissed and so on. Such gap, even though they have done this before, its not the same….

He tried hard to imagine that he's just receiving therapy right now. But which specialist would give this kind of soul stirring and spiritually draining medical treatment!

The other person seems dissatisfied as he restrained himself. The jerking motions abruptly became faster, even stroking the opening from the backside a few times. Ling Xia quivered, unable to stop himself from letting out a low moan, then the other person took advantage and invaded his lips.

Yu Zhi Jue's breath becomes scalding hot, his leisure movements slowly starting to pick its pace up, and arrogantly bent down to kiss him, the force of the kiss was as if almost wanting to swallow him whole.

Ling Xia thought that he was going to suffocate, and was overwhelmed with a dizzy spell. Yu Zhi Jue used his other hand to serve him, while the other one started to wander someplace else—He still doesn't believe that this is not a simple bath and treatment.

However, he doesn't have any strength to resist, as he passively being handled by the other person.

His lower abdomen suddenly tightens, that feeling of reaching the climax abruptly bursts in his sluggish brain. Ling Xia closes his eyes as he gulps mouthful of air and keeps panting. His languid eyes did not know what to do and how to react—Could it be that the reason for his transmigration was because his regret of not realizing his dream of successfully using his pistol?

Not only Yu Zhi Jue's hand job was exceptional, but also completely surpasses those of otaku males. Did he practice a lot during his free time?….

While his imagination is running wild, Yu Zhi Jue already separated from his lips, then nibbled his neck at the spot he had not marked yet, his hot breath turned hotter.

Ling Xia's stomach undulated in a hurried and brief movements, inarticulately said: "Ah Jue, not like this…."

Yu Zhi Jue uses his fingers to propped his(LX) chin up, his head was lifted with force, gazes steadily at his eyes: "Still don't like it?"

Ling Xia bluffly stared back at him, yet in fact his heart doesn't have an ounce confidence at all. The Yu Zhi Jue now is a somehow little strange. His intense, narrow, and elegantly slanted almond shape eyes faintly contained a strong and powerful pressure that makes his heart feel terrified.

His brain was confused and lightheaded as he stammeringly say: "No…..I, I don't have anything that I can do for you….."

After he said it, he clearly saw Yu Zhi Jue's beautiful red phoenix eyes lit up, his lips emerging into his familiar smile.

That smiling face of Yu Zhi Jue is just momentarily, he quickly regains its impassive and relax expression, that Ling Xia thought it was only his imagination. But as he senses Yu Zhi Jue's words as well as his brows and the corner of his eyes turned a lot gentle, the muscle that was strech taught falls limp. Yu Zhi Jue is not the same as before, did he like him(LX) that much?…. Otherwise he won't take care of a 'dead corpse' for five years. He also didn't meet Yu Zhi Jue by chance at his first transmigration, can't say that this foolish child always seem to search for him on his own…

He can't say that he had the right to mock, he never liked someone, or to meet his significant other before.

As he imagine what its been like for this foolish child for the past 5 years, an unspeakable feeling rose from the pit of his stomach, like its wanting to suffocate him.

Ling Xia arduously raised his hand that was placed on Yu Zhi Jue's arm, he wanted to pat his head just like what he imagined before—He wanted to cry, its too much high to reach and touch. His hand weakly hangs down.

Yu Zhi Jue swiftly held his hand, gazing at him with a burning stare, body slightly leaning forward, inked black hair moist and wet floats in the water, looking like a water demon exuding out an enticing aura.

Fuck, the dripping wet look of the villain is the greatest foul, isn't it good enough for both men and women to want to eat?

Ling Xia's eyes drooped, his face beet red as he gasps like he was out of breath and say: "I don't want to…..to make Ah Jue….be sad…. we…. will be together now…." During that time while being embraced in the past he miserably shouted: "You can't like me" to Yu Zhi Jue, and dream about it countless times. And every time he wakes up he always felt crying his eyes out.

He's not that cold-hearted of a person, but he's not also the person particularly holding on to his principle.

Since he had come back once again, whatever happens, he don't have that desire to let Yu Zhi Jue show that kind of stifling expression ever again.

He truly don't like men,the thought of loving a man is nauseating. Such as with Ping Min Chang who acted that way towards him, he was itching to smash a bottle in in the other's head.

Yet if its Yu Zhi Jue, and the way he accompanied him to such extent today, somehow still acceptable?

This homosexual practice is not accepted by the society, maybe Yu Zhi Jue must not have known and thought its ok to stirred then brewed[1]? Anyway that place is….frigid, to accept.

T/N: [1]It means doing H things. Ah this phrase gave me a headache for hours and delayed the release…

Yu Zhi Jue already could not maintain his calm and leisurely expression anymore, and stared blankly. His(LX) expression was as if it was struck by lightning. Of course he just barely a fully grown adult, did he want to make out so this evil demon lord pulled that act?

Ling Xia threw a glance at him, immediately had the same air of seniority in the past, made a small smile and say: “Ah Jue, that, had enough time soak in the bath?

“En….”As if he was sleep walking, Yu Zhi Jue held him tightly and left the place. Ling Xia was utterly shock as he discovered, that the great villain’s lower region is full of vigour, and was rubbing against him as they slowly walk, completely caught him off guard.

Through the bed canopy’s white curtains,he realized the bed was smaller. Yu Zhi Jue picks up the white bath towel to wipe then comb his hair, then his body, and finally putting clean and cozy white clothes.

Yu Zhi Jue embraces him again for a long while,then places him carefully on the bed, then starts to spruce himself up.

Ling Xia pursed his lips when he saw the clothes taken out from the wardrobe, it was not that extravagant purple robes clothes , but it was so gorgeous that it can make a person dare not to look. Fine silver seams with a few slightly obscured silver butterflies embroidered on, butterfly wings was adorned with gold and black colors. So you’re saying the great villain had a lot of gorgeous clothes collection to change into everyday? Fuck!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 4

Yu Zhi Jue's undressing speed is too fast, but wearing his clothes is too slow, each and every manner is completely the same as those of nobility.

Ling Xia finds it a lot embarrassing to continue looking, and hurriedly shifted his line of sight to the side. But the moment he saw that the opposite of him is a clear mirror, he was stupefied

—Fuck! Should I be glad that Yu Zhi Jue is about to come over now!

The unusual circular lens of the mirror is not made of copper, and was rather made from special energy stones, but the quality and the mercury is about the same. The head that was wearing a forehead ribbon was malnourished. It was thin and bony like with eyes that are somewhat sunken, making the eyes appear bigger, as well as thin and delicate arms not at all worth seeing. Apart from pale skin, the image is like a refugee from Africa...

His physical features back in the past was not bad, but right now, he can't help but admire Yu Zhi Jue's mental capability!

By the time Yu Zhi Jue came back and embraces him again, Ling Xia immediately said: "It's better to turn back."

Yu Zhi Jue paused for a moment, but still continued to embrace him, then went ahead and kissed his forehead and said: "But I want to keep looking at you."

He wanted to die. He's obviously passed the age for his heart to throb like a youth, why now because of this unthinking boss youngster's few words that his heartbeat speeds up? Ling Xia feigned his calm and asked: "Where did you move[1]?"

T/N: The author shortened the question 'where do you live now'

"My residence." Yu Zhi Jue gradually moved away, "You need to be carefully taken care of."

The hot spring before is just located at the back of Yu Zhi Jue's sleeping quarters. Ling Xia was troubled if he should ask now or not, but because of the hot spring's medical effect, he soon felt tired and went to sleep.

Yu Zhi Jue sat back at the headboard while holding his hand, only gazing steadily at his face, a thought faintly pops out of Ling Xia's mind: as a venerated demon sect's master, does he still have some peaceful leisure time?

As soon as he wakes up again, Yu Zhi Jue was still sitting there to his surprised, with his waist and back in straight posture. Promptly propping his head with his hand as he lets him(LX) lean on his embrace, With a bowl of soup held in his(YJC) hands to feed to him.

To be assisted as if being served upon by this child, Ling Xia felt uncomfortable all over, he don't want to develop this bad habit of dependance and bring inconvenience to this person.

He(YJC) was holding the porcelain spoon with finesse, and keeping the soup in moderate temparature. He(LX) don't know how it was prepared and what's in it, but when he drank some he felt a warm current flows into his whole body, his whole body felt very comfortable. Yu Zhi Jue saw Ling Xia drink soundly, his eyebrows also carried a faint happy expression, lifted his hands to bring more to the man.

Ling Xia inquisitively take a quick glimpse, turned his body to Yu Zhi Jue who's serving him, only to meet the eyes of the man with a silver mask, wearing skin tight but limber black clothes. He lowered his head in extreme reverence, with a meaningful gaze that never looked back.

This time Ling Xia has not yet finish drinking half of the soup, when he raises his head and stared at Yu Zhi Jue as he ask: "Ah Jue, how long did I sleep? Did you not take a rest the whole time? You must not have eaten a thing either?"

"It's not that long." Yu Zhi Jue briefly replied, and uses his finely embroidered handkerchief to wipe the corner of Ling Xia's lips then took it back.

"You need to eat a lot and have plenty of rest, so that the rate of you're recovery will be very fast." He explained while raising the bowl of the remaining half of the soup, slowly drinking it up.

...Doesn't that sound like raising a pig? Moreover Yu Zhi Jue have mysophobia, does it not matter to him that his drinking his(LX) left over soup?

Maybe Yu Zhi Jue is looking out for him as he(LX) was silently cursing. But as he was sliding and stroking his ribs up and down using his slender and good looking hands, he assessingly remarked: "You're too thin now."

Here it is again, that feeling of him being obscenely taken liberties with...

Ling Xia's muscles are being tickled by those touches, making him shrink at once. He replied "En" in a very childish tone . Speaking honestly, he was a bit unsure right now in what suitable way to associate with Yu Zhi Jue. Not only they are brothers turned lovers, but is also five years in age difference. They are also both inexperienced in male to male relationship, also a man topping another man, he knows that the way it goes is not the same way here at all...

Soon someone brings in things for washing the face and rinsing the mouth, even the basin pot is intricately carved.

Yu Zhi Jue removed Ling Xia's clothes without the slightest hesitation, scaring Ling Xia that he almost peed his pants. Isn't this kind of intimacy makes one feel really mortified? But he can't really blame him since he's currently paralyzed in the bed, its better to allow his enthusiastic caring hands do the moving.

But Yu Zhi Jue is normally extremely unyielding to no one, yet he took the basin and and places it there on his own.

Ling Xia was completely speechless, he cried out "I don't want you gawking at me so go out...."

Yu Zhi Jue ended up going out, Ling Xia did not dare to look at his expression.

After cleaning up, Yu Zhi Jue quickly took off his outer robe, easily drew the canopy's curtains and went past it, then held him in his bosom as if its only natural.

He closes off the space between, and with only two people, moreover a couple that is in a position as if they are husband and wife.... Ling Xia was all of a sudden . Would Yu Zhi Jue intended to take care of him in this way all the time every day?

He raises his head and saw the elegant shape of Yu Zhi Jue's chin: "Ah Jue, are you now, a..."

Yu Zhi Jue's heart sank, he stroke the back of Ling Xia's head, carefully studying his expression: "En. I'm Qian Kun Sect Master."

He lowered his head and sniffs Ling Xia's hair, it smelled like a fresh and clean herbal scent with a hint of sulphur, he still can't believe it's real.

Before he regained consciousness, he was already taken by Ming Ze to the demon sect's territory, and told him, that the human panacea was killed by the holy maiden peak. He embraced Ling Xia's dead body with a blank expression, he didn't know how long had passed, he just desperately wanted to destroy the world, and send everyone to their graves.

That similarly faint surge of power from the last time emerges again, his miserable roar seemed like it echoed to the farthest point of his surroundings, then a man shrouded in black flame kneel near to him, and told him, this human panacea is not dead, and can still be revived.

He finally calmed down, but even if Ling Xia will be just like a living person, he might never wake up again.

He tried every method, and ended up rushing over to the thousand years ice palace in the snow mountains, he gathered thousand years Fu Li[1] spiritual grass, then had it transplanted over on the mouth of the spring behind Yao King's[2] palace....

But Ling Xia all along never woke up.

Day after day,

Year after year,

This person never woke up, even though he had promised him!

But...

Along the way he had gained power, his hands was stained with muddied blood for a long time, then gave his entire so-called prestigious clan an upright enemy. He did not care for any of these, but a man's innards is indeed soft. Why not just acknowledge it and accept the real him?

And if he was rejected, now matter what method he used, he will absolutely never let that person leave him again!

Ling Xia's complexion did not have any peculiar color, and since he made the choice to to be with Yu Zhi Jue, he naturally have to consider Yu Zhi Jue's status. Qian Kun Sect in the first place is the land of cultivators that practices dark arts. By the time Yu Zhi Jue turned 20, a grand ceremony will be bestowed after and he will formally become the honourable demon lord of thirty six large sects and seven hundred twenty sub-branch sects.

But in his case, he will never let Yu Zhi Jue end up in that tragic ending.

He slightly nodded his head and revealed a shallow smile: "Oh, surely Ah Jue must be quite busy?"

Yu Zhi Jue was making sure that Ling Xia won't be angry or doubt him, still he was inevitably surprised deep inside. He softly replied: "En, but only with unimportant matters, and I have already handled them."

Ling Xia slightly nodded, he closed his eyes and replied: "En, I naturally believed that you have."

Ling Xia rested for another half month, Ling Xia did not know how effective those good stuff are, or what's in it, but he can finally move with ease, his face also gained a bit of meat at last. His daily diet was solely managed by Yu Zhi Jue himself, never letting him do it on his own. Ling Xia is starting to feel that he's losing face as the older one.

Every day, the moment Yu Zhi Jue watches him fall asleep, he had already dealt with his official matters and cultivation training. The duration of him leaving is also not that long, coming back in high spirits on the contrary. Ling Xia rather felt sorry for him, always urging him to not overwork himself in his busy schedule. Even though he regained vitality but he still cannot be of use. But in any case, no matter what he must not turn into a useless person.

However, his words simply does not carry much weight towards the great villain, Yu Zhi Jue still continued to do as he will. Everyday always treating him as if he's a fragile glass, fearing that he might create some trouble.

Yu Zhu Jue frequently fixes his gaze at him for a long period of time. Gently caressing his face or eyes from time to time , as if wanting to make sure of something. Ling Xia knows that right now he doesn't give him any sense of security, and felt even more apologetic to him, so he just exercised his patience as the pair intimately and deviously glued to each other.

Sometimes he find it rather strange. Ever since he came(transmigrated) back, nothing inappropriate had happened apart from the hot spring at the beginning, the two of them just eat and sleep as they always did everyday. Yu Zhi Jue simply embraces and kisses him dearly till they fall asleep, and never did anything more. Even if they visited the hot spring for washing up and treating him, Yu Zhi Jue never went out of control. Every day Ling Xia would become more nervous and tensed up, but then sleep completely smooth and steady afterwards.

Although it was relaxing for him, but he felt a bit depressed at the same time...

Did Yu Zhi Jue already lost interest towards him?

Could it be that his mysophobic side already surpasses his romantic love for him? As he thought about it, Ling Xia's face immediately turned red.

That evening Yu Zhi Jue held him in his arms as he usually do. Ling Xia could faintly feel those firm strong muscles on his(YJC) body. He was reminded of Yu Zhi Jue's small delicate and thin arms and legs during his childhood, he cannot help but curiously knead Yu Zhi Jue's waist. Even if the very thin and soft sleeping clothes stands in between, he can still sense that amazing feeling of touching there, the texture of the skin that his hand touches is extremely supple and strong.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly caught his hand, his voice a little bit deeper than usual: 'What are you doing?'

To say that he doesn't admired and hatefully envied that Is obviously a lie, he lifted his head and said with a smile: "Ah Jue is really grown up."

As he lifted his head when he talked, he immediately caught sight of that pair of beautiful and elegantly slanted almond eyes staring back at him with a burning gaze. The collar of Yu Zhi Jue's white sleeping clothes revealed the lower half of his neck, exposing his sexy collarbone and a bit of his pectoral muscle, his silky hair scattered at the sides of his pillow.

Ling Xia suddenly unable to breath properly.

"It's only natural that I grow up." Yu Zhi Jue briskly released his hand, and pulled him into his embrace, "You should sleep soon, so you'll get well shortly."

Ling Xia fell quiet. He had never been idle and bored this much before. Everyday he did nothing apart from sleeping and eating. In the past, his masked master gave him a chain bag of refined sealed space that Yu Zhi Jue properly kept, but he was under a ban on opening it. Telling him that his current body's energy is depleted and weakened as well so it's not appropriate to continue refining tools.

He actually don't need to sleep right now, but staying in a sleeping posture for a long time made him easily weary, with Yu Zhi Jue's hand placed on his lower waist the whole time. Ling Xia carefully turned his body over several times, afraid that he might wake him up.

Yu Zhi Jue cannot help but hold him in place, asks him in a low voice: "Not yet asleep?'

Ling Xia was startled, replied in an apologetic tone: "Did my ruckus woke you up?'

"No." Yu Zhi Jue turned him over and pressed him down, gorgeous and sexy voice passing through the sealed space between them and for no reason at all, carried a hint of alluring huskiness.

"You're rubbing down there again, I don't know what should be done."

What!? The pupil of Ling Xia's eyes shrank, Yu Zhi Jue lightly grazes his lips with his own, t hen left it as soon as he did, while still holding him in his embrace. Only this time the embrace became much tighter, as if preventing him again from flailing about.

Ling Xia felt hot blood rushed to his head, he could not bear to contain himself and stammeringly said: "Ah Jue, you, do not want that? These days you did not at all..."

He was not yet done talking, when the hand on his lower waist suddenly tightened its hold, the other person's temperature appeared to momentarily rises up.

"I want to. Everyday I wanted to... ...but your body is still not fully recovered."

The voice that drilled into his ears was too alluring, Ling Xia's heart beat can't help but start racing, his face also heats up.

—Is it because of Yu Zhi Jue?

Yu Zhi Jue's head inclined, suddenly biting the top of his earlobes softly: "I desired you everyday, to kiss you, and swallow you down."

That ambiguous moist and warm feeling on his sensitive earlobes made Ling Xia unable to resist quivering. The words that Yu Zhi Jue said is too straightforward, it made him ineffectually bashful. But he was astonished, as his body followed suit and immediately burned up as well.

Fuck! Where did this child learned his flirting techniques? Isn't it totally irresistible?

He held his hand up at once, wanting to block. But Yu Zhi Jue took advantage of the opportunity and sucked his finger to his mouth. Lightly wrapping his tongue and licking down a few times, a scattered tingling electric shock sensation traveled from his fingertips to his brain, Ling Xia finds himself totally unprepared. Ling Xia cuts a sorry figure and said with difficulty:

"Oh, I understand, in that case I should probably rest. —Wait for me to fully recover and then talk again."

"... ..." He could sense, as these words came out, Yu Zhi Jue's entire face darkened.

Yu Zhi Jue swiftly grabbed his hand and move it slowly downwards, extending it inside his sleeping garments, and held 'it'. He said in a hoarse voice: "It's already standing up, you need to take responsibility."

That fully erect thing he's holding in his hand down there must be much bigger than he remembered, it was faintly throbbing on the hollow of his hand. Ling Xia quivered, his hand was scalded by it's heat and subconsciously wanted to pull it back.

Yu Zhi Jue kept holding his hand and started to move it, one hand below and the other over to his(LX) face and neck as he kisses him.

By the time his(LX) hand felt completely numb, Yu Zhi Jue finally came. He(YJC) lowered his head and gasps a few times.

T/N:
[1] Fu Ling - A kind of fungi that is used in chinese traditional medicine
[2] Yaoi King - YJC'S dad's infamous title

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 5

Ling Xia did not dare to mention down there again, his heart believed that it would be exceedingly terrifying. Just imagining that sort of thing, the difference between the two of them in terms of stamina is heaven and earth.

If Yu Zhi Jue decided to drag him and stir him up till he turned into a mushed paste, he reckoned he'll be no match even with one of his fingers. The talk of being together with him is one thing, but being treated by the other as a wife and being pushed down again is another matter.

No matter what, he finds it unbearable to be the one to receive, and its making him lose too much face.

One night, Ling Xia absentmindedly fell asleep. Suddenly, a pair of warm hands was gently rubbing and kneading his butt all over. His chrysanthemum tightened and down there stood erect. He was tempted but could not use his foot to kick Yu Zhi Jue down at the spot and find an escape route.

He was anxious time and time again in doing this kind of thing. He hides his worries behind a cheerful smile every day, that even his appetite had lessened immediately after. During his recovery period, he couldn't watch TV nor play computer. Yu Zhi Jue would not allow him to bother reading books either.

Ling Xia can't do anything but repeatedly worry about the matter of doing it, then[1] hide his worries behind a cheerful smile every day, that even his appetite has lessened immediately after.

T/N: [1]The author gone lazy and just same words from last paragraph

But he was stifled from feeling wronged yet he don't want to mention it, as it might ends up in a misunderstanding. He can't say, but Yu Zhi Jue might take it as "Ah, you wanted it that much? Let's try doing it."

—That’s even more frightening.

He felt that he’s getting sick of being bored.

Sometimes Ling Xia would pretend he was sleeping soundly, then wait for Yu Zhi Jue to leave. He will then randomly wander around inside of the Qin Palace, and thinking of a way to relieve some of the pressure regarding that matter. Yu Zhi Jue limited his confinement at the entire Qin Palace, plus the garden outside, the total area coverage is about three kilometers. Lucky for him, he was left to take care on his own later on, and Yu Zhi Jue had the entire Qin Palace cleared out, otherwise he doesn’t know how to face those people.

Sometimes he can’t help but ask when will he be fully recovered.

He wanted to go down the mountain to a place crowded with people and roam around.

Yu Zhi Jue would gaze at him tenderly and reply in split seconds: “Too bored? Then I’ll stay with you today.”

Ling Xia was not fond of two grown men sticking together like glue every single day, so he hurriedly declined, and its less likelier for that improper affair to happen. Fortunately for him, Yu Zhi Jue appeared to be very busy recently, leaving early then coming back late.

Sometimes he would return during the midnight then leave early in the morning right away.

Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief but at the same time he’s quite concerned. But he could not muster the courage to ask Yu Zhi Jue anything.

One morning, Yu Zhi Jue went out very early in the morning as usual. Ling Xia was in daze and felt that someone above him gave his forehead a kiss.

By the time he woke up again, he sobered up by the cold air stimulating him.

Ling Xia stared at the sharp edge pointed at his neck in mere seconds, then calmly raises his head to see the person with a double edge sword in his hands.

That person whose holding a double edge sword had covered his body from head to toe with a black mask and clothes, making Ling Xia unable to see clearly.

But it slightly revealed a blue colored hair. His left ear was wearing an amethyst earring, and his eyes are full of murderous intent.

He noticed that Ling Xia woke up, and pressed his sword a bit closer. He shouted in a low growl: “What is your relationship with the demon lord[1]? Who are you to be in this room?”

T/N: YZJ is technically not a Demon King yet but he is being mentioned as Demon Lord which is an informal term for his current position in the dark arts sect.

His voice was unexpectedly young. It shouldn’t belong to someone over twenty years old, so it takes Ling Xia by surprise.

Yu Zhi Jue’s Qin Palace is situated high up in the mountains, and below is heavily guarded by sect masters.

Not only that but Yu Zhi Jue reassuringly stationed more troops around his vicinity to guard, in an event that an intruder broke in then they will make a move.

This youngster is very young, to be able to break in alone, he must have an extraordinary strength.

Ling Xia put all effort in thinking about the plot. When did such character appeared?

“Speak! Or else this Lao Zi[1] shall kill you!” The masked person disdainfully observed Ling Xia, the indifferent beauty whose wearing white silk clothes, and came to a sudden realization and said: “You are that Demon Lord’s male lover!”

T/N: [1]Lao Zhi – It means ‘I’ that pertains to himself in the highest degree.

“… …” Ling Xia was fuming with rage and said between his gritted teeth, “May I ask your distinguished self not to rashly summed up to such conjecture.”

From the way the mask man utter his harsh words, Ling Xia finally figured out his identity, he regained his courage and had the urges to facepalm.

Blue hair, amethyst earring, sharp tounge, bold and very skilled person, and protagonist’s best friend[1]. A harem member of his younger brother and the first to be a cannon fodder Su Mu Zhe, He He He.

T/N: Also had another (slang)meaning of gay partner, but we’re not sure of that context yet so I used the other meaning which is ‘close same sex friend’.

Su Mu Zhe have a one of a kind unusual body skill. He can conceal his smell and can bypass the guarding troops without being discovered, he could also use a special ability to conceal his presence from the people.

In the original plot line, he relied mostly in this ability and exploited it on numerous risky, dangerous covert missions and heroic contributions. Only to meet his end and dying gloriously at the hands of the great villain’s right hand man.

The protagonist shed countless teardrops in grief as he held his dead body, along with the younger sisters crying bitter tears.

If it’s according to that timeline, this other realm’s Song Xiao Hu is mostly already starting to be distinguishable and currently gaining fame for his fighting prowess.

But he don’t know yet if he had already been acquainted with Su Mu Zhe.

Hearing Ling Xia’s words, Su Mu Zhe’s mouth disbelievingly twitches as he tear off his mask. He felt it was odd when he secretly break in on this

Qin Palace.

The security is unexpectedly top grade, yet inside there is nothing important to protect. On the bed is a sleeping person with pale face and thin weak body, nevertheless this person’s facial features is indifferently calm and peaceful. He scrutinized the face further, and arrived to the conclusion that he’s a man who likes to take it from the back.

Thinking about this place, Su Mu Zhe wishes he could laugh out loud and tell the whole world: “The soon to be great Demon King, and currently Qian Kun Sect Grand Master, is actually a homosexual!”

He already wanted to go back and spread in any possible means to the whole world tabloids this news to let it out and have it hit the Dark Arts Sect in the face.

But at this moment, he still have that murderous intent written in his face as he strike the back of Ling Xia’s neck with a double edge sword.

Very fiercely ordering him: “Stand up! Bring Lao Zi to the study!”

Ling Xia shot him a quick glance, resigning himself to his misfortune and stood up from the bed, then guiding the other to the study.

He doesn’t believe that Yu Zhi Jue has anything important stored inside the study.

Those tools hoarded there are just rubbish right? And if he calculated the time, Yu Zhi Jue’s space ability should be activated quickly…

They finally reached the outside of the study, Ling Xia gestured his hand like a pendulum: “I’m not allowed inside.”

Yu Zhi Jue knows Ling Xia would always forget the time when he’s reading books, thus he places a a binding spell outside the study, so Ling Xia can’t go in.

Su Mu Zhe snorted as he pushes him to go inside. He already could make out that the other person’s body don’t have any spiritual strength and

elemental energy, just a cultivator that reverted into a regular person.

Could it be that the demon lord preferred those weak chickens? Ok, Ok, I know now one of the enemy's weak points.

He was not worried that Ling Xia would make trouble and only uses a simple binding spell to tie him up, then started flipping those neatly organized books.

Ling Xia's foot could not move, but his head can rotate around, he curiously sizes up the entire study that is simple and tidy. The content of the books is nothing less than what is found in each and every cultivation sect in the whole world.

Su Mu Zhe clicks his tongue as he swiftly rummages through a pile of stuff.

He conveniently piled up the paintings and calligraphy and threw it aside, and laughing heartily as he remarked: "This Dark Arts GrandMaster sure is shitty! Hey, do you harem members usually enjoy this kind of stuff?"

When Ling Xia saw those opened albums, heat quickly rushed up to his face.

—Fuck! Where did Yu Zhi Jue found this kind of life-like raw and steamy erotic gay porn illustrations?! And what's more, there are position that is just simply not scientific!? Did this boy perhaps wanted to do that in his body?! I want to break up with him!

Luckily, Su Mu Zhe remembered his proper business, and continued to rummage through the other stuff. He can deal with the binding spell's area of effect as well as the time restriction inside for an exactly one hour, but he could only use this ability just once.

Ling Xia was looking at the neatly organized bookshelves that was turned into a pile of hideous mess, he can't help but frown and said: "What are you looking for?"

But this time Su Mu Zhe did not talked, and only sweep a single glance at him. From time to time beating the wall or stomping the floor.

By the time the inside of the room is a complete mess, Su Mu Zhe did not find it the least rewarding. He clearly did not plan for it, but while he's at it, he wanted to hoard all the seemingly priceless stuff for himself and put it in his pouch.

As Ling Xia watched, all he wanted was to give him a kick with his foot.

Su Mu Zhe looked at Ling Xia like he was somewhat thinking deeply and said: "This Demon Lord's Qin Palace is situated at the top of the mountain and beneath it are Sect Masters guarding there, yet there's only you alone in the entire palace."

Ling Xia blanks out, and was just about to say redeeming words, when he felt something heavy hit the nape of his neck.

Before his vision blacks out, he saw a personnel he did not recognized in his line of vision.

As soon as he woke up, he found himself being carried on top of Su Mu Zhe's shoulder. The scenery around him passes by in reverse, he was dizzy and the gastric acid is rushing on his head, threatening to come out.

"Put me down…" Ling Xia said in a weak voice.

Su Mu Zhe's feet incessantly moving.

He said with a smile: "Didn't expect you to wake up so soon. You are a bit naive, but I will treat you well!"

"Do….you know….Song Xiao Hu? Ling Xia inarticulately asked, "I….am….his…friend."

Su Zhu Me paused for a while, then laughingly replied: "Don't tell me the Song Xiao Hu you're talking about is the last year entire cultivation alliance's prestigious Xin Sheng Dai martial art competition's third placer? How unfortunate, it useless even if you use his name to scare this Lao Zi!

Lao Zi did not join the competition at that time, but if I did….he he. En, I didn't expect for Song Xiao Hu to have a connection with the man of a Dark Arts Sect. This is an appalling scandal!"

Ling Xia was rendered speechless, as expected of Song Xiao Hu's best friend! They share the same stupid and silly enthusiasm.

To be able to hear news concerning Song Xiao Hu made him quite happy, so he wanted to urge Su Zhu Me in telling him a bit more. But unfortunately, Su Zhu Me continued on carrying him and ran in a faster pace. Obviously not planning on telling more gossip.

Soon they arrived inside a small family inn, which is still a part of the Dark Arts Sect's territory. Su Mu Zhe dresses the two of them in a disguise at once, very fiercely threatening Ling Xia and said: "Do not talk nonsense, or else this Lao Zi will kill you."

Ling Xia did not feel like talking with him, he massages his sore forehead to try and dispel the nauseating feeling on his stomach: "Treat me with some simple congee."

"En. Sure enough, your a delicate man who loves to be pampered, you also eat like a young lady." Su Zhu Me ambiguously shot a glance on his lower body and smiled: "A man not eating meat and drinking liquor, can that still be called a man?"

"……..I'm only recovering from a serious illness." Ling Xia can't help but fumed with rage, how can this Su Mu Zhe be this much of a bully.

The two of them sit at the table on the farthest corner of the inn. Ling Xia was quietly drinking his congee while carefully studying his surroundings.

He's thinking of a way to secretly send a letter to Yu Zhi Jue and tell him that he is all right.

It was clear that Su Mu Zhe's aim is to bring him to the Righteous Sect's territory, and when that moment comes where Yu Zhi Jue is unavoidably left on his own again, is very dangerous. After all, he is a young man who

will soon reach the age of twenty. This other realm's treacherous and powerful guy will get worse.

He saw Su Zu Me anxiously eating and drinking, and said in a low voice: "Will you finally feel like saying something? Me and the Qian Kun Sect Grand Master is not in a relationship that you are thinking of, so he won't take the risk to come."

"It's better if he does." Su Zu Me laugh to himself as he flick his double edge sword and said: "If he don't come, then I'll kill you."

Ling Xia's body unconsciously trembled as he said that nonchalantly.

This Righteous Sect cultivator never showed mercy towards the cultivators of Dark Arts, unlike Song Xiao Hu who is willing to give Yu Zhi Jue the chance to mend his way over and over again.

The people inside the inn gradually came out, and most of them had this bizarre style of clothing. The Dark Arts cultivation and the Righteous Path cultivation are the same, where they both have numerous sect. And inside the sect's territory are normal citizen living their daily lives. Ling Xia secretly speculated, that from the surface, the Dark Art's cultivation and the Righteous Path cultivation is not that distinguishable from each other.

There was a man holding an alcohol and swaying unsteadily while drinking large gulps.

This man suddenly slammed the table while laughing heartily: "Have you all not seen the yesterday's announcement yet? The Qian Kun Sect's pretty boy and Yu Clan's Du Wang will get married!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 6

This man’s voice is rather outspoken, words kept coming out of his mouth, immediately creating ruckus inside the inn. Other people who were not aware hurriedly asked about it, and those who knows are exchanging comments about it. No one noticed that a young man in the corner of the place had heard these words. The bowl of porridge in his hand almost slipped off.

Su Zhu Me helped Ling Xia steadied the table in a blink of the eye. With a tone of surprised in his words, he said: “Bear with it mistress, this sect’s main branch arrange marriage, this Lao Zi will not waste so much effort just to confirm it, you know?

In the end, the time will soon come when Yu Zhi Jue shall take over and assume his responsibilities. Even if Qian Kun Sect had numerous loyal sect under its rule and governing everything in perfect order, but there are three underworld guardians that are still not genuinely returning from their former post. Half of the small sect cultivators are also not particularly convinced by him. Even though there are ears everywhere, usually they don’t dare to criticise. But now that Qian Kun Sect is busy all over the place, that man dared to yap his mouth.

Yu Zhi Jue is too young, and his appearance extremely handsome as well, so there are still some that are angry and refused to accept. He is being insulted behind his back as pretty boy that has the title of Grand Master to express contempt.

The Dark Arts Cultivators also spreads it around to the people all over the whole land. The gossip one will discover is blood boiling. Once everyone talks about Yu Zhi Jue then they include the Yu Clan in the gossip. It is said that no one knows the looks of Yu Clan’s eldest daughter that is about to marry. They only know she is the Yu Clan’s young master’s first disciple, and already succeeded in assassinating the Righteous Sect retired previous generation that the Righteous Sect arranged a top level bounty order.

Ling Xia was unable to think so much right now, as he could not believe what everyone is saying. He could only feel coldness covered his body. He bit the bottom of his lips with a lifeless expression as he asked Su Mu Zhe: “Who is this Yu Clan’s Du Wang they are talking about with the Qian Kun Sect’s Grand Master?”

Su Mu Zhe replied but not without rejoicing in Ling Xia’s misfortune: “Yu Clan’s Du Wang is naturally one of the young underworld guardians of your sweetheart called ‘Second[1] Du’. Although she had not yet reclaimed her position as the second rank in the six great guardians, but her influence is formidable. These years she had expanded her influence rapidly, her faction’s extent had already surpassed any of the six guardians. Apparently, this newly appointed Grand Master wanted to arrange a marriage to the older demon(*T/N: referring to Du Wan*) to ascend in to a higher position and gain stabilization. Damn! This Demon Sect Leader sure is fickle with love and justice, yet is really dedicated in working himself to the bone!”

T/N: There are six guardians under the demon king. From what I remember vaguely from the second volume summary, Ming Ze is the First Guardian, the blood demon (forgot his name..) is the Third Guardian. So Du Wang is the Second Guardian. Correct me if I’m wrong about the blood demon though…

Ling Xia suddenly felt his head spin. In the novel, there was no marriage that was mentioned for Yu Zhi Jue. He also believed that Yu Zhi Jue would not betray him in any way. He turned towards that fellow spitting his saliva everywhere and asked: “May I ask this elder brother where have you heard about that announcement?”

“From the eastern city gates.” Then the fellow unmindedly pointed his finger in that direction.

Su Mu Zhe swiftly pulled Ling Xia to a halt, and threatened him: “Do not leave! You are now my hostage, so don’t even think about it. You better be careful or this Lao Zi will slaughter you!”

It took great effort for Ling Xia to calm his own breathing down. Fortunately, Su Mu Zhe was also thinking of going there to confirm. He

quickly slammed a coin on the table and brought Ling Xia outside.

When they arrived at the eastern city gates, sure enough, they saw an announcement posted. A lot of people are still encircling it and reading it. It says that the main branch sect and the Yu Clan will be merged through a marriage, and the day of the ceremony will be in fifteen days. It was written in black and white, and was signed with the Qian Kun Sect's Grand Master's seal. Those familiar beautiful calligraphy letters do belonged to Yu Zhi Jue, proving that the news was indeed real.

Su Mu Zhe who had a grass straw in his mouth was like a dog with lowered tail, he hopelessly said: "Bad Luck… Such bad luck!"

All of Ling Xia's limb had gone cold. His stomach issued a sharp pain. He wanted to find Yu Zhi Jue at all cost but he's unable to.

If he was to speak frankly, Ling Xua was convinced that Yu Zhi Jue would never dramatically shift his feelings of love. After all, he expresses it to Ling Xia in the highest degree. But to be married to the Yu Clan is actually very probable. No wonder these days Yu Zhi Jue won't let him go down the mountain no matter what, and even confined him to roam around at such a small area. It's because he's afraid that Ling Xia would find out about it….

Fuck! Regardless of whether he's made to be a mistress or to have other mistresses, Ling Xia felt utterly disgusted.

Su Mu Zhe saw his red rimmed eyes and his devastated expression due to being abandoned. He said with a rarely sympathizing line:

"Brother, all men are like this, they get enamored with new people and get bored with the old. Besides, men cannot give birth to a child, so for you to love a man, its better to change team as soon as possible….

"To hell with your loving a man!" Ling Xia got so mad that he shouted. He got really upset by what Su Mu Zhe said that he could not keep his calm.

“Lao Zi is just saying that you shouldn’t bother with him, are other people’s word not registering to you? Do you want this big brother to repeat it once more?” Su Mu Zhe was dumbstruck, this person in front of him with refined and gentle bearing temperament seemed like a young married woman. How could this fellow spat out those crude and vulgar curses that can’t be outdone by anyone else?

Su Mu Zhe saw some people who had their attention caught turned to their direction, and hurriedly pulled Ling Xia to his side. He repeated his threats: “Don’t shout again. Be careful or this Lao Zi will cut you down!”

Ling Xia was filled with grief and indignation. For his entire life, this has been his first and last true love, only to met with a terrifying bad luck when the hat of a mistress was placed in his head.

He knows that this fellow Su Mu Zhe is also reluctant to admit his mistake at some extent, he mostly don’t even know how things really are like. He sneered at him as if he was venting his anger: “Why, it’s my own mouth so why won’t you still let me speak? You are not a good person either!…..” Ling Xia kept shouting. He felt his stomach unbearably constricted with pain, and a rancid taste rose up. He hurriedly covered his mouth.

Su Mu Zhe was stunned as he watches Ling Xia cough out a mouthful of blood. He hurriedly took his arm and supported him, so that it won’t rouse the other people’s attention. Ling Xia opened his mouth wide and gasps for breath, his clothes was damp with layer of sweat, and his head suffered a spell of dizziness.

For Su Zhu Me who had never been confused in his sixteen years of life, he felt a slight panic for the first time: “Tsk! I didn’t expect you to be this deep in love! That Qian Kun Sect Grand Master sure is vicious and heartless. I can read your heart, you want to go back fast and confirm it….”

Ling Xia exerted all his strength to hang on Su Mu Zhe’s shoulder, and coughs up another mouthfull of blood. He covered his mouth and replied in incoherent words: “It’s because you angered this Lao Zi!… …” He had not yet finished his sentence when his head lost consciousness

By the time Ling Xia woke up again, he found himself inside a small cart. Outside, Su Mu Zhe was hanging out with a local in that place and was humming a short tune. He comfortingly stroked his stomach, but it still feel depressingly out of sort.

Su Mu Zhe's ear perked up, and quickly stretched his head in. He said: "You're awake?"

Ling Xia sat up without batting an eyelid, he already regained his inner peace: "Didn't you told me that it was already useless? How about letting me leave now?"

Su Mu Zhe raised his finger and shook it sideways: "That's out of the question. En, I thought about it again, and still decided to give it a try. I can't say for sure but, just because the Qian Kun Sect Grand Master had a new flame doesn't mean he won't forget the old one? And what's more, you nearly died from spitting all that blood, so how can I throw you back in that place?"

Ling Xia was rendered speechless, he don't know what is the proper thing to do now. He wanted to calmly and properly think about it for a while. But it did not go as well as he expected due to this man with a sharp tongue making him upset every single minute.

Su Mu Zhe stared at him while lost in his own thoughts. He said: "I checked your pulse earlier. I was surprised to discover you are a cultivator as well—But your internal energy element and spiritual strength had been sealed. Do you know the reason? It's not because of your enrage mood that you vomited blood, but I find out that it's because the seal had not yet been undone.

Ling Xia replied alarmingly: "What did you say?"

So his spiritual strength and elemental energy did not really disappeared. But Yu Zhi Jue explained that because his body had greatly weakened, so it will take some time for it to slowly recover. The person who could put that seal on his body, could only possibly be Yu Zhi Jue!

Su Zu Me saw him get astonished and uncertainty was painted in his face. Thus, he pinched a hand on his chin and came into an assumption: “En, I can sense that you are also a Righteous Sect Cultivator. Don’t tell me that the Qian Kun Sect Grand Master imprisoned you there forcefully and made you an exclusive property? He sealed your power, and you, who was imprisoned for so long, had turned your hate into love. Unfortunately after he obtained you’re heart, he did not treasured it soon after….”

Ling Xia did not feel like paying attention to him. His head droop as he pondered over the hidden meaning of Yu Zhi Jue’s actions. But the more he think about it, the colder his heart gets. Is Yu Zhi Jue afraid that Ling Xia will leave once he discovered about his marriage arrangement? So he turned him in to a useless person in that place so he could not go anywhere? He simply could not dare to think further.

The carriage kept wobbling as it moved through a very remote lane. Su Mu Zhe who rarely express kindness had given Ling Xia healing herbs, and Ling Xia took it in silence. He wanted to treat his injury well for now. And in any possible means, he will look for Yu Zhi Jue to clear things up! To be frank, if he did not see it with his own eyes, he will never come in to terms with it.

He asked Su Mu Zhe: “Can you release the seal on me?”

Su Mu Zhe was drinking a small amount of liquor when he replied: “I can, but I’ll have to use a great amount of spiritual power. But why would I waste so much strength if it will not benefit me? What’s more, you might run away if I did undid the seal.”

He saw Ling Xia’s face turned stiff, and said with a smile: “The seal on your body is actually harmless to you, since it’s effect had already loosened. In about ten to tweny years, it should start to undo by itself.”

Ling Xia was itching to kick him to death! After all, just where could he make good use of that sharp tongue of his? And those younger sisters considered him as one of the leading faces[1]…

T/N: To consider as one of the most handsome characters

Sometimes he can’t help himself wanting to chew his own head off. Did Yu Zhi Jue find him missing already? He wondered how would the other react? He don’t know if Yu Zhi Jue already started looking for him….

Su Mu Zhe said with completely proud words, that he can’t say for sure how many regions and the number of Dark Arts Sects they pass through, he just easily handled them all. Ling Xia can’t help but admired him a little.

The two of them headed west. On the road, they could hear bits and pieces of information about Yu Zhi Jue’s arrange marriage. Furthermore, a lot of Dark Arts Sect cultivators wanted to prepare and send congratulatory gifts. Ling Xia became more and more depressed, and Su Mu Zhe who was bored from having free time seek to make fun of him, but he was too distracted to pay attention.

He still thinking of escaping from the start. But he is downhearted right now, and his heart were broken in to pieces. If he take a careful look at this situation, does escaping and going back still have any meaning? To see Yu Zhi Jue in red ceremonial robes as he give him a toast for being his older brother? Or him being locked away on the Qin Palace without anyone knowing and continue to take him as his lover?

Fuck! Is that the purpose of this Lao Zi transmigrating back again!?

Ling Xia apathetically let the horse continue pulling the cart. But Su Mu Zhe was in fact, secretly on high alert, because he discovered recently that they kept running into the tracks of a hidden master. The Changing Appearance Pill is useless against that master, so he made used of disguises. Sometimes the two of them would dress and act as father and son, the other times they put on a disguised as grandfather and grandson. And at one point, he put make up on Ling Xia and turned him in to a beautiful lady for an act of being a married couple. Ling Xia merely glared at him, and turned his back on Su Mu Zhe and continued sleeping.

Seeing that their journey on the road gets longer, Ling Xia deeply sighed. Actually being apart for the time being is good as well. He never doubted Yu Zhi Jue’s love, but he still can’t stand his action this time. With Su Mu

Zhe bringing him along, there’ll be a day where Yu Zhi Jue will inevitably meet with Song Xiao Hu, so he had to avoid that properly first.

If there comes a time where he had to accept and moved on, Ling Xia will just follow Su Mu Zhe and get along with him. After all, even if Su Mu Zhe is younger who happens to love money and hate losing, in reality, he is very loyal and willing to sacrifice for his brothers. If they become friends, Su Mu Zhe will not go as far as taking him to a safe place and make him sell out Yu Zhi Jue—and Yu Zhi Jue will not also step into danger. And if he is gonna be on his honeymoon period that is full of sweetness, this Lao Zi will put an irremovable curse on him! ! ! ! ! !

After Ling Xia wakes up back then[1], the both of them had mutually helped each other several times, but Yu Zhi Jue always felt unsatisfied.

He always felt that it's a bit lacking... Sometimes when facing this person he wanted to tear him open, break him, and join as one. To make Ling Xia call his name with his quivering voice, and make him cry... ...

Just by thinking about it, Yu Zhi Jue felt a dry heat all over his body that is difficult to withstand.

Yet in reality, due to Ling Xia's weakened body, he could only taste lightly at most. He could not even dare to kiss wantonly, as to prevent himself from going out of control.

One day, he was examining the biography records of the previous generation of his predecessor in the Dark Arts Sect. He accidentally found a short record of one of his predecessors. The content of the book obviously caused him shame, as it simply described to him not a natural human relationship, but a proper acts of anal sex. And afterwards, he ended his life togather with the Righteous Sect Master on top of a spiritual mountain summit.

Proper acts of anal sex... Yu Zhi Jue sank in his thoughts as he closed the book. He called over a trusted chamberlain and asked: "What do you call the proper acts of anal sex?"

That chamberlain kneels down, and stutteringly explained all he knows. Yu Zhi Jue finally fully understand. He ordered the chamberlain to collect a few relevant albums and literatures. In addition, he also ordered to find someone who understands such matters like this.

The paintings and literatures was the first to be delivered, and Yu Zhi Jue was slowly browsing them but he was not pleased. The illustrations depicted a couple mutually entangled in a strange position, and he was disgusted by the sight of it. But when he replaced the image of the two with Ling Xia and himself, Yu Zhi Jue felt his mouth suddenly dried up, and he can't stop his heartbeat from speeding up.

The person who is knowledgeable about such matter was also quickly sent over. He brought over two people with their limbs tied, their eyes blindfolded, and not knowing themselves where they have been brought to.

Yu Zhi Jue ordered the attendant to withdraw. And behind the translucent screen in between, he used his Ice Blade to cut the rope tied on the body of those two men.

Those two men's appearance are considered quite pretty. He figured that the person (who brought them over) had already urged them on what to do, and immediately kneels and kow-towed while trembling in fear, then started to move straightaway. But on the contrary, their actions was skillful.

But maybe due to fear, those two men busied themselves with holding and kidding each other. They stroked each other for a while, but down there still did not have any reaction.

Yu Zhi Jue was coldly staring at them, and lets out an impatient snort. He was not even a little bit interested in the other men's body, and only felt disgusted by it. As the two men heard it, they became more frightened, and was trembling a lot.

One man sat on top of the table and parted his legs, the other man kneels down and used his mouth to take that thing in the middle of his hips, and repeatedly takes it in and out. The man sitting on the table finally had a reaction, and his face flushed red. He thrusted inside that man's mouth.

Yu Zhi Jue flipped the pages of an album with his slender fingers, and soon found the page with the matchign actions. He suddenly came to a realization, that this way is also doable... ...but, it wasn't disgusting?

The two men supported each other and soon became both hard. The man who was sitting had laid down and parted his legs on his own, and the other man use his fingers to spread some ointment inside of the other man.

Yu Zhi Jue uttered: "What is that?"

The two men who could only vaguely see a splendid silhouette, and hearing his voice, their body shook over. One of the men respectfully explained, and Yu Zhi Jue attentively watched their actions, keeping it in mind. He asked again about the first item they used then both men——answered him one after the other.

Those two men who were originally trembling in fear, when they heard Yu Zhi Jue's seemingly young voice as he merely asks questions repeatedly, became aware that he has no experience at all. At that moment, they flaunted more and exceedingly intensified their performance.

A moment later, one of the men penetrates, and his breathing hitched up. Their moans and groans echoed through out the entire building. They changed in to three different positions in a row. They were hoping for the nobility behind them to see their passion, and possibly join in as well.

Not long after, one man came from the front and the other came from the back. Yu Zhi Jue threw aside the album and went over. He indifferently commanded: “Continue.”

The building was entirely filled with a fishy smell. Yu Zhi Jue knitted his brows and held his breath, so that he could stop himself from killing these two men.

The title of the album was *72 types of Gay Sex* ….

After that pair of men came for the third time, and changes in to 7 to 8 positions, they could not remain hard any longer. But for the sake of

satisfying that person of nobility, they swallowed a few pills, and persevered for another half hour.

And after coming again, those two men were completely spent. With such near death experience, their heart cried in grief. Could it be that this person of nobility wanted them to go through all of that 72 positions at once? But there are some positions that are really impossible to do……..

One of the men stood and and earnestly greeted him: “Reporting to you, Sir. This kind of matter, it would be truly difficult to do it more than three times. It would be extremely easy to injure one’s body—After the first time, it’s more important to lessen the number of times.”

Then the other man stoop his upper body forward then used his foot to open a box next to him: “Sir, there are still some toys that haven’t been revealed, do we proceed?”

Yu Zhi Jue stared at those toys with disdain and said: “No need to use these things.” Could it be that it’s better than just on his own?

As soon as that time comes when Ling Xia’s body is well…..

Yu Zhi Jue closed his eyes, slowly inhaling the air, to pacify the dry heat on his stomach.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 7

Despite the efforts of Ling Xia currying favors with Su Mu Zhe without batting an eyelid, the other person dealt with him without beating around the bush. He had been seen through by Su Mu Zhe who is a lot shrewder than Song Xiao Hu. He just laughed while advising him: “I suggest that you shouldn’t waste your energy. Just pray that when the time comes, the demon sect’s pretty boy would bring a ransom to exchange for you.”

Ling Xia’s face stiffened. He was itching to kick this stupid person’s pair of balls hard.

Everyday, he was hoping for Song Xiao Hu to appear. So that he would use his golden aura as a protagonist and invite this stupid money lover into his harem as a little brother.

He had forgotten the date, but its already 7 to 8 days since Su Mu Zhe had kidnapped him. In other words, it’s only few more days till Yu Zhi Jue get married. Every time he thinks about it, Ling Xia was so jittery, he wished to kill someone.

There’s a saying that when someone goes through a break up, a girl will shed tears and a man will shed blood. Isn’t his state right now the one who is seeking a fight to exchange blows?

Until one day, the cart traveled to a nearby small town. Ling Xia, that had a disguise of a sickly woman laying inside, was lost in his thoughts. Then suddenly, he heard a familiar voice.

“Hey! that cart there, hand over all of your belongings!”

Ling Xia nearly wanted to cry bitter tears. Little sister Ke Lan, its high time for you to finally appear!

He cautiously peek his head out of the narrow opening of the cart, only to see Ke Lan MinErBai who became even more beautiful, leading her five

ruffian juniors while riding a leopard and moving four steps ahead of them. The cart that was being pulled, was blocked on the front and at the back, frightening the low level magic beast pulling the cart that it kneels while shivering on the ground.

Ke Lan MinErBai was requested to meet with the newly appointed Grand Master of Qian Kun Sect and send a congratulatory gift. She knew that it was the young pretty boy she caught back then who became the Grand Master. She had wanted to marry him herself, so she naturally fell into a bad mood. She was pillaging from road to road while traveling, since the betrothal gift she's sending should no doubt will not come from her own pocket.

Su Mu Zhe's eyes lit up, immediately found it interesting.

As expected, Dark Art Sect beauties are different from Righteous Sect!

Ke Lan MinErBai's skin is slightly dark, nevertheless, she was extremely seductive. Her lips is full, her eyes are big and charming, and she was emitting wild nature all over. For a while, he could not recall the other person's origin, so he could only chuckle and teasingly said: "Hello! May I ask this young lady's name? My humble self is Su Mu Zhe. If you want to take my pouch then I will naturally offer it with both hands. But with one condition—would this young lady be my wife?"

Fucking hell! The corner of Ling Xia's mouth twitched. Both of them loves to rob and loot. One of them is looking for a wife while the other one is looking for a husband. This couple is truly a match made in heaven!

He already determined that Su Mu Zhe is bound to lose in a fight. Ke Lan MinErBai is one of the Dark Arts Sect underworld guardians, a master of spirit snakes island, and a genius cultivator. Not only she started being a bandit boss at a young age, she also had countless number of poisonous beast on her possession. Even if Su Mu Zhe's strength is out of ordinary, he tends to underestimate his opponents too much. He did not even know Ke Lan MinErBai's origins.

Then Ke Lan MinErBai's subordinates exploded in anger. They all swung their weapons and shouted out curses: "You stinking blue haired brat, wanting to marry our boss too?"

"Boss, let's beat him to death!"

Ke Lan MinErBai narrowed her eyes, and wave her hand as a signal for everyone to stop shouting curses. She swayed the baton on her hands a few times, her face beaming with smile as she said: "I can be your wife, but, only if you can survive the attacks from my baton."

T/N: All of Ke Lan MinErBai dialouges to Su Mu Zhe for this chapter had a tone of seduction.

She raised her chin as she talked, her expression filled with pride and confidence, and she looked even more like a rose covered in thorns.

Both of Su Mu Zhe's eyes then gleamed with sparkling stars, and said impatiently: "Of course. Then, ladies first?"

The smile on Ke Lan MinErBai vanished, her feet moved in a flash, and sweeps the baton over as well.

Su Mu Zhe didn't expect her to move so fast, and immediately raised his guard, his body flickered as he dodge. He was known as "Shadow Wind". His movement speed is first class.

The slash from the baton hits an area, abruptly breaking apart the small cart. Fortunately for Ling Xia, his body was wrapped with the comforter and did not fall just now. He was struggling to crawl out, when Ke Lan MinErBai shot a glance at him only to see a good looking young married woman, and thought that (he) was Su Mu Zhe's wife. As a result, she casts a smile at him and pinch his face: "En. Delicate skin and soft flesh. If I defeated your husband, I'll take you back with me."

"… …" Ling Xia didn't know if he wants to cry or laugh. Due to being in an embarrassing disguise, he could not conveniently reveal his own identity. He could only wait at the side till Ke Lan MinErBai and Su Mu Zhe's fight ends.

Su Mu Zhe stood aloof as he watches with jealousy. He knitted his brows and said: “Hey! Hey! Young Lady, that’s my wife! Your target is in here.”

Ke Lan MinErBai shook her baton, changing it into two smaller batons. They flew up in the air for a bit, then two people tangles in a fight together. Su Mu Zhe didn’t expect the other person to be difficult to deal with, and was gradually using his full strength. In the next moment, he crashes to the gravel, blocking the entire road.

Ke Lan MinErBai’s subordinates diligently seizes Ling Xia as a captive, and carried him on top of the shoulder and falls back. Ling Xia ridiculed himself for being powerless.

Su Mu Zhe was determined to put make up on him again and again as a prank, but he did not know what kind of sick make up the other person puts into him, its just that it made everyone believe that he is a woman.

Due to Su Mu Zhe’s tender and protective notion towards the opposite gender, he was not careful enough and got hit by Ke Lan MinErBai’s baton in face, his nose dripping with blood. Then he got kicked again on his stomach and flew away. He was covering his nose as he slide and steadied his body. He knitted his brow and said: “You are too barbaric! How could you have the heart to destroy my handsome face?”

Even though his words still carried a bit of a cheerful tone, his fighting desire is finally incited and he unsheathed his blade.

Ke Lan MinErBai raised her chin and narrowed her eyes. She said: “That’s more like it. If you take this older sister half-hardheartedly, I will kill you!”

Ling Xia who was watching, almost wanted to clap. Little sister is too cool!

After half an hour, the fight ended and Su Mu Zhe was muddleheaded as he was tied by Ke Lan MinErBai subordinates when he had fallen to the ground, turning him into a dumpling wrapped in leaves, then threw him

inside the cart. Su Mu Zhe's eyes turned like a panda's eyes with those dark circles underneath it. Nevertheless, he incessantly laughed like a fool.

Ling Xia threw him a disdainful glance. Even if he was no match to Su Mu Zhe, once he managed to escape, there would be more people that could take over Su Mu Zhe. And what's more, he still have yet to made a contract to a rare earth type beast, the one that can help him avoid being buried.

Su Mu Zhe snickered and sat up. He said: "En. Brother, do you know this young lady's interests? I'm only used to seeing those Righteous Sect wealthy girls, but she's even more special." With his capability, he naturally continued to squirmed from the rope tied to him.

Ling Xia did not feel like listening to him. Did this money lover turned stupid after a romantic encounter? Did he not noticed that Ke Lan MinErBai is taking them back? And that's not all, Ke Lan MinErBai snatched Su Mu Zhe's pouch as a spoil of war.

Originally, he planned to go the the Righteous Sect territory to find Song Xia Hu, only to be taken back again. For a moment, he did not know if he should be happy or be worried. Could it be that the heavens wanted him to personally behold Yu Zhi Jue's marriage, then complete give up? He was listening to the sound of the cart moving, and felt his heart in a chaotic mess, then for a moment, a discouraging feeling rose from out of nowhere.

The cart soon came into a halt, and Ke Lan MinErBai suddenly entered inside. She released a blood spider, let it crawl towards the direction of Su Mu Zhe's neck, and had it in a position that is ready to bite. She threateningly said: "From where did both of you come from? Tell me honestly or I'll let my spider bite you to death."

She shook the pouch she hoarded in her hand and the items inside made a clanking sound. Those are the stuff the Su Mu Zhe looted from Yu Zhi Jue's Qin Palace.

Su Mu Zhe stared blankly, and laughingly said: "I collected all of those—would you believe it?"

Ke Lan MinErBai urged the spider to move forward. She sneered and said: “You don’t think I won’t know about it? All of this had a an insignia on top. Its the Qian Kun Sect’s demon lords exclusive property. So in the end, who are you people?”

She threw the pouch as she explained, while she’s at it, she pressed the end of her baton at Ling Xia’s neck.

Su Mu Zhe replied with a beaming smile: “If this young lady tell me her name, then I’ll tell you mine…”

Ling Xia truly sarcastically admired this guy’s enthusiasm driven by his sexual urge. He helplessly smiled and said: “Little sister Ke Lan, it’s me.”

Ke Lan MinErBai was astonished for a moment, then stared at his face for a long time. Ling Xia hastily pulled the pin on his hair and let it loosed, then wiped the rouge liquid cosmetic powder on his face with his hand. He awkwardly smiled and said: “It’s me, Ling Xia. Does little sister still remember me?”

Ke Lan MinErBai recognized him at last, and was pleasantly surprised for a while. She let the spider back off on Su Mu Zhe’s neck,patted Ling Xia’s shoulder, and burst into a loud laughter: “Why did you suddenly became a ghost? I heard from others that you’ve been dead for several years? This young lady originally wanted to offer a liquor in your altar.”

Ling Xia slightly forced a bitter laugh: “It’s a long and complicated story. I sustained serious injury but I did not die and just woke up recently.”

Su Mu Zhe stared at the blood spider with horror and did not dare to move. He said in a hush voice: “Young lady, please put away your spider. I’m indeed brother Ling Xia’s friend!”

Ling Xia lauded that two faced shameless guy, and said without hesitation: “Little sister Ke Lan, I was….”

Before he could finish speaking, the cart abruptly swayed intensely. The magic beast that was pulling the cart cried out a restless low roar and

stopped moving. Ke Lan MinErBai's lackeys continued swinging their whips, but those magic beast still did not move forward, only the leopard.

Until they started to dig the ground with their claws.

Ke Lan MinErBai strikes a very imposing defensive position, and Su Mu Zhe in the next moment throws off the rope on him as well. He quickly covered the spider with a cloth and threw it back to her. Afterwards, he took out his blade, kicked the cart door open, and flew off. Ling Xia could not sense the current oppressive aura, but he could deduce from the heavily serious expression on their faces that something bad came out.

As soon as he came out of the cart, his expression immediately dulled, and his heart was seized with pain, making him unable to breath.

Yu Zhi Jue was standing on top of a gigantic and very long Two Headed Flying Serpent. He was arrogantly looking down on everyone while on the air. His inked black hair and great red clothes[1] was fluttering in all direction. It appeared to be hair-raising, but this kind of gorgeousness overcomes people, making them feel unable to look straight at him.

T/N: [1]The marriage garment Ling Xia talked about in earlier chapters.

That red color stings Ling Xia's eyes. He inhaled deeply and tried hard to keep his calm, but in fact, his lips were already trembling. He could only take a quick glance then hang his eyes down, afraid that he would meet gaze with familiar pair of eyes. He cannot stop his mind from getting out of control from wanting to ask questions, and losing his dignity in the end.

He didn't expect that he would meet with Yu Zhi Jue so soon….

There's definitely a few more days till he get married. Why was he in a hurry to wear those clothes?

Ling Xia held firmly on the cart, suddenly felt a surge of dizziness. He sensed that fishy taste in his throat rising once more. He hurriedly tried his best to swallow back the acidic flavor, as the view before him uncontrollably enveloped with a layer of blurry mist.

He was already in so much sorry state…….as a man.

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes was shrouded with a faint purple color haze. He touches briefly the tear shaped birthmark on the outer corner of his eyes with his slender finger. He was smiling yet his eyes aren’t, as he glanced at Ke Lan MinErBai and Su Mu Zhe. He narrowed his eyes and said: “Did you people took my man?”

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 7

Su Mu Zhe's keen intuition made him aware that he was absolutely no where near the level of his opponent, and even subconsciously wanted to flee. But upon seeing Ke Lan MinErBai not scared at the least, he clenched his teeth and decided to stay.

Ke Lan MinErBai's two-part baton merged into a single baton the size of a baguette, and carried it on top of her shoulder. She said with a smile: "I think I know who you are, you must be the great Grand Master. Didn't you go and prepared for your wedding, what made you ran around here? Your subordinate yours truly is on her way to give a newly wed gift."

Yu Zhi Jue swept his eyes, accurately locating Ling Xia, and promptly narrowing his eyes. His heart burst with an overflowing anger.

The sash on the female clothing that Ling Xia has been wearing for days loosened up, his hair was disheveled, his head was drooping down, and his body appeared to be shivering.

The corner of his mouth lifted up in a smile. He said: "For me to be here, of course its to take my man back. And also—to kill all of you."

The Two Headed Flying Serpent sensed his master's mood, raised its head and let out an ear-piercing hiss, shocking every one on the ground that they covered their ears. The surrounding's temperature seemed like it dropped about 10 degrees in a flash. A wave of oppressing energy pass through everyone.

Ke Lan MinErBai trembled, immediately casting a protective barrier. She barked: "Get back!"

Her subordinates had a tacit understanding with her, and know that it was dangerous if they stayed behind and become a hindrance. At once, they promptly and orderly retreated back.

Ling Xia rouses due to the vibration from the Two Headed Flying serpent’s hiss. Even though Yu Zhi Jue was unfeeling towards Su Mu Zhe, however, he’s obviously targeting Ke Lan MinErBai. He inhaled a mouthful of breath, his eyes already regained its composure. He looked up and said: “Zhi Jue, little sister Ke Lan had nothing to do with it, you’ve misunderstood.”

Even though Yu Zhi Jue was seized with anger, but his attention was divided to Ling Xia to a certain extent. When he heard Ling Xia not call him as ‘Ah Jue’ like he used to, but intimately address Ke Lan MinErBai, the purple haze in his eyes thickened. Unlike in the rumors[1] he gently smiled towards Ke Lan MinErBai and said: “I will not let a single one of you escape.”

T/N: [1] Yu Zhi Jue doesn’t smile towards others (except for Ling Xia)

He raised his hand and hundreds of ice arrows was formed. It pointed to Ke Lan MinErBai’s subordinates on the ground and launched over. In one moment, it was like countless ray of bright lights dropped down from the heaven, creating a sharp slashing sound midair. Meanwhile, the Two Headed Serpent suddenly extended its tail, wrapping it around Ling Xia, then dragging him back.

“Zhu Er[1]!” Ke Lan MinErBai shouted loudly, the blood spider’s body swelled up to a hundred million times at once, measuring up to a size of a truck. Even though it uses its hard shell to block most of the ice arrows, it rolled over its stomach after the attack kept coming[2]. Ke Lan MinErBai leaped into the air, and swings her baton in a lightning speed to strike down the remaining arrows. She had traveled along with her subordinates for many years, so her affection for them are as if their younger brothers.

T/N: [1]What she call her spider.

[2]It either fainted or died, the author did not specified.

The amount of those Ice Arrows are too many. Left with no other choice, Su Mu Zhe helped Ke Lan MinErBai block a portion, swinging with a

piercing blow.

Ling Xia was watching with fear. He struggled a few times, but the serpent's tail coiling around him is tight shut. He kept struggling while staring at the back of Yu Zhi Jue. He shouted: "Ah Jue, don't take them out!"

"You should properly rest." When Yu Zhi Jue heard him shout, his mind cleared up slightly, but the pitch of his voice still lacked serenity, "I will sort out these trivial matters soon."

Ke Lan MinErBai gracefully landed on the ground, then lifted her head and got angry: "Great Grand Master, I, of the Spirit Snake Island, never before betrayed the Qian Kun Sect in any way. This subordinate wants to ask a question, what is the reason why the main sect wants to dispose of me?"

The pupil on Yu Zhi Jue's eyes completely turned to a purple color as he revealed a blood thirsty smile: "I only want to kill you, do I still need a reason?"

As he speaks, he raised his sleeve and descended from the top of Two Headed Flying Serpent. Black flames ignited slowly under his feet, leaving behind a burning path he walked on. That freezing aura that could kill someone completely enveloped the atmosphere. He looked at Su Mu Zhe with a gentle smile and said: "En. That one with blue hair, you'll be the first one."

The blade Su Mu Zhe was holding slightly trembled. As soon as the flame launched towards him, his silhouette in the ground disappeared, then appeared on the side at a lightning speed.

Yu Zhi Jue nonchalantly turned his head at Su Mu Zhe's exact location and stared at him. He nodded in admiration and said: "En. A very rare Earth Type Spiritual Ability. No wonder you are so brazen. To be able to infiltrate my Qin Palace and take Ling Xia out. As expected, you have some kind of ability."

Su Mu Zhe was startled that his body was soaked with cold sweat, he almost got engulfed in those black flames—He could feel it in his bones that cold air and evil intention! The corners of the other person's mouth raised into a smile, but the purple haze in his eyes nevertheless emitted ice like coldness. Without a doubt, he was like a tiny insect caught in a web, about to be eaten by the spider and be digested in its stomach…

Ke Lan MinErBai whacked Su Mu Zhe in the back and shouted: "Hey! Surname Su. Seems like you're frightened!"

Su Mu Zhe rouses as those cold sweat continued dripping down. That pair of purple eyes stared at him for a while, unexpectedly making him unable to move as if his feet was nailed firmly.

Ke Lan MinErBai snorted as she pointed her baton in front of her. If Yu Zhi Jue continued to go crazy, then this blue haired kid is naturally her ally.

"Ah Jue!" Ling Xia knows that the situation is critical, so he struggled with all his might. The fishy taste that he swallowed down earlier rushed up once again. He suppresses the vomit that was about to come out with difficulty. He clenched his teeth and shouted:

"Ah Jue, can't you hear what I said at all?" After he spoke, he had a violent coughing fit stained with blood.

Yu Zhi Jue's footsteps stopped, the purple haze in his eyes died down in a flash, reverting back to a deep bottomless black.

Ke Lan MinErBai feels that a storm is about to hit them, when Yu Zhi Jue already turned around, retreated to the Two Headed Flying Serpent, and held Ling Xia in his embrace.

Su Mu Zhe was then dumbstruck. Seeing Yu Zhi Jue like that, stopping for Ling Xia whose simply a male lover, and turning into an amiable darling so soon!

Ke Lan MinErBai felt like she was watching a strange play, it was so unbelievable. But still kept her guard and held the baton on front of her

body.

Don’t I need to escape at this point? Su Mu Zhe knows that Ke Lan MinErBai may not necessarily be implicated, but that Grand Master might not be willing to let him off that easily. The next moment, he kissed Ke Lan MinErBai on the face and said:

“I’m sure will meet again, Green Underworld Guardian.” Then a Land Crawling Beast showed up, opened it’s mouth wide, and swallowed him down, then burrowing on the earth and bringing him along to flee.

T/N: I think its one of the traveling(escaping) techniques for Earth type ability.

When Ke Lan MinErBai said the she is of Spiritual Snake Island, he naturally comprehended her identity. But Su Mu Zhe didn’t expect, that the female demon of the Dark Art Sect told in legends, is unexpectedly pretty cute.

Yu Zhi Jue coldly glanced at that creature that suddenly appeared. He shot Ice Arrows along with it on the underground and hit the left leg of that Land Crawling Beast. He was aware that it did not hit it at a vital area, and only snorted in his mind.

Next time we meet, I will make a mincemeat out of that blue hair!

Ling Xia was afraid the he would continue to attack, so he tightly pulled Yu Zhi Jue’s sleeve and said with difficulty: “Little sister Ke Lan… is not… involve…in this… matter.”

Yu Zhi Jue swiftly popped a pill on Ling Xia’s mouth, stroke his stomach a few times, then wiped the blood on Ling Xia’s mouth. He coldly said: “I got it. I won’t kill her——-you don’t need to speak for now.”

When Ling Xia smells that familiar scent, he felt completely exhausted in both mind and body. He closed his eyes and softly grunted in agreement.

Watching the Two Headed Flying Serpent flew farther and farther away in the sky, Ke Lan MinErBai angrily stabbed her baton on the ground, then

wiped her face with the back of her hand as if her life depended on it:

“That imprudent surname Su brat, dared to smear his saliva on this great aunt[1]’s face. Next time I’ll break your bones if you kiss this young lady again!”

T/N: One of the highest formal form of referring to one’s self (for females)

Ling Xia was listening to the sound of the passing breeze. He simply closed his eyes to avoid that sight of stinging red colored clothes. The pain in his stomach was difficult to tolerate.

He don’t know why Yu Zhi Jue deceived him, and he wanted to ask and be clear about it, but he was afraid that he would end up in disappointment…

He was not aware for how long they have been flying, when the Two Headed Flying Serpent abruptly descended from the clouds—and finally arrived at the Qin Palace.

It appeared that there are some people stopping Yu Zhi Jue from his tracks, and wanted to report some matters. Yu Zhi Jue used his outer robe and wrapped it on Ling Xia who is laying in his embrace. He coldly said: “Have the elders deal with those in the future, and do not let anyone step inside the Qin Palace no matter what. If that happened, kill without hesitation!”

Ling Xia opened his eyes, then saw a deep red piece. A red glossy and soft cloth covered Yu Zhi Jue’s silhouette, it was distant, as if he was completely far away. His stomach constricted in a moment that he was unable to breath.

Yu Zhi Jue, who is carrying him, flew towards the Qin Palace. Ling Xia was listening to Yu Zhi Jue’s heartbeat, he can’t help but remember the scene from that time when he just transmigrated back. Yu Zhi Jue was also carrying him like this towards the mountain peak, but their hearts were not estranged from each other…..His eyes stings for a moment as he rigidly bit his lips shut.

Soon they arrived at that familiar room. The sight before Ling Xia's eyes was glaring, that his eyes slightly squinted in a conditioned reflex.

As soon as he opened his eyes again, Yu Zhi Jue resolutely pushed him on top of the cold bed. The other person's lips fell on his own, raining down on him with a torrent of intense kisses as he invades his mouth without a trace of tenderness.

Yu Zhi Jue sucked in deep, that Ling Xia's tongue painfully heated up, and the air in his lungs abruptly emptied out in a short time. He felt a sudden dread rise up—The other person will hold him by force!

He fiercely struggled and placed his hand between them, wanting to push Yu Zhi Jue away, but the other person's strength is too astonishing. His wide chest brought a scalding heat with it, then presses closely on top of Ling Xia's body as if it was an immovable mountain. The other person single-handedly pinned both of his hand on top of his head, and placed one of his long legs in between of the other's legs to stop Ling Xia's from struggling free.

The innermost part of Yu Zhi Jue's eyes was bearing an unusual bewitching purple color. He lightly tears off that woman clothing in Ling Xia's body into pieces as it scattered all over the bed. He used his other free hand to pinch Ling Xia's nipple in front without the slightest hesitation, and slowly rubs it. He thought the body below him did not seriously resisted that much, so his tittering heart slowly settled down.

As he lowered his head down, he trailed a kiss along the other person's slender and good-looking chin, then softly bit the other person's Adam's apple. His voice was carrying a desire that is hard to conceal: "I want you…….and your beautiful body……."

Both of Yu Zhi Jue's hands patiently fondled the other person's smooth and supple skin, and wantonly nibbled the other person's body, as if confirming that this person is forever dear to him, and will stay by his side.

Ling Xia was slightly subdued yet he can't budge even a little. He could not control the trembling of his body, and was undoubtedly, due to Yu Zhi

Jue’s skillful teasing, turned more and more warmer. But his gut became more and more colder.

As soon as he senses Yu Zhi Jue unyieldingly parting his legs, he was scared stiff and propped his knees on top of him. Then he breathes in and shouted uncontrollably: “That’s enough! Yu Zhi Jue! That’s enough! I’ll kill you!”

Once he shouted, he discovered his cheeks streaming with tears—did he actually cried?

Shit! I already lost face by being pushed down by another man! Why can’t I even stop myself from shamefully crying?… …

But in fact, he was slightly aware, yet the tears continued to overflow that he bit his lips from trying to repress it. He was even unable to suppress his back that was trembling for quite a while.

The heat of Yu Zhi Jue’s body already reached an unbearable level, so much so that he reached for the ointment bottle and applied it inside using his slender finger. Then he jolted when he heard Ling Xia yell, that bottle of ointment rolled down the bed soon afterwards.

The pupil of his eyes shrank, and that strange purple color due to the dry heat on his body suddenly receded like a tide.

When he saw the countless traces from biting appeared on Ling Xia’s body and those tears across his face, he was incessantly stunned. Did he do all of that?

This is the first time he saw Ling Xia cried.

When this person was hit by someone with a cudgel, and got whipped in behalf of him, then used his body to block in front of him… … this person’s expression remained entirely serene while carrying a smile on his face, forever being calm and composed in that way. He had never seen this person in such a fragile state.

Yu Zhi Jue was at loss in what to do as he held Ling Xia in his embrace, his heart was breaking into pieces along the sound of the other person crying. He clumsily but gently patting Ling Xia's back and said with a consoling low voice: "Did I hurt you just now? Don't cry, I won't do it…"

When Ling Xia sensed that stiff object poking the inner side of his thigh certainly withered, Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief at last. His red rimmed eyes came in contact with Yu Zhi Jue's shoulder then he kept ruthlessly biting it.

This Lao Zi will bite you to death, this *(bite)* is for this child who should die for getting married!

This *(bite)* is for you who forced a seal on Lao Zi and keeping this Lao Zi in the dark!

This *(bite)* is for you who turned Lao Zi as a man's lover!

This *(bite)* is for you who scared this Lao Zi that this Lao Zi cried and lost face!

This *(bite)* is for you who coveted this Lao Zi's asshole!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 9

That muscle beneath Ling Xia's teeth and lips are strong and flexible. It appears taut the moment he bit firmly, but will relax soon enough, as if allowing Ling Xia to bite all he wants.

Hearing Yu Zhi Jue's apologetic and gentle comforting, Ling Xia finally let loose and weeps, giving in to his shame. When Yu Zhi Jue spreads his leg just now, he was both deeply hurt and frightened, to the point that his innards twitches and almost twisted together.

He really wanted to open his red and puffy eyes to see Yu Zhi Jue, but the other person remained tenaciously keeping him in his embrace, as if he was afraid that Ling Xia will run away.

Ling Xia took a deep breath. Anyway, I will not give up and drop this matter. As always, it's important to have the resolve to ask and clear things up.

He straightened his waist, and looked at Yu Zhi Jue in the eyes. He asked: "Ah Jue, a-are, are you getting married?"

He tried his best to ask in a calm modulation, but when he spoke, it came out in a broken sentence. Ling Xia annoyingly wanted to face-palm himself. That was too disgraceful!

There weren't any ripple that can be seen on Yu Zhi Jue's expression, only the narrowing of eyes, and he's tacit look of agreement.

Ling Xia's heart immediately broke into pieces. He forced out a smile, but he could not comprehend the words the came out of his own lips: "Then I want to say my congratulations. Why didn't you tell me about this important matter even though you told the whole world….After you get married with the other family's young lady, you must treat her well… …"

“You’re upset.” The pupil on Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes slightly expanded. His transparent pupil clearly reflected Ling Xia’s face, and his expression of freaking out that could not be concealed at all. Not only his intonation superficial, but Ling Xia also kept talking about irrelevant matters with him.

The last string of rationality finally snapped. He threw himself on top of Yu Zhi Jue in the bed, and shoved his elbow on the other’s neck as he bellowed in rage: “This Lao Zi is upset? Yu Zhi Jue you wretched bastard! Was all the things you said before to me a lie? Was it fun to cheat on me? Scoundrel! Bastard!… …”

He was unable to stop from embarrassing himself anymore. The rim of his eyes was brimming with big droplet of tears that he did not want, and his lips were trembling incessantly.

It’s a good thing that there was no weapon nearby, or else I would definitely stab this bastard!

Yu Zhi Jue turned him over and climbed on top of him, then embraced him once again. Ling Xia’s anger made his head spin, that he had no strength left to resist. He could only close his eyes while his back continuously quivered.

“Don’t cry.” Yu Zhi Jue’s heart clenched. He simply lowered his head and kiss those sparkling and translucent tears of the other person, but he could not exactly lick them all clean. He gently stroked Ling Xia’s back in a circular motion. He said: “I will never marry any woman.”

Ling Xia was astounded as he opened his eyes, and immediately caught sight of the lines of Yu Zhi Jue’s eyebrows that depict his delight, as if it wanted to dance in joy. He was too disoriented to absorb this confusing matter, he look back with his redden eyes and mechanically repeat what the other said: “Never marry?”

Yu Zhi Jue’s face up to the pointed part of his ears slightly blushed: “I already know, that you like me so much.”

“… …”Ling Xia got angry that he was rendered speechless. What’s his point?

He replied in a hoarse voice, “Don’t even think of lying to me, didn’t you wrote that arrange marriage announcement? A-and, didn’t you wear that celebrating clothes[1] today?

T/N: [1]The one Ling Xia thought of as a wedding garment.

Yu Zhi Jue knitted his brows, as if he was contemplating on what to say, and only replied after a long while: “I did write it, but… …”

Ling Xia quickly became crestfallen. He exerted himself and grab Yu Zhi Jue’s collar: “So what’s really going on? Explain it to me clearly!”

“This arrange marriage is fake.” Yu Zhi Jue didn’t want to explain too much, as he don’t want Ling Xia to know those bloody and dirty matters. If only this person properly stay under the sunshine, and smile for him everyday.

Such simple reply naturally confused Ling Xia more. He gritted his teeth and ask: “Why? And what’s more, why did you wanted to force a seal on me? It’s important that you must tell me! Since we are now… …”

After he said that, he could no longer continue to speak.

Yu Zhi Jue is currently the Grand Master of Qian Kun Sect, and will soon become the Dark Arts Sect Demon King. It’s inevitable that he’ll have so many secrets. But if these kind of matters(such as marriage) comes up several times, how could they get along with each other? He is not an unreasonable person, since he intended to accept Yu Zhi Jue, it goes without saying that he will accept those things… …

Don’t tell me that after following him like a fool and staying with him in this luxurious palace, I’ll only be sending Yu Zhi Jue off and waits for him to come back everyday?

Yu Zhi Jue was helpless, he dipped his head and softly kissed Ling Xia's forehead. He explained: "I was planning to remove the seal once your health gets better. Your heart veins suffered grave damage, so it was extremely fortunate that I was able to preserve your life, and I didn't want to you to worry… …I will tell you about the Yu Clan matters as well, all right?"

In reality, this arrange marriage is only a double trap. The strength of Yu Clan's Du Wang is getting stronger and stronger. She annexed a number of sect in the past ten years, that they already do not heed to the Qian Kun Sect. This so-called arrange marriage, is only for the opportunity to betray Yu Clan, and eradicate them at one fell swoop.

Yu Zhi Jue explained it in few simple sentences. Ling Xia is not stupid, so he immediately understood.

This is a different realm, where sects are the ruling class, and everywhere this kind of power struggle matters is the norm. He could practically imagine those scenes… … He stuttered as he ask: "Th-then your about to go out, over there?"

"It's already settled." Yu Zhi Jue replied with indifference as he caress Ling Xia's back, then continued speaking, "The schedule was moved ahead of time. Right now there's the elders, 3rd and 6th Guardian on cleaning up the rest. Sorting this Yu Clan out is only a tiny matter."

Ling Xia immediately tensed up. Is it because of me? If there's sudden change in the plan, will it affect their plan greatly?

He asked with a raspy voice: "… …Then you, have no injuries?

Yu Zhi Jue paused, then firmly replied: "None."

None your ass! Ling Xia sat up and pulled off Yu Zhi Jue's clothes with all his might, and suddenly blank out. Unexpectedly, there were two merging vicious bloody wound on Yu Zhi Jue's back with the length of a palm and about two inch wide! Yu Zhi Jue did not wrapped it with bandages

at all, and simply used his spiritual ability to stop the bleeding. The middle part on the back of his white clothes was also dyed with a single bloodstain.

Yu Zhi Jue's expression was somewhat embarrassed: "This is not a celebration clothes so to speak, but a simple red clothes I chose as an outer robe… …"

Since he did not want others to discover that he suffered a wound, he unconsciously chose a red robe to wear. He didn't expect that it will make Ling Xia completely misunderstood.

Right now, Ling Xia didn't know what kind of expression to make at all. So it was all a big unexpected mistake? Not only this damn child Yu Zhi Jue became injured like this, but I was also pulling my own heartstrings concerning those matters… …Clothes! No wonder Yu Zhi Jue peeled off all of my clothes, yet not his own… …This bastard!

"Where's the medicine for wounds?" Ling Xia already regained his calm completely, but his eyes was still puffy and red.

Yu Zhi Jue observed his expression carefully. When he heard Ling Xia's words, his heart was slightly put at ease, and handed over the medicine for his injury.

Ling Xia sat behind him and used a wet towel to lightly wipe the bloodstains around the wound, then smeared the medicine on the wound very carefully. It was painful for him to look at those wound. Yu Zhi Jue is obediently sitting in front of him right now, so different from that stubborn and detached child from several years ago.

Its not the same anymore… Yu Zhi Jue's back is broader now, the outline of his muscles are smooth and elegant, and is now a man that could rise to the top one day.

After Ling Xia was done, he reclined on the bed while pulling the thin quilt over his body.

He felt very humiliated, when he remembered his woman like appearance earlier….The temperature of his face was hot enough it could boil an chicken egg.

Fuck! It’s all this damn child Yu Zhi Jue’s fault! He went too far to play with my feelings… …If he did not do that in purpose, then I’ll change my surname to his surname Yu!

Yu Zhi Jue soon followed him and squeezed over, pulling the same quilt to him, then puts his hand around Ling Xia’s waist.

Ling Xia’s body jolted, his heart can’t help but started to beat faster. He unconsciously shifted away but Yu Zhi Jue would follow suit and move towards him. These two people, one would move back, the other would move forward. Even though the bed was exaggeratedly huge, Ling Xia was soon trapped by Yu Zhi Jue and was crammed in on the edge of the bed canopy

Yu Zhi Jue wrapped an arm on Ling Xia’s waist, and coiled the other under Ling Xia’s neck. He firmly fastened him inside his embrace, their body tightly together with no remaining space between them.

Ling Xia did not struggle anymore, afraid that he will reopened Yu Zhi Jue’s wound. The other person was puffing scalding breath on his sensitive nape, that he suddenly felt his throat dried up, as he nervously clenched his fist.

“I’m so happy.” A magnetic deep voice echoed at the side of his ears, carrying a joyous tone with it, “That Ling Xia like me so much as well.”

Ling Xia’s ears turned red. Now that it has come down into this, should he still deny it? He replied ‘En’ in a weak voice. Why are you making this unwilling Lao Zi with a weak spirit give you a ground breaking reply!

Yu Zhi Jue could not resist planting a kiss on Ling Xia’s back, he replied in a soft voice as if he was whispering: “I want you so much… … I want to kiss you and keep embracing you… Let’s do it now… …”

That deep voice had a silky like sensation filled with seduction to it, arousing a tickling feeling in one's heart. Ling Xia's heart pounded loudly, How did Yu Zhi Jue able to seduce a man like this now?

It was as if annoyance took over his muddled head as he blurted out: "You are still suffering from an injury… …"

"Then as soon as my wound gets better." The corner of Yu Zhi Jue's mouth rises up, his eyes glinted like a wolf, "Next time, I will definitely be very careful—so it won't be painful for you."

Ling Xia sobered up at once, he was suddenly scared that cold sweat formed on his head.

How would it feel like being penetrated by him? And Yu Zhi Jue also had that frightening inhuman regenerative ability… …won't it be possible for the wound to heal in just three to five days?

But he was not given the chance to regret, when Yu Zhi Jue snuggled his head on Ling Xia's back, and said in a low voice: "Ling Xia, I like you."

What the fuck! I can't handle that! This Lao Zi has no immunity at all to resist those words of love!

In the end, Ling Xia blushed fiercely as he replied: "I know. I-I, I like you too Ah Jue."

Ling Xia realized that the incident this time will cause a sensation that will shake the entire Dark Arts Sect, and Yu Zhi Jue must personally deal with the aftermath so it will not give rise to fear and doubt to the rest of the smaller sect. But right now he was staying with Ling Xia in this palace. It will definitely affect his power and position as a Grand Master, so Ling Xia urged him to go out at once.

He wasn't of help in any way with Yu Zhi Jue right now, but should he be always dragging the other's leg in the future?

Yu Zhi Jue went out with a gloomy face, it only lasted for ten minutes where he pushed the other down and kissed him again. Ling Xia almost fainted from that kiss.

This day, really left me with no choice!

Yu Zhi Jue finally lifted the restricting seal on his body, and emphasizes over and over again that he should not overdo it. Ling Xia—promised. He watches Yu Zhi Jue act like a family head towards him, and finds it unbearably funny.

At the official discussion palace hall, Yu Zhi Jue sat at the highest positioned chair, his legs gracefully crossed. He was listening to the reports of the White Loch Guardian Ming Ze. His eyes gradually narrowing: “Yu Clan’s female head is missing, what’s going on? The missions assigned to the other elders and guardians are completed, so why did the White Loch Guardian allowed this slip up to happen?”

The Yu Clan female head he let loose is the second marriage candidate partner Yu Fei Yan, and like the equally famous Green Underworld Guardian Ke Lan MinErBai, she is skilled in using poison. She was rather ambitious, and is in fact, the Yu Clan’s successor.

Ming Ze bowed his head and said: “This subordinate is incompetent, and did not anticipated that she had an unexpected double. Rest assured Grand Master, this subordinate will definitely capture the woman and eliminate her.”

“Ten days.” Yu Zhi Jue customarily leaned his arms on the arm chair. And as he gives out his order, his cheek pulled into a tiny smile: “Within ten days, dead or alive.”

Ming Ze kneels on one knee without hesitation: “Subordinate accepts the decree.”

He looked at Yu Zhi Jue who was sitting aloofly and brimming with grandeur, with admiration and single-minded devotion. A trace of obsession even appeared in his eyes.

I will follow him as he inevitably take over this world and become the ruler of all, and be my King.

As he listened to the other Guardians' reports, Yu Zhi Jue was listening with delight, when in reality, his mind already flew to the Qin Palace.

That person already promised him… …so maybe this wound will heal in about 3 days?

He was itching to end this dull conference, and quickly go back.

Ming Ze finally sensed that the smile on the Grand Master's face is not the same from his former one, but he could not put his finger on it.

That human panacea's influence towards Yu Zhi Jue is too deep. Back then he promptly decided to completely destroy that Human Panacea's heart veins, so he is completely dead. But he made a mistake. After Yu Zhi Jue woke up, he was like a zombie with five senses. He sat while holding that Human Panacea's dead body, igniting vast fire that burned around ten living cultivators to ashes. It was like he could not hear other people, and only let himself be engulfed with his own cold and gloomy flames.

But the other Left Elder Chu Yin gave him an idea. Deceive Yu Zhi Jue that the Human Panacea can still be save, and use that opportunity to put a refined puppet soul on that empty corpse of the Human Panacea, to create a false facade.

To make sure that the king he chose will not fail to live up to his expectations, he'll use any means for Yu Zhi Jue to be more successful than the previous Demon King. And the most important thing, unlike Yu Tian Ting in the past, he will not let Yu Zhi Jue be trapped in those senseless emotion!

Ming Ze's mouth curved up. He will give his all, and will not let anyone block the path of the Demon Lord becoming a King!

Even if I become the stepping stone for the king, there shall be no regrets!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 10

Ling Xia regretted as soon as Yu Zhi Jue left. That regret turned his intestine green.

He looked over his own existing tiny frame that doesn't have those pair of plump flesh[1], and was particularly skeptical on how could Yu Zhi Jue be interested in this appearance… …They're both the same. What I have he also have it!

*T/N:[1] *ahem* girl boobs*

Not only those painting albums on Yu Zhi Jue's study from before surfaced in his mind, but he also remembered that there's also some notes written in familiar beautiful calligraphy on top of those images. He had a kind of urge to run away in tears.

Shit! Then Yu Zhi Jue's gonna [***] my bottom? But I'm not sure if I can still back out?!

T/N: The author censored it but I think we all know what it means (ω)

After being depressed for a long while, Ling Xia stood up. Yu Zhi Jue already returned the chain bag the masked man gave him and lifted the ban on the study as well. He even ordered people to clear out the next room so Ling Xia could use it as his equipment refining workshop.

Ling Xia comfortingly stroked his stomach. He was so stressed that he easily had stomach cramps. He wasn't sure if its the side effect of being critically wounded again and again.

Anyway, him vomiting blood this time must be because of Yu Zhi Jue giving him a scare. Those chamberlains whose names he don't know only came by a few times for a while. Ling Xia wanted his body to get well soon, so that he could eat with his own two hands, and gladly strive hard to end his being good-for-nothing.

When Ling Xia checked, he tragically discovered that his Spiritual Abilities and Wood Type Element degraded to not even a half of his former level—even though his former level is not at all a master level. He knew that this kind of stuff cannot be hurried, the taking a shortcut beyond anyone's reach is only the protagonist's thing. A nobody like him had better take it step by step and earnestly cultivate.

It's a good thing that his rate of improvement is not to bad and is unusually fast. He was holding on to the books with his pretty hands for a long time, when he noticed that it was already dark outside—and Yu Zhi Jue had a dark expression on his face while he was staring at Ling Xia.

Ling Xia laugh mildly in panic, as if he was joking, but Yu Zhi Jue only acted like a buddha statue back at him. Ling Xia stood up and affectionately said: "Um, you're back Ah Jue? I just read two pages."

Yu Zhi Jue's expression became darker. Ling Xia hastily stood up and smiled: "Is the dinner not yet ready Ah Jue? How about we eat together?"

He walked over, and pulled Yu Zhi Jue along with him out of the room.

Yu Zhi Jue followed him out, his expression improved a little.

Food and drinks had no value to this other realm man, but Yu Zhi Jue ate and drank with an utmost finesse. Whether its the dishes, soup, or pastries, all looked like their delicious. The flavor is also light and simple yet elegant. Ling Xia enjoyed the food, and gave some to Yu Zhi Jue from time to time. The space between Yu Zhi Jue's eyebrows that was knitted together finally loosened up.

After having breakfast the next morning, Ling Xia suggested to take a stroll. But there's no recreation activities in the ancient times, and isn't it too early to rest if they can't think of anything to do? Speaking of which, the two of them still haven't done any kind of romantic dates between two lovers.

The moon is exceptionally great. And through the mottled leaves, a spread of silver like layer illuminated the ground.

Ling Xia pulled Yu Zhi Jue along under a tree and they leisurely sat down. In the next moment, Yu Zhi Jue took his hand and intertwined it with his as he held hands with him.

Ling Xia secretly looked at Yu Zhi Jue with his eyebrow raised, that current expression on this Great Grand Master's face are both happy and awkward. Ever since the two of them reunited this time, Yu Zhi Jue was overwhelming and too forceful most of the time. But now, he somewhat resembled his younger self[1] from those years ago.

Yu Zhi Jue soon noticed his gaze, then uncomfortably turned his head on the other side.

Ling Xia's heart was moved, and can't help but lean on him. He was half a head shorter than Yu Zhi Jue, and had to look up to be able to kiss the other person.

Yu Zhi Jue's body stiffened up, but he soon regained his composure. He clenched his fist with great strength to restrain those thoughts of having the urge to push the other person down—This is the first time that Ling Xia took the initiative to get close to him.

He slowly closes his eyes, when suddenly, Ling Xia's very soft lips touched his own. The other man's kiss was soft and numbing, yet it has that heart-racing feeling that he couldn't reign in.

He unconsciously puts his hands on Ling Xia's back, and held the other man firmly in place, as he passionately responded back. Ling Xia's lips were warm and carried a pure sweetness like taste. But he felt that it was somehow wasn't enough.

Ling Xia was quickly pressed on the tree. His face is red and his heartbeat was racing at full speed, yet at the same time, he had a feeling of satisfaction. The romantic kiss he was originally thinking of—Why did it feel like it suddenly started turning into an R-18 one?

His sensitive tongue fully tasted the other man's flavor, as Yu Zhi Jue invaded and occupied his mouth. Yu Zhi Jue's tongue is exceptionally

flexible, their kiss making him unable to breath. Even though he don't want to admit it, but his leg went soft, so he's practically hanging on to Yu Zhi Jue's body to be able to stand firmly. He almost had a reaction from this arousing kiss…..Fuck!

Whether it's a good thing or bad thing, Yu Zhi Jue stop after a while. He braced a hand on the tree, and use the other one to hug Ling Xia's waist and firmly fastened him in his embrace.

Ling Xia was gasping for air as he raised his head and looked at Yu Zhi Jue. He can't help but rub Yu Zhi Jue's head like he used to in the past. Yu Zhi Jue closed his eyes halfway, and even though he feigned a serious expression, the corners of his mouth are actually lifted up.

Their surroundings was absolutely tranquil. Only the rustling of the leaves and the cry of the insects could be heard. The sound of their heartbeat seemed like it was gradually getting louder. Yu Zhi Jue opened his eyes, as they mindlessly gazed at each other and kissed for a long time.

Ling Xia can't help but admit, that this moment right now is indeed romantic.

It was as if his mind is wandering no matter what he do. No matter where he look, he would remember Yu Zhi Jue's body. And every time he sees Yu Zhi Jue, his whole heart is filled with joy…….

He was obviously not in his teens anymore but this pure act of holding hands could still made him blush. And as a matter of fact, being constantly stared at with Yu Zhi Jue's meaningful glance is enough to make his heart beat faster.

On the contrary, that night, they simply went to sleep, and never did anything else. Yu Zhi Jue liked hugging him or being hugged by him, and when he turned his body, Yu Zhi Jue would imitate his position immediately afterwards.

The wound on Yu Zhi Jue's back completely closed already, but it had not yet scarred.

Seeing Yu Zhi Jue's smooth back and its perfect shape, Ling Xia had that urge to run away once again.

Shit! Did he took off his robe on purpose to let me have a look or something? So that we could say 'Wow—' ?

Ling Xia was quivering in fear as he draws the corner of his mouth into a smile: "Um, my stomach is somewhat feeling a bit unwell, I think soaking into the Hot Spring should make it better."

Yu Zhi Jue replied without hesitation: "I'll accompany you."

"N-no….No need. I suddenly remembered that I already went during the afternoon." Ling Xia hastily refused, the palm of his hand started sweating due to his nervousness.

These past few days, the two of them got along in harmony and happiness, as if they are two young lovers falling deeper in love with one another, that he completely forgot his words of consent to Yu Zhi Jue from before.

Shit! Can't this just stay as a pure love?

Yu Zhi Jue walked over and bent his waist. He suddenly pulled Ling Xia's hand, and sucked the end of his two fingers into his mouth, wrapping it with his moist and soft tongue and lightly licking it. It felt ticklish and numbing that Ling Xia was shuddering all over, almost unable to call out to him.

He frantically lowered his head, his body involuntarily shivering up. Those pair of good looking, elegant and slanted almond eyes of Yu Zhi Jue possesses a heat that could burn a person.

"I can't endure it anymore…….Let me do you."

That voice seemed like it could bewitch a great number of people, it was deep and magnetic, carrying a charisma that makes a person blush and their heart flutter.

Ling Xia was left in a pitiful state, not daring to look at Yu Zhi Jue.

How could this freaking child's slight provocation made me blush… Sometimes I can't even resist this intensely passionate man….How could he shamelessly utter those endearing and intimate words?

He breathes with difficulty as he moaned: "……Nnn"

His moaning did not waned yet, when Yu Zhi Jue leaned over, and kisses him while pulling off Ling Xia's sash.

As soon as Ling Xia was pushed down on the bed, he could feel a dry heat washed all over his body. Yu Zhi Jue kept kissing him while stroking him in an irregular rhythm. He did not know where his act of calm and collected maturity from before run off to, as he stared blankly and his complexion turned green.

He did not know how many times they have exposed their naked body to each other, but he knows that maybe this time has a different reason. Every actions of Yu Zhi Jue made him endlessly nervous, that his muscles stretch taught. Even his breathing is suppressed to a minimum extent.

He did not know where he threw away those theories and knowledge he learned from before, but Yu Zhi Jue only relied on his instincts as he pushed down Ling Xia, and used his lips and tongue to devour his body, looking for his sensitive spots. As soon as Yu Zhi Jue sensed that Ling Xia's breathing quickened due to his certain actions, he noted it in his mind, as he teases him harder.

This person is still too thin, and his body remained delicate similar to his teenage years. But he love every part of other man's body, every inch of the other's skin is attracting him to kiss and probe.

When he noticed that Ling Xia's entire body strained stiff, Yu Zhi Jue raised his head slowly and forced himself to stop. He climbed on top of Ling Xia and bit his earlobe. He whispered to his ear: "Relax a little, don't be afraid. "

As he spoke, he kneaded one of Ling Xia's nipple, and experimentally pinches it a few times. He kept kneading it till it turned hard and only then, did he applied more suitable strength on rubbing it.

…….Don't be fooled by this child's words! Even though he wanted to think like that, Ling Xia's ears are actually red.

He inhaled a mouthful of air between his clenched teeth a few times, and suddenly opened his eyes.

He was much older than Yu Zhi Jue, so he must not show his cowardice. Being unreasonable like this, is he still a man?

It's not exactly humiliating….maybe it will be shittingly painful……but I must not let this matter get me down!

Maybe its because he got over it like that, so Ling Xia acted naturally and embraced Yu Zhi Jue's neck, as he moved up and kissed him without a care, and even straddled Yu Zhi Jue's body.

He looked down and observed Yu Zhi Jue who whispered in his ears just now and replied:

"I'm not afraid, I want you too."

After trying to be brave and saying those empty words, he saw a miraculous scene just now where the all mighty Yu Zhi Jue unexpectedly blushed up to his ears.

That suddenness made Ling Xia totally abandon his nervousness.

Right now, Yu Zhi Jue's dense silk like long hair fell scattered on his wide and sturdy shoulder, his slanted almond eyes slightly narrowed as his long eyelashes fluttered along with it. His voluptuous thin lips slightly parted and exposes his set of snow-white teeth……..

Ling Xia swallowed his saliva. This Great Grand Master is truly a feast for the eyes…….

He exploited this opportunity and enthusiastically leaned over. He held onto Yu Zhi Jue’s arms and nibbled his collarbone. He always thought that Yu Zhi Jue’s collarbone is specially sexy—particularly when it was unrestrictedly exposed during those ordinary moments, that it makes him want the man.

Yu Zhi Jue’s eye darkened, unyieldingly lifted Ling Xia’s chin and said in a restrained voice: “Don’t do it again, or else I won’t be able to control myself and hurt you.”

Ling Xia had an epiphany and came into a realization, if he’s gonna satisfy those needs of Yu Zhi Jue, then will it be safe for him and in that place? He discovered earlier, that when he’s the active one, that hidden proud and lovable bashfulness aspect of Yu Zhi Jue emerges, and his big wolf tail would be concealed.

He’s thick-faced as well so he threw off the caution to the wind and wanted to take the first move. He clawed Yu Zhi Jue’s solid abs that has no trace of excess fat and slid downwards, then gripped his fully hard thing since earlier and skillfully stroked it. He even used this chance to held his own with Yu Zhi Jue’s, as he used both of his hand to jerked the both of them without stopping.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 11

Due to the feeling of shame, Ling Xia kept his head low and did not had the courage to see Yu Zhi Jue. When he looked down, he could not avoid seeing that place where the two of them are pressing against each other. His face suddenly blushed deep red as he hastily closed his eyes—

By no means I will concede from being the small giver[1]!

-T/N: The seme or gong-

Those he was holding in his hand kept swelling up, he felt it throbbing along with his heart. It was so hot that he was almost unable to keep a hold of it.

His breathing gradually synchronized with the movement of his hand. Ling Xia's thin and feeble chest undulating, his lips glossed with moisture. He could not restrain his fragmented moans from leaking out. He really don't want to admit it, but what's happening right now is much more exciting than in the past

Yu Zhi Jue eyes widen in an unprecedented magnitude, it was almost sluggish. His gaze closely sticking to Ling Xia's face.

He never saw it coming from this gentle and reserved person in front of him, who unexpectedly had this quite a passionate side.

At this moment, those pair of thin pale legs was spread apart on both sides of Yu Zhi Jue's body, and because Ling Xia was unaware that he was rocking his hips forward, that good looking appearance is dyed with a layer of dark red due to shame, bringing along with it a seducing flavor that is hard to describe.

But the other person's frugal comforting did not gave him satisfaction, instead it made his desire rise higher and higher…….

Yu Zhi Jue could not contain it anymore and suddenly sat up and embraced Ling Xia's waist. He was like a wolf who had taken his prey down and firmly trapped it. His hoarse voice turned into a rougher condition.

"It might be likely to be painful at first…..so we should keep trying it out."

Ling Xia was stunned as he opened his eyes glistening with moist, and saw in Yu Zhi Jue's eyes a flickering flame——-that blazing heat made him shudder.

It seemed like, I went too far?

He had not yet given any response, when Yu Zhi Jue impatiently started to move.

He wanted to possess this man at once, and dyed every inch of this man's body with his own.

His hand that was on Ling Xia's waist lingered in the middle of the his waist and caress his delicate skin soaked in sweat. He sucked those red beads in Ling Xia's chest with his lips, and used his tongue to lick it softly.

That numbing feeling from his stomach shot straight to his brain, Ling Xia could not held it in and let out a few weak moans, hastily biting his lips shut. He did not know that a man can feel pleasure from that place, and can't stop himself from pleading:

"Not like this, Ah Jue….."

Maybe its because of his sexual desire, but the voice that came out of his mouth was soft and nasal, it made Ling Xia jump again in surprised.

Yu Zhi Jue slowly lifted his head up. He used his soft and slippery tongue and licked downwards at a slow pace. He asked:

"It doesn't feel good?"

His licks reached that place that was like a burning candle as moist liquid ambiguously drips down. Ling Xia's nipples became amorously red and swelled larger. Ling Xia can't help but trembled as he moaned out 'Ah'. He was so ashamed that he wished he could bury himself inside the quilt.

The corner Yu Zhi Jue's mouth helplessly rises up. He like seeing this image of Ling Xia that he caused, where he's clearly feeling good yet he insisted on holding it in. It makes him wanted to do more, and bully him much more so he'll let out those pleasant to hear sounds.

He slowly moved downwards, and parted Ling Xia's legs without hesitation. He focused on the place that was already dripping wet, and licks it gently with his tongue.

Ling Xia was trembling all over, the stimulation from Yu Zhi Jue's repeated actions almost but did not made him come.

Yu Zhi Jue knitted his brows as if he was pondering. He licked the corner of his mouth and said:

"The taste is not really good."

"… … …" Ling Xia was flushed with anger, he wanted to pull back his legs at all cost.

Again, did I made you do that much? How could the flavor from there taste good?

Even though he said it that way, yet Yu Zhi Jue unyieldingly kept Ling Xia's legs in place, and thoroughly licked then sucked it.

Ling Xia did not dare to believe what's happening as he opened his eyes wide, his whole body flushed red and curled like a small shrimp, the feeling of shame and pleasure simultaneously attacks him, and it made his mind completely blank.

He instinctively started to plead: "Ah Jue, not like this, its very dirty…….Ah!……"

Due to his trembling, his voiced carried a sobbing tone, his usually clear and gentle eyes became watery. Yu Zhi Jue's eyes became brighter, but his movements started to become clumsy.

Yu Zhi Jue continued his actions even if there's a resistance in his throat, a feeling of vomiting brought forth due to the uncomfortable feeling. But seeing Ling Xia immersed himself to that feeling of lust, Yu Zhi Jue felt a bizarre satisfaction in his heart.

From that intense stimulation that could not make him come made Ling Xia grabbed on tightly on the bed sheets. The fact that Yu Zhi Jue is doing this for him caused his brain to go dumb.

He knows that this youngster stubbornly eager to be the top…..

His whole body warmed up with an unbearable heat, and his inside kept twitching. His heart was pounding hard as if it was about to jump out of chest…..

Ling Xia's back suddenly stretched straight, his toe curled up from an intense pleasure. He struggled, wanting to back out, but Yu Zhi Jue firmly restrained him in place.

And at once, his mind was filled with joy as he finally reach his climax, and then Ling Xia just realized that what they've just done seemed to be over the top. He was gasping for breath, staring distractedly at t

he cum that was on the side of Yu Zhi Jue's mouth. But it seems that the suspicious stimulation he was subjected into was not enough for Yu Zhi Je, as he licked the corner of his mouth with his red tongue and wrinkled his brows.

He said: "Rather strange."

The blood from Ling Xia's face quickly drained. He had not yet think of any useful actor lines to use[1], when Yu Zhi Jue was already groping around his butt, ambiguously loitering around the entrance of his bottom.

T/N: [1]To make excuses

His whole body stiffened, his breathing started to became heavy and disorderly.

He don’t want to be unreasonable since it already reached this point. He did not turned away his face, and tried hard to loosen up his rigid muscles. He stretched his legs apart and endured his shame to cooperate with Yu Zhi Jue’s actions.

He likes Yu Zhi Jue, so these affair he’ll just grit his teeth and exercise patience…….

Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze somewhat dulled at the sight of Ling Xia’s butt. Even though it was too thin, but the more important parts are a lot well rounded. He admiringly fondled and kneaded them, and finds that it was smooth and flexible, even the part in between that was in front him. He noticed that Ling Xia was trembling, his heart can’t help but be stirred. He said in a low comforting voice: “I’ll be very slow.”

He carefully put ointment in his fingertips, and tried to lubricate inside. These ointments are from the the numerous books he looked onto as references, it produces a faint smell of herbal, as well as having unusually good lubricating and healing function.

That area is really too tight, yet it was soft and warm. Yu Zhi Jue was panting as he uses two fingers to thrusts in and out. He can’t help but wonder, is he truly gonna be able to fit in? He was opening him up while he kisses Ling Xia’s belly. He couldn’t stop himself from leaving hickeys on each and every kisses.

The erection on his lower stomach was already in a painful condition, that he wanted to hurry it up and enter.

Ling Xia looked down and watch Yu Zhi Jue who was occupied in his body. Yu Zhi Jue’s bright and clean forehead was soaked with fine sweat, his beautiful elegant and slanted almond eyes is filled with desire,

nevertheless his expression shows absolute restraint. He was so handsome that it made Ling Xia's heart beats in chaos.

Once he caught sight of the details of Yu Zhi Jue's movements, he was immediately embarrassed that he averted his eyes.

Actually, he could not tell if he was feeling pain, or he was feeling better, but soon a very peculiar feeling burst open, and brings forth a slight feeling of a stabbing pain and numbing feeling.

Even though it's very shameful, but if it will make Ah Jue feel happy……

"It's ok now……."Ling Xia wiped Yu Zhi Ju's sweat and pushed the other man's hair on the back of his ear for him, his face was blushing as he speaks.

Once he obtained his consent, Yu Zhi Jue straightened his body, and half-kneels between Ling Xia's legs. He raised his own erection and aimed it at the entrance. He only inserted the tip, trying to enter in and out for a few times while making it slippery. Ling Xia who was originally tensed up, can't help but find it ridiculous afterwards that he is coordinating with Yu Zhi Jue's movements.

Most of the top part finally got in. Ling Xia's head was soaked with cold sweat. His breath becoming chaotic——

Fuck! It really hurts!

His erection caused by Yu Zhi Jue's foreplay became limp due to the sudden pain.

Yu Zhi Jue felt that place tightly wrapping in his, it was warm and tight. Fierce rapid sensation outdoing one another flowed from that part that was wrung tight then rushed to his brain, he imagined that it will still feel a lot better. He can't resist letting out a satisfied moan. He grabbed Ling Xia's legs and continued thrusting, until he finally reach his climax that he only stopped with difficulty.

Ling Xia’s lips faintly trembling, he could even feel that part of Yu Zhi Jue throbbing inside him, and his proof of satisfaction filled Ling Xia inside to the brim. His breathing was hurried and brief, and his entire body was dripping with sweat like a fish that came out of water. That burning hot place seemed like it was bleeding, so he did not dare to make a single move at all.

“It feels good…..” Yu Zhi Jue stared with infatuation at Ling Xia’s rather noticeable pained face, and said with a husky voice, “You’ll be the end of me.”

After talking, Yu Zhi Jue can’t help but straighten his back as he slowly moves. Every movement made him feel the rapid sensation of the ecstasy brought by the soft muscles wrapping around him. He then started to thrusts in and out very hard and rough, and after entering and pulling back a few times, it was finally smooth and unhindered for him.

The pupil of Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes was clouded with faintly discernible and bewitchingly strange purple color. He gratifyingly narrowed his eyes, unable to stop himself from hugging Ling Xia and exerting himself to thrust faster.

Ling Xia was biting his shoulder, and did his best to adapt by placing his legs on both sides of Yu Zhi Jue’s body.

Yu Zhi Jue noticed the hint. He even starting moving really gentle and careful, but being soaked in pleasure, his movements is a bit forceful, that it gave Ling Xia and unbearable pain, his body unconsciously trembling as a result.

But he did not voice out any resistance, and simply watches Yu Zhi Jue’s expression through his sluggish teary eyes. Then Yu Zhi Jue’s neck slightly pulled back, revealing a slender and graceful swan like neck, his long black hair swaying along with it as he moves. Clear droplets of sweat flowed from his forehead and accumulated in his fine chin, and drops again and again on his thick and firm chest. His every movement can make a person crazy.

Ling Xia watches in silence, his heart thudding and jumping wildly. He was reluctant to admit but, this Great Grand Master appearance is like an enchanting woman who attracts and spirited away his soul.

He kept his imagination running wild. How to say it, even if I died under a Tree Peony Flower[1], then moved on and become a ghost, it's also romantic……..To die or not today will not be in vain.

-T/N: Tree peony flower is a symbol of emperor/rulers, and since Yu Zhi Jue is one, Ling Xia is saying that dying under him is also romantic.-

Yu Zhi Jue's movements rushed again, Ling Xia can't help but whimper in pain, and felt as if a burning ** flows out on his bottom.

Yu Zhi Jue eyes cleared up at last. He was frightened and urgently stopped his movements. A bit of blood from that place already glued on his abdomen. He also did not dare make a move. He look down on the body below him and asked with a trace of worry: "Were you in pain?"

Ling Xia could only feel it was as if that place had been stabbed. He bit his lip in pain till it was somewhat pale. But he still smiled and shook his head: "No."

Yu Zhi Jue's face was suddenly dyed in a layer of dark red. He caught sight of Ling Xia's forgiving eyes towards him.

He carefully lowered his head, and pasted his lips on Ling Xia's, raining upon him a delicate touching kisses.

The tip of their tongues wrapped around each other and kissed at the same time. Yu Zhi Jue gently and cautiously rocked his hips, exerting himself to thrust in different areas, he was looking for that one spot—— That spot that can give Ling Xia pleasure to forget the pain.

And when that moment comes where he rubbed that spot, Ling Xia's back jolted, and trembled all over for a while. He was unable to restrain the low cry that came out——but this time it was not a cry of pain, but rather the one that carried a tone of pleasure. His body softens up at once.

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes brightened. His memory is super good, so he immediately attack that spot persistently, and tried his best to adjust the degree and angle. He then felt his entering movement became smoother.

An intense feeling soon rises up a bit from Ling Xia's tailbone, then spreads all over his body. Ling Xia's waist went limp, he gasped for breath and held onto Yu Zhi Jue's back with difficulty, his legs tightly wrapping around the other's waist. His withered part gradually getting erect, standing in great spirit as it push against Yu Zhi Jue's lower abdomen, rubbing on Yu Zhi Jue's body along with their movements.

Earth shattering pleasure made him fear it more than the pain he experienced from before, it was as if he's not a man……..He was repressing it with all his might, but it was like there's an electric current flowing on his limp and numbed limbs, he could not contain the incomprehensible moans from coming out.

"Don't hold it in……." Yu Zhi Jue's deep endless black eyes fluttered. He's making Ling Xia feel pleasure……Once he realized this fact, it made him even more excited. It was difficult for him to bear as he bit Ling Xia's neck and said in a seductive voice: "I like hearing your voice, it's pleasant to hear……."

Ling Xia then clearly became more excited, his bottom suddenly tightening. Yu Zhi Jue gratifyingly narrowed his eyes, and can't help but put more force into it, quickly filling up Ling Xia's body, his ramming and pulling out carried a ** sound.

An unfamiliar and strong pleasure rushed to his brain, Ling Xia kept moaning 'Ah….", as his cum splashes on top of Yu Zhi Jue's stomach, and his toes were curling up from feeling good, even the corner of his eyes was overflowing with tears.

Yu Zhi Jue gently smiled and temporarily stop moving. He whispered closed to Ling Xia's ears: "It's already your second time, I still haven't had mine."

Ling Xia embarrassingly opened his eyes, but he did not dare to look at Yu Zhi Jue. Inside his body is that unimaginable hard thing……And once it pushes into him, it was as if he was drifting on the sea, where he could not find any shore.

Waves of pleasant aftertaste was pounded into him, he could only kept hugging Yu Zhi Jue, and sink along with the other's movements……

He did not know how long had passed, Ling Xia just felt he was tossed repeatedly till he was muddle-headed. That place was already completely numb, that his urging carried a shameful vibrato: "Faster, Ah Jue, I can't take it anymore……"

"Faster……." Yu Zhi Jue relentlessly hasten his movements. He was thrusting back and forth for a short half hour, when he suddenly embraced Ling Xia's waist and lurched forward as he came. He narrowed his eyes in satisfaction and gasps for breath in brief intervals.

Ling Xia trembled when that warm liquid gushed in, then the expression in his face changed. He was angry and wanted to kick Yu Zhi Jue with his feet, but how can he do that when there's no strength left in any part of his body.

Could it be that thing shot inside my body?

Yu Zhi Jue kept him under his body and did not move. That half hard this was still crammed inside his body. After a long while, he latches on to Ling Xia's ears and said: "This kind of activity really feels good……Let's do it one more time?"

Ling Xia was alarmed that his head perspired, he hastily replied in a soft tone: "Ah Jue, I'm so tired……."

He felt that he completely lost face.

However, it was clear that his pleading nevertheless is useful. Even though Yu Zhi Jue is gearing up for more action, he finally unlatched from

his body, and that sound stirred from him pulling out made the both of them somewhat embarrassed.

Yu Zhi Jue remained holding him in his embrace. It was as if his lust has not been satiated, he kept kissing and fondling him. Ling Xia hatefully envied and admired that vitality of his! Although, it still felt better than he thought?

It seemed like inside the entire Qin palace reeks of ambiguous smell of sweat and fishy odor. Ling Xia was flushed with anger and shrank in Yu Zhi Jue’s embrace motionlessly.

That place started to burn in pain that he bit his lips.

It was the greatest humiliation ever!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 12

Just thinking about that bleeding part of his, Ling Xia was a bit terrified inside. Won't he get hemorrhoids later on?

He finds it too embarrassing to check, and any slight movement was so painful he wanted to scream. There's also that clammy and sticky dubious liquid flowing out of his body. All of these were somehow difficult to bear.

He was aware on the ways two men in a relationship express love to each other, but on how to deal with the aftermath, he still have yet to know.

On the contrary, Yu Zhi Jue recalled about it. He whispered close to Ling Xia's ears and said: "I'll take care of cleaning you up."

It's certainly not on that healing hot spring, but on a luxurious spacious bath place embellished with hundreds of precious jade situated inside Yu Zhi Jue's Qin Palace. The walls was inlaid with pearls, at the side of the pond is a mounted dragon head spurting stream of water, and a pond so clear that people could see through it.

Ling Xia was enduring the indignity of being carried by Yu Zhi Jue as they go. His waist and legs are still soft, when he stood up his calf would wobble, making his balance unstable. He did not know for how long Yu Zhi Jue did him, in any case, he don't have energy left all over his body from being tossed around repeatedly.

The water from the bath is not cold nor warm. When they took a bath, it was very comfortable.

Ling Xia restrained himself from getting annoyed for being seated with his back facing Yu Zhi Jue. He awkwardly waited for Yu Zhi Jue to clean him up.

Yu Zhi Jue uses a finger to carefully scrape inside, making Ling Xia suddenly tensed up. He balled his hand into a fist, fearing of letting his

voice out. Those images from what happened a while ago forced their way in his brain, where their bodies tangled while facing to each other. Those heart-throbbing kisses and endearing words made him blush.

As he closes his eyes, he could not restrain his heart from beating faster.

To be frank, it's awkward to be taken care of embarrassingly. But Yu Zhi Jue was very happy to handle this matter, and it gave Ling Xia's heart a kind of faint delight.

Yu Zhi Jue used two fingers to open up Ling Xia's entrance, and brought water in to wash it repeatedly. Some of the cum and traces of blood flows out on the space his fingers created. Seeing those traces of blood made him somewhat vexed, but at the same time it also gave him an odd sense of satisfaction, as these are the proof of his deeds. Right now, there were red and greenish purple love bites all over Ling Xia's body, leaving a trace of himself in every spot—He's mine.

He can't help but nestle on Ling Xia's back, his hand appearing out of nowhere to pull Ling Xia's waist and intimately press close to him: "Painful?"

"N-No." Ling Xia replied in embarrassment. There is strength on Yu Zhi Jue's finger even if he's very gentle, so it was actually a bit painful.

"What we did, how was it for you?" Yu Zhi Jue's voice was very deep and soft, as if it was carrying a bit of expectations.

Ling Xia was in a predicament. How should he answer this question? And isn't Yu Zhi Jue's question too direct? It was actually a bit too painful, but there's also a certain pleasant feeling… …

But he was still somewhat mentally rejecting it… …

"… …It doesn't feel bad." Ling Xia uttered after a while, feeling embarrassed to no end.

“It felt really good for me.” Yu Zhi Jue’s breath was distinctly burning hot, “It will not be painful for you next time.”

“… …” So what they’ve done for a few times was still not enough… …

Ling Xia noticed Yu Zhi Jue’s temperature started to rise again, so he hastily said: “Ah Jue, haven’t we bathed enough?”

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes as he sniffed Ling Xia’s body, his voice carried a bit of restraint and repressing emotions: “Yeah.”

He felt that, that was still not enough to obtain this person. He wanted to press Ling Xia under him, and made Ling Xia see only him for eternity, and call out only his name…

After they went back, those scent from inside the Qin Palace almost disperses. The application of the medicine was quite embarrassing, the act of doing it was excessively so. Ling Xia pretended like it was nothing as he lays down on his stomach, propped up his butt, and parted his legs to expose his **.

This posture had a bit of impact on Yu Zhi Jue. He calmed his mind and applied the medicine for Ling Xia, that place was clearly red and swollen. He cannot bear for it to be like that again next time.

He accidentally touched the inner side of Ling Xia’s leg, and distinctly sensed that the other person trembled. He remembered that scene where those pair of slender legs wrapped in his waist, his throat unbearably constricted.

When the medicine was applied to that place, it produces a sudden coolness, and eases the painful feeling by a lot. As soon as Yu Zhi Jue seemed to have applied enough, Ling Xia hurriedly flipped his body over. That position just now was too humiliation for him.

“You should sleep.” Yu Zhi Jue lowered his head and kissed him in the lips. It wasn’t a deep kiss, but only a light peck, “I still have some matters needed to attend to.”

His was once again expressionless, as he restrained himself without fail.

Ling Xia was stunned by the speed of Yu Zhi Jue's changing of proper clothes as well as not looking back when he left, that it was too late to ask. He can't help but angrily spat curses, Fucking hell! So he's just gonna dine and dash once he had eaten his fill? That scoundrel!

He turned his body over. These days of sharing bed with him, he had already gotten used to Yu Zhi Jue sleeping by his side.

The medicine soon takes effect, and Ling Xia was extremely tired, so he quickly falls asleep and entered the dreamland.

He was fast asleep till it was the noon of the next day. Ling Xia rises up and stretches his body. The medicine was very effective, so the scorching pain in that place was alleviated by a lot, but there's still that peculiar feeling whenever his sits.

Refining equipments uses up too much energy, so he decided to cultivate his Wood Type Element Abilities. In the past, his masked wearing master sets aside for him a lot of rare spiritual herb seeds effective for Wood Type users.

He rummages his chain bag and found some useful tools. He looked for a piece of vacant land, and planted the different kinds of spiritual herbs. He used to do this kind of errand in the Shao Yang Sect's Immortal Welcoming Pavilion and had accumulated a lot of experience, so he did it with so much proficiency.

The lustre foliage of medicinal herbs has an ability to calm the mind and heal, the fruit it bear can also improve its efficacy, and the way it looks is also very ornamental. Ling Xia looked for a pot and planted a seed, he then tried to use his spiritual energy to cause it to germinate.

Gentle flowing Wooden Type Spiritual Energy circulated in his meridians, then slowly pouring out directly to the planted seed in the pot, resulting to a shoot with two pieces of leaves popping out. Ling Xia rejoices, and wholeheartedly devoted himself in pouring his energy to the

pot. At last it was afternoon, and the plant was unexpectedly as high as half of a person. It even bears two bright and delicate red colored flower buds.

Ling Xia stopped moving and wipes his forehead. This type of spiritual herb doesn't really have high market value, but the plant itself can net a price of about three hundred energy stones. So without a doubt, he doesn't need to worry in providing food and clothing for the Great Grand Master… …

He was in a cheerful mood, when his stomach suddenly twisted in pain. He hastily covered his mouth, as dark red blood flows out from the cracks between his fingers.

Ling Xia stared at the blood on his hand in daze.

What's going on with this?

Didn't he cough out blood before because of his erratic frame of mind thus strongly affecting the restricting spell in his body? But the seal was already lifted, so how is it still possible to vomit blood? Does it seem like he's fragile young lady?

Maybe it's because my body is still not fully healed… …

Ling Xia circulated his spiritual energy in one cycle on his meridians, but he did not find any peculiar feeling, so he paid no attention to it and just wiped the corner of his mouth clean with his hand, then places the pot of plant inside Yu Zhi Jue's study afterwards. This spiritual herb's smell is very refine, a whiff can rejuvenate spiritual energy.

Won't this make Yu Zhi Jue feel a bit better after hours of studying?

Yu Zhi Jue came back early in the evening totally worn out. But upon seeing Ling Xia, he encloses him in his embrace and intensely kisses him. Ling Xia was caught off guard and was almost unable to breath.

Why is Yu Zhi Jue this excited?

“It feels like it’s been a long time not seeing you.” Yu Zhi Jue uses his finger to wipe off the saliva that overflowed from the corner of Ling Xia’s mouth the other person wasn’t able to swallow. He gazes steadily at Ling Xia’s face.

Ling Xia was gasping for air, his face can’t help but flush. Nowadays, he was often at loss on what to say at Yu Zhi Jue’s words. But he replied in a manner of not being outdone: “Me too—I’m always thinking of you, Ah Jue.”

He shamelessly uttered those words of endearment.

Is it too much compared to Yu Zhi Jue’s usual words?

Sure enough, Yu Zhi Jue’s expression immediately turned awkward, his cheeks tainted with a thin layer of red.

He found it amusing to see, that his health suddenly improved a lot. He was pushed down by Yu Zhi Jue who is in front of him.

Yu Zhi Jue nimbly untied Ling Xia’s sash, his voice carrying a fervent tone as he ask: “Is it still painful there?”

Ling Xia somewhat only reacted with a slight shake of his head, then as if realizing something, he nodded his head without delay. But Yu Zhi Jue nevertheless carried on taking his clothes off.

He was flabbergasted. Didn’t Yu Zhi Jue just recently did that to him? And hasn’t he not yet mentally prepared himself to do it?

He hastily said: “Is the meal still not prepared yet, Ah Jue?……”

“Eating you is enough.” Yu Zhi Jue straightforward interest is to finally remove all the clothes in his body, his breathing already started to be rough and heavy.

Ling Xia was incessantly embarrassed, he was struggling to sit up.

Isn’t this too direct? Although this man is already this much candid……

He hasn’t managed to sit up yet when Yu Zhi Jue already went close to him, and uses his legs to pry Ling Xia’s legs apart widely.

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes while looking, and approvingly said: “The swelling is already gone.”

Ling Xia saw a spark of flame ignited in his eyes that it made him incomparably embarrassed, he struggled to wanting to close his legs.

Yu Zhi Jue seemed to be in thoughts as he said: “We can change the position tonight.”

“… …”Ling Xia thoroughly cuts a sorry figure. He said, “Ah Jue, this kind of thing should not be done everyday, it’s likely to injure the body… …”

Yu Zhi Jue lowered his head as if he didn’t hear him. He nibbled the artery in Ling Xia’s neck for a few times, his hands started wandering up and down on his body—He knows all the sensitive areas on this man’s body.

Ling Xia's body jolted, as Yu Zhi Jue quickly assumed his offensive attacks. He gasps for breath as he tried to resist but then gives up after a while. He let his heart be stirred and filled with solemn as he looks at the curtain of the bed canopy.

Yu Zhi Jue’s kiss fell at the corner of his mouth, then slowly licks his way towards the inside of his mouth, meticulously licking and sucking him in, creating an irresistible heat.

Once they reached this step, Ling Xia started to let himself go, and uses his tongue to respond back. He is also a man in this relationship, so he’ll what he has to do, since he did not want to be blindly passive at all.

His has only one regret in his heart, sooner or later he will be fucked to death… …

That’s right! He absolutely unable to resist this Great Grand Master’s charm and passionate feelings… …

Fuck!

By the time Ling Xia noticed Yu Zhi Jue’s finger probing on his lower body, he’s face turned red at the same time was at loss, as he waits for Yu Zhi Jue to finished his preparations.

Yu Zhi Jue’s finger slides in and out, bringing with it a stabbing pain for some time, then traces of numbing soon followed and spreads up to his backbone. Ling Xia’s entire body heats up, he controlled his breathing so as to avoid letting out shameful sounds.

An unexpected spell of dizziness came when Yu Zhi Jue turned his body over, separated the sections of his butt, and aimed to the middle part. He rapidly thrusts inside. In the next moment, he braces himself as he reached his climax.

Ling Xia could not stop himself from moaning ‘Ahh’. It took him a while to gasps for breath. He was both angry and frustrated as he spats his curses: “You bastard! Can you not take it slow?”

Yu Zhi Jue looks down on the body below him and whispered close to his ears: “I’m sorry, I couldn’t resist.”

His voice was deep and very pleasant to hear, baring his everything at this moment and not concealing his desire at all.

Ling Xia’s heart can’t help but start to beat faster. Yu Zhi Jue who was kneeling behind him and holding his butt already started to move again, making an ambiguous thrusting sound, the intensity even made him somewhat scared.

The feeling this time is clearly more than pain. Ling Xia astoundingly hanged his head down and clutches the bed sheet tightly with both of his hands, his body incessantly swaying along Yu Zhi Jue’s movements. And what’s more, Yu Zhi Jue also uses a hand to grasp his front, and strokes it

with the same frequency of his thrusting. That taste of stimulation from both sides was somehow unbearable for him.

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes increasingly darkened. Before his eyes is that swaying delicate thin waist and slender legs, both making him incomparably excited. He kisses Ling Xia's sensitive back. He likes the way Ling Xia's body trembled from feeling good under him.

"I like hearing your voice… …" He noticed that Ling Xia kept stifling his voice, and was a bit dissatisfied as he looked on the body below him. He was thrusting while he rubs and played with one of Ling Xia's nipples, "Your insides feels so warm and so good… …"

Ling Xia was flushed with anger after hearing those shameful words, but his lips slightly opened as if he was seducing, that some of his fragmented moans that he could not contain leaks out.

Yu Zhi Jue turned Ling Xia's head over to him, and kisses him while continuously sliding in and out of him, as he changes his angles of attacking that sweet spot. Ling Xia was completely defeated from being attacked in all sides and could only give up, his resistance was disabled.

He did not know for how long has it been, but a part of his brain feels like it's floating. He closes his eyes and gasps as he came, his pair of kneeling legs buckled, and his face was plastered on the bed sheet as he panted.

Yu Zhi Jue decreases the speed of his swaying in a gentle tempo, letting Ling Xia have the buffer to adjust. Those towering waves of lingering pleasure made Ling Xia feel even more good.

He pulled Ling Xia up facing him. He was mesmerized by the look of Ling Xia's moist eyes and absent-minded expression, his movement became faster once more. His hands and lips were unbearably moving about in Ling Xia's body.

Ling Xia could only shut his eyes and focus on Yu Zhi Jue's movements. He could vaguely process in his mind, that the strength of Yu Zhi Jue's

waist is truly good… …

Ling Xia was worn out after reaching his climax once more, but Yu Zhi Jue was still in a high spirits. He angrily bit Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder a couple of times and left an imprint of his row of teeth. Yu Zhi Jue split his sides laughing, his elegant almond eyes clearly expressing delight as he narrowed his eyes, but his movements were actually becoming more intense.

He was tormented repeatedly throughout the night, that Ling Xia couldn’t take it anymore and pleaded for so many times, as if his voice were carrying that sobbing tone. But on the contrary, Yu Zhi Jue became more excited. He did not know how many times he came, but in the end, he was really out of breath from being tossed around and lost his consciousness.

When he woke up the next day, it was already late in the afternoon. Ling Xia was rendered speechless from his sour and painful back.

His body was carefully cleaned to his surprise, those purple love marks that was left in his body increased in number. One look and it can make a person blush.

Fuck! Did I transmigrated this time just to be tricked by this stallion character into swaying my hips and indulging in pleasure in an R-18 fashion?

This cannot go on any longer!

He was angrily clenching his teeth as he massages his still sore waist.

This brat Yu Zhi Jue, he’s obviously treating me like a piece of tasty food! If this goes on, sooner or later I will die from excessive ejaculation by him doing me again and again.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 13

Ling Xia decided to have a proper chat with Yu Zhi Jue.

In the first place, it was embarrassing to ask about bed activities. Although talking about it is a bit awkward, but it’s a must in the long run in order to do it moderation. He don’t want to wake up everyday to see the sun already way up high.

Secondly, he don’t want to stay in Qin Palace everyday. His body is practically fully healed, but everyday he could only meet with Yu Zhi Jue.

Besides, he’s still concerned about Song Xiao Hu and the others. He also don’t know in what tricky direction did the story line changes into, but Song Xiao Hu should probably have two or three junior sisters by now right? He was somewhat regretful, since he didn’t have enough time to properly teach Song Xiao Hu about the importance of a monogamous relationship. Even though the girls in this world are a bit daring, but they are all still lovely for the most part.

Today, Yu Zhi Jue actually returned very early. As he came back, he went straight over to him, and embraces him tightly from behind, resting his head on Ling Xia’s shoulder.

Ling Xia avoided his kiss. He smiled as he said: “Ah Jue, I have something to talk about with you.”

He awkwardly and implicitly talked about those matters. Yu Zhi Jue simply lies down on his side, his face remaining expressionless, and his handsome and elegant almond shaped eyes narrowed.

Ling Xia suddenly felt his scalp going numb, his breathing becoming a bit difficult. He can’t say for sure, but this villain Yu Zhi Jue could be already very pissed, and simply chose not to reveal it in front of him during these ordinary moments.

He pretended to be calm and continued to speak: “Ah Jue, I’m not saying that I did not like it, but……..”

“So Ling Xia’s very bored?” Yu Zhi Jue sat besides him, and delicately combed his hair, “Forgive my negligence.”

Ling Xia relaxes and smiled: “Rather been staying idle for too long. Ah Jue, I’m thinking for the past few days about looking for Song Xiao Hu to the main continent and meet up with him, after all, he doesn’t know yet the news that I have woken up. I’ll be back soon very quick…….”

Yu Zhi Jue’s finger paused. He said: “The journey is ten thousand Li[1] far, what will you do if you encountered danger?”

-T/N: 1 Li = 500 meters or according to the internet-

Ling Xia was somewhat disappointed, but he knows what Yu Zhi Jue is saying is the truth.

Yu Zhi Jue is a sect master, so it’s only natural that he cannot abandon his duties and accompany him.

Furthermore, it’s very dangerous for Yu Zhi Jue to step in any territories of Righteous Sect with his identity as the Qian Kun Sect Grand Master, and facing those kind of dangers is not what a boss does. And with his current health, defending himself is becoming a real problem once his faced with dangers in this world.

Yu Zhi Jue fixed his lips on Ling Xia’s forehead, and leisurely spoke with his magnetic low voice: “What you have said, I’ll take note of it—so it’s ok if it’s every other day?”

Ling Xia knows that he’s referring to that first topic, and embarrassingly nodded his head. In fact with Yu Zhi Jue’s stamina in doing that repeatedly, just once a week is the most rational, as he might not be able to handle every other day at all. In this matter, how could he not haggle for a lower price?

When evening comes, Yu Zhi Jue really only held him in his embrace, and simply gets up in the next morning. When Ling Xia accidentally touched his bed clothes, he noticed that part was so clammy and sticky, it faintly smelled of fishy odor .

Ling Xia pretended to be natural as he stood up to do his morning routine, ignoring Yu Zhi Jue's hunger for lust and his dangerously dissatisfied darkened expression.

En, I can understand young men's vigorous energy… …

Yu Zhi Jue quickly changes into a set of black clothes and wore a silver mask, Ling Xia changes as well behind his back, in a sneaky way for protection.

He was rather curious so he asked: "Is that your magic beast from then?"

Truthfully speaking, even though the figure of that Two Headed Serpent is powerful and domineering, but looking at those pairs of triangular eyes is somewhat frightening, and is not as cute as Snow Flamma. From that day he last saw it, he never said his goodbye.

"The energy I used now is insufficient to undo its seal." Yu Zhi Jue patiently explained, "But since it's seal is already slack enough, it can transform to half of its true form, but it can only maintain this form for about three hours before it disappears."

Ling Xia was stunned, if that Two Headed Serpent is so much difficult to deal with in just half of it's full strength, how much stronger will it get if its seal is unsealed? He's completely concerned about Snow Flamma, since this serpent is Snow Flammas rival in the novel.

Right, if Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu doesn't fight, then it's going to be fine… …

The Dark Arts Sect doesn't have meetings everyday, and similar tiny matters are conveyed through seal messages. Ling Xia was still curious about the Villain's legions described in the novel, and in the present time,

he haven’t seen yet the Left Elder Blood Demon Chu Yun, the White Loch Guardian Ming Ze, and the Green Underworld Guardian Ke Lan MinErBai.

The Right Elder—is the Jade Cloud Master Mei Ji. There’s also a few more Guardians he had not yet seen. According to the writing of the novel, among those people, Chu Yin and Ming Ze are the most loyal to Yu Zhi Jue. There’s also that Guardian who’s a master of refining demon equipment that he don’t know the name of. The rest of the Villain’s legions have their own agenda’s, and only showing deference on the outside. So in conclusion, he don’t want to get along with anyone aside Ke Lan MinErBai.

There’s only a few people he had seen along the way since Qian Kun Sect is also quite big. Ling Xia followed Yu Zhi Jue to see his usual training area, as well as the official meeting hall after that. Qian Kun Sect has an altar that is set up to receive seal messages from all the Dark Arts Sects in various regions. So if they have an urgent matter to pass on, they could deliver it through seal messages.

Ling Xia heart was stirred. In the novel, Yu Zhi Jue had tamed and trained so many ferocious magic beasts, and also has a prison for torturing Righteous Sect people and so on. He is still wondering if those still exist right now?

When he thinks about it, this kind of things made him want to hide like an ostrich, as this world is the same as that world. So if he can, he won’t allow Yu Zhi Jue to repeat taking that crooked path of becoming a character of extreme tyranny. If Yu Zhi Jue changes for the better, won’t it be possible for the Righteous Sect people to let him off?

Ling Xia was watching Yu Zhi Jue’s back. In this world, this man is the most important to him, and it has been like that for those three to five years. And this man before his eyes, is the same person he always wanted to protect with all his might. And what’s more, this man is now the one he’s most intimate with.

“Tired?” They were in a pavilion when Yu Zhi Jue stopped and turned around, he wasn’t fond of Ling Xia following him from behind, since he could not see his face.

Ling Xia smiled and shakes his head. Yu Zhi Jue already walked on a slow pace, and besides, he is not that frail. He was taking a look at the scenery around them. The Qian Kun Sect old generation have chosen quite an extraordinary place, the scenery in here is different compared to the Qin Palace, it has it's own charm.

Yu Zhi Jue's brows suddenly wrinkled, so Ling Xia knows that someone will come, and hurriedly fixed his clothes and puts on a docile expression.

As expected, it wasn't for long when an extremely fast magic beast pulling a carriage passes nearby. Ling Xia curiously took a peek, and finds out that it was a prisoner carriage. Standing inside is a young woman in a messy appearance. Even if he can't clearly see her looks, he could make out her extremely fair figure.

Ming Ze was riding on a magic beast and is following behind. This has costs him a lot of effort, and has lost a lot of trusted aides just to take this Yu Clan's female head back. He was about to bring her in to the torture chamber and question her.

Ming Ze didn't expect for Yu Zhi Jue to stop by in this area, and was immediately delighted. He ordered that the woman in the cart to be taken in detention first, and he'll follow later on. He walked with quick steps towards Yu Zhi Jue and and saluted him: "Reporting to Grand Master, this subordinate has successfully detained Yu Fei Yan, and have come to report about the mission."

Yu Zhi Jue was somewhat jittery. He said: "En, I know. I'll let you handle this matter, no need to report to me."

"Understood." Ming Ze stood straight, and then discovered that Yu Zhi Jue is secretly hiding something behind him. He slightly felt baffled inside, after all, Yu Zhi Jue never allowed a person to follow him behind in close proximity. But he didn't thought too much about it, and merely respectfully said: "This subordinate shall make sure to handle it properly."

This Yu Fei Yan's feminine physique, refining it into a puppet will result in at least a level eight, so he absolutely must not waste it.

Ming Ze was about to excuse himself, but he was startled. Why is he sensing a trace of a puppet soul prints from what Yu Zhi Jue is hiding behind him? But he can't make sure of it if he can't inspect it carefully. He immediately raised his guard, but seeing Yu Zhi Jue's look, he could only give his salute and withdraw.

Speaking of which, recently it has been really odd. Everybody could notice the changes of the Grand Master. Those expression in his eyebrows could not conceal his happiness, and everyday, he comes and goes frequently lost in thoughts……..

Ming Ze knitted his brows.

Just where did I go wrong?

Yu Zhi Jue did not pay attention on that skeptical look of Ming Ze at all, he's more worried about Ling Xia.

Even though he painstakingly avoided exposing Ling Xia to those matters, but sooner or later he will have to know some of them……..

He did not gave an explanation, only quietly waiting for Ling Xia's reaction.

Ling Xia was also silent. He raised his head after a long while and said:

"Ah Jue, is that Yu Fei Yan the marriage candidate you're talking about the other day?"

No matter what, when it comes to a young lady, he always have a soft spot for them.

Yu Zhi Jue nodded and replied in a serious tone: "You don't need to care about this matter—The Yu Clan had been making a move unhindered for ten years in Dark Arts Sects, it's their plan to arrange the marriage and armed a rebellion, and most of the planning came from that woman, so she is not as pure as you think."

Ling Xia nodded his head. He knows Yu Zhi Jue will not lie to him, but the feeling of gloominess and being powerless in his heart is nevertheless hard to avoid. He is not planning to destroy this world's order, but when it comes to his opinion, he still finds it unacceptable.

Yu Zhi Jue slowly reached his hands out, and took off his silver mask. He took the end of Ling Xia's hair and caress it: "Are you angry?"

"No." Ling Xia lifted his head and gazes back at Yu Zhi Jue as he said, "But can Ah Jue promise me one thing?"

Yu Zhi Jue looks at his clear black eyes. Indeed, Ling Xia has no intention of reproaching him, his heart immediately put at ease. He replied: "Say it."

Ling Xia smiled and said: "No matter what, don't harm Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue. Um, also Snow Flamma, and Ke Lan MinErBai……"

Yu Zhi Jue couldn't help but step forward and kissed him in the corner of his mouth. He said: "I got it. I will not hurt those people you care about, I will not let your heart be broken… … And so Ling Xia, will you promise me one thing?"

"What is it?" Ling Xia somewhat curiously replied.

"Don't leave my side forever." Yu Zhi Jue cornered Ling Xia in a pillar, then kisses him intensely.

Ling Xia giddily thought,

What kind of idiotic request is that? Of course I won't leave him—this time no matter what, I will definitely protect him, even if it's not easy.

Ming Ze was sitting in the torture chamber, that suspicious feeling from before, was a fist size puppet soul refined from magic beasts that he sensed from somewhere near the pavilion. This puppet seems like it isn't making a move, so he could check it out if its within five kilometer of his mirror, thus it was most convenient for him to do so.

He was stupefied on the phantom that was reflected in his mirror, and could not believe it at all.

He was so sure that the Human Panacea died years ago, and the Grand Master standing before everyone over the past years was due to his efforts. Everyone knows this Human Panacea is in a coma, but only he and the Left Elder Chu Yin knows the truth, that it was impossible for him to ever awaken.

But what's going on with that exact carbon copy of the Human Panacea coming out of nowhere? And what's more, the puppet soul I placed was indeed inside that body, and it even had the guts to follow the Grand Master around… …

He smashed the phantom with his hand and the mirror broke into pieces.

Since this would implicate the Grand Master, it's better to find Chu Yin and discuss what should be done.

He suddenly stood up. He took out a whip from thin air, and ruthlessly whips Yu Fei Yan for a couple of times. He coldly said: "Yu Clan's Poison Scripture, will you hand it over or not?"

Yu Fei Yan sneered at him as she spits out blood: "Then you'll give it to the Grand Master, it's useless no matter what methods you used! I curses him from the moment he was born and as long as he lives for abandoning his people!… …Ahh!"

Ming Ze whipped landed on her mouth, that two of her teeth fell out. On Ming Ze's expressionless face, the corner of his mouth slightly raised into a curve: "You are very fearless—Rest assured, I will make you learn something worse than death."

On the other side, by the time Yu Zhi Jue lets go of him, Ling Xia could no longer stand on his feet. His lips were also swollen, and tinted with a rare shade of red. He urgently steadied his footsteps and fixed his hair.

He said: "Can't you wait till we get back?"

Yu Zhi Jue was very satisfied as he took out his silver mask. He was always suspicious that Ling Xia grow up too slow, and his face is too pale as well. He haven't had enough of his fill licking Ling Xia's lips as he said: "Very sweet."

"……" Ling Xia was speechless.

How could this damn brat Yu Zhi Jue's face be so thick?!

Then at that moment, the seal transceiver on Yu Zhi Jue's waist vibrated. He turned it on and read the message, the pupil of his eyes slightly shrank—Song Xiao Hu surprisingly broke into the Dark Arts Sect!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 14

Seeing Yu Zhi Jue's slightly changed expression, Ling Xia instinctively asked: "What's wrong?"

Yu Zhi Jue nonchalantly put away his seal transceiver and replied: "Just something… …"

He hadn't finished talking yet, when a thunder like sound echoed throughout the sky. As it turns out, it was Song Xiao Hu's voice. Ling Xia's ear was buzzing hearing that blunt loud voice: "Talk to me Yu Zhi Jue! Don't you hide from where I can't meet you! I, Song Xiao Hu will definitely charges through the Dark Arts Sect in just a moment! You better wait for me to successful break through the Ten Restrictive Spell!"

The corner of Ling Xia's mouth twitches. It's clear that Song Xiao Hu already broke in. Song Xiao Hu had a junior named Xiao Hong Yu who had a device that can transmit voices from afar, so he must be using this device.

He lowered his hand, and said in a pleasantly surprised tone: "Ah Jue, is Xiao Hu coming?"

Yu Zhi Jue slightly crinkled his brows and nodded. He naturally don't want Ling Xia to know about it.

Song Xiao Hu's goal in coming, he could make a guess out of it. Song Xiao Hu only wanted to persuade him to come back to the Righteous Path with those naive and ridiculous idealism. When he had an encounter with Song Xiao Hu before, both sides suffered from the fight. Just remembering that tenacity of Song Xiao Hu made him scowl. But what's the most important is, his deeds for the past years, he don't want Song Xiao Hu to tell Ling Xia about it from his own mouth.

"Ah Jue, what is the Ten Restrictive Spells?" Ling Xia hurriedly watches towards the distance "What is Xiao Hu's current location?"

Yu Zhi Jue somewhat explained in a gloomy manner. Ling Xia finally realizes something, as he recalled a few plot twists that he had forgotten. Thanks to the melodramatic plot line of the book, the Protagonist had an enthusiastic heart that never gives up on redeeming the Villain, that it's practically described as an emotion that can move the heavens! The junior sisters bubbled up in tears as they watch Yu Zhi Jue cold and ruthlessly abuse him till he's beaten up to a pulp.

For the Protagonist to run after the Villain Lord ten thousand Li far, it is truly a misguided infatuation!

Ling Xia suspects, that this plot twist now is the plot twist the author sets up, in order for the Protagonist to have that feeling of deep attachment towards the Villain to the point that they are never to be apart.

This so called 'Ten Restrictive Spells', is an oval shape tower that was created by the previous generations of Dark Arts Elders. Each level had someone to guard it, and the higher level one go, the more difficult it is to pass through.

If there is person who somewhat beseech the Dark Arts, they can honorably challenge the Ten Restrictive Spells and be hazed[1], as well as be able to succeed ascending to the top of the tower. Once they do, they can, with the help of the ultimate Dark Arts—have a single wish as a reward to request from the Demon King.

Even if that challenger's wish is tricky, such as having the most beautiful woman in the world as their wife, or become the number one master in the world… …Dark Arts will be used to make he's wish to be realized. But of course, no one had ever successfully break through the entire Ten Restrictive Spell—The overwhelmed majority including Song Xiao Hu had struggled to death even if they survive.

In the novel, Song Xiao Hu and his band of junior sisters and brothers had gathered and breaks through till they were filled with stains of blood and tears. Remembering their childhood friendship, Yu Zhi Jue was him unable to kill him in the end. Once Song Xiao Hu entered the eight level, he already uses up all of his energy and could not muster any more strength.

When he collapsed, he clenches his fist and resolutely declared: “I promise that I will absolutely bring you back, Ah Jue!”… …

As Ling Xia recalled up to that point, he suddenly felt his body trembled in cold.

He impatiently said: “Ah Jue, you must bring me there! I want to meet with Xiao Hu.”

Yu Zhi Jue saw him in high spirits, and said in the end: “Ok. But he already entered inside the tower, so you cannot intervene on him undertaking it.”

Ling Xia slightly nodded his head: “En, watching from the side is also fine.”

He knows, that even if Song Xiao didn’t succeeded on breaking through the barrier, but he will get some kind of recognition from the elders of the Dark Arts, then those Dark Arts elders will once again pit Yu Zhi Jue against Song Xiao Hu. Furthermore, the mighty Protagonist will also gain a precious bead and a junior sister along with it.

Sigh… The Protagonist’s halo really makes one envy to death!

Without a doubt, that junior sister—is Ke Lan MinErBai. The likelihood for this Song Xiao Hu to attain them, Ling Xia did not know if he will be able to get both the precious bead and the Dark Arts Master as benefits or not.

Yu Zhi Jue bursts in flame for about an incense stick time, and not for long, a seemingly familiar creature came flying to them from afar. Those bat like pair of wings spreads open, it’s white head dazzling a man’s eyes, it’s wings comparable to those big rare dragons. Ling Xia was astonished, he said: “Isn’t this Chu Yin’s bald eagle?”

He subconsciously touched his throbbing neck, as the experience of his blood being suck in the past left a trace of fear in his heart.

“En……. He raises many of these kind of creatures, and some of them are mounts for a fast travel.” Yu Zhi Jue reaches out his hand and rubs Ling Xia’s neck. It was evident that he also remembered about it, his eyes darkened as he said: “Is it still painful?”

Ling Xia didn’t know whether to cry or laugh: “That was already years ago, how could it still be painful?”

Two people mounted on top of the eagle, with Ling Xia firmly grasping on the rein. Unlike that aggressive bald eagle Chu Yin had ridden years ago, this eagle is simply stable to ride and is docile. It wasn’t for long that they were up in the air, but he certainly had a rough idea on how to maneuver it.

The bald eagle’s speed is extremely fast. Ling Xia inquisitively feels the air meeting him head on, as they sail towards the floating foggy clouds. And not for long, he felt that they were surrounded by misty fogs—as the bald eagle flew amidst the clouds. He carefully took a glimpse down the ground. He thought that a person’s figure is merely small like ant in comparison. Luckily for him, he don’t have the fear of heights.

Yu Zhi Jue saw a cheerful expression on Ling Xia’s face, that he can’t help himself from lightly smiling as well. This bald eagles flying speed is not as good compared to his Two Headed Flying Serpent, but it’s a pity that he could not remove its seal, since each time the serpent transform, its process of transforming eats up a lot of his energy, just like that time he was anxiously looking for Ling Xia.

Right. The two of us will ride that Two headed Serpent, and I can sit behind Ling Xia again…..

Soon, they finally reached their destination. Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue jumps down, and had the numerous cultivators who met them to lead the bald eagle aside. Ling Xia once again wore that silver mask, and use it to hide his appearance.

Yu Zhi Jue coldly asked: “How many people are in there? And at what level are they now?”

The disciple then reverently replied: “Reporting to the Grand Master, a total of five members, three men and two women. They already broke through the fourth level.”

Yu Zhi Jue was somewhat surprised, he didn’t expect that Song Xiao Hu’s speed is this fast!

The first and second level of the tower relied on mechanisms. If the skill of those who came falls too short, then they will not be able to pass through those trap mechanisms. But it not strange at Song Xiao Hu’s level to overcome them. As long as the people who charges in is able to acquire the spell flag at the center, they will able to pass through. But the third level, has a different way to trap people. Song Xiao Hu whose geared for battle is not familiar with it at all, however, as a group of five experts, they surely must have a way to comprehend the spell.

Yu Zhi Jue nodded, and brought Ling Xia along to the back door straight to the top of the tower to watch the fight. From here, Song Xiao Hu can’t see them, but they can watch Song Xiao Hu through a film like projection on the surface of the stone wall.

In this so called Ten Restrictive Spells, only starting from level five and above are those high level Dark Arts Cultivators situated. In other words, those high level Dark Arts Cultivators that had time can come and toy with those reckless fools who charges in till their defeated.

Yu Zhi Jue saw the line up of those Dark Arts Cultivators and it made him knit his brows—These subordinates of his had too much free time! As expected, the work divided among them these days are not that much.

There’s the Left Elder Chu Yin [2], the Right Elder Mei Ji, members of the Six Guardians, The Green Underworld Ke Lan MinErBai and The White Loch Guardian Ming Ze, who also unexpectedly appeared to exchange blows with Song Xiao Hu’s magic double edge sword! On every level, there’s a guarding overseer. And with the use of the projected hologram on the stone wall, they can watch all the fight that is about to go down.

Ling Xia shot a quick glance. He recognizes three of those people, but he also know that the rest of them is bad news, so he can’t stop himself from anxiously standing up: “Is Xiao Hu going to be ok? Aren’t these people too ferocious to deal with?”

Yu Zhi Jue gave him a quick glance, then waved his hand. The hologram on the wall flashes, as if it was a television that changes channels. On the screen was a clear and distinct display of a grown up appearance of Song Xiao Hu. Then he patiently explained the identity of those several people.

The tower doesn’t look that big from the outside, but from the inside, the size of the area was actually magnified by ten times. This kind of space controlling technique, had been set up by the previous generations of Dark Arts Masters.

On the fourth Restrictive Spell level, Ling Xia watches Song Xiao Hu move around vigorously. Those child hands from the past is now surprisingly wielding that double edge sword of his!

But of course, he can’t call him a child anymore, since Song Xiao Hu’s stature is tall and his shoulder is wide. His round face became distinctly sharp, and his grape eyes also changes into a long, narrow, and pointedly slant. That dimple on his wheat skinned face is fairly discernible, but that messy spike of his hair is still the same. He somehow saw that cheerfully bright young man is still the same.

Ling Xia was emotionally moved, then at the same time, was delighted as he saw behind him and those people, was Ah Li who was unexpectedly there too! It seems like Song Xiao Hu found it without a hitch! He truly wishes to pounce on Ah Li, and rub its fur well with his hands. At the back is a junior brother who had a worried smile like he had a constipation. It was Su Mu Zhe who had that loathsome blue hair. Ling Xia didn’t expect that he is among the group since he almost died at the hands of Yu Zhi Jue last time. He even unexpectedly dared to come back this soon. The other junior brother had a red hair and had a look of a smart and stern temperament. He should be the one who gave that loudspeaker device to Song Xiao Hu, and the one with the stiff face, Xiao Hong Yu.

The two junior sisters on the left seems to have the temperament of immortals. The first one is Mu Rong Xue that seemed like she had sprouted from the earth into a blossom in all those years. Ah Li jumped to her shoulder and crouched. The other junior sister is delicately charming and cute, her pair of large eyes was exceptionally bright, yet Ling Xia did not know who she is.

*_Cough_* The Protagonist's harem is too large to the extent that my memory of all the members is fuzzy.

Ling Xia had decided. If Song Xiao takes on both of this junior sisters at the same time, he will disguise himself as a ghost and scare Song Xiao Hu! Hmm.. but in overall, the Protagonist's line up had a heroic atmosphere all over.

Ling Xia can't help himself from thinking about the Villain's Legions. Chu Yin's face had a perverted expression from being excited to kill. Ke Lan MinErBai was carrying her baton on top of her shoulder, eager to have a try fighting them. The demon woman Mei Ji crosses her pair of slender white legs while in the middle of eating grapes. Ming Ze had a gloomy expression on his face as he watches them, thinking about how to make them suffer. Lastly, that old man with white hair Song Zhao Peng, who had a dirty face almost the same as a mad man…

As expected, rather than heroic, their aura was evil.

He can't resist holding on to Yu Zhi Jue's hand as if he was comforting him. Since this troublesome flock was under his command, the Great Villain always comes back every day completely exhausted from work.

Song Xiao Hu and Xiao Hong Yu are sword masters. The two of them attacked together as they break their way in the trials. Song Xiao Hu slashed his sword horizontally, and said with his dashing voice: "Let's begin."

In front of him are sixteen people with swords, their bodies trembling. They suddenly form a similar Qian Kun protective stance on a spell diagram.

Then the girl from behind said in an utterly melodious voice: “You guys take the ones on the side, then two people will charge into the center of the formation—That is the source of the spell.”

Yu Zhi Jue nodded. It seems that this girl figured out the spell’s method.

Song Xiao Hu gripped his sword, his eyes already starting to become clearly acute and focused. He did not looked back, and merely said in a clear voice: “Thanks a lot young lady Shui Ling for the reminders.”

Ling Xia suddenly came into a realization. It turns out, this young lady is Shui Ling, who he had run across to many times by chance in the past. At that time, it was before he was yet to be forced into a punishment by lashing in the Shao Yang Sect. Shui Ling and her older brother Shui Yue had a chat with him many times. In the past, not only Shui Yue invited him to go to the Shui household to exchange techniques in refining equipments, but he also continuously opposes the inevitable unforeseen misfortune(the punishment) after.

He cannot help but be deeply moved. In fact, the total duration of his stay in this world and his encounter with the people in it had not reached a year, but even though the things had remain the same, the people have changed. This time, he must never leave this world again, and he will always be by Ah Jue’s side. As for the other world, there was nothing important there now that he thinks about it.

Song Xiao Hu and Xiao Hong Yu are already starting to break the spell defensive formation.

Xiao Hong Yu is already a master swordsman at a young age. Song Xiao Hu and his sword skills are even on par. With the two of them charging in a joint attack side by side, the both of them were like a shooting star. Song Xiao Hu’s sword-play is beaming with heroism, while Xiao Hong Yu is more of agility. After fighting for half an incense of stick, the chaotic fight was over. Xiao Hong Yu went over to the center of the spell formation, and swung his sword to break the spell diagram!

Ling Xia held his breath as he continued watching, his heart continues to beat in worry. Seeing that Song Xiao Hu didn't sustain injuries, he let's out a sigh of relief and smiled as he spoke: "Ah Jue, it seems that Xiao Hu is very strong now!"

Yu Zhi Jue hummed an unenthusiastic agreement. Ling Xia saw the melancholy on Yu Zhi Jue's face. He was suddenly reminded of the past where the two of them would compete against each other all the time. He can't help but find it ridiculous, since in the past, he was praising this kind of thing, but now, he is adamant about it and will do his utmost best to prevent it from happening.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 15

“They won’t have an easy time after the fifth level.” Yu Zhi Jue continuously watches the hologram on the wall, but in actuality, he don’t know what Ling Xia is thinking about. He said in a quiet voice: “If it was me, it would take not even half the time he spent to climb those four levels. Those people he brought are a burden.”

Ling Xia can’t help but turn to his head beside him and lightly chuckle. This Great Grand Master probably did not realize it, but even though he meant to say those words in collected and humble manner, in reality, he unknowingly implied it in a slight disagreeing meaning.

As Yu Zhi Jue saw him laughing, his face was obviously a bit embarrassed, but he soon returned to his neutral expression.

The Hologram on the stone wall showed that Song Xiao Hu reaches the fifth level without losing a single hair.

The fifth level is guarded by Ke Lan MinErBai. When Ke Lan MinErBai listened to the notification, she knew that blue hair is amongst them, and she immediately rush over without taking a stop to rest. She was seated on a stone chair as she gave a great filler speech[1] and plays around with her baguette size baton, while indifferently sizing up everyone.

She also had a slight impression towards Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue, knowing that they are Ling Xia’s friends. But since Su Mu Zhe is with them, it’s only natural that she won’t let them easily get through.

“Turning off this barrier is extremely simple.” Ke Lan MinErBai swings her baton downwards on her side. She shouted in an ear-piercing voice, “It’s you five versus me alone. As long as you beat me, then you may pass through.”

Song Xiao Hu was just about to move, when Su Mu Zhe held his shoulder still: “Xiao Hu, allow me.”

As Ling Xia listened on his side, the corner of his mouth twitches. It hasn't been that long! and the last time Su Mu Zhe came, he still haven't met with Song Xiao Hu! How could he call Xiao Hu in a first name basis this quick. It's clearly thanks to the protagonist's enormous golden halo.

In the original plot of the protagonist going to battle, because of his stubborn 'no hitting girls', he was beaten up by Ke Lan MinErBai till he turned into a ragged doll. But in the end, Ke Lan MinErBai was moved by that unflinching conviction of his, and finally let him to go up. But not for long after Song Xiao Hu presses on… …Sigh. Now, Su Mu Zhe is intending to carry the protagonist's end[2].

Ke Lan Min ErBai looks forwards on testing this Su Mu Zhe and beating him into submission. She gave Su Mu Zhe a disdainful glance and said: "The junior will lose."

"This junior hasn't used full strength the last time." Su Mu Zhe flashily combed the hair on his forehead back. He spoke with a smile on his face, "Young Lady Ke Lan, If we broke through the top floor of the tower, how about being my wife?"

Ke Lan MinErBai immediately sneered: "Then you can try climbing the top. I won't use poison beasts this time, so if you win with just me just using my baton, I will let you pass."

Su Mu Zhe was eagerly waiting for her to say those words, since if she didn't, he won't even have a small chance of victory. He smiled and said: "Then pardon me." Afterwards he slowly unsheathed his blade, and covered it with the essence of his pure Earth Type Element.

After half an hour had passed, the current stage had been totally reduced to ruins. Su Mu Zhe who had purple bruises all over his face raised his blade forward, and pointed it at Ke Lan MinErBai's neck. He was laughing as he declared: "Young Lady Ke Lan, I won."

His strength bubbled from his heart that yearns to get married, that within a short time, he surpasses the bottleneck of his cultivation and made a breakthrough. He became much more stronger than he was the last time.

Ke Lan MinErBai narrowed her eyes, as the baton in her hand was disarmed by Su Mu Zhe. She snorted loudly and said: “I lost.”

Even though it was that case, she suddenly brutally roundhouse kicked Su Mu Zhe in the crotch. Then took that opportunity to nimbly fly backwards, landed, and sat on top of the stone chair.

Ling Xia watched with a dark look. Judging by the sound of his voice and the way he looks, Su Mu Zhe’s eggs must have cracked.

Su Mu Zhe miserably shrieked as he covered his crotch. It took a long time for to stand crookedly, then he spats out a few grieving words: “If it can’t be use anymore, don’t you blame me later…”

Mu Rong Xue and Shui Ling both blushed upon hearing it, but Ke Lan MinErBai remained poised, not in the least coy. She only disdainfully looked down on Su Mu Zhe while pointing her finger: “You all can go up. But I must warned you, the next level defender is not someone who talks as much as I have.”

Ling Xia hurriedly takes a look on the next level, and his brow suddenly wrinkled—it was the blood demon Chu Yin.

Chu Yin practices all related to blood dark arts, and accomplished it using evil ways. During his battles, he slashes his arms and use his blood as his weapon, but this kind of magic technique of self-harm would take ten to half a month to slowly heal up. In the past, Yu Zhi Jue burned his arm off and it took a very long time to regrow.

It is reasonable to say that, the higher the level, the stronger they get. But since Chu Yin is not prohibited in fighting battles violently, he became more and more fond of doing it that way. He lacked the regard to morality, and sucking blood is his second nature. It’s no doubt that these two young ladies, Mu Rong Xue and Shui Ling are in danger in this level.

Chu Yin’s clothes is that same dazzling red clothes. His eyes are excitedly narrowed, and he licks the corner of his mouth repeatedly in anticipation. He was already itching to suck blood, and he had all these

people to himself. Every person here surely have a captivating tastes of their own.

That bald eagle from the past had already ascended to level eight now. It was crouching beside Chu Yin, and his head plumes that was burned down by Ah Li also grew back. It's eyes was extremely sharp, and when it saw Ah Li on Mu Rong Xue's shoulders, it gave a loud angry cry—Last time because of the Snow Flamma's doing! That it wasn't able to have a mate before! Otherwise, why would it be a bachelor for so long?!

Ah Li jumps down, and its body became larger till it was much bigger than a huge leopard. It's blood red eyes seemed like it was ignited in flames as it stared back at that Bald Eagle and Chu Yin. If not for this red clothed man, Ah Li and Ling Xia would not be separated in sea and get stranded on an uninhabited island for many years. Song Xiao Hu found it two years ago that it only then came back.

These two enemies magic beast glared at each other furiously, and at once, attacked at the same time.

The first one had a favorable high ground to take off, while the other could move in lightning speed, and within that short time, the two sides were equally matched.

Chu Yin hardly paid attention. He only glued his sights to Song Xiao Hu below him and said with a smile: "Oh~~I remember you~~What are you finding the Grand Master for?"

Song Xiao Hu is not the same as before, he's not perturbed by that look attentively watching him. He resolutely and decisively said: "Of course its to bring him back! So how are we gonna pass through this level?"

Chu Yin laughs as he look down, his laugh was extremely jubilant, his eyes exhibiting a gorgeous red color.

This kind of look of not having fear, it made him most excited. This is the man worthy of his preference, and at this moment, he already grew up to be a very delicious delicacy… …

He licked his lips from feeling the thirst and said with a smile: “If you do not die within an hour, then I’ll let you pass~ Oh, I’m saying that to all of you~”

Even though he was watching through a hologram, Ling Xia still trembled all over from that frantic, malicious, excited laugh of his. Chu Yin is a sadist. When Song Xiao Hu and Yu Zhi Jue is still young, Chu Yin had toyed with them without holding back his strength. But now that he’s facing Song Xiao Hu who became dazzling, then the outcome is unclear.

“Don’t worry, they’re not helpless.” Yu Zhi Jue noticed Ling Xia’s lips turning pale from worry, and turned off the hologram on the wall without the slightest hesitation, “You’ve been watching for so long, you need a bit of rest.”

Ling Xia is indeed anxious. He indeed have been standing for hours watching, but isn’t it more tiring for Song Xiao Hu and the others who were fighting for so long? He examined Yu Zhi Jue’s resolute look, and finally gives in and sat down. Actually, this has the same importance as broadcasting the Olympics. Even though later on, the victor would be announced in the news, but it gives a hair raising feeling when watching it with one’s own eyes. But him watching anxiously also won’t do a thing, since he could not rush to Song Xiao Hu and help him in any way at all.

He worriedly said: “I believe in Xiao Hu, but getting injured is surely inevitable… …Do Xiao Hu and the others have to continuously charge through? Can’t they take a moment of break in between?”

“Ok. After an hour, I’ll announce that this shall continue the next morning.” Yu Zhi Jue leisurely walks towards Ling Xia’s side, a deep and serene meaning that Ling Xia knows well clouded his dazzling eyes. “We could do that other thing instead for the meantime.”

“… …”Ling Xia’s heart thudded. He can’t help but raise one of his leg and kicked him, “Yu Zhi Jue, Xiao Hu is in a life or death situation over there! How can you have the mood to do that kind of thing!”

Ling Xia was both furious and abashed, his face flushed bright red.

It’s definitely a lie when he said they’re taking a rest, aren’t they just gonna waste more energy doing that?

Yu Zhi Jue loosened his grip of that leg on his side, and took advantage of the situation to snuggle closer to him: “It’s already the other day, and it’s evening now—we agreed about it before.”

Yu Zhi Jue was annoyed that things got out of his plans, and he waited for so long already, he will not let anything get into the way of doing that.

Ling Xia’s leg was forced to keep his leg on to Yu Zhi Jue’s body to keep his balance in standing. By the time he realized, the other person already stripping his clothes and suddenly breaths out burning hot air heavily—Why is it possible for Yu Zhi Jue to be turned on in this situation? This is not that kind of thing you have to do in accordance with your biological clock, ok?

“Don’t be like this, Ah Jue… …..” Ling Xia was hard-pressed on struggling and pulling his leg back, “I’m not in the mood right now, and this is not the place… ….”

Yu Zhi Jue kept hold of his leg, intentionally rubbing it. His gaze was burning as he said: “We can do it while standing, let’s give it a try.”

“… …Do it on your own!” Ling Xia’s face was quickly tinted with dark red. His mouth was blocked after. Yu Zhi Jue pulled his clothes open and grabbed his sensitive part, then delicately stroke it.

Ling Xia was stupefied, yet his body heats up.

He really intended to make do with standing and do it, with clothes on…..

Ling Xia believed that all of his three views will be ruined.

He closes his eyes and gasps for breath. His back was leaning on an ice cold stone wall, his legs were spread apart and was raised in the air, and

because of extreme feeling of shame, his body was shaking restlessly all over.

“Your middle part is too tense…..” Yu Zhi Jue panted in a low voice. He spreads Ling Xia’s legs wider apart, then inserted the tip bit by bit.

Ling Xia understands that this is inevitable. He sulkily hugged Yu Zhi Jue’s neck tight and chomped on his ear, and in return for his action, the other person attacks him fiercely. When the tip finally hits that sweet spot, Ling Xia could only let go of Yu Zhi Jue’s ear and weakly gasps.

Every time he falls, he had that feeling of weightlessness. And when it penetrated, it was also a bit deeper than usual. Ling Xia’s tears unconsciously drips down, and small moans that he couldn’t keep in came out from his throat: “Wa- wait, I still want to meet… with Xiao Hu… don’t… Ahh!”

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes was burning with purple haze. He discontentedly speeds up, and buried his tip much deeper.

How can Ling Xia still think of other men right now?

He saw Ling Xia’s lips half opened. Ling Xia’s eyes seemed to carry a look of a misty and muddled feeling of bewilderment. And with that, Yu Zhi Jue was perfectly contented as he hugged Ling Xia’s waist and delicately messed him up. He left a red mark on every kisses and nibbles on Ling Xia’s neck.

Ling Xia did not know how long had passed, but he’s legs went completely soft. Then Yu Zhi Jue made Ling Xia straddle him on the stone chair and continued playing with him.

His legs was parted apart on both sides of Yu Zhi Jue’s body. He curled his toes on the surface with difficulty, and felt that their sitting was somehow unstable. He could only hold onto Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder, and be swayed along by Yu Zhi Jue’s movements. Yu Zhi Jue slowly stirred him up, his big movements joining them together. The uncomfortable feeling

from his thrusting started to feel good for Ling Xia, that the feeling from both of his leg was almost numbing.

His muddleheaded thoughts, made Ling Xia's half naked appearance more alluring. Ling Xia pulled Yu Zhi Jue's collar open, revealing his sexy collarbone and a part of his pale and solid pecs. It doesn't matter if its for revenge or not, but Ling Xia wanted to get closer and bite them.

This seducing complexion makes this Lao Zi wants to bite you to death!

Yu Zhi Jue properly positioned Ling Xia's waist for a moment, then he moved wantonly after. Ling Xia's weak hand hanged in empty air, and the scenery before his eyes broke into fragments in every thrusts. He could only shamefully lets out countless helpless melody of pleading, making his intestine turned green.

It was miraculous that the chair surprisingly did not gave out from all that swaying!

Yu Zhi Jue stopped at last. He composedly tidied his disheveled clothes and passes on the order of continuing the match tomorrow.

Ling Xia who had no strength left, was held in Yu Zhi Jue's arms. The flush on his face had not yet receded, and his throat was sore as if he caught a cold.

How can I still have the face to meet with Xiao Hu and Ah Li right now?

He uncomfortable squirmed his lower waist, and what happened next made him feel extremely shameful.

Yu Zhi Jue wiped that traces of unknown liquid that flows down, then tied Ling Xia's sash and fixed his clothes. He asked in a comforting like tone: "Are you feeling unwell? Let's go back and clean you up well."

"… ….You bastard!" Ling Xia gritted his teeth as he fumed with rage, "After this I won't let you do it outside anymore!"

They were doing this uncensored pa pa pa thing while Song Xiao Hu and the others are bravely fighting a bloody match… …As he realizes it, Ling Xia could not raise his head out of disgrace. Really degenerate of himself! It’s as if he’s following the evil path along with the Villain! He grinds his teeth as he glared at Yu Zhi Jue.

In the end, the place was uncomfortable, and Yu Zhi Jue was not completely satisfied. But Ling Xia’s expressions and reactions nevertheless made his mood better.

He likes it when Ling Xia expresses himself this way in front of him that he normally won’t show to others. Ling Xia’s uncaring attitude on how strong his tone of anger towards him, and the way Ling Xia obviously glare at him out of embarrassment makes his heart throb. This makes him earnestly feel, that he has a special place in Ling Xia’s heart.

Yu Zhi Jue once again opened the hologram, Song Xiao Hu and Chu Yin’s battle had already ended.

Ling Xia breathes in air to recover a bit of his stamina, and hastily moved closer to watch. That pervert Chu Yin’s red clothes had been greatly damaged, and his right arm was missing from it’s rightful place. It was evident that he had used his arms again as his weapon, but his face still remained nonchalant, even though under his foot is a pool of burning blood flame.

Fucking hell! All of this madman’s battle is truly too much to take in, since he frequently break his limbs off like a lizard snapping his tail off…..

Song Xiao Hu had similar looking bruises on his body, and each breath he takes was laborious. He was forced to use his Lightning Scythe—in the past, he had that lightning type chain weapon secretly hanging on his neck. Su Mu Zhe was out of luck when his blood was sucked by Chu Yin. The three men was also guarding the two girls behind them, so the battle was exceptionally exhausting.

Chu Yin had no regards whether they’re men or women, so he excitedly attacks with no distinction.

The battle between two magic beast also ended with a determined outcome. That bald eagle landed behind Chu Yin. Its beautiful plumage had been burned off by Ah Li, and it was shivering as if it was a chicken that has completely molted. It was clear that it has lost the battle. Ah Li proudly turned back to it's smaller size figure. Even though it has a numerous bloody scars, Ah Li's expression was still cocky.

Ling Xia breaths a sigh of relief. There were already some people who went up to the tower and announced Yu Zhi Jue's command, saying that the challenge shall continue tomorrow.

Chu Yin gave a sly smile as he said: "En ~~ I am very pleased this time ~ I'll be looking forward for the next time ~ I'll be playing with you more so don't you get killed ~"

Song Xiao Hu's body shuddered in cold, and soon, Chu Yin was out of sight.

That bald eagle was already despairing from the outcome of this major event, his plumage also decreases by a lot. It was crying in tears as it flapped it wings and follow Chu Yin from behind.

Mu Rong Xue and Shui Ling hastily casted healing spells on them. It took them around three hours on all the past levels, and they know that the preceding levels will also increase in difficulty, so they will make use of this moment to regain their strength.

Ling Xia was both glad and rueful as he watches them. Mu Rong Xue's medical techniques had improved in leaps and bounds during the past years. When she placed her hand on top of Song Xiao Hu's injured arm, a faint blue light emerges, and those sinister wounds that can be seen with the naked eyes slowly stopped bleeding and started forming a scab.

He impatiently wanted to go to those people he knew. But if he go now, won't he drag down Song Xiao Hu's morale? Although this novel had a lot of plot twist, them being under hazing is also one of it. Song Xiao Hu clearly have not received the news of his awakening, but that blue haired Su

Mu Zhe was with them, didn't 'you know that male lover?' slip from his mouth? Just thinking about that scene made him have this expression .

Fuck! How can I explain it simply to Song Xiao Hu that this pure blood-thirsty stallion character Yu Zhi Jue and I are having a game of 'La la la catch me if you can' without making him feel deceived?

And say 'Xiao Hu, will you give your blessing to me and Ah Jue?'. I don't know what kind of face he would make…..

Yu Zhi Jue quickly noticed the change in his mood. He said in a low voice: "Do you want to go now?"

Ling Xia hesitatingly replied: "But if I go now, I'll just disturb Xiao Hu and the other's focus on their fight."

The corner of Yu Zhi Jue's mouth suddenly rises up. He walked closer to him and rubs himself against Ling Xia's back, his voice carrying a hard to conceal desire: "Ok, we can also continue what were doing."

"… …" Ling Xia's string of patience finally snapped as he roared, "You be the bottom then we'll continue!"

"Aren't I at the bottom earlier?" The pupil of Yu Zhi Jue's handsome eyes widen, his almond eyes slightly raised, as if he was playing innocent.

"… …." He is too shameless! How can Yu Zhi Jue be so thick-skinned right now?

Ling Xia's face flushed from anger. He enunciated every bit of his next words: "… …..Touch me again and I won't let you do it anymore!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 16

On the next day, Song Xiao Hu and the others faces the White Loch Guardian Ming Ze.

Ling Xia was somewhat worried, because the story line was entirely different. In the original, Ming Ze did not participated in the fight.

In the hologram, Ming Ze maintained his stern and expressionless face. He draws his hands up, his body emitted a strong killing aura. He didn't say any filler words, and only revealed threads of energy in his hands. All of a sudden, around ten puppets appeared, surrounded, and encircled the five of them.

Song Xiao Hu shouted loudly, as he shot a thunder bolts on the two puppet in front of him, toasting and breaking them into pieces. But even though those puppets had only hand and one leg remaining, they can still move as if they were ghosts, and their attacks was getting stronger instead.

Ah Li draws his energy and restored his body to full form. It shot powerful flames to support Song Xiao Hu and his moves, burning up to three to four puppets in the process. Xiao Hong Yu and Su Mu Zhe protected the two girls while deflecting the attacks of the other puppets.

Ming sneered for a moment, then controlled the energy attributes input of each refined puppets. His shook his little finger slightly, and suddenly, a white arm drilled out of the ground. It caught hold of Mu Rong Xue's ankle and drags her down. Mu Rong Xue cried out in fear, so Xiao Hong Yu ran to her and slashed the tip of his sword towards that white arm. But it was too late, and Mu Rong Xue disappeared underground.

"Protect Shui Ling!" Su Mu Zhe summoned his Land Crawling Beast and immediately gave chase.

Shui Ling summoned a flying device and stood on top of it in haste to dodge the puppets' attacks. She shouted: "Xiao Hu, capture the dark puppet

master first!”

Song Xiao Hu suddenly came into a realization, he quickly jumped high to dodge the puppets attacking in front of him, and directly went over to Ming Ze and stab him.

Ming Ze predicted that he will come nearer, so before Song Xiao Hu’s sword landed on him, a Golden Type puppet appeared from behind him and blocked Song Xiao Hu’s blade with its arm that has the same durability as metals.

The profound expression in Ming Ze’s eyes deepened. He extended his right hand with five sharp nails, and sharply pierced through Song Xiao Hu’s abdomen in a fast speed. Even though Song Xiao Hu can conjure a powerful barrier on his body now, but he was still drenched in blood from that attack.

Song Xiao Hu reacted quickly, and sent a flying kick towards Ming Ze’s head. Ming Ze blocked with his hands and was thrown three meters back, then Song Xiao Hu slashes his sword against the arm of the Golden Type Element puppet, but the blade of his sword could not withstand the durability of the puppet and it slightly cracked.

Meanwhile, that Earth Type puppet that grabbed Mu Rong Xue appeared from the underground, and uses its long and sharp glowing blue nails to clasps on Mu Rong Xue’s neck. Ming Ze had a satisfied expression in his eyes as he quietly said: “Stop, all of you. Or else I’ll kill her.”

Su Mu Zhe sustained heavy injuries, and with the incompletely healed injury of the leg of his Land Crawling beast from the last time, in the end, they were a step too slow.

In one moment, everyone stared blankly and stopped. Ling Xia who was steadily watching from the hologram, is now frightened out of his wits and his head dripping with sweat. The speed of the battle was too fast, it was too much for his eyes to take it all in at once, so much so that he wasn’t able to react at all.

Mu Rong Xue was already unconscious, as she was grabbed by Ming Ze like a small chick.

Song Xiao Hu sheathed his sword, and said in a loud and clear voice: “What are you planning? Are you using a defenseless woman, to force us to surrender?”

Ming Ze’s face was cold and gloomy, not in the least paying attention to Song Xiao Hu. He knows that there’s two set of eyes watching behind him, and merely replied as if he wants it to be over: “It’s best for you all to concede defeat and leave, if not, I will strangle her then.”

Mu Rong Xue groaned in pain as she regained consciousness. She said with a pale face: “Don’t worry about me elder brother Song. No matter what happened, all I ask is that the Holy Maiden Peak elders be saved…..”

She wasn’t done speaking yet, when Ming Ze buried his nails deeper on her fragile neck. Ling Xia and Song Xiao Hu both exclaimed at the same time: “Don’t!”

Ling Xia clenched his fist. From Murong Xue’s words, it became clear for him, that Yu Zhi Jue must have taken a hold of the Holy Maiden Peak. In the original plot, this event happened right after Yu Zhi Jue was coronated as the Demon King. Is it because of him that it happened in an earlier time-line?

His mind was thrown into chaos, he can’t absolutely comprehend Yu Zhi Jue’s motives. The Holy Maiden Peak is one of the most renowned and talked about Righteous Sect. Although there’s a lot of corrupted Righteous Sect, and each of them had their own governments that leads to disorder, but Yu Zhi Jue’s position in power is also unstable….

He originally believed that he can prevent a lot of events from happening…..Ling Xia bits his lips.

Yu Zhi Jue merely fixed his gaze at Ling Xia. Seeing Ling Xia’s face paled, he condemned Mu Rong Xue and her words. His eyes suddenly

flashes with killing intent—As expected, I shouldn’t have let these people in!

Ming Ze coldly replied: “Still not conceding?”

His fingernails contained highly poisonous toxins. Mu Rong Xue’s neck that was bleeding already starting to turned purple. Her whole body twitching from pain.

He knows that Song Xiao Hu and the Grand Master are childhood friends, so he naturally won’t allow Song Xiao Hu to stay for long. Yu Zhi Jue is most likely watching, so he won’t be able to kill them for the time being. But, he absolutely won’t allow these people to leave the Dark Arts Sect territory! Any one who will have a dangerous influence on the Grand Master, he will make them all perish!

“The Holy Maiden Peak’s elders will be rescued, ” Song Xiao Hu’s eyes shone brightly, and stared back at Ming Ze without blinking, “and I will also save Miss Mu Rong Xue. I will definitely take back Ah Jue as well!”

He said and slightly bowed, his body faintly glowing with gentle light, then that light turned into a dragon form enveloping his body, bursting into white rays of lights, oppressing any person from making a move.

Ling Xia was amazed. It was obviously one of the most amazing finishing moves of the protagonist—he could already casts the powerful Rising Sun Dragon?!

This is a power that can go against the power of the gods, but it’s weak point is that it can only be used once, and then Song Xiao Hu will fall into coma for several days, therefore it should not be rashly squandered. In the novel, he only uses this power for two to three times.

Witnessing the novel’s Villain’s growth faster than in the original, and now the protagonists as well! It’s a plot twist!

The omnipotent aura pressured Ming Ze that he’s almost unable to breath. Even the other people in the tower could feel the tremor inside the

tower. Song Xiao Hu closes his eyes and entered in zen mode, his white glow illuminated the whole place. The range of his sight reaches far of what he desire, and every movement that entered his vision moves several hundred times slower.

He was determined, that before Ming Ze's nails pierces into Mu Rong Xue, he will take her back!

Yu Zhi Jue's brow tightly creases, he inwardly curses 'not good'. His previous battle with Song Xiao Hu, the other guy didn't possesses this kind of power.

The most important force that supports this tower is the Dark Arts of Restrictive Spells, but as the Restrictive Spells was illuminated by Song Xiao Hu's light, it actually disintegrated in snowflake sizes, and slowly dissipated everywhere. He feared that once the Restrictive Spells was broken, the entire tower would collapse as a result.

If the tower, the Dark Arts Sects most important symbol, collapses due to a few young Righteous Sect cultivators, they will be turned into a laughing stock for sure. There might be even several Dark Art Sects that may use this as an excuse and attack the main sect.

When Song Xiao Hu's luminescence about to reach it maximum capacity, Yu Zhi Jue coldly declared on time: "White Loch Guardian, its your lost. Let them proceed to the next level."

Ming Ze was pressured down by that light, he was unable to make a move at all. Hearing Yu Zhi Jue's command, he did not dare to disobey, and releases his hold on the completely weakened Mu Rong Xue. The blood and chi on his stomach churning.

Song Xiao had just conjure this power, so his control over it was unstable. He reached his hands out on a conditioned reflex and catches Mu Rong Xue, his surging power reaches its peak and suddenly exploded like a nuclear warhead.

If he uses up this power, Song Xia Hu will enter into a coma after. Su Mu Zhe and Xiao Hong Yu steps in front of him and supported him at each of his side. An earthquake happened at the next moment, and the tower is beginning to cave in!

The scene that was played on the hologram suddenly turned static. Ling Xia wobbled unsteadily while standing, so Yu Zhi Jue held his waist, then leads him out of the place. Ling Xia impatiently grabbed his arm and said: “Quick, save Xiao Hu!”

Yu Zhi Jue hesitated for a moment, then he casts a protective barrier. He turned his back on Ling Xia and was about to run towards Song Xia Hu’s location. When all of a sudden, countless big boulders rained down from above, and Ling Xia was submerged into darkness, making him feel rapidly falling down or possibly floating up. He can’t see anything at all, making him feel more restless.

Then suddenly, his surrounding went dead silent, and the shaking of the surroundings abruptly disappeared. Yu Zhi Jue who was embracing Ling Xia tightly stood up in his two feet and stood firmly. He said with his brows knitted: “Something’s wrong.”

Their surroundings was pitched black, but the scenery unexpectedly turned into countless winding and interconnecting rugged hidden paths— This tower surprisingly had a hidden area within the Restrictive Spell.

And so, they tread within those paths. Perhaps Song Xiao, Ming Ze, and the others had also fell inside.

Ling Xia could not see in the darkness, so he took out a small light producing device, and saw the numerous zigzagging pathways around him. It appears that it was some sort of a labyrinth.

He astonishingly said: “What’s going on?”

Yu Zhi Jue seemed to be pondering, his face revealing a slight amuse expression: “I’ve read this myth in one of the Qian Kun Sect books. It says that the tower’s spell is run by a Dark Arts device, however, it has been

searched for ages but it was not found —— so its possible that it had been hidden away within the inner area of the Restrictive Spell. It's no wonder no one could find it! Who would have thought that it would appear once the Restricting spell had been broken down?"

Ling Xia finally came into a realization, his body suddenly turning rigid. He definitely knows what that thing is!

That object is called Mu Xiao. It was a condensed evil spirits of Dark Arts Cultivators that was accumulated for several ten thousand of years. Its power is too enormous and vicious, and it attracts people with greatest desires. After Yu Zhi Jue obtained it, he became more crazy and evil demon. It has become his ultimate weapon on destroying the world later on! It seems that when the tower had accidentally collapsed, this object have also appeared in this world ahead of time!

He nervously grabbed Yu Zhi Jue's arm firmly, and struggled to jump down. No matter what, he will never allow that thing to fall on Yu Zhi Jue's hands.

Yu Zhi Jue noticed his nervousness, and only thought that Ling Xia was worried about Song Xiao Hu and the others. He pulled Ling Xia by the hand and said: "Don't worry, just follow me."

"All right. We don't know where Song Xiao Hu and the others fell down. And they are all injured……" Ling Xia cautiously studied the surrounding of the trails, it appears that they are all identical, with no unusual spot in any of them.

Yu Zhi Jue then felt that there is some kind of power calling out to him within the darkness, luring him to go towards it. He pulled Ling Xia along and went directly to it, his eyes faintly glowing purple.

Ling Xia felt Yu Zhi Jue's body becoming scalding hot, so different from his usual cool temperature. He was somewhat worried: "Ah Jue?"

"I'm all right." Yu Zhi Jue held back the sudden blood thirsty feeling in his heart. His eyes slightly narrowed: "There's something ahead of use, it's

beckoning for me to come.”

He lost track of how long have they been walking, but Ling Xia felt that his breathing became more and more heavier. Yu Zhi Jue remained tight-lipped for quite some time now, while his walking is getting faster and faster. Ling Xia suddenly felt a burst of chilliness from the bottom of his heart.

While he was worrying about asking him, Yu Zhi Jue suddenly stopped. A wall appeared in front of them, and it strongly vibrated—on the surface of the wall appeared a door.

Yu Zhi Jue unconsciously lets go of Ling Xia’s hand, his eyes completely turning purple. He opened the door and directly went inside, and in the room, there’s only a single table. On top of it is seemingly ordinary light lamp.

Ling Xia felt something wasn’t right. He anxiously blocked the path in front of Yu Zhi Jue and said: “Ah Jue, don’t touch it!”

Yu Zhi Jue turned a deaf ear. He immediately avoided him and continued walking forward. He held that light lamp with his right hand and lifted it up. That magical device lit up with a strange purple light, illuminating his exquisite face that seemed incorporeal.

Flood of thoughts bursts like fireworks inside Yu Zhi Jue’s mind. Magnifying it, and pulling out his deepest desire buried within.

His desire to become much more stronger, his desire to control everything… …

His desire to destroy!

Destroy those who sneered at him, and this ugly world that humiliated him!

Destroy those who harmed this man named Ling, destroy those eyesore hedgehog hair and that Snow Flamma…..

Who is this talking in front of him? This person's body is carrying a maddening attractive smell…..

He wanted him so much, he wanted to press this man beneath him, and swallow him in his belly, so that this man's flesh and blood will merge with his…..

Ling Xia alarmingly watched as Yu Zhi Jue slowly come nearer to him with the light lamp in his hand. Yu Zhi Jue's eyes already turned into a dense purple color, penetratingly staring at him with a serpent like gloom and cold greed. It was unusually terrifying.

He can't help but shiver. He hastily moved in front of Yu Zhi Jue, wanting to pry that object from his hand: "Ah Jue, give it to me….."

In the next moment, he was pushed down by Yu Zhi Jue, unable to make a move. The light from that object in his hand disappeared in an instance without a trace.

Yu Zhi Jue looked down on that body beneath him and greedily sniffed the palm of his prey's hands. He said with an intimate and crazy pitch of his voice: "You are mine!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 17

Ling Xia was pushed down on the cold floor, the lamp magic device on Yu Zhi Jue's hand tumbling on the side. Because it lost its source of energy, the light in it was extinguished at once.

The scene before Ling Xia's eyes was abruptly engulfed in darkness, and he closes his eyes out of reflex. Suddenly, he felt a pain from his neck—Yu Zhi Jue had bitten his neck!

The force on his bites was not the usual affectionate way. Yu Zhi Jue sank his lips and teeth frantically on his body, making Ling Xia quivered in pain.

He knows that Yu Zhi Jue most likely was under the influence of that object, so he tried his to best calm Yu Zhi Jue down: "Ah Jue, don't be like this. Quickly give me that thing….."

"So sweet…." Yu Zhi Jue's purple eyes stared in daze, he kept licking the blood that stained Ling Xia's shoulder. He bit down on his neck with great force, and more thick blood that wafts with herbal scent seeps out. He was unsatisfied with the mouthful of blood he gulps down, so he sinks his teeth deeper in that flesh, and bit the delicate skin on his neck until it was badly lacerated.

Ling Xia can't held in his cries, his whole body soaked in cold sweat. He exerted his strength to push Yu Zhi Jue, but his strength is comparable to a mayfly against a tree. And because of that, Yu Zhi Jue clutched both of his hands and pinned it on top of his head.

Yu Zhi Jue noticed the skin of his prey in his grasps shivering. His sights quickly shifted to that trembling pale lips of the other person. He had the impulse, to let it dye in blood……He licked his blood soaked lips and soon began kissing Ling Xia's lips, that it made Ling Xia groan in pain and shrink back, but his hands was fastened firmly on top of his body.

Both his lips and tongue were captured and nipped, his body throbbing in an unbearable stinging pain…..Ling Xia felt ill and pained, and Yu Zhi Jue almost suffocated him from his unstopping kisses. He hardened his heart as he bites down Yu Zhi Jue's tongue, thinking that it would cool his head. But just as he did it, Yu Zhi Jue pinched his jaw firmly, saying 'stop it' in a soft voice. Ling Xia was alarmed to find that he can't move his jaw, making him incapable of swallowing his saliva that overflowed from the corner of his mouth.

It's as if he finally realizes it, he groaned softly later on, as Yu Zhi Jue strikes multiple nerve(acupuncture) points on his body. He felt a sudden pain on his arms and legs at the next moment, then Ling Xia became like a doll, rigidly lying on the ground, completely unable to move.

The prey under his grasp had finally stopped resisting and pushing. Yu Zhi Jue was satisfied as he tear Ling Xia's clothes open, nibbling and biting his body. He left behind his mark on every inch of Ling Xia's skin.

Ling Xia's heart was already panicking to the point of being terrified. He was speechless since he didn't think this would happen. He could only let out several weak sobs like he was a small animal, provoking Yu Zhi Jue's excitement even further.

When Ling Xia felt a fiery hot and hard object on top of his inner leg, his gut twitches and twisted into a ball.

Right now, he can still move his lower waist, so desperately pulled it back. But Yu Zhi Jue quickly lifted both of his powerless legs, and leaned them on both sides of his shoulder, his next goal is self-evident.

Ling Xia stared back in fear to this beast-like man with purple eyes as he lifted his legs in the air. His heart seemed like it will jump out of his chest. Since the day he had been in this strange world, no matter what kind of danger he faces, he never felt this much afraid. But this fact of Yu Zhi Jue hurting him, it made his heart suddenly contract.

His chest undulating rapidly, his stomach twisting in pain. He can already determine what's gonna happen next.

Since its bound to happen, Ling Xia just gave up and closes his eyes. Because of his fear and pain, tears overflowed in the corner of his eyes and wordlessly flows down on his cheeks. Maybe because he lost too much blood, that his body started to feel cold, and his head began spinning.

Yu Zhi Jue was breathing roughly, he was already so hard that he can't held himself back anymore. He was eager to enter, imagining that this body would be so warm, it makes a man intoxicated. How good will it feel if he do it.

But when a tear drops on the ground, the sound it made seemed like it resonated a thousand times louder. His movements became rigid because of it, and Yu Zhi Jue lifted his head in daze. He was met with that translucent sparkling tears.

There was a voice in his mind that seemed like it was saying something to him, and countless scenes flashed in his mind.

This man made him stronger, gave him encouragement, and protected him…..

He likes this man so much, he want to protect him the most, and he will not allow anyone to hurt this person.

Yu Zhi Jue's breathing was rough and course, he desperately scratch the ground to restrained himself, that the stone slab was left with a gaping hole. The purple light in his eyes slowly disappearing, and was finally restored to its clear and bright state.

Yu Zhi Jue's pupil shrank, he could not believe what he was seeing. He gently puts Ling Xia's legs down, and thought of removing the strain on his nerve points. However, Ling Xia's body trembled more violently.

He thought process stopped. Yu Zhi Jue silently released the strain on the nerve points on Ling Xia's legs and arms, then carefully relocated Ling Xia's jaw.

Ling Xia's body was full of bite injuries, but the wounds on his necks was the most terrifying, and the floor was dyed with bloodstains. Yu Zhi Jue did not think too much, he just apologetically lick those cuts softly. He noticed that, because of his movement, Ling Xia's shoulder shivered tremendously, and could only think of resisting and retreating back.

"Ling, don't be afraid….." Yu Zhi Jue did his best to comfortingly stroke Ling Xia's convulsing body, who almost forgot to breath from nervousness.

Hearing his familiar voice, Ling Xia slowly opened his eyes. His eyes that was somewhat soulless finally regained its focus. He gazes steadily at that troubled and guilty phoenix eyes in front of him. What happened earlier seemed like it was just an illusion.

But when he caught sight of those purple and bloody wounds on his body, it proved that earlier was the reality. He was so angry he ruthlessly bit Yu Zhi Jue's arm—Fuck! Yu Zhi Jue was just eager the last time, but he was definitely frighteningly forceful this time.

However, his mouth didn't have strength, and the muscles up to his ears was sore. He assumed that it must be the after effect of his jaw just being fixed. He breaths in a mouthful of air, his tension finally eases. He was both alarmed and afraid as he spat a cuss: "You bastard!"

He thought that he was gonna die, that he won't survive from being fucked! If he died in this way this time, he felt that he won't have the face to go back again!

Yu Zhi Jue hugged him tightly, his heart throbbing in a fast rate. Fortunately he didn't went out of control……He vowed that he won't let this person get harmed—even by him.

He softly kisses away the lingering fear on Ling Xia's forehead and nose, and uses the most gentle strength on his lips. Even though he did it this way, Ling Xia still grimaced in pain.

Yu Zhi Jue was full of regrets as he took out the medicine and bandages. He carefully wiped the blood on Ling Xia's upper body for him, then

cleaned the wounds. After he was done, he took out a set of clean clothes from his pouch and dresses Ling Xia in it.

Ling Xia lied weakly on Yu Zhi Jue's chest. Perhaps too much scare and blood loss, causes his stomach to cramp in pain, and lose the feeling in all of his powerless limbs.

He was still concerned about that damn object, so he weakly pulled Yu Zhi Jue's cuff: "Ah Jue, about that magic device? That thing is too strange, you must not take it."

Yu Zhi Jue kissed his forehead and said: "Just take a good rest, and don't worry about it. I know how to handle that object."

Due to Yu Zhi Jue's gentle and soft tone, Ling Xia weakly uttered 'en', and his taught nerves relaxes at once. He soon felt tired and fell into sleep.

Seeing Ling Xia sleeping in his arms, Yu Zhi Jue's appearance gradually turned grave and stern.

A flash of purple light gleamed in his eyes, and the corner of his mouth emerges into a disdainful smile.

Because of this Mu Xiao, he was forced to go out of control?

In that case, he'll have to see, whether he will overpower it, or this Mu Xiao will overpower him.

As soon as Ling Xia woke up, he found himself lying on Yu Zhi Jue's arms. Yu Zhi Jue maintained his sitting position all this time as he kept him in his embrace. It seems that he didn't had a change anymore.

He hurriedly struggled to get up, even though he hadn't regain his balance, but he's not that injured anymore: "Ah Jue, how long had passed?"

Yu Zhi Jue quickly stopped him, and carried him up. He said: "It's been two hours. I'll carry you while we look for them."

Before them was still the same countless lanes. Ling Xia wanted to jump down and walked on his own, since he cannot let Xiao Hu see him being carried by Yu Zhi Jue, can he?

Yu Zhi Jue quickly stopped him and said: “They’re already nearby.”

Indeed, not for so long, arguing voices is heard ahead of them. Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes darkened—Ming Ze are having a standoff against Xiao Hong Yu and Su Mu Zhe, while the Snow Flamma was guarding the unconscious Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue together with Shui Ling.

“White Loch Guardian, you already conceded, why are you still fighting?” Yu Zhi Jue’s voice was cold and commanding, with an apparent trace of cold killing intent.

Ming Ze stared distractedly then he puts away his puppet. He kneels and said: “This subordinate have committed a violation. I will go to the disciplinary chamber and wait for the punishment.”

When the other people saw Yu Zhi Jue who suddenly appeared, they were all stunned.

Yu Zhi Jue’s sight sweep indifferently from Song Xiao Hu to the others. Ling Xia struggled from his arms and jumped down. Ah Li’s clear eyes caught sight of him, its amber eyes widening from disbelief. Afterwards, it jumped over to him with its hind legs while crying. Ling Xia ran into it and stagger as he caught it, he also felt endless joy. He enthusiastically rubs its head and said: “Clever Ah Li, did you miss me?”

Ah Li’s tears streamed down like he was a child that suffered from being wronged, and Ling Xia comfortingly stroked the wounds on its body. He can’t resist kissing Ah Li’s little furry head a couple of times.

While fighting alongside the protagonist, Ah Li became much more stronger, but it had been injured countless times.

Su Mu Zhe and the rest were stupefied. Apart from Song Xiao Hu, Ah Li rarely show affection towards other people. It was usually arrogant and

refused to acknowledge others. Su Mu Zhe eyeballs almost popped ot, to find that Yu Zhi Jue was here as well. He did not dare to say a word.

Ling Xia was not properly acquainted with the other three, so he nodded at them and simply explained: “I’m Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue’s friend. Ah Jue, let’s lead them out of here ok?”

Yu Zhi Jue coldly stared at Ah Li. He was pulling Ling Xia as always as the two of them walked ahead. Ah Li skillfully jumped on top of Ling Xia’s shoulder, and intimately rubbed its head on him.

Ming Ze followed closely behind them, watching Ling Xia with an increasingly cold gaze. He didn’t expect, that Ling Xia had relations with these group of people.

Su Mu Zhe and the others looked at each other in dismay. They carried Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xia and followed suit.

Yu Zhi Jue uses his spiritual energy sense and directly lead the way in front. After half an hour of walking, they finally walked out of the labyrinth, and was greeted with bright light that Ling Xia almost could not open his eyes.

He wanted to ask a question, so hesitatingly said: “Ah Jue, since the tower collapsed, then the competition…..”

Yu Zhi Jue answered: “They only reached the sixth level, so they did not succeed.”

When Su Mu Zhe heard it, he was angry and refused to accept the outcome that he wanted to sarcastically talked back at Yu Zhi Jue, but his heart succumbed to fear in the end, and only followed distantly from behind.

Ling Xia slightly smiled. Once Song Xiao Hu had woken up, for sure he won’t accept that. Perhaps he’ll also demand a bout with Yu Zhi Jue.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly commanded some people to make arrangements for Song Xiao Hu and the others. Ling Xia knows that Song Xiao Hu will not wake up withing ten days, so he is not that worried. The rest of them are also injured, and Mu Rong Xue was severely poisoned.

He secretly wanted to feed Mu Rong Xue his blood, but Yu Zhi Jue discovered him. That pair of beautiful phoenix eyes quickly freezes his attempt, so Ling Xia had no choice but to abandon that idea. He was also aware, that he had injuries himself, and provoking Yu Zhi Jue is not a minor thing as well.

Him and Ah Li had been separated for so long, he was reluctant to part with it when they got back to the Qin Palace. That evening, Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue slept in a separated bed.

Due to the incident of the tower collapsing, Yu Zhi Jue became more busy. Everyday, he would kiss Ling Xia in the forehead then depart. He didn’t have enough time to eat vinegar due to Ah Li.

That act of his is not of the norm, so Ling Xia found it exceptionally embarrassing, when Ah Li would watched inquisitively on the side with its big amber eyes, its furry ear twitching.

Although the wounds on his body is an appalling sight, but those were only bruises. After only a couple of days of rest, he was practically well. Ling Xia did not have anything to do, so he visited Song Xiao Hu and Mu Rong Xue everyday. And because of that, him and the members of Righteous Sect got to know each other.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 18

The protagonist's squad member Su Mu Zhe had a poisonous tongue as always, Ling Xia was not interested in paying attention to him. Xiao Hong Yu's face was emotionless, his heart cold and stern, so he keenly chose to avoid him. Song Xiao Hu was in a coma, and Mu Rong Xue's injuries are being taken care of. The last one he can have a chat with is Shui Ling who changed quite a lot.

It's just that when they had a talk, Ling Xia finds Shui Ling bearing the same as those sister-in-laws. She was asking about Yu Zhi Jue's various matters shrewdly, her approached towards him was filled with vigilance. Ling Xia only smiled and digresses, after all, they are also quite loyal to Song Xiao Hu like he is to Yu Zhi Jue.

But based from his observation, Song Xiao Hu's harem is still empty, he surprisingly don't even have a single junior sister. That's so unnatural!

Song Xiao Hu finally regained consciousness. When he saw Ling Xia, his eyeballs did not budge at all.

Ling Xia simply smiled in delight as he stared back at him: "Xiao Hu, long time no see."

Song Xiao Hu's eyes widen as he stared, his lips trembling. Ling Xia remembered when he transmigrated for the second time, Song Xiao Hu almost but did not wail on him. The protagonist this time tried his best to hold back from crying as always. He did not shed tears, but his eyes reddened in a second.

Ling Xia can't help but rub his hedgehog hair like he used to. He was more emotional when he met his favorite Yu Zhi Jue again, and he always feel that Yu Zhi Jue needed more of his attention than Song Xiao Hu. Since, the more the protagonist go against the heaven, the more his golden finger is activated. Essentially, he's just a pure hot-blooded big boy.

They are childhood comrades who walked on different paths. And he's a cannon fodder who frequently being killed. So, he's a heavy liability towards the protagonist whose heart possesses strong sense of responsibility.

Song Xiao Hu stiffly pulled his hand: "Big Brother Ling, how is it you're here? Ah Jue he…..I'm sorry, I didn't know what to do during these past years. I looked for Ah Jue afterwards, and asked him where you are. But he only said that you died, and he will take revenge for your death, I was confused."

He raises his head and stared at Ling Xia's slim shoulders and cheeks with his black clear eyes, his heart feeling more guilty.

He had a lot of things he don't know about Ling Xia and Yu Zhi Jue, so he was completely helpless.

Ling Xia slightly smiled and said: "I'm all right, just a bit injured. I already had enough time to recover my health. How about you, how are your condition?"

Under Ling Xia's attentive gaze, Song Xiao Hu looked back at him with respect and fondness, he started to talk nonstop. The protagonist's experiences is the same with what Ling Xia expected, cultivation, adventure, and getting stronger. Aside from making a lot of good friends, he had also found unreasonable but strong adversaries, as well as stories of his parents.

After Song Xia Hu was done telling his story, he hesitatingly asked: "Big brother Ling, will you be staying with Ah Jue at the Dark Arts Sect? Won't you convince him to leave here with you and go back with me? Because of him, master was infuriated and was sick for so long."

Ling Xia was silent for a moment then said: "Ah Jue can't go back, Xiao Hu. And besides, he doesn't wish to do that. If Ah Jue go back now, will the Righteous Sect people let him off?"

Song Xiao Hu replied without the slightest hesitation: “I will definitely stand by Ah Jue’s side! So I will properly explain it to them, that Ah Jue is not to blame in what happened in the past! How can Ah Jue’s father’s deeds be regarded as his own doing?”

Ling Xia laughed amusingly at his resolute determination. He is truly a pure protagonist……Ling Xia’s brows softened as he replied: “Ah Jue won’t be in harms way if he stays here. And he govern those people of Dark Arts Sect very well.”

Song Xiao Hu stared blankly. He just thought of bringing Yu Zhi Jue back, he never have thought about those. He hesitatingly asked: “Then will big brother Ling stay here with Ah Jue?”

Ling Xia smiled: “That’s right. Ah Li will be with Xiao Hu, and I will be with Ah Jue.”

As he said that, he was reminded of his relationship with Yu Zhi Jue. He didn’t know how to speak about it for a moment, since he don’t want to explain this matter and upset this straight protagonist…..

Actually, Song Xiao Hu suddenly remembered something. He curiously asked: “Previously, Junior Brother Su said that he met Ah Jue’s male lover at his Qin Palace…..is that……”

Su Mu Zhe and that trashy loose mouth of his! He’s really a bad influence to the protagonist!

Ling Xia felt that the muscles on his face must have turn rigid: “There’s no such thing, it’s just a misunderstanding. Right, does Xiao Hu have someone you like?”

Ah Li curled in a ball beside them and slept soundly. As Ling Xia uttered his words, his conscience was very guilty.

When he changes the topic, Song Xiao Hu was slightly embarrassed as he anxiously explained: “I don’t. I wanted to become an amazing martial artist, so how can I have the time to make and raise children?”

Ling Xia breathes in relief. He was really afraid that Song Xiao Hu had wronged Mu Rong Xue. He smiled and said: “Having a wife is good, but Xiao Hu must look for a girl that will suit you, and was raised in a great family. So how is it going with Mu Rong Xue and Shui Ling?”

Song Xiao Hu didn’t reply to what Ling Xia is implying, but his face turned red: “Shui Ling was looking for his brother Shui Yue. Mu Rong Xue is seeking Ah Jue to request to him to release the all the Holy Maiden Peak elders —— Half a year ago, Ah Jue executed his plan on capturing their four guardians.

“Shui Yue? Holy Maiden Peak’s four guardians are all here?” Ling Xia was somehow astonished. He had a friendly impression on that gentle and humble young man in the past. And he didn’t expect that those four strong and extreme women would fall into Yu Zhi Jue’s hands.

Song Xiao Hu nodded his head. Shui Yue is a renown young genius equipment refiner in the main land. And because he had refined a forbidden equipment, he was banished from the clan. There was a rumor that he fled into the Dark Arts Sect, but up until now, there wasn’t anyone who knows his whereabouts. Shui Ling had come here for the purpose of finding her older brother.

Ling Xia fell into a contemplation, quietly sorting out those information. Shui Yue fled into the Dark Arts Sect——genius equipment refiner——forbidden technique…..

His eyes suddenly flashes. Fuck! could it be that Shui Yue is that Black Flame Guardian[1] with unknown origins? Won’t he be responsible for helping Yu Zhi Jue create and refine the ultimate magic treasure later on? He was so sure of how crazy Yu Zhi Jue’s subordinates loyalties to him. But they all strive to be the one to lead Yu Zhi Jue to the path of destruction! So as long as these people are by at Yu Zhi Jue’s side, their influences are like a time bomb!

“Big brother Ling, you should convince Ah Jue to let go of the Holy Maiden Peak elders.” Song Xiao Hu said with concern: “I don’t want him to become much worse.”

Ling Xia slowly nodded.

Afterwards, Song Xiao Hu clenches his fist and declared: “I know that Righteous Sect is also a place with injustices, with unfair governance. But I will definitely become much stronger and change it!”

His eyes gazes with dazzling determination, nevertheless made one involuntarily believe in him, such is the strength of the protagonist.

Ling Xia can’t help but smile, he is the protagonist that is capable of saving the world. While he’s here, he will never allow the two of them to become true old enemies.

When Ling Xia got back, he had a lot on his mind. He left Ah Li behind for Song Xiao Hu.

He had a lot of questions about the internal politics of Yu Zhi Jue’s sect before, but firstly, his health was in poor condition, secondly, Yu Zhi Jue did not want him to know and be troubled. And when the two of them see each other, he didn’t get any chance at all.

The holy maiden peak is a delicate matter to Yu Zhi Jue. Due to Yu Zhi Jue’s childhood experience, and also in the past few years, it’ll be a wonder if Yu Zhi Jue didn’t hated them when his old and recent hatred accumulated. But no matter which side he consider, he wanted to convince Yu Zhi Jue to let go of them.

For the sake of Mu Rong Xue, and for the sake of his Ah Jue, he don’t want to let Yu Zhi Jue’s actions incite a conflict between the Dark Arts Sect and the Righteous Sect.

Midnight came when Yu Zhi Jue just arrived back at the Qin Palace. Ling Xia waited for him all that time in his study. He usually didn’t wait for him around this hour, so Yu Zhi Ju is most likely especially tired at this time.

Yu Zhi Jue saw that he was not asleep, he was a bit befuddled. Ling Xia hastily put down the book and smiles at him.

Ling Xia went straight to the point and asked about the Holy Maiden Peak matter, Yu Zhi Jue's expression immediately changed, his eyes flashes with tyranny. "Ling, there's no need for you to care about these matters!"

He very seldom uses this intimidating and angry tone in his words, so Ling Xia can't help but be frightened.

"Anyway, don't you ever meet with those people." Yu Zhi Jue combed his hair back, his eyes narrowing, "I'll make them leave as soon as possible."

Ling Xia was stunned, he wasn't sure if it was just his imagination, since he always felt that Yu Zhi Jue was very irritable this past few days, for Yu Zhi Jue to reveal in front of him his usually oppressive might that make people feel completely cower. Ling Xia suddenly remembered something, so he cautiously asked: "Ah Je, about that magic device from the last time… …"

Yu Zhi Jue walked over to him and directly carried him to the bed, quickly pushing him down: "There's no need for you to worry about it. The most important thing right now is—for us to do what we haven't done for days."

Ling Xia was about to say something else, but Yu Zhi Jue quickly blocked his lips with his, nibbling it while taking off his clothes and teasing him with his hands. As he did that, Ling Xia's mind became muddled, and Yu Zhi Jue unsatisfactorily did him afterwards.

He woke up the next day to see an empty Qin Palace. Ling Xia rubbed his sore waist, wanting to cuss. Yu Zhi Jue's behavior is strange recently, but he can't even raise that issue! It must have something to do with that damn thing!

Could it be that Yu Zhi Jue was not able to regain his self control since then…..

Will Yu Zhi Jue drive out Song Xiao Hu, Ah Li, and the others?

He was pissed at the same time worried. Maybe Yu Zhi Jue was afraid that he's angry, so he went as far as to send a master refiner to teach him with refining equipment.

Ling Xia sizes up the master refiner, who was wearing a golden mask. He could determine from the sound of the man's voice that he was around 20's. His manners and bearings was very courteous, explaining things to him in a very meticulous and patient way. His way of speaking is not sarcastic at all, he even properly introduced himself.

His heart was moved, he tried calling out to him: "Shui Yue?" It's been years since Him and Shui Yue had met each other, Ling Xia had nearly forgotten his voice and looks. Furthermore, the personality of the master refiner in front of him is more of gloomy and quiet than what he remembered of Shui Yue.

That person didn't even paused, and was not affected by his inquiry. He only ignored him deliberately and continued what he was doing, like he was a robot.

Ling Xia was distraught with stress, he didn't listen at all. Nevertheless, that master refiner talked in an unchanging tone from the beginning to the end, that it made Ling Xia embarrassed on the contrary.

He and that master refiner was in the middle of studying some complicated magic devices, he slowly starting to develop admiration to this master refiner. This master refiner's techniques in refining equipment were weird and fickle, in short, its not one of those conventional methods, so it might not be an acceptable practice in the eyes of the Righteous Sect people.

The other person explained for another half an hour, and soon bowed to him then left. Ling Xia was once again left alone.

He pondered over the past few days, from the time they got out of the maze, to Yu Zhi Jue's same old busy schedule. And as always, he never tell anything to him, exactly the same as before… …

But no matter what, he will urge Yu Zhi Jue to destroy that magic device!

Once again, Yu Zhi Jue arrived the other day. Ling Xia hastily went to him and said: “Ah Jue, we need to have a proper talk. You have to take out that magic device from before!”

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes flashes a purple light, as he heedlessly pushed Ling Xia down on the bed. He fished his hand inside Ling Xia’s clothes: “Ling misses me?…..”

Fuck you! Nowadays you only meet this Lao Zi for one thing, and that’s for sex!

Ling Xia was genuinely in panic, he swung his palm in desperation, and unexpectedly hitting Yu Zhi Jue in the face, creating a crisp slapping sound.

Yu Zhi Jue immediately stopped moving, Ling Xia’s breathing was fast. He disturbingly looked at his own hand as he said: “I’m sorry Ah Jue…..I didn’t mean to.”

His heart thudding loudly, as he felt great remorse. How can he hit Yu Zhi Jue’s face?

The weight in his body was lifted, as Yu Zhi Jue walks out without even fixing his disheveled purple clothes. Ling Xia stared blankly, then hastily ran after him: “Ah Jue, don’t go!”

Yu Zhi Jue’s figure quickly disappeared into the night.

Ling Xia frustratingly slammed his palm on the door, a never before feeling of helplessness rose from the bottom of his heart. His stomach once again constricted tightly.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 19

It has been two days since the last time Yu Zhi Jue had shown his face.

Ling Xia was restricted within the confine of the Qin Palace, that the time drags slowly for him.

He don’t know whether Song Xiao Hu and the others had been already sent off…..

He often finds himself staring at his palm, thus reminding him of his regret and remorse, making his palm throb with pain. If only he can turn back time, he would never swung his palm… ….

That master refiner always come on schedule everyday. Ling Xia recalled something written in the book, and he immediately lightened up.

Even though Yu Zhi Jue cast a imprisoning spell that disallow him to go out, but there’s a magic device that can counter it! It’s just that he had never refined that kind of high magic level device before, and the materials to make it is insufficient. Furthermore, his spiritual energy is also inadequate.

Ling Xia faces the master refiner and asks, he requested for exchange on some of the materials and inquired for methods on how to conserve more spiritual energy. The mask man cast his gaze on him quietly with a studying look, making Ling Xia nervous under his watchful eye. It was beyond his expectation, but the other person actually explained to him in full detail.

As soon as the master refiner leaves, Ling Xia immediately started on refining without wasting a single second.

He was experimenting for a good few hours until he finally arrived to a result. He carried the sect master jade signet Yu Zhi Jue gave him, then jumped out of the window.

It was still late at night outside. Ling Xia wore a magic device that would conceal his presence and smell as he frantically ran on the road to escape. He was planning to find Song Xiao Hu to see if they have left yet or not.

Maybe Yu Zhi Jue could not withstand that dark magic device's influence, but the pure fire energy of the great protagonist won't be absolutely affected by it.

He sneaked on the courtyard outside the residence where Song Xiao Hu and the others stayed. He cautiously observed the surrounding for a moment then got disappointed. The secret guards in charge of guarding that place was nowhere to be seen, and the place was completely deserted. It was clear that the people there for the past few days was no longer there.

What should I do now?

Ling Xia bit his lower lip tightly, he was feeling ceaseless anxiety in his heart. At this moment, he unexpectedly don't have any person to consult with, and he don't know where Yu Zhi Jue is. The longer that object be by Yu Zhi Jue's side, the more it will became dangerous.

He decided to take the risk and go to the discussion hall to try his luck, perhaps Yu Zhi Jue is there. He had that jade signet, so the guards there won't block him.

Ling Xia was thinking while he's walking, but suddenly, there's a sudden attack of sharp pain in his stomach. The pain causes him to involuntarily kneel on the ground, his hand clawing on the floor in a contorted way, and made him almost unable to breath.

He vaguely felt that it seemed like someone was behind him, that person turned out to be someone he don't recognize.

As soon as Ling Xia woke up, the pain in his stomach already subsided. What greeted his eyes is a completely unfamiliar arched roof made out of stone. He uses his hand as a support to stand up and looked around in daze. There's a sudden skip in his heart.

Around him are densely packed tower filled with human puppets! Their cheeks had those pale complexion similar to those Chinese zombies. They had those human like skin that seemed to had come to life. There were also all ages of men and women there, their lifeless look all pointed towards his direction. It was as if it was a scene from a ghost movie, that all of Ling Xia's hair in his body rises up.

There seemed to have a sound of movement on his left, so he turned his stiff necked over there. His eyes immediately widened, Ming Ze was standing there making puppets!

Apparently, Ming Ze paid no heed that he had awaken, he merely focus all his concentration on those tools he's fiddling on a naked body. The appearance of that body was of a woman. His treatment of it was like of a lover. He delicately draw her eyebrows on top of her eyes, and attaches metal strings on her flesh. He remodeled all of her limbs, and places her inside the nearby corpse refining stove two meters high in preparation of refining her.

Ling Xia watches while trembling. He unconsciously wanted to escape here, but his shoulder was held back by a puppet. The puppet emitted a cold temperature like a dead person from within its clothes, that it made him shivered in cold.

He asked stiffly: "White Loch Guardian, what is the meaning of this?"

Ming Ze lazily turned his head to collide with his gaze, there's no change in his expressionless face. He pointed his finger at the body inside the stove and introduces it as if it was a work of art: "This is the supposedly rebel woman leader of the Yu Clan. She had a rare pure yin energy in her body, so she can be turned into a level eight or higher puppet. I believe, that even though your body's condition had been greatly weakened, it's a body of a human panacea, so it can be turned into atleast a level seven puppet?"

Ling Xia was absolutely horrified, what is he implying?

Ming Ze slowly walked over, then raises his little finger. Ling Xia was alarmed to find, his own legs unexpectedly moved against his will as he

walked towards him!

Ming Ze clutches his hand on Ling Xia's neck, his sharp fingernails lightly cutting in his neck, that several drops of warm blood immediately drips down.

He dipped his finger deeper, and was ascertained that the temperature was the same as a living person. He's voice turned cold as he said: "There is a myth of a lost forbidden technique, that can transplant a living soul into another body—but you made an error in your plans, you possess this body that already died in the past, so you can't deceive me. Tell me, from which sect did you come from? What purpose do you have towards the Grand Master?"

What? Ling Xia was dumbstruck, what is he implying?

Ming Ze still believed that he was acting dumb, so he slowly loosened his hand, the corner of his mouth turned into an upward curve: "I have placed a puppet soul inside this dead body, so I can control your movement in any way I want, just like this….."

He lightly moved his finger as he spoke, and Ling Xia raises his right hand high and slaps his own cheek, creating a crisp 'pop' sound, and the corner of his mouth cracked.

Ling Xia was dizzy for a moment and his eyes blurred. He tried his best to calm himself.

What did Ming Ze said just now?

He steadily gazes at Ming Ze and said: "You're suspecting that I'm a fake? Are you saying the Ah Jue didn't figure me out?"

Ming Ze replied with a cold tone: "Since you have possessed that body, its possible that you inherited the memories with it, thus you can keep the Grand Master in the dark. However you can't fool me—a dead person can never be revived. So in the end, from what sect did you come from? If you don't tell me then I'll kill you!"

Ling Xia was appalled to find himself involuntarily pulling a dagger with his right hand, moreover, it was directly pointed at the center of his left hand, the dagger slowly piercing through.

His palm was quivering from pain, but his right hand was unflinchingly continues to push forward. When the dagger finally pierces through his palm, his right hand suddenly pulled it out.

His forehead was dripping with sweat, his eyes streaming with tears. The pain it caused almost made him unable to open his eyes. Ling Xia bit his pale lips with force, his thin and weak chest vigorously undulating.

Ming Ze carelessly controlled him to kneel down, he coldy said: “The puppet soul had already corrupted the body’s heart, and this possessed body won’t last long. I guess, if it expired, your soul won’t have anywhere to go back and would probably fly away and scatter.”

Ling Xia’s eyes that was clouded with pain regained its focus because of his words. What is Ming Ze saying? Those times where he had a frequent sever stomach pain, was the cause of it the puppet’s soul corruption? He must meet with Ah Jue as soon as possible….

He raises his head and steadily stared back at Ming Ze: “Then you should be aware, that this possessed body is important to your Grand Master. If I didn’t returned on time, then what do you think he would do?”

Ming Ze coldly sneered, and stomped on his injured hand and crushes it several times. Ling Xia silently screamed in pain, I’ll send him back to his eighteen generation ancestor if I could! Let him meet his grandpa!

“There’s a controlling string attached to you just now, so I’ll know if you leave the Qin Palace again.” The corner of Ming Ze’s mouth curved into a grotesque smile, “It’s natural that I don’t want the Grand Master to be heart-broken, so your intention of secretly running away, I won’t probe about it for the time being. I’ll have you stay there for me without making a move. If I found the you made any move again, I’ll let you taste a feeling far worse than death!”

His eyes slightly narrowed. Currently, the Grand Master went into a close door cultivation. And with the use of the sacred magic treasure, he can advance to his next level. It was planned in advance—that the seal of the Two Headed Serpent's seal will be undone for the Dark Arts Sect coronation in half a month, so nothing should happen here that should affect that.

Regardless of the identity of the man who possessed the body, he'll investigate it after the ceremony. In any case, this man was already under his control, so he can't do anything strange—with the condition of his body, he guesses the body won't hold out for half a month.

Once the Grand Master absorbed the sacred treasure's power, he won't be the same as his father from the past. No insignificant emotions will hinder him, and Ming Ze's grand plan for him that was neglected will finally come into fruition! And when that time comes, he will naturally not obsessed with this trifle body!

The corner of Ming Ze's mouth turned into a complacent malicious smile.

Ling Xia was taken back by Ming Ze's men in the Qin Palace. His whole body was soaked in sweat like a fish that got out of the barrel. His clothes was also unbearably dirty, and the jade signet that Yu Zhi Jue gave him was confiscated by Ming Ze.

In the end, he don't know what sort of thing is that 'controlling string'. He simply wrapped his injured hand, and gave his best to circulate his spiritual strength within his meridians. But he could not find abnormalities in any area.

Those information Ming Ze heartlessly divulged made him somehow dumbfounded.

The other person clearly had mistook him for a spy from the other sect sent to deceive Yu Zhi Jue.

Even though he is indeed another soul… …but this body is already dying? For how long will it hold out?

Mu Rong Xue is a matchless healer in the whole word. If it’s her, can she heal me?

As Ling Xia thought about that, his stomach was suddenly in pain, a fishy taste rose from his throat then he coughs out blood.

He was stupefied, seeing the pool of blood on the floor. He uses a rag and wiped it clean.

This time is the most tragic, right now, he can’t even see Yu Zhi Jue’s shadow at all. And because of Ming Ze, he can’t also go out! Even if he manage to sneak out, he don’t have the jade signet, so it’ll end up the same, not being able to meet with Yu Zhi Jue!

As soon as the master refiner came on time, Ling Xia can’t help but grab onto his sleeve and urgently asked: “Where is the Grand Master? May I trouble you to pass a message for me, I need to see him for something urgently important!”

He is aware that they are not that close, but this master refiner is the only person he could meet with. Only he can be Ling Xia’s last chance that could help him.

Ling Xia exerted himself, that the wound on his hand reopened and blood seeped through the gaze and stained the master refiners pure white sleeve.

The other person paused for a moment then said: “I am only a mere master refiner, I’m not authorized to meet with the Grand Master.”

Ling Xia’s hand disappointingly dropped. He don’t know if Yu Zhi Jue got angry from being slapped the last time so he won’t see him…..He was indisposed to refine, so the master refiner just left.

Fuck! If I died this time without seeing Yu Zhi Jue because of a slap, isn’t that a great injustice?

Ling Xia was so dejected he wishes to scream out loud, but he can feel his body getting weaker and weaker… …

He was not afraid to die before, but he is extremely afraid now.

He wanted to always stay by Yu Zhi Jue' side, he wanted to see Yu Zhi Jue at once, he never wishes for something this desperate before. They weren't able to love each other that long, and say words of love and have intimate kisses that much… ….Just by thinking about it, the rim of his eyes can't help but heat up….

As the midnight had come, Ling Xia was staring at the ice cold wall while lost in thoughts. When suddenly, a familiar laugh echoed: "While you were having a good sleep, we were actually being chased to be killed that we can't eat nor sleep."

Ling Xia was surprised and happy, he sat up and said: "Su Mu Zhe?"

As soon as he saw a spiky head, he was even more pleasantly surprised: "Xiao Hu?"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 20

Ling Xia was so excited that tears soon welled up in his eyes. Ah Li also surprisingly appeared next, directly jumping into his arms and rubbing its head intimately on him.

Su Mu Zhe immediately gave him a signal to not make a noise. The guards around the Qin Palace increased by a lot compared to the first time he came. Him and Song Xiao Hu cooperated with a Guardian and broke in.

Song Xiao Hu said in a hush voice: “Big brother Ling, we are about to rescue the Holy Maiden Peak elders locked up in prison. But it won’t be easy to take them out. Do big brother Ling have Yu Zhi Jue’s leader pass or such?”

Ling Xia shook his head. Based on what this two said, Yu Zhi Jue unexpectedly started to go against them… ….Reading it in the novel is one thing, but seeing it take place is another.

Yu Zhi Jue and Song Xiao Hu are childhood friends, but he still takes him on seriously despite that? He bit his lips, not knowing how to console Song Xiao Hu.

Song Xiao clearly don’t have resentment towards Yu Zhi Jue. He only disappointingly creases his brow: “Big brother Ling, the Dark Arts Sect will have a crowning ceremony in fifteen days. When that time comes, the people of Righteous Sect that was imprisoned will be sacrificed. So we must save them and take them out before that happens——Do you know something about it?”

Ling Xia shakes his head. He comfortingly regulated his chi and blood in his stomach secretly. He could not get any useful information this time around. And with his body…….it can be compared to a distasteful metaphor, as he is like an apple that was being damaged by a worm inside, still looking normal in the outside, but is already rotting in the inside.

He asked in a quiet voice: “How’s Mu Rong Xue and the others?”

Song Xiao Hu replied: “Xiao Hong Yu took them to the Spirit Snake Island to hide——it was thanks to miss Ke Lan’s help, that Ming Ze and Chu Yin’s troops haven’t killed us yet. Don’t worry big brother Ling, maybe Ah Jue doesn’t know about this at all.”

“I haven’t seen him for days.” Ling Xia wrinkled his brows. It seems that Chu Yin and Ming Ze had the least participation in this, but they are nonetheless thorny characters.

Yu Zhi Jue’s decision on advancing the schedule for the ceremony, was it because of that Mu Xiao?

As Su Mu Zhe saw his expression, he understood that Ling Xia knows nothing. He wanted to tease him about it, but in the end, he just shut his mouth.

Ling Xia replied: “I must have a proper talk with Ah Jue. But there’s a string attached on my limbs that controls a person’s movements, so I can’t go out for the time being. Can you guys help me look for it?”

Song Xiao Hu nodded his head, and presses Ling Xia’s wrist. He condenses his energy on his palm, and his sense of touch multiplied by a hundred times. He easily found the numerous energy threads attached to different parts of Ling Xia’s muscles and veins.

“I’ll give it a try.” Song Xiao Hu transmitted his fire energy to the tips of his finger, and tap it on Ling Xia’s wrist, letting it run through the strings, until all the strings was coated with it.

Ling Xia felt like his whole body was submerged in a hot spring, it was warm and completely cozy. His tense feeling up until now seemed to have eases up a bit. Song Xiao Hu held his breath as he forcefully pulled them off. Ling Xia could feel a slight pricking pain for a moment, as those red strings thin as a hair passes through his pores and pops out, making him feel disgusted at once.

Soon all those red strings were completely removed. Ling Xia breathes a sigh of relief, and uttered a question with a bit of hopeful tone: “Xiao Hu, did you still think I have something inside my body?”

Song Xiao Hu shook his head: “Nope, does big brother Ling still feel ill somewhere else?”

Ling Xia’s heart sinks. He feigned shaking his head naturally and replied: “No. Xiao Hu, how do we go out?”

He forced himself to keep his calm. Base on what Ming Ze said, that thing called ‘puppet soul’ has been planted to his body years ago, so he’s afraid that it has already merged into his blood vessels. Even though Ming Ze could control his actions through this thing, but he still installed those controlling strings. This explains that for Ming Ze to control him through the puppet soul, he should be in close proximity. Such a tremendous bad luck.

They discussed their plan. The security of the Qian Kun Sect is currently a lot more strict, and they don’t know where Yu Zhi Jue is at all. So they decided to take all of the Holy Maiden Peak’s people out first.

Su Mu Zhe and Song Xiao Hu changed clothes and wore mask. They took the same set and gave it to Ling Xia. Once he’s done changing, Su Mu Zhe quickly summoned the land crawling beast. The huge beast can keep few people in its mouth, and so, they went inside it without a word.

Ling Xia laughed in a bittersweet way and said: “Remember to brush your beast’s teeth later on.” Ah Li was obviously dissatisfied with the odor of the location, as it held its breath and shrank on top of Ling Xia’s shoulder.

The Land Crawling Beast and Su Mu Zhe’s heaven defying ability had the same function, both can only use it for an hour. Also, he can only summoned the Land Crawling Beast once per day. The Land Crawling Beast carried them and soon reach their destination, under the prisoner’s torture chamber. Song Xiao Hu quickly spreads out a protective screen

surrounding them, so that in case of creating noise, they won’t be heard outside of it temporarily.

When Ling Xia saw those members of Holy Maiden Peak, he could not stop himself from turning his head on the side and averting his gaze. His back can’t help but soak in a layer of cold sweat.

They were those four guardian Holy Maiden Peak originally, but now, they looked old and haggard like they were fifty or sixty years old women. There were various traces of scars left behind from torture devices on their bare bodies, with chains that was pierced through their bones. The chains stabbed through their hands created a wound that was already being festered with maggots, the sight seemed like it was too tragic to look at.

They were about to explain their intention of coming, when the White Coral Guardian’s eye flared. A bit of chunk was cut off from her tongue, so her speech was slurred: “That animal Yu Zhi Jue sent a person from his sect to torture us everyday. The tendons on our feet were slit, our bones broken, flogged, stabbed with needles, set in flames, and have venomous insects bit us… …..it’s because of the Four Heavenly Body Spell[2] that animal didn’t seal, that we survived up to now.”

Song Xiao Hu can’t help but remain silent, his fists tightly clenched.

The hairs on Ling Xia’s back raises. Perhaps it was the excessive nauseating odor of the torture chamber, so he was feeling a bit dizzy.

Its nothing to fuss about, but Ling Xia truly don’t have the slightest favorable impression for these extreme and obstinate women, since he haven’t forgotten how they wanted to erase Yu Zhi Jue’s existence in the past. But the way they were tortured, is too brutal in any way, that he would rather have Yu Zhi Jue kill them.

The Land Crawling Beast can transport at most, five people. But if it took a round trip, it will definitely take more than one hour. Ling Xia looks at the eerie prison, and calmly said: “I’ll stay behind. Su Mu Zhe, take them first on a safe place, and come back again tomorrow. We’ll use a seal transceiver to communicate.”

Song Xiao Hu clenches his fist and said: “I’ll stay behind too.”

Su Mu Zhe took a look at their expression. He is worried about Song Xiao Hu, after all, he saw how intimately possessive Yu Zhi Jue are to Ling Xia. But right now, there are other things that must be prioritize. Because of the pressing time, he nodded his head and had the four people enter the Land Crawling Beast’s mouth, then he followed afterwards and jumped in.

Seeing that their surroundings became quiet, Ling Xia quietly asked: “Xiao Hu, can you still forgive Ah Jue now?”

Song Xiao Hu replied without the slightest hesitation: “I will! I know what Ah Jue is really like.”

Ling Xia can’t help himself from smiling, and strokes Song Xiao Hu’s spiky hair: “Let’s look for him.”

The torture chamber had hundreds of deep underground pathways nearby, outside of which there are tons of ferocious magic beast and jail guards patrolling everywhere. But with Song Xiao Hu’s help, it wasn’t really a problem.

Ling Xia took out a concealing magic device, and Song Xiao Hu neatly took out two jail guards. The two of them took the guards jade passes and changed into their clothes. Those magic beasts in the area just completely went past them without a hitch.

They went onward, the underground prison was cold and dark. There was a groaning voice somewhere, that seemed to be cursing. There were also pleading voices, as if they were suffering the torments of hell while still alive. When Ling Xia saw the glimpse of sunshine at the tunnel entrance, he breathed a sigh of relief, his clothes were thoroughly drenched with cold sweat.

Reading about it and seeing it with one’s own eyes are two completely different type of experience.

So he was a bit at loss. I already know about it, but what should I do?

Perhaps he don’t even have much time to mull over the contradictions, he don’t even how long this body would hold out……

They were about to go out of the tunnel’s entrance when they soon got called out by a guard: “Password?”

Ling Xia stared blankly, when Song Xiao Hu promptly replied. It seems like Su Mu Zhe already discreetly got the information about it.

The jail guard nodded his head, and the two continued walking in quick pace.

The most crucial right now is to ask around for Yu Zhi Jue’s location. Song Xiao Hu continued to grab people to interrogate, but they don’t have any useful information. With no other way around, they hack those people unconscious and hid them on the bushes.

Ling Xia creases his brow. It won’t be odd if people find it strange, after all, there’s a changing shifts on patrolling guards.

Even if Yu Zhi Jue got angry from being slapped in the face, he definitely won’t deliberately avoid him for three consecutive days, unless he had a very important matter. If it is regarding that Mu Xiao, could it be that Yu Zhi Jue is harnessing its power and have gone into a close door cultivation?

Once he thought about that, Ling Xia can’t help but get anxious. It was clear that Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t dominate the Mu Xiao’s power, so he’s afraid that it will control him. Thinking about his traumitic experience in the labyrinth back then, Ling Xia became even more anxious.

He told Song Xiao Hu about his conjecture, and Song Xiao Hu got an idea on what to ask around. He asked about the location of where the previous Demon Lords had their closed door cultivation. The guard was adamant on not talking, but Ling Xia was so anxious, he gritted his teeth and took out a dagger, pressing it on the guard’s neck until there was a small cut. And because of that, the other person told them: “The Forbidden Land on Ku Lou Mountain. But I’m not sure if it’s there.”

Ling Xia was afraid that he was lying, so he used a heart seeing spell to read his emotion, then he let out a sigh of relief. But the next moment, his stomach constricted in pain. He gradually relaxes his gasping. Based on where the guarded pointed out, and his memories from the time Yu Zhi Jue showed him around, the estimated distance of that Dark Art Sect's Forbidden Land is roughly two hundred li from the Qin Palace. But from here to that place is probably around sixty to seventy li.

Song Xiao Hu hacked the guard to unconsciousness and hid him in a bush. He saw Ling Xia's complexion and worriedly asked: "Big brother Ling, are you all right?"

Ling Xia shook his head and replied: "It's nothing. We should go at once."

If Yu Zhi Jue is really in a seclusion, there are definitely strong guards and traps defending there, so they should not just charge in directly. If he agitated Yu Zhi Jue's cultivation, he might be accidentally set fire with his dark fire. As Ling Xia thought to himself that Yu Zhi Jue might be using that Mu Xiao to cultivate, it made him helplessly worried.

He told Song Xiao Hu about his worries. Song Xiao Hu pondered for a moment then raises his head: "Don't worry about it big brother Ling. If that really happened, I'll take that thing from Ah Jue! and I won't let him get hurt as well."

When Ling Xia saw his confident expression, his heart was slightly appeased.

Since they had to rush, Ah Li increases its speed to its maximum rate, however, it's white fur body was too conspicuous. So Song Xiao Hu carried Ling Xia on his shoulder without the slightest hesitation and jumped on top of the trees. Ling Xia felt abashed inside, he had became more and more weaker, he always needed to rely on someone else.

Although Song Xiao Hu's movement speed is extremely fast, but it still took them for about half an incense took to arrive. From afar, they heard an

intense noise echoed. Clearly, the some people already found an anomaly so they had notified all the guards.

Ling Xia was extremely nervous. He believed that Ming Ze must have already found out that he was not at the Qin Palace!

The sky was soon filled with patrolling flying squad, the magic beast they were riding on was at least level four or higher. Although it was nighttime, those flying beasts eyes were very sharp. Even if Song Xiao Hu is adept at concealing his presence, but with Ling Xia on his back, their tracks were bound to be discovered. Suddenly, the sentry from the sky launched an attack.

Ling Xia gritted his teeth and said: “We have no choice but to have Ah Li carry us. Since it was the Dark Arts Sect’s Forbidden Land, even if there were danger, as long as there were no orders from the Grand Master, they would not dare to go in.”

Ah Li was in the magic beast pouch all this time, so its was depressingly impatient earlier. But now it was its time to come out, so even if he was carrying both Song Xia Hu and Ling Xia in its back, he still jumped evasively in a faster speed, that those birds could not catch up.

After running away for another half an incense stick, a sudden bright light appeared in front of them. Ling Xia’s heart tightened, they were about to be attacked with all kinds of weapons—It was clear, that the patrolling guards already warned all of the other guards so they prepared an ambush ahead.

Song Xiao Hu’s eyes was good, he already saw ten men and five huge magic beasts far ahead.

He shouted: “Dash through, Ah Li!”

Ah Li bellowed an enormous roar, then jumped with its hind leg. The leap immediately covered about thirty meters, surprisingly jumping over those people mid-air meeting them. Ling Xia’s eyes blossomed, the feeling of weightlessness made him grab onto Ah Li’s fur in its back.

The cavalry squadron with their magic beasts mounts chased after them. Song Xiao Hu steadily stand on top of Ah Li's back, and discharges several blue colored thunder behind them, cracking the stone road. He caused a constant obstruction that two of the five magic beast chasing after them was flung into the trees, and one of them was smashed into the ground, leaving behind only two magic beast after them.

Ah Li suddenly turned on their direction, and roared loudly. The high level magic beast's power pressured the two magic beast into cowering, they did not dare to continue following. Ah Li continued running ahead with an air full of complacency.

Song Xiao Hu skipped in front of Ling Xia and was unable to resist flaunting like a child: "Big brother Ling, how was my technique just now? It's a new move I mastered, it's called The Highest Heaven Thunderbolt."

"It's amazing." Ling Xia smiled and said, "Xiao Hu has always been very strong."

Song Xiao Hu suddenly revealed his dimples: "I will surely stop Ah Jue this time…."

He wasn't done speaking yet, when he widen his eyes in shock. His stomach was suddenly stabbed with a dagger. Even though he had an energy barrier in his body, he was caught off guard so that dagger stabbed shallowly. He lowered his head and saw Ling Xia firmly holding on to the dagger, he found it hard to believe and was at complete loss.

Ling Xia had the same expression as he looked down on his own hand. He suddenly realizes something and immediately said: "Xiao Hu, quickly get away, I'm being controlled!"

As he said that, he uncontrollably attacked Song Xiao Hu, moving towards him very aggressively. He saw the blue florescence on the edge of the dagger and was more pressingly worried than ever. He shouted: "Stop the one controlling me, then quickly drink my blood after!"

Song Xiao Hu dodged in confusion, still not understanding Ling Xia's words and was unable to react. He didn't know at all about Ling Xia being a Human Panacea.

He saw Ling Xia skillfully turnaround, and unexpectedly was about to stab Ah Li. He unconsciously stopped Ling Xia in his tracks.

Ling Xia heaved a sigh of relief. He struggled to regain his control of his body, dreading that he will inflict greater injury to Song Xia Hu. His forehead was profusely dripping with sweat.

Ling Xia was gasping mouthful of air. His heart suddenly throbbed painfully, the severe pain made him unable to speak. Nevertheless, he tried his best to speak with his trembling lips: "Be careful Xiao Hu, Ming Ze is definitely nearby!"

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 21

Ling Xia's voice is yet to wane, when two puppet suddenly fell from the sky, and charges to Song Xiao Hu wielding double edge swords. Song Xiao Hu uses one of his hand to stop Ling Xia, and the other hand to casts thunderbolts, disintegrating the two puppets.

"Tie……me……and quickly drink……my blood to detoxify." Ling Xia inarticulately said with difficulty. He knows, that even if Song Xia Hu strikes him unconscious, his body would still be controlled to move by Ming Ze.

Song Xiao Hu finally reacted, and use a binding spell on Ling Xia to tie him. The next moment, he felt a spell of dizziness, making him aware that he had been poisoned. He bowed his head on Ling Xia's wrist and bites down to it.

But would Ming Ze who were hiding somewhere give them the chance to detoxify?

Suddenly, a humongous puppet model jumps out and stopped Ah Li in its tracks, opened its mouth widely, then sprayed a poisonous gas towards Ah Li's direction.

Ah Li sharply dodge to the side, and immediately flinging Song Xiao Hu who was poisoned and Ling Xia who was tied backwards. Song Xiao Hu who carried Ling Xia bounded by several rings could not stand firm. Ming Ze operated that newly created female puppet along with an Earth Type puppet to charge an attack towards Song Xiao Hu, while a puppet beast engages in battle with Ah Li.

Ming Ze kept laughing wickedly, as he operated the two puppets movements in attacking Song Xiao Hu who was preoccupied in carrying Ling Xia. The effect of the poison within Song Xiao Hu gradually slows his movement, his left and right arms getting dull to raise. He gritted his teeth and pulled his mind together to protect Ling Xia. Even though he cuts off

one of the female puppet's arm, but the numerous cuts in his body is quickening the poison's effects in taking over.

There was on open wound on the back of Ah Li's leg, but it finally managed to break the puppet into pieces. Ah Li walked with its three legs towards Song Xiao Hu to back him up. One man and one beast joining forces, Song Xiao Hu was immediately invigorated.

Ming Ze suppresses a mouthful of blood from coughing out in his hiding place. Those two puppet's barrage of attacks suddenly slows down. He was simultaneously controlling three high level puppets, that it actually consumed a huge amount of his energy. And if a puppet got destroyed and he did not cut off the puppet string on time, it will result to his body suffering a blood loss and body harm.

"Lightning Scythe!" Song Xiao Hu summoned the hidden weapon hanging on his neck, and Ah Li poured in its intense Fire Type Element to the weapon, turning it into a sparking scythe coated with blaze as it cut apart that female puppet, and breaking it into pieces. The enormous shock wave of the attack reaches the Earth Type puppet and cracked it open, splitting it into two pieces.

Ming Ze could not suppress it anymore, and coughs out blood. Song Xiao Hu heard a voice from somewhere and condenses all of his remaining energy in his hand, then shouted loudly while shooting it towards Ming Ze's location. Ming Ze was flung backwards through the trees, rocks, until he was severely smashed into a distant place. The impact made him unable to get up for a short while.

Song Xiao Hu was still poisoned, and with a 'thud' he collapses. His wheat skin faintly emitting a trace of dangerous smell.

"Ah Li, carry me." Ling Xia desperately said. His not sure if its because Ming Ze lost control of his body, but his whole body felt like it was light as a feather, and the pain seemed like it was gone. The only exception was his inability to move.

He faintly believe that this kind of feeling is far from good.

The wound of Ah Li's body were also poisoned, but because of its huge frame, the effect was much more slow. But Ling Xia was still worried, so he urgently coaxed it: "Clever….Ah Li……hurry and bite on me……"

It took him for a while to say it. Ah Li then changes to its smaller body, and lightly bites down on his wrist. There was a sound of footsteps that can be heard from afar——it was evident later on that it was those people chasing after them. Ah Li restored its full form and growled, curling and placing Song Xiao Hu and Ling Xia together in its belly to protect them.

Ling Xia was also incapacitated, he could only call out to Song Xia Hu: "Quickly wake up Xiao Hu… …."

But no matter how many times he called out, Song Xiao Hu remained motionless. He heard those panic-stricken voices come nearer and nearer ——It doesn't matter if he die, but if he's gonna implicate Xiao Hu and Ah Li… ….

He continued to yell with his hoarse voice, but in reality, the loudness of his voice is alarmingly comparable to the buzz of a mosquito.

The troops already started to besiege Ah Li one after another. Ah Li did not left its spot to avoid those thrown weapons, while those magic beast pounces on Ah Li mid air. Ah Li uses its blazing fire to turn those weapons into ashes, but even more people came and took the advantage to throw hooks with chains on Ah Li's body. The hooks attaches on Ah Li's flesh, and was pulled, that Ah Li's body was dripping with blood.

Ah Li struggled forcefully, that those hooks dug deeper as a result. Ah Li put all of his strength to protect Ling Xia and Song Xiao Hu in its belly, that both those magic beast and troops had no other way but to apprehend Ah Li at the same time.

Ling Xia stifled back the sour feeling forming in his eyes. He saw that Ah Li was completely surrounded in all sides, so he kept shouting: "Clever Ah Li, just leave me first, I beg you….."

He questioned himself if he ever did anything for Ah Li and Song Xia Hu, for him to be protected by them.

Once this people take them as prisoners, they will surely interrogate them savagely. And with Ah Li who was severely worn out from the battle will definitely not survive.

When Ling Xia was about to give up all hope, he eventually heard a familiar female voice said: “What’s with all theses excitement? Why was I not invited as well?”

Ling Xia stirred his trembling lips: “Sister Ke Lan…..”

Ke Lan MinErBai shouted a command to stop, and directly went towards Ling Xia. Ling Xia forces himself to say out loud: “Sister Ke Lan, quickly save Xiao Hu and Ah Li……”

Ah Li sustained too much injury, it was difficult for it to remain in its current form. It shrank back and ran towards Ling Xia and Song Xiao Hu’s side.

Su Mu Zhe passes on a message to Ke Lan MinErBai while he’s on his way. She quickly rode a flying magic bird beast and immediately set off to catch up to them. She was not authorized by the Grand Master, so she was obstructed by the patrolling guards on her way, and was only able to catch just now.

She was a poison user, and poison on Song Xiao Hu’s body was difficult to deal with, so she can’t do anything about it. But she knows that Ling Xia is a Human Panacea, so she immediately pricked Ling Xia’s finger and shoved it inside Song Xiao Hu’s mouth. When Song Xiao Hu drank it, he recovered instantly.

Ling Xia was gasping, and when his heart relaxes, he felt his sight dimmed for a short while.

Ming Ze haggardly crawled back. Most of his ribs were broken by Song Xiao Hu a moment ago, and when he moved, his ripped lungs causes pain.

He was gritting his teeth in rage as he shouted: “Sect Master Green Underworld, this two people infiltrated my sect, why are you associating yourself with this infiltrators?”

Ke Lan MinErBai stabbed her baton on the ground and sneered as she replied: “I’m aware that these two people are friends of the Grand Master. If the Grand Master knows that the White Loch Guardian welcomed his friends in this way, I’m afraid he won’t be happy about it?”

“What friends?” Ming Ze narrowed his eyes and scoffed, “This man is only a puppet send to deceive the Grand Master! Green Underworld Guardian, if you still intent to stand on their side, don’t you blame me for being ruthless!”

As Ming Ze spoke, he took the jade signet he got from Ling Xia and raised it: “The proof is the Grand Master’s signet, Green Underworld Guardian. If you are still opposing, then the entire Dark Arts Sects will be your enemy!”

Ke Lan MinErBai’s complexion paled, but she still stubbornly stood in front of them.

“Ah Jue gave that jade signet to me, and he(Ming Ze) snatched it…..” Ling Xia said with difficulty.

Ke Lan MinErBai immediately recovered from her shock, and laughs out loud and said: “You stole the Grand Master’s jade signet, White Loch Guardian. Isn’t that a capital offense?”

Ming Ze was stumped, his complexion changes. He shouted back: “Green Underworld Guardian are with the infiltrators, seize them!”

He must use this opportunity to get rid of them all at once!

“Let’s see if you have the ability!” Ke Lan MinErBai summoned Zhu Er, a blood red high toxic spider that was the size of a pagoda, overthrowing those incoming wave of guards. It sprayed poisonous threads from its

mouth from time to time, that those people was immediately in disarray and was utterly defeated.

Ming Ze was furious. He raises his finger lightly, and Ling Xia took Song Xiao Hu's sword and charges to Ke Lan MinErBai.

Ke Lan MinErBai deflected out of instinct. Ling Xia suddenly flew back, and ferociously slammed against the stone.

He felt that he was already about to lose consciousness, but no words could come out of his mouth. His limbs also seemed like they had mind of their own as they continued to attack Ke Lan MinErBai.

Ke Lan MinErBai was dumbfounded, she could not understand. She could only cut a sorry figure and dodge his attack. Ling Xia's pupil was starting to slacken, as he said inarticulately: "I'm…..being….."

"Ling!" A sudden earth shattering power overpowered her out of the blue. Ke Lan MinErBai know it was dangerous, she blocked her baton in front of her and retreated a couple of meters back. The original spot she was standing on was burning with black flames.

As the Grand Master suddenly appeared in this place, everyone stopped moving, and all of the sect people kneels down and saluted: "Long live the Grand Master!"

Yu Zhi Jue quickly jumps down from the flying magic beast, and caught Ling Xia who's on the verge of collapsing, and taking him in his embrace.

When Ling Xia suddenly heard that familiar voice, his whole body jolted, and his already diminishing energy recovered for a bit.

Yu Zhi Jue scanned Ling Xia's chi, and felt that the blood on his own entire body must have congealed.

He did not know that because of his absence for three days, Ling Xia would become like this.

He always regretted that day he left. But because of his pride and arrogance, the two of them had a dispute for the first time. And for the sake of not losing his reputation, he remembered about that magic device and tried to research about it.

But as he did, he felt that the magic device's power was exquisite and incomparable. It contained all sorts of forbidden cultivation techniques. He was bewitched by it he could almost not part with it. He believed that if he presses on with his cultivation, he would surpassed his current cultivation level into the next stage within five days, and he'll be able to unseal the Two Headed Serpent ahead of time.

No matter how, he wanted to surpass the previous Demon King as soon as possible.

To have greater rule and stronger power, so that he'll be able to properly protect that man he wanted to protect by his side.

As he pondered about it, he awkwardly written a letter and had it sent with a flying magic beast to Ling Xia, merely saying that he'll leave for five days, and will come back soon. He was afraid that Song Xiao Hu and the others will take Ling Xia back with them, so he gave an order to kick those people out of the Dark Arts Sect's territory, and instructed his most trusted aid, the Left Elder Chu Yin, to guard the Qin Palace, to ensure that everything is safe.

That concentrated dark energy for tens of thousand of years from the Mu Xiao was hard to tame, that he almost lost control of himself many times. But as he thought of Ling Xia——he overcame it. He even finished his cultivation in two days earlier than what he initially expected.

He suddenly felt uneasy inside. It was sort of ominous premonition that bothered him he could not stand it any longer. In the end, despite of Chu Yin's protests, he immediately left the Forbidden Land. But he didn't expect to see this chaotic scene on his way back.

Ling Xia was clearly about to speak, when Yu Zhi Jue said with a hoarse voice: "You shouldn't speak for now."

When Yu Zhi Jue said that, his expression was at loss. He fixes his gaze at Ling Xia's extremely pale face.

He was not injured at all, so why is his body so devastated as if it was an oil lamp that is about to dry up?

He embraces Ling Xia tightly, and desperately poured in his spiritual energy to his body, since he don't know what else to do.

Ming Ze limped towards them. He kneels beside them and said: "This subordinate did not mean to deceive the Grand Master——but this Human Panacea's body had already been dead five years ago, and this subordinate places a mere puppet soul inside the body to make it breath. But right now, this subordinate suspects that someone else used a possessing technique, and thought of seizing the opportunity to harm the Grand Master! Requesting for the Grand Master to not be duped….."

He saw Yu Zhi Jue ignoring him deliberately. He knows in his heart that because of his manipulations from earlier, that body will give out not for long. So he said to Yu Zhi Jue out of concern: "Please do not grieve Sect Master. He is merely a puppet used to deceive the Grand Master….."

Yu Zhi Jue slowly move his sight towards him, his pair of eyes coldly looking back at Ming Ze that it made the other person's body shivered.

He enunciated: "What did you say? Repeat it once more."

Ming Ze lowered his head and gritted his teeth as he said: "He is not the Human Panacea, but a different person who possesses that body. He is a deceitful person who recklessly breaks in to the Qian Kun Sect to rescue those several prisoners as a proof! Requesting for the Sect Master to think carefully……"

Yu Zhi Jue waved his hand and a row of ice blades appeared and flew. He furiously said: "Scram! Do you think I won't recognize the man I love?"

He uttered it as if he was bellowing in rage, all the people in the vicinity looked at each other in dismay. And when those people continued to listen

to such extremely serious matter, they all shivered in place and did not dare to make a move. Ke Lan MinErBai's eyes widen from the revelation as she stared.

Song Xia Hu who had a cockroach like vitality was already awake, it's just that he can't move for the time being. When he heard those words, his jaw dropped.

What is Ah Jue saying, could it be that big brother Ling is his….

Ming Ze was severely injured he could not dodge. But soon a red cloaked man came from above and blocked it for him——it turns out to be Chu Yin who followed Yu Zhi Jue.

Chu Yin fell on his knees, and said in a huffing and coughing voice: "Reporting to the Grand Master, what the White Loch Guardian are saying is true, this subordinate can also attest to that."

"Ah Jue….."Ling tried his best to move his lips, but in the end, he could not utter any words.

Yu Zhi Jue no longer paid attention to Chu Yin, Ming Ze, and the others. He only turned his gaze to the man in his arms, who seemed as if the life inside his body would disappear at any moment.

At this moment, Ling Xia could only see a blurred silhouette. Yu Zhi Jue was looking back at him with an indescribable confusion in his face, as Ling Xia started to lose his hearing.

He weakly tugged at Yu Zhi Jue's sleeve and said: "I beg you, don't kill Xiao Hu…..I help them save the people of Holy Maiden Peak… …please forgive me….."

"If you stay by my side, I will never touch them. If those people gladly follow you, I won't care at all." Yu Zhi Jue could only feel the body in his arms grew colder and colder, his heart never felt this scared before.

Ling Xia could no longer see him nor hear his voice. He could only muster his remaining strength and said: “… …..That day that I hit you? I’m sorry…… …”

As he spoke, he wanted to caress Yu Zhi Jue’s face, but he can’t lift his hand no matter how he tried.

Yu Zhi Jue tightly held his cold body and moved his face closer to Ling Xia’s. He replied in a hoarse voice: “It didn’t hurt at all. Ling, I’m begging you please don’t say that! I was in the wrong!”

Song Xiao Hu who just recovered from the shock, didn’t notice something was amiss. He forced himself to sit up and shouted in rage: “Yu Zhi Jue you bastard, you played me! You locked big brother Ling in the Qin Palace. Why did you allow that sick subordinate of yours to control his body with a controlling string? Big brother Ling was controlled to fight me! I’m telling you, I will never forgive you!… ….”

Song Xiao Hu’s loud voice echoed, he was panting as he flew in rage. Yu Zhi Jue faintly heard what he said, and turned his head to look at Ming Ze and Chu Yin with a dagger like gaze. But he soon returned his gaze back at Ling Xia.

Even if Ling Xia could no longer feel, but when his heart suddenly tightened, an indescribable pain came from his stomach and spread all over his body. All of his numb limbs seemed like it was aching in pain.

His breathing rushes, and he could not speak a word once again. Cold sweat completely soaked his clothes.

This body could no longer hold on… …

He knows the meaning of this fact, so Ling Xia force himself to open his eyes, wanting to see Yu Zhi Jue’s face again. But no matter what, he could no longer see clearly.

The reality made him even more reluctant to show Yu Zhi Jue his death, since he don’t want to make Yu Zhi Jue sad for the second time.

“I won’t die…..”Ling Xia flutter his lips with difficulty, “Please believe in me Ah Jue…..take care of yourself…..I beg you……promise me……”

“I promise! So you must keep yours! I beg you….” Yu Zhi Jue held him feeling terrified. He wanted to merge his body with his but he couldn’t.

It was as if he heard an echo, Ling Xia tried his best to show a shallow smile: “Don’t be sad Ah Jue……”

Yu Zhi Jue could not breath at all. When he saw Ling Xia’s lips paled to its most extent, the panic in his heart reaches its pinnacle. Those words bore into his heart. He can’t help but plant a kiss. It was as if he could no longer hear anyone, he continued to embrace the man in his arms.

Ling Xia felt that he finally left this world. A familiar heat and smell lingered in his lips.

He wanted to stay, and continue being by Ah Jue’s side…..

But this body is completely destroyed. So, how can he still go back?……

Ling Xia’s consciousness seemed like it was floating mid air. He saw Yu Zhi Jue’s despairing expression while clinging on “him”, and Song Xiao Hu holding on to Ah Li while walking over. Ke Lan MinErBai was too shocked to think and move.

He could not take off his eyes at Yu Zhi Jue, until that scene finally became more and more distant……

OceanofPDF.com

OceanofPDF.com

Volume 4

The dust settles!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 1

The alarm rang on time early in the morning. Ling Xia was feeling tired as he fumbled around to find his phone. He feels that his head was both swelling and painful. He rubbed his temples a few times, and then slowly opened his eyes.

There is always that feeling that he was in a very long and heart-wrenching dream. It felt like he had gone through a lot, and had met many faces. But he could not define it clearly, and he can't remember anything about it.

Ling Xia stayed still for a moment. He rarely had this feeling of confusion whenever he woke up early in the morning, so he thought about it carefully. It seemed like yesterday, the newly appointed boss Ping Min Chang invited him to dinner. The other person talked too much, he was annoyed half to death.

What the fuck? Why are there so many gays nowadays?

He was doing his current job for several years already so his salary had doubled recently. Even though he's afraid of being in trouble, but it should be alright to talk and be clear about it, right? It doesn't have to go as far as for him to resign?

He changed clothes, puts on slippers, washes his face and rinses, then got ready to go out to eat breakfast. But as he walks out of his bedroom, he jumped in fright.

What in the world? Did an evolution took place?

Ling Xia was fond of growing flowers and plants. On the living room and balcony, there are plants decorations such as orchids, giant taro, green radish, etc. But right now, those plants seemed like they came from the wilderness! That giant taro pot grew up so tall, it reaches the ceiling. The green radish's roots pierces through the pot. And the jasmine and lily

orchids that were not in season are now blossoming and was very splendid looking, growing three times its original size….The strong fragrance of flower filled the entire room.

Due to the foliage blocking the sunlight from passing through the window, the room was a lot dimmer than usual, even the vines crawled up to the door of his bedroom. This can't be his house, but rather a wild plants' botanical garden!

Ling Xia still couldn't believe what his blurry eyes is seeing, so he kneaded his eyes to see clearer. Only then was it made clear to him that it wasn't a dream.

The room that was initially very warm and comfortable, is now looking like its haunted…..

He was completely horrified at the sight, so he quickly retreated back to his bedroom and looked outside. The neighborhood seemed normal, with those on their way to work and people exercising on the road…..The plants outside were also thriving, but not out of ordinary.

Ling Xia gathered his courage to open the door. He peeked his head outside and snapped a few pictures. He then hastily opened his computer, and visited the forums in the internet, searching if other household have similar circumstances with him.

He didn't find any such news, so he posted one himself—— *Woke up today to find the plants in my house flourished wildly, me and my friends were really astonished. Here are pictures as a proof!*

He uploaded the pictures with the post, and then asked if someone else is in a similar situation.

Though it was early in the morning, there were still quick reply in the post. Ling Xia was burning with anxiousness as he opened them, but those replies only pisses him off.

——*The poster must be on drugs!*

——Not bad, is just that the the scale was a bit distorted!

——Me and my friend were also astonished, on the dumb poster for not giving details!

——Congratulation poster, your house's plants are being inhabited by aliens!

……

Knowing that he can't rely on the internet, Ling Xia gathered his courage and open the door to look at those plants. It seemed like they aren't showing any signs of moving, so he tried going out. There were vines crawling along the floor and the ceilings. The foliage were glistening, giving a rustic feeling of the country side.

It relaxes his heart for a bit. Ling Xia hurriedly cleaned himself and left to go to work, without even taking a bite for breakfast.

He was thinking whether he should report it to the police. But the police might not be suitable to handle this kind of matter, should he look for a Feng Shui master to come have a take a look?

But he is not comfortable with people, and when he thought of random strangers stepping into his apartment, it made him gave up that idea.

The distance of his home to the subway is quite near, it will just take about ten minutes walk. The road to his workplace were jammed with traffic as usual during the rush hour, giving the authentic feeling that nothing is out of place.

Ling Xia was absentmindedly deep in his thoughts while walking.

Did I accidentally fed the plants at home some kind of hormones for them grow enormously like that? But its not possible for them to grow like that just because of hormones! And the water I poured on them yesterday was also the same as usual……

While he was taking the subway, he took out his phone to play with it out of habit. But as he did, he didn't know what he wanted to do.

It seems that there was a time that he was reading a novel, but what was it called?

His felt like his head was starting to throb, maybe because he was over-thinking too much. Ling Xia puts away his phone and shut his eyes to rest.

Amidst the darkness, a hand reaches out to grab onto him…..

Ling Xia suddenly opened his eyes. Once he recovered his senses, he found himself grabbing someone's wrist in a lightning speed. That hand he was holding was reaching for his briefcase. He slowly raises his head, and immediately saw a stupefied, and rather frightened face.

Ling Xia also jumped in horror, and immediately let go. When did he became this keen?

That thief didn't say anything in defense. He just squeezed into the crowd and disappeared, quickly running away.

Ling Xia was baffled by what happened. And at this very moment, he can actually clearly hear the thief's muttering from a distance away. With that distance, he shouldn't be able to hear a thing at all!

Upon leaving the station, he takes a look at his phone. He still have about thirty minutes left, so he decided to buy a stomach compress pad first.

There are several dining establishments and shops down the alley of their company, but he didn't have any appetite to eat. Ling Xia just bought a cup of milk and two pieces of tea egg.

He was just about to eat when he heard someone suddenly calls out his name. He turned his head, and saw Ping Min Chang excitedly waving at him from his car.

Even though Ling Xia didn't feel good, he still plastered a smile as a greeting. Ping Min Chang stepped out of his car and walked towards him.

He sat opposite of Ling Xia in that impeccable western suit, and pointed at his cup of soy milk and two tea eggs.

Ling Xia was uncomfortable from head to toe, and he could not eat because of Ping Min Chang's cheerful smile. Ping Min Chang looks at him in an intimate kind of way with his eyes, giving him goosebumps all over.

We're both men, so what's with that look? Ling Xia soon fell into a bad mood, he lost his appetite to eat. After he was done, he stood up.

Ping Min Chang immediately stood up and followed him, still smiling while humoring him with interesting gossips. Ling Xia was still thinking about what happened earlier in the morning, and hearing him blabber right now made Ling Xia feel——annoyed!

He smiled and said: "Upperclassman Ping, don't you still have to park your car? Then I'll go first."

"Ok……" Ping Min Chang smiled as he look at him and said, "Your breakfast was too simple, let's have a proper dinner again later in the evening."

Ling Xia wanted to refuse, but Ping Min Chang was already striding confidently back at his Audi. Ling Xia knitted his brows while looking at Ping Min Chang's back, *why do I want to kick it so bad?*

He was just thinking about it, when Ping Min Chang suddenly 'flopped' down to the ground, looking like a tortoise leaning on the ground in all fours. There were people passing by on that street on their way to work. They saw his sorry figure and just went pass him without saying anything.

Ling Xia widened his eyes in surprise, as there wasn't any stone in that place to tripped on!

Ping Min Chang stood up flustered. He look left and right with his dirtied face, and saw other people looking at him with sympathy. He looks at Ling Xia who's nearby, and forces himself to keep his calm and said: "Someone kicked me just now."

“…..I didn’t saw.” Ling Xia suddenly felt a bit guilty. He hastily nodded his head and said, “You were walking just fine.”

This day’s workload is not that much, so Ling Xia was halfway done during the morning. On his break time, he stared at his workplace in daze.

Plants, subway, breakfast…….this whole morning has been really strange……

When his eyes inadvertently sweep across the small tree plant in his workplace, a thought flashes in his mind: It seemed a bit yellowed and dried up, should I water it?

He was just thinking about it, when he felt that plant’s leaves looked like it moved. He thought it was just his imagination, but he saw those dried up leaves slowly turned into an emerald green color. He could see the plant revitalized with his naked eyes. What scared him more, is that it was being attracted to him as if he was a sun, with the leaves and branches sweeping towards his direction.

Cold sweats formed in Ling Xia’s forehead. He slammed his table with a ‘bang’ and stood up, his heart beating fast as he went straight to the toilet.

He closes the bathroom’s door, feeling that he wasn’t in a good condition at all.

Was the plants’ mutation in his house all because of him?

He was a total mess as he washes his face with cold water, *it was too absurd!*

Ling Xia deeply breathes a few times in front of the mirror, until he was finally calmed enough to go back to his work place. It was a good thing that the other people were busy, so they didn’t found out about the anomaly on that tree.

He decided to do an experiment again. He gave a try on staring at that tree and giving it a command to grow, but not towards him. It appears that

there was a kind of peculiar energy emerging in his brain. He widened his eyes upon seeing that tree shoot upwards, restoring its natural state.

Could it be that the aliens transformed this Lao Zi's body to have plant powers?

Ling was not in the mood to work once again, and started to experiment with the cactus ball in his work desk.

This time, he could see it more clearly. When he held that small flower pot, his hand emitted a faint glow of green light, then it enveloped around the pot of cactus ball. Soon after, two small buds popped out and bloomed on that cactus ball.

This Lao Zi has always been a normal twenty four years old. But now I'm going to be plant hero?

When a male colleague passes by behind him, Ling Xia hastily puts down the cactus ball. That colleague of his was initially reading a material, but all of sudden, that guy turned his nose towards Ling Xia's side: "Xiao Ling, did you spray a perfume today? So fragrant."

Normally, there is no man who wanted to be told by other men that they smell good. So Ling Xia was gloomy as he replied: "I didn't, I just washed my head. I wonder if the new shampoo smelled too strong?"

That male colleague snuffle and comfortingly said: "It wasn't a bad smell, rather, it a great refreshing smell. It gives of the feeling as if your standing in front of a forest.

"……"

The exhausting work had finally ended. Ling Xia hurriedly picked up his briefcase and was ready to leave. He just got downstairs when he saw that gay Ping Min Chang opened the door of his Audi, and flashes a glittering smile on him.

Ling Xia was immediately reminded of the other person's dinner invitation. He may look calm on the outside but in fact, he was awfully annoyed.

How should I handle this type of guy? I'm totally straight……..

This day has been to much for his heart to take, so his nerves had been stretch taught at his very moment.

Ling Xia took big strides towards him, and said in a low voice with his brows knitted: "Manager Ping, I truly like girls only. So I hope you won't act like this in the future."

"But how would you know if you won't try?" Ping Min Chang smile was particularly seductive, "From what I see, you are one."

Ling Xia breathed sharply a few times. His thinning nerves could no longer hold itself together as he balled his fist and slammed the top of the car: "If this Lao Zi says I'm not, then I'm not, can't you make sense of what you're hearing?"

That fist that was smashed down created a loud noise, and the area that was hit were left with a deep dent in the shape of his fist!

Ling Xia was suddenly flabbergasted. And his fist didn't hurt at all!

Ping Min Chang's jaw dropped, he looks at Ling Xia with an appalled expression.

"That is….I'm sorry….. I'll definitely pay for the damages…." Ling Xia apologizes in panic. He hurriedly took his briefcase and scampered off in haste to escape.

Not only he was turned into a supernatural plant, he also became a super baboon! ! !

The more he ran, the faster he gets, the more he ran, the faster he gets……..

Once Ling Xia came into realization, he found himself overtaking small cars in a fast speed, but his face was neither flushing nor his heart is racing!

Those speeding cars he passes by were left with shocked expression as they watches his back!

He hurriedly pulled a break and made a turn to an alley. He waited for a moment to pass, then looks down and slowly walks out.

Did he have superpowers?

He wasn't exposed to radiation, nor did he got bitten by a spider. He weren't even experimented on…..

Is this like, with great power, comes with great responsibility? Could it be that the heavens gave him powers so he could fight off aliens/rising dead/zombies in an impending apocalypse ?

Ling Xia was excitedly smiling from ear to ear. There were a crowd making a racket in front of him, so he inadvertently took a quick glance and saw —— someone about to jump from a building. The identity of the one who's about to commit suicide was a pretty girl who looked like she's around twenty-five years old.

At the bottom of the building were police officers using a loudspeaker to call out to her. There were also reporters and cameramen recording the situation and making a live reporting.

Ling Xia stood behind the clamoring crowd. He discovered that his eyesight was so good, he could clearly see the scene on top of the multi-story building more than a dozen floor high.

The girl was choking in her tears, leaning on the railings while fending of the mediators behind her: "Don't you all come close. If you do, I will jump!"

She was only leaning at the edge, but the wind was too strong, it pushes her backwards making her fall! The crowd on the ground immediately cried

out in fear and covered their eyes.

Ling Xia's limbs already moved into action before he could realize it. He quickly jumped on top of the police car and rushes forward, then landed on the wall and run straight ahead in a flurry of steps like a mad horse that has loose reins on the fields. He smoothly caught the girl mid air, then somersaulted forward and crashes on a building around sixth floor! His legs were slightly bent, while both of his hands were covering the pretty girl's head. All the people that discovered what happened almost popped their eyeballs out…..

Oh no!

Not waiting for the crowd to react and come over, Ling Xia puts the girl down and smashed the recording camera with his fist. Afterwards, he leaped way above the crowd's head, and started running towards his home with great horsepower on his feet.

Once he got back and closes the door, he breathed a sigh of relief.

Nothing should probably happen for the time being, right?

Its better to wear a cap tomorrow when I leave…..

He cooled his head down to consider what next move should be done. Because of Ping Min Chang, his job is definitely a goner. And just a while ago when he save someone, he didn't react on time to cover his entire face!

His arms and legs seems like it instinctively moved on their own….

Ling Xia depressingly went to the refrigerator, opened it, took out a yogurt then drank it in one big gulp.

Ling Xia nervously opened his phone. His eyes suddenly widen in surprise, a bold red headlines popped out on the front page——

Mother of god! Quickly look, a superman in the sky! Me and my friends were scared we almost pissed!

On the screen is a man carrying a girl in his arms, in a still pose in the air captured in a picture that will never be forgotten.

Even if I smashed the camera, there were still mobile phones! ! !

I'm done for!

Ling Xia hastily sorted out the contents of his wallet, bank cards, ID's, etc. He decided that as soon as the sky turns dark, he will run to the road, and go someplace else to lie low until the fuss dies down.

But he wasn't done packing up yet, when the doorbell rang like crazy.

Ling Xia's ear sharply picked up those chaotic buzzing voices. There must be at least ten people outside, and with the tap of their toes, he could imagine the identity of those people.

He alarmingly ran to his balcony, and used a steel bar to blocked off the door on both sides from being opened. The sky wasn't dark yet, but there's already a lot of people down there…..

He clenches his teeth. Right now, his body is in an extraordinary condition, so jumping down from the sixth floor shouldn't be a problem?

Ling Xia reluctantly looked back at his apartment. Even though its festered with so many crazily growing plants, but it was still his warm and humble bode for many years!

He aimed accurately for that lawn area below and jumped down. But while he was in mid-air, a black rift suddenly appeared in thin air in front of him, and he was directly sucked in without knowing if he'll live or die!

The news on the next days were filled with sorrowful headlines——

The alien superhuman hiding for more than twenty years, had suddenly gone missing?

My colleague Ling Xia——is a gorgeous low key superhero!

A superman or a master of martial arts, experts will reveal the secret for you!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 2

The body on his arms grew colder and colder, until it ceases to have its usual warmth. Yu Zhi Jue could not take his gaze off the man in his embrace, his mind turned blank.

Ling Xia's eyes were shut tightly, and corner of his lips were slightly raised, as if he didn't have any regrets.

No matter how much he pleads, this person won't ever open his eyes to look back at him….

Once again, he was left all alone in this world…..

Yu Zhi Jue's breathing increasingly rushes, his body involuntarily started to tremble.

He hugged Ling Xia tightly. All the strength in his body was drained, his weakened knees sunk into the ground.

Is it raining?

He gently wiped the water drops on Ling Xia's face with his fingertips. But as he continued to wipe them, he realizes that it was from his crying.

An intense, and indescribable pain started to spread bit by bit from his numbing heart into his entire body, flowing along in his every arteries and veins, in each of his nerves, until it all converges into one point, making him feel an unbearable strong surge of pain.

The welling tears in his eyes feels like it will split his lungs open, the pain it brings makes him want to yell. But his throat was choked from tears that it was hard for his voice to come out. He could only held it inside, as the pain that feels like he was being stabbed with thousands of knives washes over and over in his body.

This must be in hell…..

Yu Zhi Jue senses an acidic taste rose in his throat, then blood spills at the corner of his mouth.

He vaguely heard people who appeared to have kneel on the ground, and shouted in panicking voices: “Condolence to the Grand Master!…..”

Tears were still streaming down from his eyes, when an uncontrollable laugh escapes from Yu Zhi Jue, and it became louder and louder.

What Grand Master, what Demon King, what dominating the world….

Is there any importance to them?

Would they make up for that person’s smile, his words, and his soft kisses?…..

All those pain and anger manifested itself as black flames. It surrounded him and slowly spreads out.

This kind of world, is there still any reason for it to exist?

Everything must be buried with Ling, including myself!

……

“Yu Zhi Jue, pull yourself together!” Song Xiao Hu staggeringly walked over to him. He coated himself with a fire barrier, and yelled out, “Calm yourself for a second! What big brother Ling said just now, did you already forgot about it?”

Is this eyesore of a hedgehog wants to snatch Ling away?

Yu Zhi Jue’s whole body trembled. He aimed one of his palm and struck Song Xiao Hu who was getting nearer with his power, while firmly holding Ling Xia close to his chest with the other.

What Ling said?

He said that he won’t die. So then, he’s only tired and is asleep?

If so, anyone who disturbs his rest, will all die!

Song Xiao Hu ‘coughed’ out blood and then collapses. But despite that, he still continued to crawl over without fear while clutching his injured chest. He bellowed out: “Ah Jue, get yourself together! I’ll bring big brother Ling and look for Lady Mu Rong, perhaps he can still be saved!”

Still…be saved?

The corner of Yu Zhi Jue’s mouth emerges into a bewildered smile.

He continued to shoot power from his hands.

If Ling Xia is only sleeping, is there a way for him to be saved?

That hedgehog eyesore was finally beaten by him and falls down to the raging fire on the ground. Song Xiao Hu could no longer muster any strength to crawl further, and he could only maintain the protective chi on his body with difficulty, to prevent himself from being quickly turned into ashes.

Ke Lan MinErBai was scared at the same time, angry. She gritted her teeth as she jumped on top of the blood spider. She yelled out: “Song Xiao Hu, hang in there! Surname Yu, have you gone mad, are you letting Ling Xia down like this?”

Song Xiao Hu…..

A dim spark of memory flashes on Yu Zhi Jue’s mind. It was that person’s weak voice that kept resonating clearly in his mind.

“I beg you, don’t kill Xiao Hu…..”

Will Ling Xia get angry at me if I kill him?

With a wave of his sleeve, he lifted Song Xiao Hu up, and tosses him towards Ke Lan MinErBai.

Ke Lan MinErBai was stunned as she catches. When she saw Yu Zhi Jue who was burning everything with all he has and the young man in his arms who no longer had any trace of life in him, her eyes suddenly heated up.

Song Xiao Hu had already fallen into unconciousness, so Ke Lan MinErBai bit her lips and carried him away. She knows that she had no chance in fighting back against Yu Zhi Jue, and Song Xiao Hu's life could also be endangered.

The person who harmed Ling is not yet dead……..

Yu Zhi Jue intimately kisses Ling Xia's forehead, and held him in his arms tightly as he turned around and slowly walked towards Ming Ze and Chu Yin.

Ming Ze moves forward in staggering steps, and bowed his head towards the ground: "Even if this subordinate dies, there are no regrets! As long as the Grand Master is no longer bewitched by that sorcerer! The left elder had nothing to do with this matter, all of this is acted all on this subordinate's accord."

Yu Zhi Jue's chuckle was so gentle, no one could dare look at its incomparable magnificence. And yet, there's no single trace of warmth in his eyes.

He carefully let Ling Xia lean on his shoulder, then he draws out that refined magic sword Ling Xia crafted for him in the past from his space pouch with his other hand. He impaled Ming Ze's hand with that magic sword, and sweetly uttered to him like a lover would: "Did you make Ling Xia suffer a lot?"

Ming Ze's back quivered, his forehead drips with cold sweat. He quickly calmed himself and replied with a hoarse voice: "This subordinate is willing to accept punishment! But this subordinate pleads the Grand Master to not sentence me to death!"

Yu Zhi Jue was nonchalantly twisting the sword, and looks at Ming Ze with a smile as he spoke: "I won't kill you……Why would I let you off that

lightly? All the pain Ling had suffered, I will make you pay back for it bit by bit! “

The expression in his eyes gradually clears up. Even if Ling Xia died, he shall recall his soul back, and confined him by his side.

Chu Yin stood up straight and look back at Yu Zhi Jue. He met his gaze and asked: “What is the Grand Master planning to do?”

“Left elder, I will undo the seal of the Two Headed Serpent, and become the Demon King.” Yu Zhi Jue smiled brilliantly, “After that, I will look for Ling.”

Yu Zhi Jue had once again, places Ling Xia in that ice palace from before and summoned the Mu Xiao.

Ling Xia’s heart had already completely eroded.……

Yu Zhi Jue kept stroking Ling Xia’s ice cold chest, an unceasing distressed filled his heart.

Why didn’t I realized it? If only I had realizes it sooner….

The Mu Xiao possesses a lot of forbidden abilities. And one of those is ——soul recall.

He needs a Master Refiner, to come over and help him refine the Mu Xiao with that ability. What was the name of that Master Refiner Chu Yin had recommended before? The one that he allowed to train Ling Xia in refining…..

Yu Zhi Jue lowered his head and softly kisses him on his lips. He was reluctant to part with him for a long while, but he eventually left.

Yu Zhi Jue was sitting on his high seat and was looking down on a young man wearing a mask from above. The other person was quiet under his watchful gaze, his eyes were calm and wise. Yu Zhi Jue chuckled quietly, and bluntly said: “Can you refine a magic tool with soul recall ability?”

“This subordinate had once practice that craft at the age of sixteen.” Shui Yue slowly raises his head, “But to recall a departed soul, such a thing is not possible.”

Yu Zhi Jue then remembered that boy who practiced refining a device that could recall a soul, and was subjected to disciplinary punishment in the past. He didn’t come to expect that in after so many years, he will meet him again in the Qian Kun Sect at this moment. What’s even more unexpected, is that he is now commanding him to make that very device.

That statement made Yu Zhi Jue narrow his eyes. He slowly makes his way down, and stood near Shui Yue, closely looking at him in the eyes while saying: “What if its with the Darkened stallion and The Crest of the Dragon?”

The Darkened Stallion and The Crest of the Dragon are magic tools that had been sealed for many years. Those were also the very objects Shui Yue were searching for in his journey.

Shui Yue’s eyes gleamed with excitement, he could no longer contain his calm. He said in a slightly louder voice: “This subordinate would like to give it a try!”

Several days had passed, Yu Zhi Jue was under the observing eyes of sect members whose watching him slowly climb at the peak of the mountain, where Yu Tian Xing sealed the Two Headed Flying Serpent.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent is a magic beast that is extremely difficult to tame, since its already at the highest level ten. If a mishap happened during the unsealing, its capable of engulfing an entire city into destruction.

In the past, when Yu Tian Xing learned that he won’t live for long, he bounded the seal on the magic beast, for his own son to inherit from him.

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes as he looked far from what his eyes can reach in the vast blue sky. He suddenly had a marveling thought——When

Yu Tian Xing killed Yu Ling Long(YZJ's mom) in the past, what was in his mind?

He was much fortunate than Yu Tian Xing, because Ling loved him.

He made a vow, that from this day forth, he will not allow anyone in hurting Ling Xia at the slightest.

The peak cracks open, and Yu Zhi Jue dives down to quickly removed the seal on the Two Headed Flying Serpent. All the sect members that were located at the base of the mountain had already set up the confining spells at all sides in an organize manner, so that the serpent will be trap within the mountain.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent slammed its tail in retaliation. Yu Zhi Jue uses his spiritual power to absorb the shock, and was not thrown back by the attack.

His eyes turned into a purple color. He appeared near it's seal in an instance, and stabbed his ice sword on that seal, penetrating the Two Headed Flying Serpent's flesh…..

By the time the Two Headed Flying Serpent was completely subjugated, Yu Zhi Jue's shoulder were dripping with blood from being bitten by its venomous fangs.

When the sect members saw the Two Headed Flying Serpent flew upwards, everyone rejoices with their hands up in the air. Afterwards, they kneel on the ground in an orderly fashion and shouted loudly: "May the Demon King live for thousands of years!"

Yu Zhi Jue stood at the back of the Two Headed Flying Serpent, and looks down indifferently on the minuscule figures of those people below.

The things he once attached importance to, had no value on him now. At this moment, he only have his sights on one goal, and that is for Ling to come back!

After a month, he was waiting anxiously, but the magic device Shui Yue had set up did not recall Ling Xia's soul back as they imagined.

"Demon King," Shui Yue bowed in courtesy, and slowly asked, "Do you believe in the existence of an another world?"

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes while playfully casting ice crystals in his hands. The coldness in his heart had already reached its peak. He smiled and replied: "Are you making excuses for me to pardon your failure?"

Shui Yue was neither servile nor overbearing as he stood up: "This subordinate wouldn't dare. But this subordinate dares to surmise, with basis from the ancient scriptures this subordinate had once read that was transcribed on a mountain cavern."

"Many thousands of years ago, the first Dark Arts Sect's Demon King known as Chu Chen Zi, crafted and refined the forbidden magic device, Mu Xiao. While his Senior Martial Brother Zhai Xing Zi, crafted and refined the magic devices Darkened Stallion and The Crest of the Dragon to act as the balance to its power."

As he explains, he looked at Yu Zhi Jue's eyes and continued: "On the characters inscribed on The Crest of the Dragon, tells that Zhai Xing Zi uses these magic devices to pull a living person from the other world to this side. As soon as that person ceases to exist, Zhai Xing Zi passes the Mu Xiao as heirloom to succeeding Demon Kings, and sealed the Darkened Stallion and The Crest of the Dragon."

"The White Loch Guardian told this subordinate his suspicions. But this subordinate did not believe at all that Ling Xiong is another person who would use possession to conspire in eliminating the Grand Master——I'm quite sure, that what I saw years ago and what I saw today is the same soul."

"I won't die….."

Ling Xia's words suddenly echoed in Yu Zhi Jue's mind.

He had said that line more than once. The first time was years ago, when Ling Xia took the flogging punishment in his place. The second time, was when Ling Xia was lying in his arms.

He could not resist blurting out a question: “You suspect, that the reason why Ling Xia’s soul can’t be pulled back, was because he is trapped in that other world you are talking about?”

“More or less.” Shui Yue calmly raises his head and met Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze as he continued, “This subordinate starts to speculate that he is from the other world at the beginning, and with this subordinate’s crude knowledge in the art of astrology, I have never seen something like that before in my life.”

His heartbeat suddenly races. Ling Xia had never fooled him in any way before…..

His memories of the past suddenly started flashing back before his eyes like a revolving lantern. And among those memories, there are a lot of moments, where he suddenly realizes were peculiar.

A moment of clarity showed in his eyes for the first time. A ‘fool’ with countless loopholes and contradictions……..

Ling Xia had protected him in anyway possible, and did not act like the child he was supposed to be……

Is Ling Xia really a person who came from another world?

“So how can I get Ling back?” Yu Zhi Jue was not aware he spoke too impatiently.

Shui Yue looks at him and said: “Asking the Demon King to give this subordinate three years. But, the Demon King have to understand, that these magic devices that had existed for many millennia will grant your desire, but at the same time, will bring you adversity. It could even affect the great Demon King’s life.”

“It doesn’t matter.” The corner of Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes were slightly raised, “If this won’t help in bringing Ling back, then I’ll just destroy it——including you.”

Shui Yue lowered his head and said: “This subordinate is willing to place my core in line. If this subordinate failed your trust, then I’ll accept my tragic end!”

Yu Zhi Jue lightly chuckled: “What is your purpose, really?”

“I wanted to create and refine matchless and unrivaled magic devices in the whole world for the Demon King, so it may help the Demon King rule over this world. ” Shui Yue bowed down decisively and said, “And that, is this subordinate’s sole purpose.”

Yu Zhi Jue was slightly stunned inside, but his expression on the outside were unperturbed. He asked: “You don’t have the notion that feelings will hold me back?”

“This subordinate don’t believe so.” Shui Yue replied without the slightest hesitation, “A man with no heart nor emotions, is not capable of bringing out the greatest potential of this subordinate’s works. The great Demon King is the best candidate to use them, because the moment this subordinate laid their eyes on you, I knew it was so.”

Three years?

Is Ling Xia really a person from another world?

If that’s the case then what would he look like, how old would he be?

Does he look the same, or he looked entirely different?

And will his smile still be the same?

Yu Zhi Jue touches the dragon jade ornament on the elemental sword Ling Xia had crafted and gifted to him. He was lost in his thoughts of the memories of their past.

Because he was afraid that Ling Xia would laugh at his childish temper, he kept this thing hidden away. But most of the times, he would keep it in his body yet he wouldn't allow Ling Xia to find out about it.

The level of this magic sword is too low for him to use now. If strength is applied into it, the blade would be damaged. And Ling Xia's health was too poor at that time, so there wasn't a chance for it to be upgraded….

Three years had finally passed. Shui Yue had nearly exhausted his life energy into fusing the three magical devices, and sets it up for the initiation of the soul recall.

Once it was activated, it brought forth limitless power before Yu Zhi Jue.

Yu Zhi Jue unhesitatingly opened the entrance of its portal and walks into it. He heard the voice of the magic device beckoned to him——"Yu Zhi Jue, what is it that you desire?"

"I want to bring back my most important person here."

"And what would you sacrifice in exchange?"

"Everything——But if you can't bring him back, I can also destroy you."

"*Hehe*, Yu Zhi Jue, I'll grant it in exchange to half of your power——and memories."

"I won't give up my memories. But if necessary, then take Ling's memories away."

If forgetting those cherished memories would lead him to me, then so be it…..

Once I find him again, I'll make him fall in love with me.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 3

Ling Xia was clutching his travel backpack while crouching on the corner of the streets. He strokes his grumbling stomach as he watches the people that passes by.

It has been almost four days since he had came to this strange world.

At that time when he woke up, he found himself lost in a Jurassic like era of a forest where there are plants and animals he had never seen or encountered before. He wandered around in that forest for about three days, fighting off dangerous plants and beasts. And even though he managed to get out of there, he’s nearly starving to death.

The passing crowd wore bizarre set of clothes similar to those online game characters and their hairstyle were also varying in styles. Ling Xia gathered useful information by attentively listening to the conversations of the passing crowd.

Based on the conversation of those people strolling around the marketplace, there aren’t any sort of government in this world, all of them are divided into powerful sects. The place he is currently at belonged to the territory of the sect called Blood Fiend, and Blood Fiend Sect is a part of Dark Arts Sect.

The currency in this world is not gold nor silver. Instead, they convert energy stones into energy coins. Apart from common daily necessities, there are magic herbs, magic beast’s fur, medicinal pills, and magic devices that are being traded in here. Luckily for him, the language and writing here are similar to the ancient china.

The Dark Arts Sect call their supreme ruler, Demon King……

The current Great Demon King took office three years ago, blah blah blah…

Ling Xia discovered that, regardless if its the Righteous Sect or the Dark sect, they both have the same gossips.

Ling Xia was somehow puzzled. Why are these terms seemed so familiar to him? Its as if he had read it once on a novel or something with an incomplete ending…. But no matter what the ending is, or what the story is about, he can't seem to remember anything about it.

Shit, did I transmigrated into a book?

Nowadays its all about transmigration. Transmigrating into a book, transmigrating into a game, transmigrating into the ancient times….. There are loads of other men and women out there that could have transmigrated in his place! Yet he was the one who just had to be chosen?

It's no wonder that he had those inexplicable abilities, was it because he was bound to be transmigrated?

To become this foreign world's stallion character(aka harem master), he don't have the slightest bit of interest for such thing!

Regarding his newly found abilities, the first one is the ability to control plants. He could control the plants to grow in a certain extent and communicate with them——But the higher the plant's level, the more energy is being consumed. And according to this world's cultivation system, his abilities are within the scope of Wood Type Element.

The other one is physical abilities. He can now split a rock open, with just a smash of his fist!

He later developed a sort of bizarre ability, in which as he applied energy in his eyes, he can clearly see things during nighttime. Aside from that amazing ability, he could also maintain a reserve of energy in his body despite being in a state of extreme starvation. Maybe he might have more abilities, but he had yet to discover them all.

There was a delicious scent of barbecue wafting along the road, that Ling Xia mouth waters upon smelling it while avoiding the curious eyes of the

passing crowd.

He knows that his travel bag pack, clothes, and hair is out of place, since the people here are carrying a storing pouch, where despite its small size, could carry both their stuff and money.

The stuff inside his travel bag pack are things that he had already prepared before hand. Inside are his razor, towel, and a few change of clothes. But for the money he has, it was clear that there isn’t any place he could exchange it for food in this world.

Ling Xia creases his brow. It goes without saying that he wanted to find a part-time job, but he had a hard time finding an available job in this small town. He sighed in exasperation.

Do I have to catch some wild magic beast back in that forest to sell?

It was difficult for him just to get out of that place, so he was really afraid on going back there and getting lost again. Moreover, he experienced being hunted down by a group of small squirrel like animals as a food, just by talking about it makes him shameful!

He was just looking down and pondering about his next move, when a pair of black boots suddenly appeared right in front of him. Ling Xia raises his head in surprised, and saw a solemn young man staring back at him.

This young man was wearing black all over, and a sword was hanging on his waist. His posture was so straight, it resembled the temperament of a disciplined policeman.

Ling Xia felt anxious, is he being suspected as a spy or something?

That young man opened his mouth, and talked in a polite tone in the contrary: “Your name?”

Ling Xia stared blankly. The names in this world are rather quite strange. There are names that are specially long, and there are names that are very

short. Some are westernize, others are very eastern. There are names that doesn't have surname either….would his name be out of place in here?

He was in constant struggle within his thoughts, until he uttered a reply: "Dao Feng."

Dao Feng is the name of his magic pet on a game, and he heard someone calling some other person "Senior Brother Da Dao[1]", so this name shouldn't sound inconspicuous?

That young man no longer asks him any questions, and just left. Ling Xia felt baffled.

What was that about?

The strange setting of this world is not beneficial to him, but at least, they aren't ancient-minded people who expels anything that seemed strange. At most, they're just giving him the curious look.

Ling Xia was once again sitting on the corner of the streets, but soon, a beggar came over to kick him out, saying that it was his turf. He stood up without a fuss and left. He intends to have a go again in trying his luck.

Ling Xia walk over to take a look. As it turns out, the Blood Fiend sect are recruiting manpower for Bai Shou Yuan. In short, they're recruiting people who could be a zookeeper for a zoo. The pay for such job is five level one energy stones per day with food and accommodations. And when assigned to raise a high level magic beast, that pay is raised to twenty or more. For an average citizen, it is already quite a high pay.

When Ling Xia remembered those ferocious wild magic beasts in the forest, he was somehow struck with fear. But its better to raise magic beasts the size of a big tiger rather than get chase around by them…

He don't know how to go back in his world as well——And if he did manage to, it'll be also a disaster, since he had to live in a disguise everyday like superman. He had no other choice but to find an accommodation and a steady job first. Familiarize himself with the surroundings, then make plans.

Ling Xia motivates himself for a moment, urging himself to try his luck. In order for him to fill his stomach, raising those tigers now is the way.

The distance of the Bai Shou Yuan is two hundred Li from here, but the registration area is nearby. Ling Xia goes to the posted announcement, then went to the designated area on the post. Immediately, he unexpectedly received a set of clothes for new hires and two one level energy stones. He was then under the impression that the Blood Fiend Sect was rather quite a generous and easy mannered place.

Ling Xia's heart jumped in delight. He immediately ran and went to buy himself some porridge and stuffed meat buns, he then ate until he was full.

There are a lot of normal citizens that signed up, and about ten guards managing the registration. Ling Xia and the others wore the uniforms for workers and was taken to the magic beasts after. It was effortless for him, but the others are wheezing as they catches up. Once they passes by three to four more small garrison, the cluttered queue following along gradually lessened. When Ling Xia counted, there were only about thirty or more remaining——It seemed like the scale of this zoo is not small.

And at last, they arrived at the Bai Shou Yuan. The Bai Shou Yuan practically occupied the mountain and spans dozens of Li in circumference, surrounded by wilderness at all sides. Ling Xia looks around the scenery, his heart increasingly sinks for he originally came from a bustling city. But it's ok, he'll just have to get a magic beast companion to take him down the mountain valleys.

The lead disciple carefully surveyed the crowd, then pointed at Ling Xia and said: "You, step forward."

Ling Xia apprehensively walked forward, then that disciple soon pointed to a few more people. Ling Xia just then slowly realized, that he was pick along others based from the fact that they appeared to be physically fit.

Next, the lead disciple quickly distributed a waist plate on them, and shouted to Ling Xia and the others that the yellow waist plate signifies that they are assigned to take care of level three magic beasts. Those with lesser

physical strength are given green waist plate and are assigned to level two magic beasts.

Ling Xia followed a senior beast caretaker in. This middle-aged beast caretaker's appearance looked good-natured, and was called Hong Lin. Ling Xia remembered his own fake name, and it made him snicker when he was called "Xiao Dao"[2].

At the time of sleeping, he was lying on a plank bed along with thirty guys crammed with him on the same hall. All over the place were sounds of snoring, talking in their sleeps, and various weird odors.

Ling Xia creases his brows while turning and tossing around, unable to fall asleep. Hong Lin said that, only those capable of raising level five magic beast and above are entitled to having their own room assignment. He will definitely strive hard to familiarize himself with the practice of raising magic beasts, then he will request to take care of high level ones as soon as possible.

He and Hong Lin were assigned to level three magic beasts known as "green wing". They are a beautiful magic beast similar to peacocks. The place they were being raised in was the size of two basket ball courts, with the surrounding and the top side covered with protective nets.

Although Ling Xia likes small furry animals like dogs and cats, he can't help but be entranced at the look of this bird. While Hong Lin meticulously puts on metal cap on his head and protective garments, he noticed that Ling Xia was distractedly looking around. He knitted his brows and said: "This type of animal is quite dangerous, you better be careful Xiao Dao!"

Hong Ling smiles at him amicably and had his full attention to the younger generation.

Ling Xia was reminded of his experiences in that forest. He nodded his head quick and puts on the same protective gear as Hong Lin. On that forest, he ran across to undoubtedly cute and small animals, and yet, they can swallow prey a lot bigger then them…….

The Green Wing's food are common grass snakes. Hong Lin mentioned the box containing it, opened the lid, and pours out the snakes inside. Those Green Wing saw the food and started partaking, while letting out a sharp shrill that makes a man nervous from hearing it. Ling Xia's scalp felt like it was tingling at the site of those snakes moving on the box he was carrying. It was the main fodder for the brooding Green Wing's birds.

Ling Xia asked: "Hey, what are these birds used for?"

This place is not like a normal zoo, where people pay for entrance tickets and visit the animals being raised.

Hong Lin's mouth uttered a shush, hinting to Ling Xia to talk later. He moved meticulously, as if he's cautious of those snakes not falling down on the ground but on himself. Ling Xia quickly breathes quietly, and imitated his method of pouring those snakes out to the brooding Green Wings.

As soon as they got out and closes the entrance, Hong Lin took off the metal cap and said while gasping: "Xiao Dao, next time you go in, you must lower your voice as much as possible. Those Green Wings are gluttonous and aggressive. If you alarm them, the aftermath would be very terrible!"

Ling Xia was frightened by what Hong Lin said and hastily nodded. He apologetically said: "I'm really sorry senior brother Hong. I'm not from this place, so I'm not knowledgeable about these magic beasts."

"No wonder." Hong Lin carried the boxes with Ling Xia and they walked back together. On their way, he explained, "The feathers of these Green Wings may not be rare, but they are actually a favorite food of those high level magic beasts."

Ling Xia suddenly realizes, that they are actually currently raising food for high level magic beasts!

The Green Wings are gluttonous creatures, so they need to be fed four times a day, for three consecutive days. Ling Xia soon became accustomed in handling snakes that the complexion of his face no longer changes.

Sleeping at night and taking a bath was still a major problem. Sometimes, Ling Xia had no choice but to cover his nose with his clothes. If not, the stink wafting around the hall will suffocate him and he'll be unable to get sleep at all.

Ling Xia couldn't take it anymore and asked Hong Lin: "Senior brother Hong, how do I apply to take care of the feeding of high level magic beasts?"

Hong Lin look at him and casually replied: "Xiao Dao, you haven't been here for too long, so why are you thinking about raising high level magic beasts already? It's better to make do with small pay, so you don't have to risk it."

With just little strength won't get much pay off, and Hong Lin believes the Ling Xia is only an ordinary person.

Ling Xia thought of those magic beast he had fought off bigger than a tiger, so he was more or less confident. He recounted that moment and described that magic beast's appearance to Hong Lin. During that time in the forest, he was in adrenaline rush, that when that magic beast pounces on him with its claws raised towards him, he lifted its body halfway its attack and slammed it down with forced——afterwards, because he was so nervous and afraid, he jumped up on top of a tree, and ran away in an instant.

Hong Lin was dumbfounded and his jaw dropped. According to Ling Xia's description, what he encountered must be the level four magic beast Bao Chong. So this gentle and feeble looking young man is unexpectedly capable of escaping the claws of Bao Chong!

Ling Xia was slightly upset with the way he was being look at, so he quickly explained: "My strength is a bit powerful….."

Hong Lin seemed like he was somewhat considering and said: "Xiao Dai, you haven't learned about your body's innate talent, have you?"

Innate talent? Why does that term seemed familiar to Ling Xia. He shook his head and replied: “I came from a small remote town, and haven’t gotten along with anyone yet, so I haven’t.”

Hong Lin patted his shoulders: “If that’s the case, you should look for the disciples in charge to talk about it, and once you get transferred to take care of high level magic beasts, the pay will be much higher.”

Everyone was calling the leading disciple “Senior Brother Jing”. Ling Xia ate his lunch at noon and looked for him afterwards, he then explained his purpose for coming. Jing Ge observed him, and asks him to lift up a boulder half a man’s height. Ling Xia breathes in for a moment, then lifts up that boulder in one movement. The complexion of his face not changing as he throws it away somewhere far.

Jing Ge nodded his head and praised him: “Right, your aptitude is not bad. Tomorrow you’ll be assigned with Wan Yan to take care of level five Bald Eagles——Go to the store room and get your red waist plate, set of bedding, and have the store room disciple take you to an empty room.”

Ling Xia can’t help but rejoice. He faintly smiled and replied: “Many thanks Senior Brother Jing!”

Even though it was a single room, but it was only a small room about ten square meters in size. Nevertheless, Ling Xia was perfectly contented, and had a good night sleep he seldom have.

Bonbon translation notes:
[1] Da Dao – The translation of this name was ‘Sword’ while Ling Xia’s fake name was ‘Knife’.
[2] Ling Xia snickered because his name became ‘Small Knife’ with the added Xiao-suffix.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 4

The next day, around five to seven am, Ling Xia got out of the bed and meets up with Wan Yan and the others assigned with him to feed those Bald Eagles.

Level five Bald Eagles already possesses certain amount of intelligence, and the place where they are being raised is much bigger than that of the Green Wings, though it was situated farther to the back of the mountains and near the steep cliffs. Even though the numbers of this species are dwindling, but the chicks of the bald eagle are in life and death situation early on since the mature Bald Eagles rarely rear them. They are out almost the entire day and when they return, the young chicks may have suffered from starvation and dies. This is where the people in charge of feeding comes in and take care of the chicks.

Ling Xia and Wan Yan hopped inside the cart pulled by a magic beast. There were containers inside the cart that are filled with fresh red meat in various sizes——but all were feed for the eagles. The other two men that was with them were in separate cart and was following behind.

They were traveling for about half an hour in a bumpy ride until finally, they arrived at the back of the mountain. During the journey, Wan Yan was telling Ling Xia important pointers in rearing Ling Xia memorizes it all. Once they were done talking, they remained quiet for the rest of the journey. The reason was they are not far from where the mature eagles are nesting all year round——If their noise agitated it, everyone’s life might be in peril.

Everyone packed their own respective share of meat into their bamboo baskets and carried it on their backs. They throws down the rope at the edge of the cliff, then proceeded to climb down cautiously. Even though Ling Xia had never participated in any activities relating to mountain climbing, but with his now light and strengthen body as well as his fast and keen sense, he climbed down smoothly.

They quickly reached the cracks on the crevice, where every eagle nests are located.

Wan Yan pointed at a cave on an overhanging stone platform down below, he implied that it was a cave where a mature Bald Eagle lives, and asks Ling Xia to be extra careful.

Those young chicks had grown into a size comparable to mature ducks and chickens. Their beaks were sharp and pointed, but they haven't develop their wings that looked similar to a bat, yet looked more ferocious. Ling Xia counted them, totaling to about thirty chicks.

As what Wan Yan explained before, there are more male Bald Eagles than female ones. And the duration of incubation took around three years, that's why there are only few of them. If they didn't feed those chicks in time, its possible that this chicks might resort to cannibalism.

The chicks smelled the scent of meat, and immediately chirps loudly. Ling Xia quickly imitated the way they throw the meat at those chicks. Those chicks appetite are enormous. And even if they are done eating their fill, they are compelled by their greediness and would snatch the meat of other chicks and take it on their own nest. Ling Xia watches the fierce fight between chicks as if it was a cockfight, and it made his scalp tingle—— They were already this ferocious at such a young age, what more if they grow into a mature Bald Eagle?

Once the meat has been distributed, Ling Xia uses a leaf to wipe the grease off his hands and followed Wan Yan in leaving the place.

This work was done for ten consecutive days. Ling Xia felt that his strength became stronger and his foothold became steadier that he thought he don't even need a rope to climb up and down on the edge of the cliff anymore. It's just that, he never reveal it towards Wan Yan and other's while he's with them.

The morning came and Ling Xia and the others are on their way to climb the mountain. But the strong torrent of rain has yet to ceased from the night before, making the river current flows violently, and turn the dirt mountain

road muddy and difficult to travel on. The schedule of feeding the eagle chicks cannot be delayed, so Ling Xia and the others hopped down from the cart, and carried the baskets containing the feed on their backs as they climbed up the mountains.

Despite the situation, they arrived at the eagle's nest without a hitch. But because of hunger, those eagle chicks had already started fighting with each other so everyone hastily throws the meat to them.

On their way down to the mountain, Wan Yan was carelessly walking and slipped. It was difficult for him to maintain his balance because of the muddy ground, and with a loud 'Ahh!' he came tumbling down.

Everyone was too shocked except for Ling Xia, who quickly ran after him without much thought. He chases after Wan Yan for a couple of meters in distance until he managed to grab him by the arm to pull him back. The rope tied on him for support got loose, causing Ling Xia to get drag down with him. When Ling Xia fell at the edge of the cliff, he stopped his falling momentum by grabbing onto the protruding platform and standing onto it. Ling Xia looks down at the bottomless abyss, and quickly looked the other way, his head started to profuse with cold sweat.

The other men with him wasn't brave enough to call out to him in a loud voice, and only yelled towards him with toned down voices: "Xiao Dao, stay put. We'll climb up first and throw you a rope to climb on.

Ling Xia nodded to them. Pulling Wan Yan up didn't tire him up, but because the cliff was too steep, Wan Yan was frightened and was squirming too much while grabbing tightly on Ling Xia's wrist, making Ling Xia have difficult time getting a proper foothold.

Ling Xia suddenly sense an imposing feeling behind him, as if something was watching them!

He look around in vigilance, and suddenly jumped in fright——It turns out, they are currently located only seven to eight meters in distance near that cave where Ling Xia was told that a mature Bald Eagle dwells!

A humongous shadow of a bird slowly struts out of the mountain cave, and as expected, its entire body to its prominent head is white, with its sharp eagle eyes firmly staring at them. But something was strange. The plumage on this Bald Eagle's upper body were scarce, to the point that it was not that much different than the eagle chicks. The bare pink skin was even peeking out, the look it gives was seemingly unsightly.

It was that Bald Eagle that had its plumage burned by Ah Li years ago. The damage on its burnt plumage did not improved, even though Chu Yin tried everything he could. Chu Yin could not solve its predicament on the following years, and because of that, it was more discouraged with its unsightly appearance. It hid on the nesting area of the Bald Eagles while mulling in self-inferiority everyday, only to come out at this moment.

Wan Yan couldn't help but scream in fright. Those bloody rumors about the Bald Eagles scared him so much he was squirming his way to the rocks wanting to climb up. His abrupt movements caught the Bald Eagle's attention more. It spreads it demonic-like wings, and flew straight to the two people hanging on the edge of the cliff like a meteor.

The strong gust it created practically prevented them from opening their eyes. The Bald Eagle sets its eyes at Wan Yan first and aimed its claw at him as it swoop over, wanting to tear him apart!

The other two men on top of the cliff saw what's happening below. They recognized the eagle that was originally a level eight beast, but because it was seriously injured, its level dropped down to six. Even so, several average cultivators could not easily handle it, let alone common people?

The other two scampered cowardly on their own down the mountain. They did not have the courage to shout, fearing that they might attract its attention.

Ling Xia became aware that the situation is dire. He yelled loudly as he let go of his hold on the rocks and jumped up in time to grab tightly on the Bald Eagle's talons, and dragging it towards them.

The Bald Eagle didn’t expect that this human would have the audacity to grab its talons, and was immediately infuriated, so it nosedive down the cliff in great speed to lose Ling Xia’s hold. That fast movement made Ling Xia disoriented, nevertheless, he still firmly held on to the Bald Eagle’s leg without loosening his grip. Wan Yan was almost stupefied from what he’s seeing, but he forces his trembling lips to call out to Ling Xia while holding firmly on to the ledge: “Xiao, Xiao Dao…..”

The Bald Eagle was rather impatient in throwing him off, so it lets out a sharp cry and flew towards the rocks. Ling Xia knew that it was not good. While he’s disconcerted, he finally remembered that energy flowing inside his body. He hastily evoke it, and applied that power to his waist as he swing upwards and jumped on top of the Bald Eagle’s body.

Ling Xia was nervous and thrilled at the same time. He quickly wrapped both of his legs firmly on the Bald Eagle’s neck, and recklessly clung on to the remaining plumage on its head with his hands.

The Bald Eagle bellowed a blood-curling screech, the sound was echoing in the sky. In reality, its plumage is very resilient, it won’t be pulled off by an average person. But it was traumatized by Ah Li, so it didn’t have the courage to move around carelessly, fearing that Ling Xia might pluck its very slowly growing plumage by clutching tightly on it.

Ling Xia was amazed to discover that the Bald Eagle slowed down into a steady flight, but he wasn’t still confident in letting go, in fact, he clutches on tighter. The Bald Eagle pitifully cried, since it no longer wanted to attack him, but it didn’t know how to communicate in human language. So in what way could it make peace with him!

One man and one eagle was suddenly in a deadlock. The Bald Eagle was cooped up in its nest for far too long, so it steadily flew up with anticipation, bringing Ling Xia along in an ascending height.

Ling Xia was astounded to see the vast blue sky as if it was almost within his reach. The clumps of white misty clouds surrounded him. The sun even seemed like it was much bigger than usual. He looked down below him and

saw the layers of cloud beneath him. How much higher does this Bald Eagle intended to bring him into?

He had never seen such a beautiful scene before, so he was actually somewhat dumbfounded at the sight.

The Bald eagle was hovering up and down in its flight, but it made sure that it was smooth and steady. Ling Xia who was rigidly holding on gradually relaxes. He even shifted his butt in a more comfortable sitting position. He was somehow astonished, did this Bald Eagle unexpectedly turned docile? He simple couldn't fathom it…….

His palms were soaked with cold sweat, so he unwittingly let go of his hold on the Bald Eagle's neck to wipe it off. The Bald Eagle paused for a moment, and immediately thought of throwing Ling Xia off, so it rotated sideways in a beautifully executed turns.

Ling Xia shouted "Ahh!" as his body involuntarily swerved towards the right. He hastily grabbed onto the Bald Eagle's neck firmly. He almost vomited at the sudden movements. He didn't know why the Bald Eagle suddenly went wild, so he just tightened his hold onto it. And because of that, Bald Eagle became more rowdy and violent.

Ling Xia accidentally clutches onto the Bald Eagle's plumage, making the rage of this Bald Eagle deflate like a ball and became calm once more.

As a result, Ling Xia finally realizes this Bald Eagle's weak point. So it was deeply affected whenever he touches those gloomy and dull feathers on its head! Those feathers that doesn't really compliment the eagle at all!

He tugged at those feathers several time with force, and threateningly yelled out: "Bring me back! Now!"

The Bald Eagle droop its head and hovered in circles for a few times before diving down. It was filled with frustrations but had nowhere to vent it on.

It soon flew back to that cliff, on the ledge where Wan Yan was still pitifully stranded. He saw that Bald Eagle flying towards him and almost fainted from fright. But when he saw Ling Xia riding that Bald Eagle, his jaw dropped so low a chicken egg could fit in it!

“Senior Brother Wan Yan, jump up!” Ling Xia did not dare to loosen his grip, and only ushered the Bald Eagle to get closer.

Wan Yan unconsciously shook his head, but his hand holding onto the rocks are already starting to tremble, and will soon no longer be able to hold on.

Ling Xia creases his brow and said: “Hurry!”

Wan Yan finally gathered his courage and jumped up. The Bald Eagle was fuming with rage as it took them up the cliff.

Ling Xia signaled Wan Yan to escape first. Since the moment he let go of his hand, this Bald Eagle’s temperament quickly changes. It was hard to say, but they might get attacked once they jumped down.

Wan Yan looked at Ling Xia with hesitation, but in the end, he ran away in a rush.

He watches as Wan Yan’s silhouette gradually disappeared into the distance, and once he’s gone, Ling Xia breathed a sigh of relief. At this moment, he had yet to think of a way to handle this Bald Eagle. He was quiet for some time until he asked: “Will you still attack me once I let go?”

Upon talking, he can’t help but laugh at himself. He was talking to this feather lopped beast, but will the bird understand any of it?

It understood what he just said, as the Bald Eagle softly uttered a sound like it was admitting defeat.

Would they have to be in constant standstill here?

Another half an hour had passed. Ling Xia evoked his energy towards his legs, and jumped straight down the mountain. He knows that the Bald Eagle

will catches up soon, so he made his way straight to the dense woods, and was frantically running away without looking back.

He kept running away but upon not hearing any sound of commotion behind him, Ling Xia was unable to resist turning his head back to sneak a peek. From afar, that Bald Eagle was depressingly drooping its head down, with a look as if it was a child that was bullied, with no hints of having any intention to seek revenge at all.

Ling Xia was dumbstruck, but he still hastily went down the mountain. He was returning late so there could be people looking for him.

Just now, he surprisingly find that bald headed eagle kinda cute…..what the fuck!?

Subjected to a frightening experience, Wan Yan and the others seeks the disciple in charge for a request to change assignment, but that disciple in charge merely gave them an indifferent glance, and the three of them lost their courage to say more. Ling Xia consoled them with a few words, but he himself was not sure. Even though that Bald Eagle was violent, once he remembers that pitiful look as if it was a maltreated daughter in law, he finds it quite funny, and the fear in him slowly dissipated until nothing was left.

The next day, Ling Xia saw the other three staying still at the cart while trembling in fear. He chuckled and said: “You guys can wait for me on top, I’ll go down first.”

The other three valued their life first, so even if it was cowardly, they still remained at the top of the cliff. On the contrary, Ling Xia was quite relaxed as he went on his own. He quickly climbed down the cliff. and fed those hungry chicks. Later on, he urges the other three to go back first, because they might get more traumatized if they see what will happen next.

At the bottom of his basket are fully cooked chunk of meat that were flavored with different seasonings until it was very appetizing. He now had a few savings, so he specifically spent some money to have the disciple in the kitchen to cook it for him.

He was thinking of taming and training that Bald Eagle. What he realized during his stay in this world, is that most people had their own magic beast with mutually agreed contract signed between them. If he is to survive in this bizarre world, then he must become stronger.

Ling Xia climbed further down the cliff and carefully went near that cave's mouth, he then throws that piece of cooked meat inside.

He waited for quite a long while, until that Bald Eagle appeared in a flash ——It quickly took the meat into its mouth, but it didn't gave him a glance. Even so, Ling Xia wasn't discouraged. He lightly smiled and climbed up the cliff with the bamboo basket on his back.

But why does he suddenly feels like he had done the same thing before……

He continued to feed it for several days. And today, when he's about to climb up after he's done, he suddenly heard gust of wind behind him. He turned his head around, and was flabbergasted to see that Bald Eagle flapping his wings behind him not from afar, with its drooping head that gives an impression of a bullied child.

Ling Xia raises the corner of his mouth.

……Life, is strange. A life with the eagle should be very promising! But will that eagle have that crestfallen look every single day?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 5

Ling Xia had always noticed that this Bald Eagle is depressed most of the time! Except when it was enthusiastically flying in the air, it would just loiter around its cave with an expression of extreme boredom. It doesn't even interacts with him, just exhibiting an autism like behavior.

He more or less figured it out. It was most likely ashamed to see other eagles because of its problem with its plumage. Will it not live on if its bald? Even this great uncle[1] will go bald after a few decades!

He made some inquiries from those adept beast keeper. According to them, Bald Eagles are magic beasts that has a long life span, with the longest life span reaching around two to three hundred years. This Bald Eagle appears to be around fifty to sixty years, still a youthful years in its kind.

What is more tragic is the fact that the ratio of this species is five female to one male, with a monogamous type of relationship. The female eagles also heavily value the appearance of the males. And with this Bald Eagle's current state, it's chances of finding a mate is unlikely.

Ling Xia's intuition tells him that this Bald Eagle is a male. During the evening, Ling Xia takes the Bald Eagle to the river bank for a wash. He was very cautious not to smell its scent, for it was too stinky! Even if the plumage is beautiful, won't the female back off if they caught a whiff of its scent?

Ling Xia pushes the eagle into the water, then carefully gave it a rinse while avoiding the roots of its precious plumage, for fear that it may go haywire. There are a lot of medicinal magic herbs in this world, won't there be one that can cure its hair loss?

Ling Xia patted its body while talking by himself: "I'm telling you, don't be sad. I'll definitely find a way to cure your molting."

The Bald Eagle dispiritedly caw in reply. How can its molting be fixed?

It took a great effort for Ling Xia to give it a clean wash, then towed it back to the shore. He patted its neck and asked: “Do you have a name? If you don’t, then how about I give you one?”

The Bald Eagle’s eyes sparkled for a moment, then it replied with a loud and clear caw.

Its master rarely gave his magic beasts a name. And for more than ten years the eagle was following Chu Yin, Chu Yin had never gave it one. He always calls it ‘animal’ or any other names he fancied, then impatiently kicks it around, without even signing a contract with it. When that four-legged enemy of his actually had a proper name, and was also being tenderly petted by humans everyday, it makes the eagle burn in jealousy.

So when it heard this young man cheerfully said that he will give it a name, the Bald Eagle almost bursts into tears.

Ling Xia was not particularly good at thinking of names, and this Bald Eagle is not the cute type as puppies and kittens….After a while, he strokes the Bald Eagle’s head and said: “How about I call you Da Bai(Lit. trans. Big White)?”

The Bald Eagle gave him a dejected look, the expression on its eyes were somehow aggrieved. Since it couldn’t clearly express its disapproval, Ling Xia settled in calling it “Da Bai”, then stroke its head again. The Bald Eagle squinted its eyes and lowered its neck, with an obvious look of enjoying the affection.

After feeding the chicks everyday, he would always ride Da Bai into the sky for half an hour. A man and an eagle slowly came into an understanding. Da Bai also slowly cheers up, and that gloomy aura it emitted all over seemed like it vanished.

Ling Xia fed the daily big chunk of meat to Da Bai, then he softly combed its feathers. Da Bai was in a good mood, so it unconciously flew farther than usual with Ling Xia. Ling Xia also got distracted in watching

the beautiful scenery of the sky, and was only able to come into senses once the sun had started to set.

Ling Xia was worried he'll miss dinner, so he hurriedly urges Da Bai to go back.

Da Bai obediently turned around to go back. Just as it contentedly spread its wide wings, its back suddenly turned rigid. Ling Xia could feel its feathers rises up in alarm. He was somehow amazed, as he rarely see Da Bai encounter a formidable adversary in the sky. There were times that Da Bai would even drive away other birds around it, be it small or huge, so why it is suddenly so nervous?

Da Bai began flying faster. It even recklessly glides down as if its life depended on it. Its sharp senses that warns it of danger made the eagle utterly nervous. Ling Xia was being lunge into a strong air pressure that he nearly stopped breathing. He hastily clutches on to Da Bai's neck.

He soon got to know what's going on, as he also felt something unusually fast approaching them quickly. It's speed was actually much quicker than Da Bai! That something was emanating an intense surge of power. Even from afar, it could still make it hard for Ling Xia to breath.

He was dumbstruck when he turned his head around. He saw an enormous silhouette with two separate heads from the above of a distant layer of clouds approaching them. He jumped in fright.

What the hell is that thing?

The birds in their vicinity had also started to feel the ominous danger, so they all cried out and scattered in all directions.

Ling Xia's scalp tingled upon looking. He hadn't turn back in front, when a whistling sound echoed from the air. Da Bai suddenly made a turn so Ling Xia avoided being hit by an incoming wind blade.

The Two Head Flying Serpent had been flying the whole day, and right now, it could no longer endure its hunger. Yu Zhi Jue was sleeping on its

back with his leg crossed on top of his other knee, so the Two Headed Flying Serpent could only fly in the sky as light as possible while keeping its eye on the Bald Eagle it was preying on in front of it!

It saw the Bald Eagle dodges its attack, so it launches more wind blades towards it to cut off its escape route downwards, and forces it to continue flying up.

It became clear to Ling Xia that the situation is dire, so he squatted halfway in the direction of Da Bai's back, then streamed the energy in his body and focuses it in both sole of his feet to stabilize his balance. The moment Da Bai could no longer dodges its attack, he immediately raises his palm, and concentrated his spiritual energy into it to deflect the violent impact of the wind blades. Upon collision, it pushes him and Da Bai much further ahead, greatly increasing the distance between them and the attacker.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent was extremely furious, that it descended from the layer of clouds it was flying at. Its sinister appearance almost made Ling Xia scream.

This monster is too hideous!

In front view were two gigantic triangular shaped snake heads, with two long pair of fangs and a forked tongue slithering in between. Its back side is an elongated body with a gigantic and powerful wings on its back. Its body was covered with black stone like scales.

Ling Xia could vaguely see a fluttering piece of purple cloth on top of it. Is there someone sitting on top of that monster? Is that person making this monster attack them?

Once the Two Headed Flying Serpent inhaled deeply, and Ling Xia watches as it crooked its neck, he knew that it was far from good. As he expected, after a moment later, it spats out a powerful clear air ball from its mouth, and shot it straight to their position.

When the Two Headed Flying Serpent was just descending down earlier, Yu Zhi Jue was already alerted by its abrupt movement. But he didn't mind it, since this beast gets hungry so quickly most of the time. He thoughtlessly looks down, and his pupils suddenly contracts. The blood flowing in his body seemed to have been frozen.

It was as if time had slowed down, as the Two Headed Flying Serpent blasted and air sphere to that man with fringe on his forehead and had a slightly long straight black hair. Those gentle looking eyes he displayed was similar to that earnest and resolute expression in his memories…..

Yu Zhi Jue didn't have much time to think. He ordered the Two Headed Flying Serpent to stop its attacks, and flung an energy blade to intercept the blast. His attack made it on time and it redirected the blast to the side.

Even though it was the case, Ling Xia and Da Bai was still pushed back by the shock wave it had created and they were separated. Ling Xia was forcibly spiraled into the air several times, while he unconsciously extended his hands frantically to grab onto something. Not for long, a burning and powerful arms encircled in his waist, and pulls him along as they flew up.

Ling Xia was kicking his foot in panic until it came contact on a solid surface. Only then did his realized that he was standing on the back of that two headed monster! He turned his head around in shock, and came across a pair of clear and beautiful eyes behind a silver mask looking back at him in a daze. That man's sleeve drooping on him seemed like it was faintly trembling.

Ling Xia was absentminded for a short while, but he immediately recovered as he moved two steps backwards.

This mask wearing guy made his beast attack me, so what is this guy catching me for?

He was just thinking about Dao Bao, when he saw it sweep by in the corner of his eyes. He realizes that it already caught its bearings back so he lets out a sigh of relief.

He was just about to start his questioning, but the other person had open his mouth first. His deep and magnetic voice were a bit strained: “You….what is your name?”

Ling Xia was stunned as his eyes widened in surprise.

What does this man mean?

He forces himself to stay calm and replied: “Fellow brother, what’s your purpose in having your magic beast attack us?”

The guarded and estranged look in his eyes were as if he was looking at a total stranger….

Yu Zhi Jue’s gut twisted, but he soon recover his senses. He clenches his fist tightly and got to the heart of the matter once more: “Name?”

An immense power pressured Ling Xia that he had difficulty breathing. He hurriedly circulated the energy in his whole body to withstand that might. He knitted his brows and said with difficulty: “Ling Xia. May I dare to ask what is fellow brother’s family name?”

Although he had already gotten used to introducing himself to other people as Xiao Dao, but under this circumstances, he couldn’t think clearly so he accidentally blurted his real name. He tried his best to calm down as he looked back at the other person, except that the man seemed to have been petrified. A long while had passed and the other man had yet to respond.

From that familiar look and mannerisms, Yu Zhi Jue could already determine that it was truly him. But, when he heard his name, it still made him unable to stop his chest from churning, the corner of his eyes were even heating up.

I’ve waited too long, for this man who always disappear time and time again.

Those days of waiting, was too long, and too unbearable….

This time, I will never let him leave my side again, no matter what!

Ling Xia can’t help but be dazzled by those scorching eyes concentrating on him. That gaze of this man looks as if it wanted to swallow him whole! He couldn’t resist moving one more step backwards, and putting his guard up.

As he took that step, he discovered that the scenery before his eyes had completely changed. He could faintly see the moonlight being reflected into a clear stream of water. But before he could take a clearer look, his eyes were enveloped in an endless darkness.

Yu Zhi Jue impatiently brought Ling Xia to his space dimension——a space ability that he was able to cultivate two years ago. He badly misses this person’s taste, he wanted to strip his whole body naked!

After blocking Ling Xia’s eye sight, Yu Zhi Jue immediately took off the mask. He knows that he shouldn’t let Ling Xia see his face. Since the other person is looking at him like he was a total stranger, the best way is to make him fall in love with him again. But right now, he just can’t help himself!

The smell of the warm skin under his palm were all too familiar, it was making him crazy in wanting to possess it at once.

He quickly took off the outer robe and threw it on the floor. He pushes Ling Xia down and trapped him between his arms, impatiently kissing those pair of lips. Tasting that flavor after a long time made his chest involuntarily trembled. Nevertheless, the void in his stomach was immediately filled up.

When his body suddenly falls down, and his lips blocked up, Ling Xia was completely dumbfounded. By the time he recovered his senses, the other person had already inserted his nimble tongue into his mouth, entangling it with his own, and licking along his teeth. It’s great vigor made him almost unable to breath.

He could feel the man’s warm muscles and hot breath on his body, both were making him ashamed and resentful that he was itching to dig a pit and jumped into it.

Fucking hell! Is this guy a pervert?! This Lao Zi's first kiss ahhhhh! ! ! !

Bro, are you that hungry and thirsty? Don't you care that your making this Lao Zi sick?

Ling Xia's face was thoroughly flushed. He forcefully turned his head from side to side, as he struggles to get away from the other person's hold like a fish taken out of water, but he was still being pressed down effortlessly by that man. He was flustered and exasperated that he wanted to bite down hardly, but his jaw was immediately held in place, and was forced to received the kisses that seemed like it wanted to swallow everything.

He lets out a few uncomfortable sobbing sounds, his whole body trembling as the energy inside it was sapped out.

Sensing that the men below him were out of sort, Yu Zhi Jue reluctantly raises his head. He was entranced as he looks at Ling Xia's flushed cheeks because of anger and his eyes that were covered with misty moisture.

His appearance looked very similar……except for his previously pale whit skin that now looked much healthier, light color of wheat.

Yu Zhi Jue secured Ling Xia to the ground with a binding spell, then he softly traces his eyes, brows, nose bridge, and his lips……He stroked that swollen soft red lips from their kiss just a while ago with the sole of his thumb. He was a bit vexed, but the clarity in his eyes was slightly restored.

Yu Zhi Jue restrained his heart that has been calling out Ling Xia's name countless times, and the rising heat from his body with all his might. He could not take his eyes off Ling Xia, as if he was afraid that the body beneath him will disappear like always.

Ling Xia's scalp tingled from those touches. He could feel the other man's scorching gaze on him. Being in the darkness, as well as being unable to move, made his tense chest stretch taught, his heart jumped up to his throat.

He strive to calm himself, and kept his voice unruffled at all cost as he spoke :”Fellow brother, what do you think you are doing?”

Fuck! Don’t sound so pitiful! Even though I attracted a gay like this before, but will the gay in this realm won’t let me run away at all?

When Yu Zhi Jue sees his forced calmness and stubborn appearance, the affection in his heart overflowed. He can’t resist coming closer to the other person’s earlobe and intimately nibbled it. He feigned a threatening voice and said: “If you want to bite me again, I’ll take you.” He reaches his hands on both sides of Ling Xia’s butt, and was slowly fondling it. Even though there was a cloth in between, the tactile sensation still made his stomach twitch.

He was pleased to see that Ling Xia’s ears had once again turned bright red up to the base and his eyelashes quivering. He ambiguously caress the other man’s face a few times, then he moved down once again, and planted a delicate kiss as he sucked those blood red petal like lips.

Ling Xia was almost to the point of fainting from lack of breath. If he could, he would’ve have kick this damn pervert flying! He may be a superman in his world, but in here, his strength is actually next to useless! Why does this Lao Zi have to transmigrate!

He didn’t dare to move his mouth again. Soon his body had turned stiff and heavy, while his head was dizzy from lack of air.

Two men kissing is very disgusting ok?

However, the other person’s actions were not that frantic anymore that it could make someone freak out, instead, it became an inconceivable tender movements. He only kept kissing and kissing Ling Xia. That man traces his lips with gentle licks, and kept doing it as if he could keep at it forever without getting sick of it.

Ling Xia held his breath, as that soft and numbing peculiar feeling from his lips gradually spreads throughout his body. His face was burning red with shame, and yet, his heart was racing faster and faster. Even though he

was being oppressively toyed with, but the sounds that he was letting out were ambiguous panting moans.

Shit, this fucking pervert is still not done?

That man's tongue had once again drilled its way into his mouth. Ling Xia gasps for breath, the nerves in his entire body was stretch taut, and his back was uncontrollably trembling.

But the feeling it gave him was not that strong fear he had just now…… this time it just……made his mind go blank.

The taste of the kiss was just like a sweet dream that makes someone tremble. Not only it was unusually familiar, Ling Xia even thought that something similar was done to him in an inappropriate dream, so he was unawaringly responding. The man before him became more excited, he entangled his hand to Ling Xia's hair on the back of his head, and presses Ling Xia's head closer to him for a deeper kiss. He incessantly changes the angle of kiss, and kept at it until there's no more blood flowing in Ling Xia's lips.

Their intertwining hot panting breath became even more and more intimately mixing, with not enough moment to even swallow the overflowing saliva at the corner of their lips.

The surging waves of desire building up inside his body could no longer be contained. It was difficult to bear that Yu Zhi Jue ripped Ling Xia's clothes open, fondly caressing his skin with his lips and hands without stopping, and leaving a trail of red marks along with it.

Ling Xia moaned in surprise and was suddenly became clear-headed. He alarmingly widened his mist covered eyes and asked: "What are you doing?"

There was a strange feeling lingering in every area of his neck and chest, making him feel extremely embarrassed.

Yu Zhi Jue didn't reply, rather, he could no longer give an answer.

He was impatiently taking off his own clothes covering his body, and he closely snuggled to that warm and supple body beneath him. The moment their skin made contact, it made him sigh comfortably. He nestled his head on Ling Xia's chest, and was carefully listening to the other person's beating heart.

Its alive. Ling Xia will speak, and smile again.…..…

Ling Xia was frightened to the point his teeth was chattering. His muddleheaded state was immediately gone.

Phew…. This chapter is too long to cram translate huhuh…

What is with this guy? And that thing of his….it was both stiff and huge, a size that would make most men admire and hatefully envy. And that thing is poking my thigh! ! !

Yu Zhi Jue sensed his fear shortly, so he untied the binding on Ling Xia's hand, and said with a difficult to contain gasps: "Make me feel good, and I'll release you——including your bird."

As he spoke, he pulled the hands of the other person to his erection, while looking at Ling Xia face with a discontented but restrained expression.

This person still truly haven't change at all, always picking up those eyesore creatures and gets fond of it, making Yu Zhi Jue's heart soured.

That throbbing thing in his hand, and its shape and size, made the corner of Ling Xia's twitch. As a man, he was wholly uncomfortable, and his forced calmness were also completely shattered.

This bastard, how dare you ask for a rub! ! !

Can't a crack pervert like you jerk yourself? !

Yu Zhi Jue chuckled at the sight of Ling Xia's shifting expression of shame and anger. His nimble fingers trailed downwards to his pliable waist until it reaches that crack in between. His finger dubiously wandering

around while declaring: “If you don’t perform well, I’ll be more glad to use this place.”

Bonbon translation notes:

[1]Great uncle is equivalent to addressing yourself as ‘great me’ or Lao Zi(old me). I know most of you DanMei readers are most likely familiar with it, but for those who don’t yet, the Chinese culture pay great importance to elders or seniority(when it comes to ages). So when one addresses themselves like great aunt/uncle, elder sister/brother, or adding old- suffix to their name, your being kind of haughty towards the listener because it means that they are younger (even if they are older age wise) and they must show you respect. Same with uttering insults to the listener, insulting their elderly is far more insulting trash talk rather than insulting the person themselves.

•Just some info bits for those reading the raws:•

For those who are learning to read/translate raws, there might be words that doesn’t fit into the context because of literal dictionary translation. But there are times where the authors uses a different chinese characters but with a similar pronunciation and/or tones on the one they intended to use.

For example, a sentence in this chapter(raw of course):

Ling Xia said this when YZJ asks for a rub x'D:

Note that (hún dàn) that was used literally means weak soul, but the author’s context in the sentence was actually (hún dàn) which means bastard, hoodlum, and other derogatory term. See that they have same tones and pronunciation but completely different meaning? I’ve encountered more situations in my current projects where the authors write this way so I’ve gotten used to it, but for those starting to learn reading raws or MTL-ing, this way of their writing could be confusing(and brain-melting) sometimes 😀

So if you got confused from words that doesn’t fit in to the context of the sentence when you read it, it means it was substituted so you have to find the similar sounding characters that fits in to the context.

I hope this info might help you though even a little xD

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 6

Ling Xia was quivering, when there's a faint tickling sensation lingering in that private part of his. All of the hair in his body rose up, and he was so scared he couldn't cry out.

He could feel that this pervert is getting more aroused, and his breathing becoming heavier.

He struggled with all his might to lift his waist away from that hand that was groping his butt. His face was steaming hot as he hastily moved both of his hands. For the sake of protecting his chrysanthemum or something, he reaches out his reluctant hands, and pulled that radish like thing out….

Ling Xia tried his best to steel his heart. He was rigidly stroking along the rhythm of a nursery rhyme he was singing in his mind.

It's ok, it's ok. The thing in front of me is just a radish…..

When Yu Zhi Jue saw Ling Xia bit his lips in humiliation, he liked it at the same time he felt sorry. And yet, he can't help but wanting to bully him. He pulled Ling Xia up and made him sit on his lap. He was steadily watching Ling Xia's mixed expression with delight, and was even helping him move his hands faster.

Ling Xia's hands were faintly trembling, and was clearly quite slacking on the job. Despite that, it actually made Yu Zhi Jue more excited. He pinched Ling Xia's nipples, and declared with a husky voice: "If you don't make me satisfied, I'll do it my own way."

"……" Being suddenly pinched, Ling Xia's body jolted, and he let's out a muffled moan. Due to being trapped in a pitch darkness, his other senses has became more sensitive.

Once this bastard come, he'll be spent and my butt hole will be safe…..

Ling Xia was fuming with rage as he implemented his common knowledge in jerking off. He painstakingly rubs up and down, making Yu Zhi Jue react by thrusting along with his movements.

Because of their current posture, he could feel that thing poking him several times, making him feel extremely embarrassed. He could only endure it by gritting his teeth, hoping that this pervert will finally let him go.

Yu Zhi Jue's heartbeat races. He uncontrollably embraced Ling Xia in his arms, narrowing his eyes in satisfaction as he sighed: "So good, you are doing very well."

Silky smooth long hair draped down on Ling Xia's body, giving him a slightly cool touch.

This pervert is barely concealing that attractive voice of his……it was kind of cheating.

His throat was suddenly a bit parched. Together with that kind of eyes and hair, this man must be good looking? So why is he hungry for a fellow man?

He was distracted for a moment but he soon got himself together. He inches backwards uncomfortably, but he was held in place by the other person. He could only continue what he was doing with a blushing face.

He don't know how long had passed, but Ling Xia felt that man's breathing became more and more brief. He knew that the other man was about to reach his climax, so he hastened his movements, and other person came soon. Ling Xia seemed like he heard him clearly calls out with an irresistible and faintly trembling voice: "Ling…."

But Ling Xia couldn't hear him clearly, because the other person had nibbled his lips and invadingly sucks his tongue. It was a fierce and entangling kiss that seemed like it wanted to swallow him up.

There’s a sticky liquid dripping from his lower stomach down to his inner thighs, and it made the corner of Ling Xia’s eyes twitch.

Ahhh!! This bastard! That thing of his actually shot in my body? And what’s more, he shot three times consecutively, three times! Is that thing that gets so hard so quickly actually belonged to a human? Furthermore, will it take this long for it to climax every single time?

If his body weren’t completely transformed, his hands right now could have been crippled…….

Ling Xia rejoiced nonetheless.

Luckily this man is only a pervert and not a full fledged criminal, so his ass should be safe?

He exerted himself on sitting straight and ignoring the dubious smell hanging in the air. He faces forward and said bluntly: “Can you let me go now?”

So much repressed emotions within Yu Zhi Jue burst out in an instant, as if it was a rampaging flood that was difficult to control. And at this moment, his longing desire had been only slightly alleviated.

The other person was clearly expressing arousal from his head to toe, and yet, his face had the look of self restrain….

Yu Zhi Jue’s throat constricted. He was unable to help himself from leaning close to Ling Xia’s ear and whispered: “Alright. Your service made me feel good, so its my turn to do the same.”

…..*What?* Before he had the chance to respond, he was pushed down once again.

When he felt the other person’s big and callous hand reaches towards his precious junior and grabbed it, he immediately resisted and frantically replied: “Elder Brother, there’s no need for that!”

But those hands on him were immovable. He was crying inside while he was pinned on the ground helplessly.

He tried to refrain himself from getting a reaction, but how can his weak will power resist a physiological response? What's more, the other person seemed like he knows all of Ling Xia's erogenous spots, as well as the right force and frequency that makes him lose himself to the pleasure….

Ling Xia's breathing rushes at once, and his face flushed red out of embarrassment. Even though he can't see it, he knows that there is completely exposed! He wasn't confident to talk back, as he was afraid that a moan would come out of his mouth. He merely bit his lips firmly and sprawl his legs.

Yu Zhi Jue was not pleased so he stuffed his fingers on Ling Xia's mouth, and slowly stirred inside: "I want to hear your voice…."

Confronted with that dubious movements and aroused voice, Ling Xia's body uncontrollably quivered. That finger in his mouth continued to stir him up, he was unable to stop the moans he was holding back from spilling out.

It was uncomfortable for him, he was thinking of whether to bite it or not. And when he did, he immediately regretted it. He let his teeth loose at once and said with a faintly trembling voice: "I'm sorry, I didn't mean it….."

He was really afraid. This guy probably wouldn't take revenge on him?

Seeing Ling Xia's timid expression, Yu Zhi Jue's chest tightened. He paused for a moment and then said with an upfront smile: "Don't be scared. I will keep my promise, and will not do anything to you."

As he spoke, his pleasant voice is no longer teasing and enticing. Instead, it was genuinely gentle and soft that Ling Xia was stumped for words. Soon after, he felt that man's nimble and wet tongue licking his thing, creating an electrifying sensation from his taut lower stomach coursing straight to his brain.

Ling Xia widened his eyes in shock, from that warm and moist place of that person wrapping around him. With his mouth and tongue, the other person started moving up and down in a fast pace.

His breathing rushes as he moaned. His mind was turned blank, and he was scared stiffed.

Yu Zhi Jue's face was slightly flushed. He was fascinated watching Ling Xia's dazed expression as he came, while he licks the drop of cum at the corner of his mouth.

Was it scary for Ling Xia? He came so quick though?

Yu Zhi Jue softly chuckled. He forces down the reaction building in his body, and tightly embraces Ling Xia who had his eyes shut.

Can't do anything more, hugging him is enough for now.

There are some stock of clothes and daily necessities inside his space dimension. Yu Zhi Jue wiped Ling Xia's body dry and clean, then changes that inferior clothing on his body with a pure silk robe in his stead.

Ling Xia was just like a puppet being fiddled around by Yu Zhi Jue. When Yu Zhi Jue leaned closer to his ears—-

He swore he heard that pervert made a gulping noise! ! ! !

Even him actually gulped in response! ! !

Could it be that he was caught by a male enchantress?

His heart was feeling restless. When that guy held him in embrace for who know's how long, his tension actually loosened up he almost fell asleep!

When did my nerves get so thick?

Once Yu Zhi Jue changes his own clothes, he reaches his hands out and strokes Ling Xia's short hair, while intently staring at his face.

I really don't want to part with him….

He reluctantly stroke his fingertips on the side of Ling Xia's face, then rubs Ling Xia's lips softly, and leaning down to intertwine their breaths once more.

Ling Xia's back stiffened, but he relented to the other person's frivolousness. Since this guys is about to let him free, he exercised his patience for this moment.

"I love your taste……." Yu Zhi Jue pressed his forehead against Ling Xia and quietly said: "I'm very happy today."

Ling Xia didn't reply. In fact, he didn't know what to say. Should he reply 'you're welcome'?

Fuck that!

To be honest though, that unprecedented level of excitement just now left his mind in a sluggish state.

Yu Zhi Jue took Ling Xia out of his space dimension. The time in his space ability runs ten times faster within compared to real time. In other words: ten hours inside is equivalent to only one hour outside. While he and Ling Xia was busy in the bed for twenty three hours inside, it didn't took that long outside.

That ugly and bald eagle surprisingly didn't flew away, and was merely hovering around the Two Headed Flying Serpent in fear. While it was flying around in loop, Yu Zhi Jue thought that it somehow looked familiar.

He squinted his eyes in alert, his heart feeling skeptical.

Is Ling Xia currently at Chu Yin's place?

Yu Zhi Jue directed Ling Xia towards it, and undid the restricting spell as soon as Ling Xia was sitting at the back of the eagle. He was already wearing his mask as he leaned over to Ling Xia and said with a grin: "Well then, see you again later."

Ling Xia cut a sorry figure while he hangs onto Da Bai as it departed. He was looking at the figure of the Two Headed Flying Serpent with a stupefied expression as they get farther away.

That man standing straight on top of that beast, with his black long hair fluttering in the wind, actually made him look picturesque. There was a sudden baffling feeling arising from his heart——*This man's silhouette looked so lonely…..*

Upon realizing those thoughts forming in his head, his expression suddenly turned dim. Did he just developed some kind of Stockholm Syndrome?

Da Bai was cheerfully nuzzling against Ling Xia's neck and was cawing loudly for several times. Ling Xia quickly pacify it and stroke its head: "Da Bai, I'm alright."

He looked down to inspect his body and was immediately dumbfounded.

What the hell? What's with that guy's clothes? It's so gorgeous he can't even keep looking at it!

The clothes he was wearing was a dark green robe, embroidered with a big peony flower in silver threads.

Now that he mentioned it, that mask wearing guy's clothes were quite eye-catching, but the impression wasn't pompous. Unlike him where it doesn't fit his image….

Realizing that he was thinking of the perverted masked guy again, Ling Xia bit his lips in frustration. He had decided to totally forget about it, why would he let that pervert linger in his thoughts. He is one hundred percent straight and only love girls like all other men!

After sending him back, Da Bai returned to its own cave residence nearby. Ling Xia sneaks in covertly and changed his clothes. Luckily for him, no one discovered him.

That night, he was tossing endlessly in his bed, unable to get any sleep at all.

Earlier that day, those rigorous yet tender, wild yet gentle kisses, as well as their mingling breath and the sound of their heartbeat. Made him feel like he was being swayed in a strong tide….. Those scenes kept replaying in his head over and over.

His face suddenly blushes.

What's wrong with this me?

After quite some time, he got up and took that high quality clothes at the side of his coarse bed and rolled it into a ball and tossed it under his bed. He pulled up his coarse blanket up to the top of his head and forces himself to go to sleep.

Ten days had passed by without any disturbance. Apart from having an occasional lovely dreams at night, Ling Xia had completely forgotten that embarrassing and humiliating day.

This day, he was hanging out with Da Bai at its cave and then went back as usual. He was surprised to see the empty hall crowded with people.

Are there new recruits? That's right, the mating season for magic beasts will begin…..

Ling Xia was uninterested, and was about to go back to his room, but a voice called him out from behind. He turned around, and saw the disciple in charge taking along a youngster and walking towards him.

Ling Xia's gaze was completely attracted to that youngster.

That youngster appears to be around thirteen to fourteen years old. His long black hair was neatly tied at the back of his head. His facial features were like it belongs to a beautifully painted person. On the bottom corner of his right eye, there was a red teardrop mole.

The boy's eyes were clear and beautiful set of almond eyes. They were intently staring back at him. Ling Xia felt like there's a hammer pounding on his chest. His heart was suddenly racing.

He was absentmindedly looking at that youngster, he didn't notice the disciple in charge was already in front of him who said with a smile: "Xiao Dao, this is the new recruit Ling Jue. In the future, he will raise bald eagles with you. Other rooms had already been occupied, and he is still a minor, so I'll be bothering you to have him stay at your room and look after him."

Ling Xia stared blankly for a moment but he hurriedly refocuses himself. He forces himself to avert his gaze back to the disciple in charge, and replied with a smile: "Right, got it."

He casually exchanged a few greetings with the disciple in charge and then he took the boy back to his room. He passes over the sleeping articles and daily necessities gear and muttered: "Ling Jue?"

Such a coincidence, to think that he had the same family surname.

Even though he doesn't like living with other people, but this boy was appealing to him, he can't help but wanting to take good care of him.

Yu Zhi Jue stares at Ling Xia and said: "It's ok to call me Ah Jue. How should I call you?"

Ling Xia repeated that name several times in his mind. He leaned forwards and smiled: "Ah Jue, just call me Brother Xiao Dao."

As he spoke, he can't help but gleefully smile. *Isn't Xiao Dao(knife) a very cool name like those in the movies?*

He noticed that the other person kept staring at him, his heart felt baffled. Perhaps he was giving off a confused look, so the boy withdrew his gaze. Only then did Ling Xia sighed in relief.

That set of beautiful eyes were attentively watching his every move, it made him uneasy that he was moving stiffly like a robot……..

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 7

The room was so small, it didn’t took long for Ling Xia to finish cleaning up and organizing. There was only a small table at the center with barely few stuff neatly arranged inside the room.

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes swept across the room. He can’t help but knit his brows: “Is this where you live?”

Ling Xia was under the impression that he was disgruntled with the small space. Therefore, he helped him arrange his stuff while explaining to him with a smile: “Yeah. There are a lot of people bunking in together, so if Ah Jue is bothered about it… … Don’t worry, perhaps there’ll be some rooms that may be emptied soon.”

Yu Zhi Jue was spellbound in watching Ling Xia busied himself in taking care of him. When his gaze landed on that one spot in the room—-a single small bed, his complexion got a bit better.

In his heart, he naturally wanted to give Ling Xia all the best things in this world. But he knew that he shouldn’t rush things.

Yu Zhi Jue didn’t have much stuff, so Ling Xia was quickly finished with organizing his things. He then took Yu Zhi Jue with him to have dinner.

They rear a high level magic beasts so their rations are a slightly better, just a bit bigger portions of meat in their plates and two vegetable side dishes. After all, this world is not really particular with culinary arts.

The two of them took their food sets, and then sat on the dining table. As soon as they did, a lot of people inquisitively looked over their direction.

Some of them sat nearby and praised Yu Zhi Jue’s good looks. As they asks his identity, Ling Xia would give a simple reply. Yu Zhi Jue was not interested in them at all, and merely lowered his head while slowly eating his food beside Ling Xia.

As Ling Xia saw the way he speaks and acts, his heart felt inevitably baffled.

This boy seemed like he is not from a poor family, so why is he doing a life endangering manual labor?

However, he will not bother him with too much questions out of curiosity, since he had a feeling that Ling Jue is a reserved and shy boy.

Those people in the dining room were like rowdy university students, it was a chaotic mess. There are a lot of spits and ruckuses and such. Ling Xia watches Yu Zhi Jue eat very slowly. He found it rather amusing and said: “Is Ah Jue not used to the food here?”

Yu Zhi Jue looked back at him and replied: “No, only the loud noises.”

“They are forthright people, you’ll get used to them soon.” Ling Xia smiled and strokes his head, “After dinner, I’ll take you along for a bath.”

Ling Xia suddenly pulled his hand back after realizing it was inappropriate, since the boy seemed like he had the unapproachable impression. However, upon closer look, he saw Yu Zhi Jue’s face appeared to be somewhat blushing and didn’t have an irritated expression. Ling Xia’s heart relaxes, and his favorable impression on this boy slightly increased.

The Bai Shou Yuan’s small public bath are two to three hundred meters in distance from their residence. The two of them carried a set of clean clothes and washing articles and they went there. From afar, they could see people going in and out of that place, and there were plenty of naked men in there.

Yu Zhi Jue halted from his tracks. There was a trace of coldness in his voice while asking: “Did you bathe with them—-Do you usually bathe like this?”

Ling Xia thought the boy didn’t like washing in public baths, so he nodded and comfortingly replied: “Yeah. It’s crowded and there’s not much choice, so Ah Jue should bear with it.”

“….Big Brother, let’s just wash in the river side.” Yu Zhi Jue pulls on Ling Xia’s clothes and raises his head to look at him, “I don’t like it here.”

Honestly, he is unwilling to call Ling Xia something like “Big brother Xiao Dao”. Is there really a person who is called Xiao Dao? Why would Ling Xia use it as his name? Just thinking about it, made Yu Zhi Jue felt an unbearable bitterness in his chest.

Even though the moonlight was magnificent, the woods are filled with rocky hills and thorny undergrowth. And the scattered light on the mountain floor makes it difficult to see clearly. Ling Xia is worried that Yu Zhi Jue may have some difficulties trecking so he held his hand and slowly walks forward, while reminding him on his footing from time to time.

The boy was holding tightly on his hand and was not saying a word. Ling Xia felt a sudden strange feeling arising, yet his heart is calm. It was clear that the two of them were walking in a slow pace, but it didn’t took them too long to arrive at the river bank.

Ling Xia had been going here a lot of times already, so he knew that there aren’t dangerous magic beast in this area. He let go of Yu Zhi Jue’s hand and said with a smile: “Right now, the river is a bit cold. Ah Jue should come up as soon as you’ve washed.”

Yu Zhi Jue nodded. He took his outer robe off and untied his long hair.

Once Ling Xia was down to his underwear, he turned around and caught sight of a pubescent, firm, and fit body of that boy. It was fair as a jade, with no traces of blemishes. It was like a god’s perfect creation.

Ling Xia was struck speechless. When that boy let his hair down, he was honestly…….more lovely than a girl. When he realize what he was thinking, he found himself ridiculous. He smiles and said: “The water here is very clear, and it’s only waist deep. There’s no need for Ah Jue to be worried, I’ll be with you.”

Seeing Ling Xia’s bare legs as he soaks in, Yu Zhi Jue’s gaze shifted to his back down to that pair of perfectly round hills. He looked back at Ling

Xia’s slender legs, his breath unconsciously hitching.

He knows the feeling of that place, it’s temperature, and that part in between with its scalding warmth and the addicting pleasure it gives……As he thought about it, Yu Zhi Jue’s lower part twitches. He inhaled sharply and breaths out, then slowly went over to Ling Xia’s side and stood opposite of him.

The river still contained some of the warmth during the day, so it was actually quite a comfortable bath.

Ling Xia scoops water and pour it into his upper body. He had gotten slightly tanned after some time, but his body is still as white as a featherless chicken upon closer look. He can’t help himself from lightly groping his chest, and thought that, he seemed to have developed a bit of pectoral muscles.

As he raises his head, he caught a set of good looking eyes staring at him in daze, making him suddenly feel uneasy.

Yu Zhi Jue nonchalantly turned the other way and said: “Big brother, how about washing each other’s back?”

The scene just now was so perfect, he was itching to reach his hands out. It was really hard to hold himself back.

Ling Xia nodded with a smile, then he went closer to him. He carefully placed Yu Zhi Jue’s already half soaked hair from his back to the front.

Seeing it much closer, he felt somehow mesmerized. The shape and texture of the boy’s back was so perfect and smooth, it’s kinda indistinguishable from those of a beautiful lady. Ling Xia secretly held his breath as he pours water and gently scrubs the boy’s back.

Beneath his palm is a silky smooth and beautiful skin that was great to touch, it left Ling Xia in awe.

Why is this boy’s skin so great?

But because he haven’t touch any girls, he really don’t have anyone to compare.

Once his hand reaches Yu Zhi Jue’s lower back, he noticed that the skin under his palm seemed like it trembled for a moment, so he smiled and said: “Are you ticklish, Ah Jue?”

When the other person hummed ‘yes’, he couldn’t resist laughing. He then gathered his wits, and then turned around so that Yu Zhi Jue can wash his back.

The force applied on his back was not too light nor too heavy, it’s just right. Ling Xia notice just now that even though Ling Jue’s hands looked exceptionally slender and pretty, and his slim fingers were attractive, there was actually a slight amount of callouses on his fingertips. At first, he was closing his eyes from feeling comfortable. But when those hands reaches down on his lower waist, it created a numbing feeling that was difficult to describe. He turned around in rush with his face blushing and said: “En, that’s should be good enough, Ah Jue.”

He had never been touched by someone else in the back before, so he didn’t know that he was actually rather sensitive there.

Yu Zhi Jue was reluctant in taking his hands off Ling Xia’s waist. Even so, he withdraws with a grin on his lips: “……You’re ticklish as well, big brother?”

This is the first time Ling Xia saw this boy’s gentle smile, his heart unexplicably pounding. He had always been partial with looks, and this boy’s appearance is really extraordinary. When he smile, it makes someone unable to take their eyes off him. He can’t help but blurt out: “Ah Jue, is there a girl that you think is pretty?”

Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t care less about his own looks. And he hated how other people stares at him with infatuated look. But when it was Ling Xia looking at him, it makes his face slighly heats up. In the past, when Ling Xia was frequently watching him with admiration, it made him glad that this appearance that he loathed could attract Ling Xia’s gaze.

His pair of pheonix eyes tilted towards the other person, his head hanging to the side with a confused look on his face: “Eh? There’s no one in mind…..I think big brother is much more good-looking—-I have never seen a person more attractive and kind than big brother.”

Ling Xia’s heart pounded loudly, his ears is also slightly burning hot.

He lightly coughed. The boy’s expression was honest and innocent, so he’s certainly speaking sincerely, giving Ling Xia a sudden shock.

This child had some aesthetics. I suppose he’s being polite to me, even saying that I’m good looking.

He can say with determination, that this child is easy to describe as naturally sensitive and well-disposed.

With such thoughts, Ling Xia feigned his cool and said to Yu Zhi Jue: “Let’s wash faster Ah Jue, it’s getting late. Its a much harder task feeding the Bald Eagles, so we should go back early and take a rest.”

After washing, they went up to the shore and wiped their body and hair dry. Once they changed clothes, they went back with slow steps.

The time was already late, so Ling Xia just soaked their dirty laundry into a wooden tub, setting it aside to wash the next day. There are women staff in charge of the laundry of the beast keepers in the establishment. But Ling Xia is not used to having other people wash his own personal clothes, so he always do it himself.

He urges Yu Zhi Jue to go to bed first, then he took his outer robe off, and turned off the fire of the lamp and went to bed as well. The bed was really too small, and with the two of them lying in it, it suddenly became crowded. Just by slightly raising an arm, it would bump into the other.

Yu Zhi Jue turned towards him and said with a remorseful voice while looking up to him: “I’m sorry, big brother. Is it crowded for you?”

When he spoke, his breath softly brushes against Ling Xia's face, carrying along a fresh and clean smell. Ling Xia didn't mind it and smiled back: "It's all right. At night I always go straight to sleep and I don't have much to do during the day anyway, so its a pleasure having a chat with Ah Jue."

"My sleeping habit is bad……." Yu Zhi Jue droops his eyes and said, "Do big brother dislike it?"

Ling Xia turned to his side. Their distance was so near, he could clearly see the drooping eyelashes of the youngster. It was thick and curled, and was slightly trembling as if he was restless.

He can't help but endearingly pat the boy's shoulder and squint his eyes in a smiling expression as he replied: "It's okay. When I first came here, I was sleeping in a hall with thirty people squeezed in together. At night there were snoring and sleeptalking, I just got used to it."

As he recount, he suddenly felt the muscles under his palm went stiff, but he didn't paid too much attention into it. And Yu Zhi Jue changes the topic to other matters like raising the Bald Eagles and such until he fell asleep.

Yu Zhi Jue looked up, intently watching Ling Xia who was peacefully sleeping. He really wanted to lean forward and ruthlessly kiss him, lock him up so no one could lay their eyes on him.

He clenched his fist and calmed his mind with great difficulty. He licks his lips with great tolerance as he stares at Ling Xia's enticingly revealing collar area.

He really wanted to take those clothes off, firmly press him down beneath him, and take him……..but right now, he must suppress those desires.

He moved closer and greedily inhaled Ling Xia's scent, disregarding his other senses. After that, he takes out his already unbearable erection.

He never masturbated ever since he lost Ling Xia. But now that he is lying by his side while watching his face, he thought of doing it though it was is unsatisfactory. Yu Zhi Jue imagined the feeling of intimacy between them in the past. He gritted his teeth as he moved his hand faster.

That midnight, something heavy was pressing on Ling Xia he couldn't breath properly. He opened his eyes with a vacant expression and discovered that Ling Jue's upper body besides him was closely leaning on his chest, with the boy's legs wrapping on his thighs. The youngster's warm breath blowing on the crook of his neck was slightly tickling him.

Ling Xia stared blanky but immediately rouses up. He didn't know when their clothes and belts got loosed and was shrugged off, but their bare chest was practically glued together. The person opposite to him was hugging his waist tightly with both hands like he was a body pillow.

This sleeping posture is really nothing but uncomfortable. Ling Xia wanted to softly push him away, but he was afraid that he'll wake the boy up. Without any other options, he just smiled and closes his eyes to go back to sleep.

At that moment, Ling Xia realized that what he meant by bad sleeping posture was in that no good way!

The boy soon changes his sleeping position, but his tight hold on Ling Xia still remained. Ling Xia silently looks down at the youngster's uncovered fair skin, and it made him extremely troubled.

He thought that he is on his way on becoming a pedophile. Why is he suddenly aching to touch it?

Later on when he fell asleep in bewilderment, he dreamed about an encounter with an octopus monster giving him a bear hug. He shove it off with great difficulty and he backs off, but it still catches him and pulls him back from behind.

That morning when Ling Xia woke up, he found himself squeezed into the wall, with the boy tightly hugging him from behind. The boy's hands

were coiled on his waist, while he was pulled back on the boy's embrace.

He turned around with much difficulty and almost bumped into Ling Jue's face. He was startled that he slightly pulls back in panic.

Despite his movements, Ling Jue remained sound asleep. His breathing was evenly, and his lips were slightly parted that it showed a bit of his snowy teeth and the tip of his pink tongue. Ling Xia shakes him with stiff hands: "Wake up, Ah Jue. Time to get up."

Ling Xia watches those pair of beautiful eyes opened in daze. His limpid black eyes was clearly reflecting Ling Xia's uncomposed expression.

"Ah, morning big brother." The boy's eyes was drowsy, and his soft and quiet voice with a hint of nasal sound was mumbling to him.

Ling Xia thought that he's gonna have a nosebleed.

Fuck! Whose family's little brother that is moe as him?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 8

Ling Xia thought that his heart was fan-boying, he was already fantasizing in seeing the boy with rabbit ears. He hastily averted his eyes to banish those wicked thoughts.

**cough* *cough* I'm really going to become a pedophile at this rate.*

With the two of them too close to each other, the boy had a worried expression as he asked: "Did I disturbed your night's rest?"

Ling Xia smiled and strokes his head while saying: "I'm all right. We need to prepare fast."

They quickly cleaned themselves up and ate their morning breakfast. Ling Xia took Yu Zhi Jue to the stock room and loaded the meat feed to the cart. Afterwards, the two of them headed to the mountain with Wan Yan and the other two. When Yu Zhi Jue tagged along, he actually mingled quite well with the others.

The four of them carried their own baskets in their backs, and climbed down to feed the chicks. Ling Xia was worried that Yu Zhi Jue may get into an accident as he climb down, so he constantly hangs around beside him to be able to protect him. He saw that the boy was light with his footsteps, so his heart was slightly put at ease.

After feeding the eagle chicks, Wan Yan and the others went ahead first with the carts as usual. They had some guesses that Ling Xia had a secret, but because of their gratitude on him for saving their lives, they went back without a word. And besides, if Ling Xia and that Bald Eagle get along more, their everyday work will be much safer.

Ling Xia doesn't intend to keep it a secret to Ling Jue. Because first of all, he was quite fond of this youngster. Secondly, he don't want to keep concealing it from him every time.

He saw Ling Jue looked at him with a bit of confusion, so he smiled and explained: “I’d like to introduce you to my friend.”

Ling Xia whistled loudly, and not for long, Da Bai flew out of his cave in a flash. It saw Yu Zhi Jue beside Ling Xia from the distance, but it didn’t gave a care.

In the eagle’s eyes, all other humans looked pretty much the same. Yu Zhi Jue didn’t left much impression on the eagle with his younger self, so even if it had met him before, it didn’t recognized him.

Da Bai folded its wings and stood beside Ling Xia. It tilted its head to the side and disdainfully looked down on Yu Zhi Jue. Ling Xia quickly took out the cooked meat and gave it to the eagle. The meat was already cut into smaller pieces and was properly wrapped with a leaf. Da Bao smelled the meat and its mouth started watering. It lowered its head and engrosses itself in pecking the food out of Ling Xia’s hand.

Ling Xia turned his attention to Yu Zhi Jue and said with a smile: “Ah Jue, this is Da Bai.”

Yu Zhi Jue already knew that it was Chu Yin’s mount. Even so, he slightly nodded and replied: “I didn’t know that once Bald Eagles grow up, their plumage actually decreases a lot.” (Burn alert!)

“……No. Da Bai probably got injured in the past.” Ling Xia hastily petted Da Bai’s feathers soothingly, worried that it might attack Yu Zhi Jue. He then laughed and said: “I promised that I will help Da Bai get better.”

As Yu Zhi Jue stares at Ling Xia’s gentle hand gestures, he was so annoyed he couldn’t wait to push that ugly bird down the cliff.

Da Bai soon finished eating up its fill. Ling Xia didn’t know yet if it could carry two people on its back. But he really like this kid Ling Jue, so he wanted to give the boy the experience on flying amidst the clouds. Thus, he petted Da Bai’s head and asked: “Da Bai, can you carry the two of us?”

Da Bai let out a mocking caw. Even if its three people, it could easily carry it around. However, it didn't want to carry Yu Zhi Jue along in its back, since it could feel the boy faintly emitting animosity towards itself.

Ling Xia thought that the eagle agreed, so he turned to Yu Zhi Jue and said: "Ah Jue, are you afraid of heights?"

Yu Zhi Jue guesses what he meant. His eyes shined and he shook his head.

Ling Xia then jumped on Da Bai's back, and extended his hands to Yu Zhi Jue saying: "Ah Jue, hop on and sit in front of me."

Yu Zhi Jue raised his head and looked at his smiling expression. He soon mounted and sat on the back, with his arms wrapped tightly on Ling Xia's waist.

Ling Xia didn't mind it. He patted Da Bai's neck and said with a smile: "Hold firmly on my waist."

Da Bai flapped its wings twice then suddenly soared straight into the sky. Their ascension was almost perpendicular as they go up.

Hmph! Hmph! Hmph! If only that brat on the back would fall!

"Da Bai, slow down!" Ling Xia jumped in fright from suddenly being plunged into a strong gust of wind as he holds on in panic. Yu Zhi Jue was practically clinging on to Ling Xia's back, with his head buried on Ling Xia's shoulder. But it was evident that he was not scared in the least.

Da Bai looked back in contempt, but it started to decrease its flight speed until it reaches the layer of clouds.

Even though Da Bai's flying is very stable, but Ling Xia felt that the boy behind him was still clinging tightly on his back. That part of his body that was unexposed to the breeze is somehow unbearably warm.

He thought that Yu Zhi Jue was still scared, so crooked his neck to the other person's direction and soothingly ask: "Ah Jue, were you scared?…."

Ling Xia was caught off-guard when his lips accidentally brushes on something warm and soft. He then realizes that he bumped against the boy's smooth cheeks.

He blanked for a moment, and then he hastily turned his head towards the front.

He was feeling embarrassed inside, but he pretended as if nothing had happened. However, seeing that the boy was staring blankly at his rosy lips, he wasn't sure of his expression, but the boy's attractive face was dyed in red.

The corner of Ling Xia's mouth twitches.

Isn't this situation something that would come out of a romantic drama?

Ling Xia frantically faces Yu Zhi Jue with an apologetic smile: "I'm sorry Ah Jue, I was too careless haha…."

Yet the more he tried to explain, the lower the boy droops his head, with his both of his ears blushing.

Ling Xia was at loss on what to do.

Isn't this shooting myself in the foot? But what's with all the awkwardness from bumping into each other even though we're both guys? This kid is too bashful…..

But, why did he thought that it was so cute of Ling Jue?

The boy eventually raises his head. He tilted his head with an earnest face on and asked: "Big brother, did we kissed just now?"

"….."Ling Xia almost slipped off Da Bai's back.

How can this kid reach to such conclusion?

But seeing the boy's blushing face and his drooping eyelashes, his heart inexplicably thudded loudly in response.

Was it a first kiss for Ling Jue? Heck no! First kiss is what that pervert snatched away from this Lao Zi!

Ling Xia rigidly patted his head: “It doesn’t count, its just moment of accidental contact. In the future, Ah Jue will have a girl that you’ll like. When that time comes, you’ll know what a kiss truly is.”

Yu Zhi Jue replied with an ‘En’, but his eyes were somewhat gloomy.

Don’t tell me Ling Xia fancies women again. This is gonna be a problematic pain in the head.……

Da Bai folded its beautiful wide wings after taking the two of them to the lake side Ling Xia and Da Bai normally frequented, where Ling Xia would always comb its feathers gently.

Yu Zhi Jue sat on top of a big rock near the shore and watches the interaction between Ling Xia and that Bald Eagle. He suddenly asked: “Big brother, where will you go in the future? Will you be staying here?”

“I’m not sure.” Ling Xia brushes his fringe blocking his eyes to the side. It’s been three months since he transmigrated, and he hasn’t paid attention to his growing hair. He turned towards Yu Zhi Jue and explained while smiling: “I’m not from here, so I’m really unfamiliar with this place. Once I had enough savings from this job, I’ll venture out and look for other livelihood.”

Yu Zhi Jue looked down and said: “I’m not sure why, but upon meeting you, I felt really close to you. I don’t have parents so, big brother, can you take me with you when that time comes?”

Ling Xia stared distractedly. The boy’s figure somehow looked frail with his head hanging low, a nervous look on his face, and his back stooped. He can’t help but smile as he replied: “Sure. I’ll take Ah Jue with me as my family.”

“That’s great.” The boy suddenly raises his head, his eyes shone brightly as if it was a blinking star, “Big brother, we must never be apart, promise

me.”

Ling Xia smiled and nodded.

It’s natural for kids to say such things, but when Ling Jue takes a wife, will he still follow me?

It’s a strange thing to say, when him and Ling Jue just met two days ago. Yet its like they’ve know each other for a while. He unconsciously wanted to treated him well, and make sure that he won’t feel sad.

Da Bai send them back and then it left. It was still more than ten minutes walking distance to their residence, and the mountain road was steep, so Ling Xia naturally took Yu Zhi Jue by the hand and led the way. He could feel that the youngster was behavingly following him behind, adding up to the adoring affection he felt for Yu Zhi Jue.

Once they got back, he asked Yu Zhi Jue to go back to their room first. He went to the disciple in charge of the stock room to help to carry some stuff down the mountains.
Just as he was about to go back, he ran into a several rough looking armed men escorting a huge cart with a steel cage.

Ling Xia hurriedly stood to the side to let them pass through. As they did, he distinctly saw the contents of the cage. He was dumbstruck, for inside of the cage were mentally haggard people. Amongst them is a pretty girl wearing a peach colored dress.

He felt slightly confused. *Do they use cages for magic beasts to transport people here, but why would they do that?*

While Ling Xia was feeling skeptical, his gaze met with that girl, who looked at him with wide eyes filled with astonishment as if she could not believe what she was seeing. But before he could react, the metal cage was already led away. Ling Xia vaguely heard a fleeting voice dissipating in the air say: “Ling Xia….”

Who is that girl? Why did she call my name?

Ling Xia pondered over it, but he was sure the he haven't met her before. Furthermore he never uttered his real name to anyone except to that man in this world.

That caged cart is not escorted by beast keeper, but by a beast tamer. Ling Xia doesn't know the captives at all, but he quickly ran after them. He then asked with a smile: "Big brother, who are these people in the cage? Did they trespasses the Bai Shou Yuan?"

That man sizes him up, and saw that waist plate on him that proves he's only an ordinary beast keeper. So he impatiently waved his hand and replied: "Don't get in the way, these are important goods!"

Goods? Ling Xia looked at that girl again, but she already lost consciousness.

He was forced to stand aside, and watch as that cage gradually disappeared into the distance. He wasn't just imagining it, that girl really did call out his name…..

Ling Xia knitted his brows, then suddenly, he raises his gaze. *Could it be? Did that girl transmigrated like him? Or she was someone I know?*

With that in mind, he hurriedly followed the traces of those men ahead. He watches as they took the cart inside a nearby courtyard. The entrance was guarded with men armed with weapons, so Ling Xia was discouraged to approach it. He could only sneak a peek behind a tree from a distance.

There were several guards inside the courtyard as well. The cage was taken underground so he could not determine what is their purpose for those people.

Ling Xia's brow was creased as he went back. He quickly asked about it. He asked several beast-keeper in successions until he finally arrived to the head beast-keeper. The chief called Lao Wang told him a bit of info about it.

Lao Wang patted his shoulder and quietly said: "Those people, are probably Righteous Sect members that were captured. Every end of the

month, those people are taken to the arena and will be pitted against ferocious magic beasts.

When Ling Xia heard that, he trembled in cold sweat. He pulled in Lao Wang and said: “Uncle Wang, my friend was one of the detainee. Can I pay the bail to take her out?”

Lao Wang replied in a low voice: “That’s not possible. You should know that there are a lot of people who had their eyes set on them, for gambling and such? We’re just ordinary folks, we can’t afford to offend them. Didn’t you say that your acquainted with one of the righteous sect members? Better be careful and not involve yourself any further.”

Regardless if its Dark Arts Sect or Righteous Sect, ordinary people are always at the bottom of the pyramid.

Ling Xia’s heart was filled with worries as he walks back. On his way, he heard someone call out to him. It turned out, it was Ling Jue that was looking for him.

“Where did you go that it took you so long?” Yu Zhi Jue looked at Ling Xia and asked, “did it not go well?”

Ling Xia smiles in a flurry. He patted his shoulder and replied: “No. Let’s go back, Ah Jue.”

This problematic matter, how could he tell it to a child. He really wanted to know who is that young girl, and why does she know him.

I must find a way to rescue those people!

Ling Xia lied down on the bed while staring at the moonlight. When it comes down to it, he don’t know how powerful those guards are. And with his strength and abilities, could he stand a chance against them?

But as he imagined the life flaring out of that young girl’s eyes, and the impossibility of the task. Even if he barely had any connection with that girl. Nevertheless, he will definitely find a way to rescue them.

I, I need to think of a way to save them!

Ling Xia softly sighed and held Ling Jue’s hand.

No matter what, he will never abandoned this lonely boy who had no one to depend on but him.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 9

Meanwhile, Yu Zhi Jue was sleeping soundly. His breathing was steady and soft all the while, with his captivating lips slightly damp with moisture. But his hands remained holding tightly on Ling Xia.

Ling Xia raised his hand and stroke Yu Zhi Jue's head. He didn't have much savings as of now, but at least he won't be starving. If he loses his objective, would he have to travel everywhere to find their tracks? Regardless, he is willing to face the risk.

It was the end of the month. Ling Xia went with the others to feed the eagle chicks as usual. Once Wan Yan and the other two left, he immediately called out Da Bai. The cheapest storage pouch he bought beforehand was fastened on him. His mountain bag and money was stored inside of it just in case of emergency.

He looked straight at Yu Zhi Jue's eyes and said with a serious expression: "Ah Jue, I'm going to save my friend today, and it may be dangerous…."

Yu Zhi Jue already sensed earlier on that he was acting strange. He nodded and asked without batting an eyelid: "What kind of person are they?"

"Um. I'll let you know when I returned." Ling Xia jumped on to Da Bai's back, then took out that storage pouch and handed it over: "Ah Jue, I assure you. I'll definitely be back by evening."

Yu Zhi Jue paused for a moment and then replied: "Is it very dangerous? What if you don't come back?"

Ling Xia felt guilty, he could not look at his face: "I must save my friend. If I'm not back by then, look after Da Bai and take care of my belongings for me."

Yu Zhi Jue’s heart shivered while he listened. Though he knows that what Ling Xia was saying is impossible to happen, his chest still felt stuffy that it was unbearably suffocating. If only he could lock Ling Xia up so that no one could lay their eyes on him. It was clear that Ling Xia doesn’t understand this world in the slightest. He wasn’t even aware on how much stronger this Bald Eagle is.

He lowered his gaze to hide the intense cold haze in his eyes. He then immediately pulled on Ling Xia’s hand and mounted as well: “I will go with you. You said we will never be apart.”

Ling Xia was surprised to see Ling Jue act this stubborn. He persuaded him for a long time only to end up him sitting at the back while holding on to his waist tightly. As the boy’s determination showed his willingness to be with him whether they lived or died, his heart felt somehow inevitably moved. In the end, he sighed and said: “But you musn’t get involved. Hide with Da Bai from afar and wait for me to come back.”

Yu Zhi Jue replied “en”.

Ling Xia’s heart slightly easened up. He turned his focus on directing Da Bai on a place to land.

He had already checked the transport route beforehand. First, he chooses a suitable place to strike, and then he hid Yu Zhi Jue and Da Bai to a spot about three Li in distance from that place. If something happened, he will definitely ran away opposite to their direction without hesitation.

Ling Xia took out the meat he prepared and packaged in leaf and places it on top of a rock. He saw Yu Zhi Jue pitifully looking at him, that he can’t help but be soft-hearted. He stroked his head and said: “I’ll be back soon.”

PROGRESS 14/87

He turned to Da Bai and said: “Da Bai, listen properly to Ah Jue. I have something to do so I’ll be leaving for a while.”

Da Bai only lowered his head to eat dimwittedly, not even caring to give a caw in response.

Ling Xia can’t help himself from hugging Yu Zhi Jue. He then turned around and hopped towards that location he chose.

Yu Zhi Jue watches his back with an expressionless face. His body blink behind Da Bai in an instant, and suddenly whacked it unconcious.

Ling Xia sneaked on top of the wall very carefully. He then jumped down and piled several big rocks to block the path. This way, those men will have no choice but to stop the cart here.

He quietly waited for half an hour, until he finally heard the sound of the footsteps of arriving magic beasts from afar. Ling Xia’s mind jolted, and his palms was soaked with sweat that he kept wiping it in his sleeves. He took out a masked then put it on his face.

His eyesight right now is amazing, he could clearly determined that there were a total of six people inside the cage guarded by armed men. One of them were riding one of the three magic beast pulling the cart in front while the rest of them are trailing behind. Each of them wore a similar dark colored guard uniform.

Total of five men…. Ling Xia watches behind the pile of big rocks, firmly gripping the wooden stick he’ll used as a weapon. The swords in this world are too expensive, he couldn’t afford it at all. This strong wooden stick is what he’ll used as a lever, and its the only thing he could improvise with. As long as its not necessary, he don’t want to harm someone.

The guards soon noticed something strange on the road. The guard leading in front gestured his hand in a command to stop the cart. Ling Xia deeply breathes in and abruptly stood up. He was thinking of pushing the big rocks towards their direction to cause disturbance. But before he could do so, a hand lightly held his shoulder back. And yet, it was like a mighty force restraining him he couldn’t even budge. He was startled that his heart thudded.

Whose behind me?

A seemingly familiar deep and magnetic voice spoke closely to his ears: “He he, it’s been a while since I’ve met you. But I still remembered your smell…..What are you doing?”

As the other person spoke, he pulled off Ling Xia’s mask.

This man’s voice seemed like it carries a feathery texture. His words were vaguely sensual and erotic, it can make someone’s goosebumps appear. He even deliberately blow two puffs of hot breath on Ling Xia’s ear.

Ling Xia couldn’t stop himself from blushing.

Shit! It’s that damn pervert!

Before he could retaliate, the other person had already carried him. In one single moment, the scene before his eyes had changed and suddenly turned into an unfamilliar room.

Ling Xia felt that he was lying on something soft. He then noticed that he was astonishingly lying down on a wide and spacious comfy couch. When he remembered those humiliating experience here the last time, Ling Xia immediately sat up. He was on guard as he glared at that masked man: “What do you think you’re doing?”

Even though he tried to act unperturbed, he was already extremely nervous. He was much more tensed than when he was about to confront those guards.

This time, the masked man was wearing a dazzling red robe. His exposed jaw and arm were as flawless as a jade. He was stroking Ling Xia’s mask with his thumb, and replied rhetorically: “Tell me, did you prepare these, to save someone?”

The man waved his hand, and Ling Xia was dumbfounded to witness a big screen appeared out of thin air. It clearly showed the faces of everyone in the cart.

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes as he observed Ling Xia's expression. When he saw Ling Xia's gaze focused on an unconcious girl wearing a pink dress, the anger in his heart soared. Cui Yu used to annoyingly follows him around everyday in the past, it causes him to hate her very much. Despite Ling Xia's memory loss, it was unexpected that he still wanted to save that woman!

He slightly grinned, and went closer while saying: "You haven't learn swordfight, and have you cultivated your spiritual powers and elemental abilities? What makes you think you can save her?"

Ling Xia watches that man slowly pressing close, his heart increasingly tensing up. He tried to act calm as he replied: "Whether I can save her or not, I'll know once I've tried. It's not for your distinguished self to be concern with."

"Oh, do you really not want my help?" Yu Zhi Jue presses closer, trapping Ling Xia in a corner. He laugh and continued: "Just now, I saw a boy following you behind, but he slipped at the edge of a cliff. Is he not important to you?"

The masked man was half a head taller than Ling Xia. And when he could no longer move back, he was completely overshadowed by the other person's presence. As soon as he heard about Ling Jue being in danger, he anxiously stood up: "Ah Jue….where is he!?"

"Don't worry, " Yu Zhi Jue places his slender and fair finger on Ling Xia's chin and raises it upwards, "I saved him, and I can also help you save that woman. Is there anything you wish to say?"

His action was too frivolous, Ling Xia forcibly turned his head out of his reach. He doesn't have the confidence to look back at those matchlessly magnificent eyes, so he tried to keep his calm and lowered his gaze to that peony flower patterns around the bridge of that man's nose: "I don't know what is your aim truly is. Still, thank you so much."

"Just a thank you?" Yu Zhi Jue touched Ling Xia's cheek, and then he leaned closer as if he was about to lock him in an embrace: "My aim is,

obviously the same thing from the last time……”

Ling Xia felt the other person’s breath brushing against his face, he cannot avoid it at all. He was frustrated that he reaches out his hand, wanting to pry that mask off that guy’s face.

Fuck! Just what does this guy looks like? This bastard acting like he’s all mysterious!

Progress 42/87

Yu Zhi Jue stopped Ling Xia, his wide chest pressing against him. He chuckled and said: “You want to see may face so much? Right now…. is still not the time.”

As he said that, Ling Xia felt that his eyes sunked again in a sea of pitch black. He widened his eyes out of reflex, but he couldn’t see no matter what.

Yu Zhi Jue teasingly said to the person beneath him: “Don’t worry, I’ll let you see—-once you have fallen in love with me.”

……..love your ass!

He relentlessly continued to strugle out of discomfort, but his body was restrained he could not budge even a little. He tried to look up as he ennunciatingly stated to the other person: “I like women! If you’re gay, or….nn…”

Something damp and soft suddenly captured his mouth, he couldn’t finish saying half of his sentence.

The tip of the other person’s tongue sweeps across his teeth, the roof of his mouth, and wantonly stirs and twirl, causing Ling Xia to feel a stiffling dizziness. Ling Xia reacted unconditionaly by closing his eyes, his whole face felt like it was heating up. He tried his best in restraining himself from biting down, since Ah Jue is still in that hands of this man…..

The other person merely gave soft kisses and deep kisses alternatingly. Their breaths intertwine where not enough oxygen could even pass through. It was a kiss that seemed like it would last till the end of time. He was passively accepting it, his legs going soft. Until finally, he could no longer endure it he was lightly biting the other man's tongue.

Once the masked man finally stopped, Ling Xia could feel saliva flowing from the corner of his mouth when the other man took his tounge out, his face immediately blushed as a result. The other man already had a reaction, it was hard and was poking him in the abdomen, making him feel disturbed.

Shit! Does this bro gonna make me jerk off that white radish again?

Yu Zhi Jue wiped the saliva on the corner of Ling Xia's mouth. He was watching Ling Xia who was clearly cowering restlessly but still trying to act unaffected. He can't help but want to bully him more.

He nibbled Ling Xia's ear until it was almost bloody red and asked: "You don't like me kissing you?"

Ling Xia's chest was weakly rushing. He doesn't have the experience in kissing someone else, but he can't deny that this mysterious man is very skilled in kissing. It was like there's an electric current running through his back because of it. If not for this man's body and the wall behind him that is keeping him up, his feet would be unsteady….

He really wishes to curse out 'like your sister', but he's afraid that more reactions from him may arouse the other guy further. And so, he kept his silence.

Yu Zhi Jue didn't even wait for him to respond, and proceeded to position himself between Ling Xia's thighs and asked: "What should we do this time?"

He and Ling Xia slept in the same bed everyday but he couldn't eat him at all. He had to fiercely endure.

Ling Xia was horrified by his mounting, he nervously replied: “Just do it by yourself, o-or you can go to a brother…..wh-why must you look for me?”

58

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes and leans closer. He licked inside of Ling Xia’s ear in a loop with the tip of his tongue. He relished the sensation of Ling Xia’s trembling body. He smiled and said with a deep voice: “It’s because I fell in love with you at first sight.”

Love your ass! Ling Xia was shocked, he was rendered speechless.

The first time they met, he was riding the bald headed Da Bai. And his clothes that time was a dark blue servant clothes. How would that make someone fall in love at first sight?

The other person looks at him as if he could read his expression. He slowly reaches his hand out and touched Ling Xia’s face. He mumbled softly: “I like your eyes, your nose, your lips…..”

His whispers felt like it was of a lover. It was passionate and tender, that Ling Xia’s heart couldn’t help itself from skipping and his mind blanking. That man’s hand then shifted lower and continued to say: “I also like your neck, your chest, your waist…..and here.”

As he noticed that man dubiously rubbing his lower part, he quivered for a moment then his senses came back. He was fuming with anger.

Even if you like it, did this Lao Zi permitted you?

Yu Zhi Jue watches Ling Xia blush with shame, his heart burning hotter as a result. On their first encounter, he didn’t dare to go further than what he did since not only he had a lot of things to consider, he was afraid of making Ling Xia angry as well. But right now, he wanted to do it further…..

His hand suddenly slid on the inner part of Ling Xia's legs, and touches that place in between with only the cloth standing in between. He said with a husky voice: "Of course, I like this as well."

Because of embarrasment, Ling Xia's body started to shiver. He could hardly maintain his composure again. He raises his foot to kick the other person, but that man caught his foot and siezes the opportunity to hold it, then push it to the side and positioned himself between Ling Xia's legs.

When he remebered doing it in a standing position that time, Yu Zhi Jue felt his body became thirstier and was burning hotter. He said appeasingly to Ling Xia: "Don't flail around, I won't put it in."

Ling Xia was so nervous he couldn't breath. He then widen his eyes in disbelief on what happened next——this mysterious man had taken his clothes off!

He knew that he doesn't stand a chance against this man, so he maintained his calm and didn't resist, while trying to still his chaotic mind.

Didn't those victims forced by deviants became more zelous in their resistance the more they resist? He tried to talk himself into it, but his mind was slugish, just slugish…

When his nipples were bitten and licked by that man, an indescribable burst of electrifying sensation shot straight to his brain. Ling Xia couldn't stop himself from letting out a low moan. The both of them jolted from that feeble but ambigous groan of his.

He could no longer keep his composure as he grabbed that mysterious man's hand groping his body. He shouted in anger: "Just be done with it!"

You motherfucker, not taking that radish out yet? This Lao Zi will help you pull it off!

"Are you impatient for it?" Yu Zhi Jue lightly chuckled and then he took of Ling Xia's pants, and suddenly raises Ling Xia's legs. He inserted his

thing in between and slowly rub against the entrance, “I’ll make you feel better than the last time.”

Ling Xia frantically held onto Yu Zhi Jue’s firm shoulder. Even though he can’t see, he is aware that his posture was very embarrasing. The other person’s body was scalding as if it was burning. He was incessentaly rubbing in a way one is having sex. As their skin rubbed together, Ling Xia would immediately shudder.

Even though it was hard for him to take, he was surprised to find that he had a reaction due to other person’s movements!

Seeing that Ling Xia’s eyes fogging up and he was biting his lips from stubbornly restraining himself, Yu Zhi Jue had completely been mesmerized by that sight, his movements getting faster. When he noticed that Ling Xia had a reaction there, he suddenly chuckled: “You’ll come soon.”

Ling Xia was flustered that he resolutely grabbed Yu Zhi Jue’s shoulder and shouted: “Let go of me!”

He is strong as an ox right now, and he could lift giant boulders easily. But the muscles beneath his palm was fine yet strong, he couldn’t even make it budge even once centimeter.

Yu Zhi Jue wanted to touch Ling Xia in more ways, but this position was too inconvenient…..Yu Zhi Jue suddenly pulled him to the couch and made him lie on his stomach in a kneeling position. He then incessantly kisses the sensitive areas in Ling Xia’s back.

“I want you….” Yu Zhi Jue whispered. He held Ling Xia who is starting to struggle to get up by the waist, and uses a hand to jerk Ling Xia’s front part for him.

Ling Xia felt that his waist was limp and painful, and his body gradually warming up. Not for long, his body was shuddering.

He could hear that suggestive sounds created by that movement of the other person. It was as if… as if he’s really having sex with this man…

He tried his best to twist his waist out of the man’s reach, but his waist was in a rigidly fixed hold in that man’s hands and he could not throw him off in any way.

While he was busy pulling away, Yu Zhi Jue was about to climax. It felt so good that he puts it in the heat of the moment.

Ling Xia widened his eyes in shock. He felt a sudden burst of tearing pain, and soon after, his hands limped and trembled——Did that thing slides in?

His mind turned blank, and the humiliation he felt made him almost cry,

Yu Zhi Jue’s movements halted. It has been a while since he felt this sudden wringing pleasure, he wished he could continue to thrust wantonly. But came to his senses when he heard a scared whimper. He hurriedly pulled out and turned Ling Xia over. He explained in panic: “Don’t be angry, I didn’t mean it….”

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 10

Ling Xia didn’t hear anything Yu Zhi Jue have said. His chest kept trembling, and his face was pale. The waves of pain was too much for his mind to bear.

As soon as he senses that man hugging him from behind, he immediately struggled to get up. His throat that suffered from his long duration of crying turned his voice hoarse: “Get away you fucking pervert! You better kill me now! Or else this Lao Zi will hack you to death someday!…..”

Yet no matter how much he struggles, shout out curses, punch and kick the other person, that man still embraces him tightly and wouldn’t let go no matter what.

Because Ling Xia’s eyes were wide open in a fit of rage, big droplets of tears kept flowing at the corner of his eyes that he looked like a child sobbing, breaking Yu Zhi Jue’s aching heart into pieces. He gasped helplessly at the sight of those tears, and could only kiss away the tears forming in the corner of Ling Xia’s eyes.

Yu Zhi Jue couldn’t think of anything else but comfortingly strokes Ling Xia in the back with one hand, and the other to wipe the tears at the edge of his lips.: “Please don’t cry, if you’re angry just bite me till you calm down ok?”

Ling Xia no longer had the self-respect in dealing with this man. His mind was in a chaotic mess, so he ruthlessly bites down without thinking. But when his teeth sunk down on this mysterious guy’s taut and solid muscles, it was as if his brain was struck by lightning. Why does it feel that this moment was unusually familiar?

The moment that bloody taste flows inside his mouth, Ling Xia suddenly recovered his senses. He was gasping for air. He was angry and humiliated that he wished he could dig a pit and dive in. His behavior just now…. was too shameful!

His held his breath while remaining motionless, his crumbled rationality was gradually being restored. Maybe what this man's saying about love at first sight is true. It's just that this mysterious man's behavior made him suspicious, as if he was an actual deviant….That man should've stopped when he said stop? Maybe there won't be a need to comfort the victim?

But he don't know why, the more the other man coax him, and the more he spoke to him with that gentle tone, that feeling of being wronged intensified….His mental endurance had never been this weak before. He also couldn't believe that there's tears streaming down, since he never even cried when his parents divorced during his middle school years….

Yu Zhi Jue didn't notice the change in Ling Xia's mood as he continued to comfort him with gentle pecks on his face. As soon as he realizes that the twitching of Ling Xia's back had stopped, he cautiously asked with worry: "Were you hurt just now? I'll be applying medicine for you ok?"

Ling Xia's face became beet red. He struggled to sit up while saying in a flustered manner: "There's no need, I'm fine. I still have to save someone. Just give Ah Jue back to me at once and let me go….."

He folded his legs in embarrassment. There was still a strange and painful swelling sensation in that place, but it's unlikely that he was bleeding.

Yu Zhi Jue was besides himself with worry. A moment ago, Ling Xia's face was deathly pale and he had this broken expression, giving Yu Zhi Jue a scare.

He casts a binding spell on Ling Xia's limbs, and explained with a soft voice: "Don't worry, I won't touch you. I'll only look to see it you're not hurt."

Ling Xia could not move his body once again. When he felt the other person was about to lift one of his leg, he was so scared his heart wrenches. How could he let other people see that place? He then said with a hoarse voice: "Don't look, I'm okay…"

Despite his protest, his leg was still raised. Ling Xia bit his lips in frustration.

This motherfucking scum! Lecher! Degenerate!

One day, I'll put this pervert into a chopping board and turn him into minced meat! Ahh! I will make him pay double! ! !

Yu Zhi Jue attentively observed him. Even though he was rash with his actions earlier, but he didn't fully penetrated him. In fact, only the tip went in. So that place was merely slightly red and swollen. Ling Xia is also not someone who would shed tears from a little pain. Maybe he was still mentally rejecting it.

Anyway, he took out a bottle of ointment and scooped up a bit with his finger, and then gently applied it on the entrance while saying: "It's not bleeding, it'll get better soon with this medicine."

Ling Xia bit his lips firmly and acted like a dead person. He couldn't stop the other person's actions anyway.

When he felt that man's finger slid in as he applied medicine, he immediately became nervous again. He shouted: "I'm not injured inside! Don't touch there!" He could hardly contain the trembling of his voice, making him appear weak.

Yu Zhi Jue saw Ling Xia uncontrollably shaking out of fear. He keep insisting stubbornly despite having a sickly complexion, making Yu Zhi Jue's chest burn. It was like he was shot in the knee with an arrow several times. He stopped his hand and replied: "Ok, I won't."

Even though he said that he woun't touch him, he still can't help himself from kissing Ling Xia's lips, cheeks, and then down to his neck and chest…..making Ling Xia both angry and anxious. He couldn't raise his legs to kick him, so he angrily said: "You fucker still not done?"

He very rarely cusses at people since he is initially a well mannered person. But right now, he can't help but shower a torrent of curses at this

mysterious guy.

Seeing this masculine side of Ling Xia that he rarely express, Yu Zhi Jue's body became increasingly hot. But maybe Ling Xia shouldn't get used to being angry….because it might became a habit after a while?

Yu Zhi Jue softly nipped Ling Xia's Adam apple. Then he took both of their thing in his hand and strokes it together. He couldn't resist kissing him as he rubs, their gasping became faster and faster.

Ling Xia was lying down on the bed like a dead fish, but he gradually loses control of his body and their breathing rhythm gradually synchronizes. He could only closed his eyes with mixed feelings. He was flush with anger while waiting for this mystery man to finished.

He didn't know how long it took till they were finally done, but both of them were soaked with sweat all over. Yu Zhi Jue took Ling Xia into his arms and carried him to the lake, washing him clean. Ling Xia was stupefied at first, but he was too tired to care in spewing out curses.

He then dresses Ling Xia with the same clothes identical to Ling Xia's. He kisses him on the lips and said: "Don't be upset, didn't it felt good just now?"

Feel good your ass! Ling Xia's face turned cold, but the flush in his face had not yet receded. Furthermore his waist and legs had gone soft, so his intimidating look was not persuasive at all.

Yu Zhi Jue unconsciously smiled and said: "Didn't you declared earlier that you'll kill me? Even though your spiritual strength and elemental abilities are very powerful, but you don't know how to harness them. I'll train you later on, ok?"

"No thanks!" Ling Xia gritted his teeth, "Sooner or later, I will find you and seek revenge!"

This motherfucker, does every time he uttered 'ok?', all this Lao Zi's words just went past through his ears?

Yu Zhi Jue unwittingly breaks into a laughter. He leaned his head down and planted a deep kiss on Ling Xia's lips. He then said: "You are welcome to find me anytime….I already took that boy where that bald headed eagle is. Just look from where you left them."

After explaining, he handed over a bottle of medicine and said: "Make those people smell this bottle and they will gradually recover—-Don't touch women, or even men, or I will not let you go next time."

Ling Xia was irritated by his implied threats.

This bastard still wants to find me later? And what the fuck did he meant by not touching other men?!

His eyesight was suddenly exposed to a bright light that Ling Xia immediately covered his eyes. He lets the light pass through his hands until it adapted. By the time he discovered that he was once again standing on top of that pile of stone, that mysterious man was already gone. If not for the different clothes he was wearing, he would think it was just all a dream.

He quickly looks down, and discovered that the guards were all lying unconscious on the ground. The iron cage was also unlocked by someone.

Even though he was worried about Ling Jue, but based on that masked man's words, that boy should probably be safe?

He examined that bottle in his hand, and then he jumped down and quickly ran over to the iron cage nearby. He apprehensively places his hands on those guards' noses to determine if they were breathing. He then tied them on top of the magic beast, and slapped the magic beast's behind to make it whisk them away, then he walked towards the iron cage.

Ling Xia first waved the bottle under the girl's nose. And after a short while, she slowly started to regain consciousness. He gave a short smile then asked: "Are you ok?"

Cui Yu's eyes slowly focuses. Once her vision is clear, she saw Ling Xia's face, making her pupil contract but hangs her head in disappointment

after.

It looks like it only slightly resembled that person's looks and temperament. Maybe he really isn't that person? So it seems, that man had truly died years ago….

Ling Xia watches her expression changes, then he asked straight to the point: "Miss, you…have you met me before?"

Cui Yu insipidly replied: "We haven't. Are you the one who rescued us? Many thanks."

As she spoke, she supported herself in getting up with great difficulty. She wanted to go to her fellow disciples and wake them up.

Ling Xia was speechless. He clearly heard that girl call him 'Ling Xia', *Did I heard it wrong? But her sudden change of expressions was rather suspicious.*

Cui Yu staggered, so Ling Xia hurriedly catches her and said: "You just recovered. Take a rest first—-I'll go to the others and gave them cure."

Ling Xia made every one of them sniff the medicine, and soon after, all of them had regained consciousness. They were all viciously tortured by the Dark Arts Sect's cultivators.

He contemplated, then decided to inquire further. He turned to Cui Yu and said: "Right now you are all still at the domain of the Dark Arts Sect. It's better if you miss and your companions changes to the clothing here so it'll be safe to leave—-I'm Ling Xia, may I ask young miss's name?"

Cui Yu's expression were dull at first, but her expression changes when she heard Ling Xia say his name. She asked with trembling lips: "Your name is also Ling Xia?"

That word 'also' made Ling Xia suddenly stand on alert. He nodded and replied: "It is. Is my name not appropriate?"

Cui Yu studied his face. The last time he had seen Ling Xia was eight years ago, there is some resemblance….But Song Xiao Hu said that he personally witness the death of Ling Xia, and his remains are buried in the land of Qian Kun Sect. He was so sure of it. This man's appearance may only be fifty percent similar to Ling Xia, but the way he spoke and his temperament is seventy to eighty percent similar in her memories…..

She looked distracted for a moment, then she suddenly looked confused. Her other companions called out to her: "Senior Sister, Senior Sister!"

Ling Xia supported her without thinking, taking her to her companions. He advised: "You should all escape quickly. Do not travel to main roads."

He suddenly remembered what that mysterious guy said to him, so he immediately passes the girl to those people—-*God knows that pervert might be hiding somewhere nearby.*

One of the men said to him: "Many thanks for your heroic rescue, comrade! We are disciples of Yun Xiao Cheng(lit tran. Sky City). If comrade needed help in the future, we are ready to risk our lives to return the favor!"

Yun Xiao Cheng? It felt somehow familiar to Ling Xia. Even though he is full of suspicions right now, but he couldn't recall these people at all. Besides, he is also worried about Da Bai and Ling Jue, so he turned towards them and nodded while saying: "Be careful on your way!"

He hastily ran back while feeling extremely anxious. Da Bai was actually fine, but Ling Jue was lying unconscious on the ground. His clothes was stained with blood, and his body was pierced with pieces of thorns and thistles.

Ling Xia was grief-stricken as he carefully took the boy in his arms…..

This foolish kid…

He couldn't bare to keep looking at those gushes. Even though they are only light wounds, but it was a horrible sight to the boy's white jade-like

skin complexion.

He softly patted the boy's cheeks and said: "Ah Jue, Ah Jue."

Ling Jue barely opened his eyes. It was evident that he was still in a half-stupor. Ling Xia carefully wiped off the dust in the boy's face and said: "Ah Jue, where does it hurt?"

"Leg…." He stared unblinkingly at Ling Xia and continued, "Don't get angry big brother. I was afraid that you won't come back. Have you saved those people?"

Ling Xia felt his eyes turned sour. He forced a smile and said: "You silly kid. Why would I not return? Those people had already left. I'll take you back for now."

Da Bai took the two of them to its cave nearby their residence. Ling Xia carried the boy on his back then he hastily ran back. Those people he bumped into asked what happened, and he only replied that Ling Jue accidentally fell into a cliff. In any case, them as beastkeepers are allowed to do what they want during their free time as long as their done with their duties, so no one was skeptical.

Ling Xia puts Ling Jue at the bed, then he quickly fetched a basin of hot water, bandages, and other medical supplies.

He carefully took off Ling Jue's clothes, wiped the wounds clean with warm towel, and gently applied medicine on him. Ling Jue stayed still without making a sound, not even in pain.

"What do you like to eat?" Ling Xia combed the boy's hair with his hand and asked in a soft tone, "I will go and get you some."

The boy tugged his sleeved and said: "I don't have appetite. Big brother, just stay by my side." As he said that, he laid his head on Ling Xia's lap. He was like a sick child acting spoiled.

Ling Xia helplessly smiled. Might as well let the boy rest in his embrace, if it will make him feel better.

Ling Jue suddenly said: “Big brother, when did you changed clothes?”

Ling Xia was stunned. His face turn red in a moment and he was at loss on what to say. That shameful and humiliating act resurfaced in his mind. That hidden area that’s making him have difficulty sitting seemed like it was throbbing with pain, he uncomfortably shifted his sitting position.

Even though that man had changed him into a same deep blue clothes, but the disparity in quality with his servant clothes was too high, it’s just that he was too preoccupied that he overlooked it.

He coughed and replied: “It got dirty, so I changed into a new set.”

Fortunately, Ling Jue didn’t asked much questions thus Ling Xia sighed in relief. He didn’t had the audacity to look at that boy’s pure eyes without being guilty.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 11

Three to four days passes by quietly. There were no search party as well, so Ling Xia was gradually put at ease. So it seems, that a few people escaping is not that much of a big deal?

The only thing that bothers him, is that he frequently had a dream involving that damn pervert these past few days. He tried to get away from beneath that man but he couldnt, leaving him helpless as the two of them are in that same situation from the last time. There were also other convoluted dreams mixed in, and some of them are very vague scenes. It was as if he had encountered a lot of people, and a lot of things had happened…..

This time the dream was even more surreal. His view was set in air in an angle, spectating his and that man's feverish bodies intimately entwining with each other. Strange enough, he could actually feel what he was experience from beneath that man. Their deep kisses was so intense he could hardly breath, and the feeling of being penetrated was real. His body going numb with every thrusts, and that uncontrollable sensation that makes him lose his senses repeatedly washes over him….He heard himself softly moans while he pleads, as the magnetic and erotic voice of that perverted man keeps gasping weakly near his ear. That man leaned closer to his ears and whispers "Ling…."

Ling Xia's eyes shot wide open while he was grasping for breath. He then noticed that he was soaked with sweat, and there are something warm and sticky in his inner thigh. To his surprise, it was a wet dream! He was blushing as he gently raised Ling Jue's arms off his waist. He went off like a thief to take his underpants off, and wiped the sticky filth clean between his legs.

Shit! What happening to him? To think that he'll dream about people fucking! He wanted to cry but he was unable to, so he just slapped himself twice in the face.

Ling Xia was afraid that Ling Jue will find out, so he quickly but quietly tiptoed back to the bed with changed clothes. He had rolled that sullied clothes into a ball and tosses it into the laundry bin.

When he got back in the bed, Ling Jue was already awake. He asked with a drowsy eyes: “Big brother Ling, what are you doing?”

Ling Xia sheepishly scratched his head and replied: “Just went to the bathroom, you can go back to sleep.”

Ling Jue muttered ‘en’ and obediently went back to sleep. As soon as Ling Xia saw the boy about to wrapped his arms around his body again with a pure expression while in deep sleep, he hastily scooted back to the wall—-What would he do if he couldn’t restrain himself from groping and rubbing against Ling Jue while he was dreaming?

He heaved a deep sigh. Why did he dreamt that kind of dream with a guy instead of a girl? And it was even with that damn pervert, even though he had almost erases all of that man’s traces in his mind!

He couldn’t sleep well for several days, and would be listless as morning comes. After they are done with their everyday errand of feeding the eagle chicks, he and Ling Jue would sit on top of a boulder on the cliff side and watches Da Bai fly around in the sky.

“Brother, what’s wrong with you recently?” Ling Jue worriedly asked, “are you not sleeping well during the night?”

Ling Xia’s face blushed as he reply: “Just having nightmares. Ah Jue, is it possible for people to have the same name in the world, as well as having uncanny similarity in appearance?”

Ling Jue looked down and answered: “I don’t know, but there are countless wonders in the world, so maybe I do.”

Ling Xia nodded. Perhaps its just a coincidence. And yet he can’t help but ask: “Ah Jue, do you sometimes have this feeling, where you see

something or someone and thought that it was very familiar, as if you have encountered it before, but you just can't put your finger into it?"

As he spoke, he couldn't help himself from smiling: "Such as, when I met Ah Jue for the first time, it felt like I knew you very well."

Yu Zhi Jue's complexion slightly changed. He was under the impression that Ling Xia would be fond of him, if he disguised himself to this appearance that Ling Xia likes. In accordance to the ritual's conditions, he is not allowed to recount the past memories to Ling Xia. And Ling Xia had no remaining memories from here…..or, is it possible that Ling Xia's memories is buried in his subconsciousness?

He inquisitively asked: "I do too. When I met brother, it seemed like we had met before in the same way. And there are times that dreams felt too real. Big brother, are you having that kind of realistic dreams as well?"

Such a simple question had struck Ling Xia's sore point. He uneasily answered: "I do sometimes…."

Yu Zhi Jue lowered his head as if he was contemplating.

Could Ling Xia's memories be recovered?—-

When he thought about that, his chest warmed up at once.

Two days had passed since then. The disciple in charge suddenly went to find Ling Xia and called him over to say: "Um, Xiao Dao, I have good news for you! The higher-ups are looking for two people to take care of a high ranking official's magic beast with one year contract. I recommended you and Ling Jue. The salary is ten-times higher than here!"

Ling Xia was gobsmacked. Ten times? What's with the pie falling down from the heaven? But he had no intention on having anything to do with big bosses of Dark Arts Sect. That high pay comes with high risk for sure, so he thought it was too troublesome.

He quickly declined: “Senior brother, isn’t too important of a task? I haven’t been working that long, and Ling Jue is just a newly recruit. Isn’t there more capable and experienced people than us….”

The disciple in charge cut him off and said: “You are generally patient and meticulous so you’ll learn fast, that’s why don’t say no. To be honest with you, that official is very specific with their requirement that they must have a composed and upright appearance. The only ones who matches that requirement among us here is you and Ling Jue. One year will pass by quick, and didn’t you say you have to earn money to send to your wife?”

Ling Xia couldn’t say anything after listening. Beasts cannot discern between a beauty or an ugly person. He’s being sent to take care of the beast and not that VIP, so what’s with the looks requirements?

The disciple in charge couldn’t be dissuaded at all, and he won’t leave a room for leeway.

Ling Xia frowned while in thoughts, trying to weigh the pro’s and cons… not only he would have more savings, he’ll be more financially stable when he leaves.

He’s worried about Da Bai though. That magic beast is used to being taken care by him and Ling Jue. Maybe he could come visit it during his free time? And thinking about it, that perverted guy must’ve already know where he stays. Can’t say for sure but that guy might come and harassed him, so if he leave, he might be able to avoid him.

He lifted his head and said: “I accept. My gratitude to senior brother. When shall we depart?”

“That’ll be tomorrow, so you better go back and inform Ling Jue and pack both of your stuff.” The disciple in charge patted his shoulder with a beaming smile and continued to say, “Work hard. We don’t know for sure but one of these days might be your, Xiao Dao’s, path to success.”

That same day, Ling Xia rushes to find Da Bai. He feeds it with a big chunk of meat then relayed the news, by gesturing to Da Bai that he’ll be

leaving for tomorrow. Da Bai's head plumes suddenly rises up, and its usually lazy small eyes opened widely in a perfect round. Ling Xia never saw it have that expression before! It latches its beak tightly on his clothes and not letting go as if it was afraid he's gonna go away.

Ling Xia somehow found it both touching and amusing. He comfortingly stroke its feathers: "Clever Da Bai, it'll be difficult to take you with us…."

Da Bai drooped its head, then suddenly it started rolling on the ground. Its bone was making cracking sounds, and it would wail in pain from time. It was also flailing its talons in the air in pain.

Ling Xia jumped in fright. He nervously stepped closer and asked: "Da Bai, what's wrong with you?"

Da Bai's body slowly shrinks in the speed that can be seen with naked eyes. Until finally, it turned into a small chick. Ling Xia was dumbstruck witnessing it.

He wasn't aware, that a high level magic beast could transform its body to a smaller size, like Ah Li and Ke Lan MinErBai's Zhu'er(her spider). But Da Bai rarely revert its body to a small form, so it was a bit exhausting for the eagle.

Da Bai was lying on a grassy patch and was continuously chirping. It flapped its little wings until it landed on Ling Xia's hand, and fawningly rubbing its head on the hollow of Ling Xia's palm. Da Bai's wings right now is completely different from that demonic like domineering wings it had. It was a lot premature on the contrary. It's just that, its head plumes were still sparse, not as fluffy as a cute chick.

He couldn't resist stroking its head, and saying with a smile: "You have to listen well and be behaved."

When he came back with Da Bai, Ling Jue's complexion was slightly unwell. Ling Jue said to him: "Brother, this bird is too troublesome. What if it causes trouble?"

Ling Xia rubbed its head and replied with a smile: “It’s alright, Da Bai is very obedient.”

Ling Jue apathetically shot it a sharp glance. Da Bai can’t help but shiver, why does it feels like a freezing gust of wind sweeps by?

They didn’t have much luggage, and it was all stored inside Ling Xia’s storage pouch. He then said his goodbyes to Wan Yan and the others. It was beyond his expectation, when the sect unexpectedly sent a carriage pulled by two magic beast to pick the two of them up. The coachman even politely invited them to the carriage.

When they got in, Ling Xia was surprised to the design of the interior. Even though it looked very ordinary outside, the interior actually had a very cozy arrangement, with stuff readily available. The soft carriage couches were covered with thick silk where one could take a rest. And on the middle is a small table with preserved fruits and other light refreshments.

Ling couldn’t held in his smile: “It seems that this VIP treats his staffs very well.” He had asked the disciple in charge before, but he doesn’t know who is that person either.

Based on those transmigration novels, the guy who transmigrates always meets a lot of girls. Could it be that the magic beast’s owner is a beauty? Ling Xia suddenly felt a bit excited.

Ling Jue didn’t sit on the soft couches without pulling Ling Xia to sit besides him. Ling Xia saw dried meat in the table, so he took Da Bai out and places it to the table.

The carriage’s travel went very smooth. The speed was fast as well so they arrived to their destination before evening.

Ling Xia got out of the carriage and stretches his arms. He observantly looked around his surroundings, and was stupefied in turn.

The construction was amazing, it looked like it was a majestic palace of an emperor. The place was spectacularly huge, and the design of the garden

was very pretty. But if one have to point out its faults, it was too desolate and doesn't have any presence of people.

Soon a stern looking guard came over and greeted them. He said with a composed expression: "Are you two the new recruits expected? I'll bring you two to the arranged residence."

His expression were strictly grave and stern, Ling Xia couldn't put on a relax expression. He nodded his head and replied: "Sure, I'll be imposing on senior brother to lead the way."

Da Bai was already hidden away on his bag once again, and is currently remaining motionless and was rather silent. To make sure Ling Jue will not be anxiously afraid, Ling Xia held him by the hand and pulls him along as they walk.

Yu Zhi Jue was momentarily stunned, but he unconsciously grinned slightly.

This residence seemed to be newly built. The furniture inside the room were all new and were arranged neatly in a simple yet elegant way. It was way more spacious than his old residence in the Bai Shou Yuan, about several times its size?

The guard pointed to the wardrobe and said: "There are some clothes prepared for you two, including the uniform that you can use. Tomorrow morning around chenshi(7-9 am), someone will bring your breakfast. Once you've eaten, deliver the food of the master's magic beast's to its location."

Ling Xia quickly cupped his hands in gratitude, and waited till the guard left. Ling Xia studied the look of the room, then discovered one strange thing. The room was very spacious and was even divided into two sections, but there is only one bed. The bed was so small, his bed at the Bai Shou Yuan was much bigger in comparison. It looked like it was completely out of place in the room.

Ling Jue was somewhat blushing when he said: "There's only one bed. Brother, it looks like we have to bunk together again."

“It’s ok.” Ling Xia was pinching his earlobes while saying with a smile, “It wasn’t that cool today. I’ll search the wardrobe if there’s extra bedding, so I could sleep at the floor.”

Ling Jue immediately frowned: ” How is that ok? Then I’ll sleep with you on the floor, my health got better.”

Two people was pushing and pulling, in the end, it resulted into bunking together in the evening like before. Ling Xia took off his outer robe and turned it into a temporary nest for Da Bai to sleep on. Da Bai unexpectedly fell into a deep sleep.

The environment was different and unfamiliar, it filled Ling Xia’s mind with uncertainty he couldn’t sleep at all. Ling Jue suddenly hugged his waist and pitifully said: “Brother, I’ve been feeling unwell these past few days.”

Ling Xia was stunned. He hastily sat up and replied: “Ah Jue, where are you feeling ill?”

Ling Jue buried his head on the blanket, leaving only his clear forehead with crow-like black fringe, without saying anything at all. Ling Xia became even more worried, he quickly touches his forehead. Ling Jue’s temperature up to the tips of his soft fingers are usually colder than the average. But right now, he was slightly burning.

People in olden times are likely to die from a high fever. Ling Xia panicked and was about to run off after saying: “Ah Jue, you have a high fever….I’ll go find the guards and asked them to send for a physician!”

Ling Jue grabbed his hand. He was huffing as he spoke: “I’m not, not sick in that way.”

The force applied in his arms was so great it was intimidating. He could only turn around and ask: “Ah Jue, where are you feeling sick?”

Ling Jue averted his head to the side. He lowered his head for quite some time then stammeringly said in a mosquito like voice: “Brother, its m-my

part where I pee that's feeling unwell… Recently every night, it would always swell up painfully….don't tell other people…"

…..*What?* Ling Xia's eyes widened in shock.

Ling Jue had already taken off his underpants with this head drooping, and his pair of fair and slender legs were slightly squirming. The boy's ears were blushing to the base, he was hugging his knees tightly, and his black long hair was covering half of his face. His back was trembling like a restless small animal, that it make Ling Xia unable to resist in wanting to soothe him.

…..*Young man, you are not dying, you are growing up.*

Ling Xia was silently looking at him from a distance, his face was blushing as well.

Right. Ah Jue had finally reached that age. It common that there aren't puberty education in the olden times, and Ah Jue doesn't have parents either. He was normally reserved in front of other people….

Ling Xia's eyes were absentminded for a moment. Why does it feel so familiar?

"Brother…." The boy voice is soft, as if it was filled with confusion and restlessness, "A-am I gonna die?"

Ling Xia gently patted the boy's head, and soothingly said in a soft tone: "No, Ah Jue, you are growing up."

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 12

Seeing Ling Jue's panic-stricken eyes, Ling Xia thought of giving him proper lecture about a man's physiology. But the more he tried to speak about it, the more he felt it was de ja vu. Both sides of his ears were struck with a faint rumbling sound of thunder, stunning him.

Ling Jue pulled on his sleeves and anxiously asked: "Brother, are you ok?"

Ling Xia only then noticed that he was short of breath. He forced a smile and replied: "I'm alright. Anyway, Ah Jue is not sick. It's a very common thing so you shouldn't worry about it."

"But what should I do when sometimes, its very painful?" Ling Jue's voice is somewhat in distress as he continued, "It's starting to hurt right now."

Ling Jue hung his head and slowly lifted his hands from that erection standing between his legs. Upon seeing it, Ling Xia couldn't look away, but he was choked by it he couldn't think of anything to say.

**cough *cough, Should I teach someone who haven't reach puberty how to masturbate?*

Is it okay to do it with guilty feelings and impure thoughts?

In the end he just patted Ling Jue's head as if he was avoiding the idea, and awkwardly pulled up his pants for him: "Lil' Ah Jue, there's no need to worry about it. All boys are like this, so it's gonna be okay."

"…….So brother is like this too?" Ling Jue suddenly copped a feel on Ling Xia's lower part to check, then said, "but brother, yours is just fine."

Ling Xia wasn't expecting that at all. Ling Jue moved too fast and suddenly grab his weak point. Not only that, Ling Jue even kneaded it with

force. Ling Xia's legs went soft. He almost pissed his pants from fright because of the boy's actions!

He swatted Ling Jue's hands off out of reflex, his face blushing as he retreated two steps back. He was a bit angry while saying: "Ah Jue, that's not something you should joke with. Remember, in a human body…… there's a part, that even a friend is not allowed to touch at random."

Once he said that, Ling Xia regretted it. He was talking as if it was something so serious. Ling Jue is just an energetic child who is taken by his curiosity. He hastily walk over to him, checking the place he had slapped. He had great strength, so he left a painfully red mark on Ling Jue's pale right hand.

He was feeling sorry as he gently rubs it. He softly asked: "Was it painful for you?"

Ling Jue raises his head and met his eyes. His voice was somewhat stiff: "No. I did something wrong and causes brother to be angry."

Seeing the boy's usually stubborn-looking lips pursed up, Ling Xia was feeling a bit of remorse.

It's all that damn pervert's fault! If it wasn't for him, I wouldn't be this jumpy. Ah Jue is too young to understand those stuff anyway.

He reaches his hands out, thinking of petting Ling Jue's head, but the boy turned to the side and avoided his touch, then droop his head while biting his lips.

Ling Xia's eyes widened. Why did Ling Jue became upset like this, was he affected because he's frustrated from his erection? Ling Xia don't know whether to laugh or cry from this.

In the end, he heaved a helpless sigh and climbed back into the bed. He said: "Don't be upset, Ah Jue. I was too rough just now…..Is it still painful there?"

It took quite a while, before Ling Jue uttered an ‘en’ in a mosquito like voice. He curved his slender yet fit waist inwards, and tightly hugged both of his legs, as if he was a small kitten curling up to a ball from getting injured.

Ling Xia didn’t have the courage to look at him, as he suddenly held Ling Jue’s hand and balled it into grip, then guided it in an up and down sliding motion. He explained in a hurried manner: “You grip that and move it like this.The the pain will go away soon enough——I’m going to the toilet.”

After that, he immediately jumped out of the bed like he was caught on fire. He was about to run out of the room when he suddenly turned back, and places a clean cloth besides the pillow. He awkwardly explained: “Um, you can use that to wipe it off. Be careful not to spill on the bed.”

Yu Zhi Jue watches his flustered figure as he ran away, his eyes slightly narrowing. He remembered during his that time, Ling Xia had helped him…

Just where did I go wrong?

He was quite certain, that Ling Xia cared for him as much as before….But why did it ended up like this, why didn’t he helped him come?

Right, he was the one who held Ling Xia first…..but Ling Xia was secretly helping him then(vol 2 flashback). But this time, the two of them are both awake. Maybe that’s why Ling Xia was too shy?

His body was burning hot, his lower part was painfully hard that he could no longer contain himself. Yu Zhi Jue closed his eyes and moved his hands. He inhaled the remnants of Ling Xia’s scent that he loves while he was grudgingly increasing his speed. He imagined Ling Xia beneath him with tears in his eyes as he pleadingly moan….

“Ling…” Yu Zhi Jue was gasping for breath, his come gushing out till that piece of cloth was soaked with that warm liquid.

Ling Xia waited by the roof for a long while before returning. Once he's back, there's an ambiguous smell that has not yet dissipated. He stood in front of the doorstep for a moment, then he slowly walks in.

The flush from Ling Jue's face had not yet faded, his eyes were somehow evasive. When he looked up and met Ling Xia's gaze, he turned his face to the side, and covered himself with the blanket to hide.

Ling Xia's awkwardness suddenly dissipated. He found it a bit amusing, he was a kid after all!

He moved closer and patted Ling Jue's head. He quietly said: "Sleep well. But don't do that too often…Once a week is enough. Too much will be harmful for your body."

The boy droop its head and answered with a hum. Ling Jue soon fell asleep, and not for long, those days where the boy would coil on his body like an octopus resumed. Ling Xia smiled and gently patted his head.

The next day, Ling Xia caught Ling Jue sneakingly washing his underpants on the wooden basin. He merely gave a look of turning a blind eye into it, and treated Ling Jue as natural as much as he could like before.

En, I also did that before secretly…

After cleaning themselves up in the morning, there was someone who arrived and served their breakfast. There are two bowls of appetizingly fragrant congee with ingredients he couldn't make out, four exquisite and tasty side dishes, and two salty and sweet round cakes.

This is the first time Ling Xia had tasted such a sumptous breakfast in this world, and the food were very delicious. He would also offer Ling Jue some of the food from time to time. Ling Jue was clearly not off-put by it, and would obediently eats all the food Ling Xia passes to him. Da Bai was still in that adorable small version of it, and was eating along with them.

Ling Xia doesn't have any plans to bring Da Bai with them. Most of the magic beasts had keen sense of smell. If it discovered Da Bai, a fight may

ensue. Da Bai had no choiced but to fly to the roof and wait till sunset, depressingly drooping its head.

Once their done with their breakfast and preparations, a guard wearing all black came in, signaling the two of them to follow him.

Ling Xia was skeptically staring at the guard's boots. He remembered it clearly. When he had just transmigrated, there was a person who came to him asking his name, that person had the same clothes with this guard. Could it be that's the high-ranking official's subordinate?

He took a note about it in his mind but he didn't ponder about it too much, he was preoccupied in attentively memorizing the road. After all, the guard might not show them the way the next time.

It took around half an incense of stick before they stopped walking. That guard had took them to a barn. It was a place were the food being rear for that high level magic beast they were task to care of are being stored. They were all low level magic beasts sent from the Bai Shou Yuan. There were probably around five to six different breed.

During the short duration that Ling Xia stayed at the Bai Shou Yuan, he could already distinguished almost all of the common magic beast. He knew their weaknesses and daily habits as well. He and Ling Jue changed into protective gears at once, and catches two green wings and two meaty and very plump pecking cows then puts them into a iron cage.

That guard then instructed the two of them with the important pointers in feeding the magic beast. Ling Xia and Ling Jue listened carefully, then they rode the carriage where the iron cage is mounted and quickly left.

The master's magic beast isn't actually picky with its food, rather, it likes to eat any living animal. They just need to pay special attention in watching over it and taking it down the mountains to the river side for a drink. They must also diligently maintain its scales….Most importantly, they must not show fear and treat it contemptuously, and they shouldn't bother it in its sleep, and other things……

While the guard was explaining, he casts an indifferent glance at Ling Xia: “There are already ten people eaten before, I hope I will still see you tomorrow.”

Ling Xia was absolutely terrified hearing that. *Just what kind of monster is it anyway?*

The guard chaffeured the carriage for quite some time, until they reached a canyon area. He pointed at the lake below and said: “The master’s magic beast dwells there. Follow this lane until you reach it. Just remember you two, take the cage on the lake side and leave it open.”

After the guards concise instructions, Ling Xia watches him leave, then he started trembling up to the sole of his feet.

Ling Jue was besides him, if something dangerous happened to him….he’ll resign himself to a thousand deaths as a punishment.

He pulled Ling Jue’s hand and quietly said: “Ah Jue, you shouldn’t go with me for this first time. It’s better if I take the cage there by myself and wait for me here. Once you have enough experience, we can go together next time.”

“No.” Ling Jue replied with a bit of an annoyed tone, “Brother, you want to push me aside when there’s danger? I won’t be afraid just because of that.”

Looking at his stubborn and resolute eyes, Ling Xia’s heart inexplicably pounded.

But no matter what, he would never allow Ling Jue to take chances. He applied a forceful tone in his voice and said: “Child, listen to me! Just wait here or I’ll be angry!”

Ling Jue sighed in the end. Ling Xia sighed in relief and smiled at him. He took charge of the cart and followed the small road downhill.

There were no roads ahead near the lakeside, so he unloaded the cage and pulled on the rope tied around it up to the lakeside. Even if those magic beasts' weight adds up to almost half a ton, he didn't put much effort in tugging it along.

Even though the magic beasts inside the cage were low levels, they could feel the enormous power of something pressuring them. The beasts were so scared they were jumping and flailing around chaotically, so Ling Xia speeds up his movements.

He hasn't opened the cage yet, when a sudden loud splashing noise came from the lake. An enormous wall of water rises up into the air, momentarily flooding out like a river. Ling Xia couldn't close his eyes in time and water got inside.

Once he had wiped his face dry, he immediately saw a gigantic triangular serpent head directly facing him! It was looking at him with its yellow green eyes and slit pupil, its forked tongue slithering out from time to time, and its fangs were very long and fierce. All of those features made Ling Xia's heart shiver, he can't help but take a step back.

That head of the snake suddenly coiled back, revealing to Ling Xia its full form. His pupil immediately contracted—— *it's that mysterious pervert's two headed monster! Don't tell me it was that damn pervert's plan all along?*

But right now he couldn't afford to think of anything else, he had to focus everything he got to deal with this monster!

The enormous Two Headed Flying Serpent was floating in the middle of the lake, its two sets of eyes staring at him. Ling Xia felt like he was being watched like a frog that's about to lose in the battle of survival the next moment, leaving a feeling of dread and fear in his otherwise blanked mind!

Ah Jue….

Ling Xia bit his lips heavily, recovering his spirit in a flash.

He recalled what the guard had said to them. He forces himself raise his head, and pour all of his strength to look like he wasn’t afraid at all, instead, he was brimming with courage as he stares back at that two headed serpent.

The two headed serpent was looking at him without blinking, as if it was waiting for him to make a move.

Ling Xia secretly gulped a mouthful of air. He slowly walked towards the metal cage and opens it. At this moment, those low level magic beast were already cowering in fear at the corner of the cage, too scared to move around. Ling Xia had no choice but to forcefully pull them out.

A frightened Green Wing grabbed and clawed his arm, but he endured the pain and tosses it out.

One of the serpent’s head made a nimble turn and quickly caught it, greedily swallowing it whole. While the other head was still tenaciously watching him.

Very well…

Ling Xia inwardly rouses his heart with strength. Just like what he did just now, he grabbed another Green Wing and tosses it out. This Green Wing was rather strong. Ling Xia was caught off guard by its unexpected fleeing! He hastily went to grab it, but his arm accidentally hits the metal cage in the process, creating a loud ringing noise.

That dull clanking noise seemed like it alarmed the Two Headed Flying Serpent as its sudden loud hiss echoed in the sky.

Ling Xia was so frightened, he couldn’t make a sound!

He abruptly jumped away in a distant place. The Two Headed Flying Serpent whipped the metal cage with its strong and flexible tail, flinging it up in the air! One of the serpent’s head slipped inside the cage and swallow everything inside. After that, its tail wrapped around it, and crushes the metal cage till it turned into a ball of iron scraps.
The food it swallowed were slightly bulging in its neck.

Ling Xia was short of breath, can he run away from the grasp of this monster?

The Two Headed Flying Serpent steadily watches him as if it was securing a prey, his back instantaneously dripping with cold sweat. His intuition was telling him that it was absolutely impossible!

He tried to suppress his fear from showing as he stares back at the Two Headed Flying Serpent and say: “Since you’re full, I’ll be seeing you tomorrow.”

That’s nonsense though! You think this Lao Zi will stay and serve you? If I do I’ll be running into that mysterious perverted master of yours! ! !

Maybe the Two Headed Flying Serpent heard the contradicting thoughts in his mind, or maybe it has a habit of moving about after swallowing its food. Ling Xia was dumbstruck watching as the Two Headed Flying Serpent unfolded its gigantic wings, and sends several wind blades as if it was intentionally attacking him!

Ling Xia quickly dodges the two attacks, but the third one after that was unavoidable. The scene before his eyes seemed like it slows down, as he watches a fair and slender arm shoved him out of the way. Next thing he knew, the boy was lightly flung away, then heavily fell down on the ground, and rolling over multiple times. A long trail of blood was left behind in the patch of grass.

It took a while before Ling Xia could regain his voice. His voice were raspy and trembling as he screamed: “Ah Jue!”

The Two Headed Flying serpent quickly coil its tail to the unconscious boy and carried him away.

The author wanted to say:

The big(adult) Ah Jue will be appearing on the next update! The Two Headed Flying Serpent’s showed, that its acting skill is as good as its master~

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 13

Ling Xia helplessly witnessed Ling Jue being dragged into the water inch by inch. He recklessly dive into the lake to follow after it, swimming with all his strength.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent's slit pupils were closely observing him. It was looking down on him with its head high as if he's only a mere ant in the ground. It's either staying idle from being bored, or it was waiting for him to make a move.

Ling Xia rushes to swim towards the two headed serpent's tail. While he was swimming, he was looking for ways to make it reveal Ling Jue so he can save him. However, with just a few swipes of wind blades, Ling Xia was quickly washed ashore by the shockwave.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent stepped back once more, and watches Ling Xia with full interest.

Ling Xia was a bit taken back when he discovered that there weren't any injuries in his body. He immediately dives in again, but as soon as he swims near, the Two Headed Flying Serpent strikes him with the same attack.

Again and again, Ling Xia was washed ashore for three times already, making him completely furious.

It so obvious that this monster is just playing tricks with me like a monkey!

The Two Headed Flying Serpents tail wasn't deeply submerged into the water, but he still couldn't see clearly whether Ling Jue sustained heavy injuries. He stayed still, floating in the water for quite some time…glaring at the two headed serpent.

I'm willing to risk my life, if it would save Ling Jue!

The aquatic plants floating on the water surface suddenly reminded Ling Xia of his innate abilities. He evoked the elemental energy in his body and controlled those aquatic plants to rise up. Countless creeping vines started shooting up in a rapid rate on the surface of the lake.

“Go!” Ling Xia suddenly brandished his hands forward, and those countless vines swiftly crawled towards the serpent. The vines simultaneously weaves itself, creating an enormous net binding around the Two Headed Flying Serpent’s body.

But with just a few slashes of wind blades, the net surrounding it was turned into countless fine pieces of rattan, and falling like sprinkling snowflakes. However, more of those continued to rise up and coil around the serpent. Ling Xia took that chance to lift several heavy boulders and throws it over, one of them unexpectedly hitting the two headed serpent in the stomach. The hit made it coil back for a moment.

“Let go of Ah Jue!” Ling Xia shouted loudly towards it, “if you have the ability, come and eat me!”

The Two Headed Flying Serpent lets out a dangerous hissing sounds, its yellow green eyes eminating a terrifying glow. Ling Xia didn’t have an ounce of fear as he stares back at the serpent. Both of his eyes reddened as he shouted repeatedly without pausing: “Give Ah Jue back to me!”

Ling Xia slightly hunched his back, and clenches his fist with the desperation to fight back.

Ah Jue can no longer be kept waiting!

“Just for this boy, your willing to sacrifice your life?” An arm suddenly wrapped around his shoulder from behind, his magnetic deep voice resonating closely in his ears, “that makes me jealous.”

Ling Xia quivered. Out of reflex, he turned around and swung his fist, but it was effortlessly caught. His clothes were thoroughly soaked long ago, sticking closely to his figure. He didn’t know how the masked man did it, but his clothes quickly became dry.

This masked person was wearing a long blue robe this time. The mask covering half of his face had an exquisite orchid pattern across it, his exposed lips had a beautiful luster, and his chin was handsome and chiseled gorgeously. His appearance was dazzling as always.

Ling Xia forcefully pulled that hand off him, then calmed himself down: “I don’t know what you are really planning, but please ask your pet to return my younger brother!”

“Time always run so fast whenever we meet.” The masked man faintly smiled and continued, “That’s why, it’s better for us to go to my dimension and have a nice chat.”

When the scenery in front of him suddenly change, Ling Xia knew that he was taken once again into this masked man’s unknown territory.

Is this the masked man’s dimension?

He had always noticed, that despite staying in this place twice for quite for a long period of time, the time didn’t changed much once he got out…..such a bizarre ability.

Behind the masked man was a one-story bamboo house. Ling Xia looks at it and was reminded of that disturbing event from the last time. He was penetrated and humiliated, causing him to lose his self-control. The other person kept embracing him and repeatedly murmuring foolishly without letting go…..

His face immediately blushes: “Why not just talk outside? Release Ah Jue at once!”

“But of course, I didn’t just brought you in just for a talk.” The masked man slowly walked towards him, each and every movement carries a graceful but dangerous appeal, “Don’t worry, I won’t do anything to him—- Why do you care about him so much?”

“We are close like brothers, of course I will care about him!” Ling Xia can’t help but to start stepping backwards, until his back was quickly press

against a tree and he was securely confined by that masked man.

Ling Xia knew that he doesn't stand a chance in resisting against this man with brute strength, so he firmly bit his lips and said: "Did you plan everything…just so you could do that? I'll do as you say, as long as you'll let Ah Jue go!"

Yu Zhi Jue pinched his chin and lifted it up. His eyes slightly narrowed: "Do you really treats him only like a younger brother? And yet, you are willing to do anything for him? This is really making me feel deeply hurt…..You do know that I like you."

It was plain to see that he was flirting, yet his words and the expression of his eyes were very serious. And when he said 'I like you', Ling Xia's heart unexpectedly trembled, and becoming inexplicably disconcerted.

He didn't have the courage to look at the other person's eyes. He could only lowered his gaze and replied: "I don't deserve it….If you really like men, there are plenty of more attractive and smart nobilities out there than me…."

"But I only want you." Yu Zhi Jue suddenly pulled him into his embrace, and declared in his husky voice, "All I think about is you in every single moment. Thinking about kissing you, embracing you….."

Completely enclosed within the other person's arms, Ling Xia felt uneasy and was struggling to get free. But he couldn't budge even the slightest. This is the first time a man had confessed to him so passionately, it practically overwhelmed him that he was at loss on what to say: "I already said, I seriously don't like men, I only like women!"

"Lies," Yu Zhi Jue swiftly replied while slowly loosening his hold. As he spoke closely at Ling Xia's ears, he was relishing the reaction of his ears turning red. He smiled and whispered: "You can't deny your body's honest reaction towards me. You like what I do to you, you like my touch…."

Like your sister!

Ling Xia could clearly feel the pounding of the other person's chest. He was flustered and really wanted to spat out curses at this man. But he remembered Ling Jue was still at the hands of this person, so he suppresses the churning fury in his stomach with all his might.

"Last time, I clearly said that you are not allowed to touch any women as well as men." Yu Zhi Jue slowly slips his hands on Ling Xia's waist, "did you really not do anything like that?"

Ling Xia was pissed to the point he was speechless.

This Lao Zi is not like you who could charm anybody! And even if this Lao Zi did, it's none of your damn business!

Seeing Ling Xia's bashful and embarrassed look, Yu Zhi Jue was tempted even more to bully him. Hence, he whispered in a deep voice: "Did you have a dream about me? A dream where the two of us were doing that same thing last time? I'm always dreaming about you beneath my body gasping, and pleading for me to slow down…."

"Stop it! I didn't dream something like that!" Ling Xia couldn't bear to hear more, so he hurriedly cut off that shameless man's words before the feeling of shame in his heart is completely expose. It made him guilty, for he really dreamt about those uncensored details of their fucking!

Yu Zhi Jue understands that he shouldn't make him upset again, so he gives in and didn't say anything anymore. He could feel Ling Xia's body timidly trembling from shame because of his obscene language, causing his body's temperature to rise up along with his indescribable desire. He really wished he could swallow Ling Xia up!

"There will be a day when you'll inevitably be mine." He suddenly nibbled Ling Xia's shoulder. He was quietly gasping while saying, "I keep wanting you everday. So let's do something that will feel good right now…"

Ling Xia knew that he couldn't escape anyway, so gritted his teeth and replied: "Just don't soil my clothes!"

Yu Zhi Jue chuckled softly: “Are you worried that Ah Jue will notice? I’ll make sure not to…..”

He lifted Ling Xia in his arms, and quickly took him to the soft couch inside the bamboo house.

Ling Xia remained quiet, patiently anticipating to be engulfed in the darkness. However, the other person didn’t rush to block his sight this time around. Instead, he was leisurely starting to take his own clothes off. Smooth and beautiful body was slowly being revealed in front of Ling Xia. His skin were fine and well defined. And every part of his body was a perfection as if he was god’s masterpiece.

Ling Xia was startled. He anxiously pulled his legs back, and casts an angry look at the other person: “What are you going to do?”

“Don’t worry.” Yu Zhi Jue gently smiled, “I won’t do it for real unless you desire it too—-the last time was only an accident.”

Ling Xia was secretly annoyed, *oh now it matters that this Lao Zi doesn’t want it?*

He made up his mind. After this, he must take Ling Jue and Da Bai with him and run away! Away from this freaking perverted masked man!

This masked man had everything at his disposal, unlike him. Could he even deal with this man or run away from him?

Yu Zhi Jue quickly went closer and untied Ling Xia’s sash. While he was slowly taking it off, he said: “The quality of this mask I’m wearing is different from the last time. It’s material is capable of sticking to the skin, so it won’t be affected by my movements.”

As he said that, he looked up to Ling Xia and grinned. He pushed Ling Xia to sit on the couch with ease: “That’s why, there’s no need to block your vision——-look at me.”

Ling Xia's heart pounded wildly, and his eyes couldn't maintain contact with the other person's deep and passionate eyes. His eyes was emitting a strong feeling of desire and charm that Ling Xia couldn't fathom, making his brain muddled.

The feeling of shame makes him want to run away this instance, but his stiff body wouldn't even budge.

The masked man kneels down and positioned himself between Ling Xia's legs. He slowly takes off Ling Xia's underpants and firmly parted his legs. It looks like the masked man was about to use his mouth on him again. Ling Xia recovered his senses at once because of fright. He was desperately pulling his pants up, and there was a crack in his voice as he pleads: "No-not like this…."

Those two times he was in the dark was better, since right now, the scene before his eyes was too much for his racing heart to take. It would be great if he could bang his head on a wall and pass out!

The other person was clearly a man…..better yet, a hoodlum, a pervert, and a scoundrel…..

But right now, there is a pain in his heart he couldn't explain. He didn't know what causes it….so much so that, it gives rise to a feeling of heartache towards the other person, he could hardly control the trembling of his body.

A violent pain suddenly erupted in his head that Ling Xia shouted out in pain. His limbs twitches in a convulsing way, and his brain was swollen like it was about to burst.

Countless scenes flashes by, relating to this masked man, Ling Jue, Da Bai…..

Until it finally convergence into a two sets of extremely magnificent and matchless eyes. They are different, one is clear and bright, and the other is deep and warm….

Yu Zhi Jue got so scared, he hurriedly siezes Ling Xia into a tight embrace. Was the stimulation too much for him?

Ling Xia's eyes were a bit slack, and his head was profusing with sweat. Yu Zhi Jue was extremely vexed as he kept wiping Ling Xia's sweat while repeatedly calling out to him: "Ling…"

Ling Xia was clutching his chest tightly like he couldn't breath, and his fingers are curling from the pain.

Yu Zhi Jue held him close, and transferred his spiritual energy into Ling Xia's body. He then slipped a red medicine pill in Ling Xia's mouth with the tip of his tongue.

After a long while, Ling Xia finally stabilizes. With his breathing short and his eyes dull, he called out: "Ah Jue?"

Yu Zhi Jue was overjoyed, both of his hands started shaking.

Did Ling Xia remembered?

But he was soon left disappointed, when Ling Xia's pupil gradually regained its focus, and wanted to avoid him like he was frightened and flustered after recognizing him.

Yu Zhi Jue calmly loosened his hold. Seeing Ling Xia hides in a corner, he turned around and changed clothes in silence.

Ling Xia was vacantly staring at his back. Just now, there were countless images that suddenly appeared in his mind in disarray….But when he tried to think about it carefully, he couldn't remember any of it.

Yu Zhi Jue fixed his clothes, then slowly turned around and said: "Go, and save that little brother of yours."

"Just like that…it's over?" Ling Xia unconsciously asked, he couldn't comprehend it at all, when he thought of the degree of shamelessness of this pervert!

The masked man shot him a quick glance, like he was eyeing him up. Ling Xia's heart inexplicably thudded.

The other person gave him a forced smile and said: "You want to continue?"

Ling Xia's face suddenly turned crimson: "Who wants to continue? I'm only stumped on why you're excellency are very gracious!"

The masked man slowly walked closer, making Ling Xia immediately tense. But the other person merely held his hand and said: "Anything you want, I'll do it—-except to let you go."

Lips that were fainty warm greeted his, as the other person lowered his head and planted a kiss.

Ling Xia's heart throbbed, and his mind going blank. Soon enough, he noticed that he was back to the lakeside he was originally at. There was a small bottle placed in his hands.

The masked man's voice echoed in the air, but there was already no trace of him around: "In the future, I will not touch you as I pleases anymore. Next time we meet, I will teach you how to cultivate your spiritual strength and elemental abilities. That bottle of ointment is effective for treating the boy's injuries."

Ling Xia spaces out for a fraction of seconds before recovering his senses. The Two Headed Flying Serpent flings its tail, and throws Ling Jue towards the shore where Ling Xia hurriedly catches him. The Two Headed Flying Serpent gave him a disdainful glance, then it suddenly submerged itself into the water.

Ling Jue was still unconcious, and his clothes was stained with a bit of blood. Ling Xia was frighteningly alarmed as he places his hand beneath Ling Jue's nose to check his breathing. He gasped in shock—-Ling Jue is not breathing!

He quickly pumped Ling Jue’s stomach, and a lot of water mixed with saliva slowly trickles out his mouth.

He carefully recalls the technique of CPR. He removed Ling Jue’s outer robe, and pinches the boy’s nose as he inhaled a mouthful of air. He transferred the oxygen with mouth to mouth, and repeated the process several times.

Once he was about to press his mouth again, Ling Jue coughed and slowly regained consciousness. Ling Xia was immediately ecstatic, and he hurriedly straightened his back.

“Brother….” The boy softly calls out. His originally pale face appears to be slightly red.

Ling Xia quickly untied his clothes and checked his wound. The wound was located at his abdomen, and it has the length of a hand. The wound had worsened because of the pressure he applied just now, and blood is currently starting to ooze. His jade like fair complexion highlighted the dark red blood even more.

His heart clutches in distress and was grieving for Ling Jue. He quickly scoops up some of the ointment and gently applied it. The medicine was quite effective, the bleeding immediately stopped.

Ling was ruthlessly spurning the masked man in his heart. He was clearly there when Ling Jue got wounded. Why on earth is he only watching him being made fun of the Two Headed Flying Serpent and then come out?

Ling Jue’s clothes was dripping wet, and Ling Xia couldn’t do much about it. He gently and carefully took Ling Jue’s clothes off while asking with a soft tone: “Ah Jue, is it still painful? You silly child, why the hell did you not listen and still follow after?”

“I was just worried about you!” The boy’s black and glossy eyes stared back at him without batting an eyelid, “good thing you’re okay.”

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 14

Ling Xia couldn’t come up with anything to say, his chest unbearably stifled. In the end, he just took off his outer robe and puts it on Ling Jue, and lightly smack the boy’s forehead: “Foolish kid.”

Because Ling Jue’s abdomen was wounded, Ling Xia was afraid that he’ll aggravate the wound if he carried him on his back. So he thought of carrying him up in his arms. Ling Jue didn’t say anything but he didn’t agree either. Even though the complexion on his face was worryingly changing, why does he still want to walk on his own. Ling Xia was left with no choice but to carefully support him by the arm, and look after him on the side.

Once they arrived at the top where the cart is, the magic beast recognized them and pulled the cart towards them without the need to walked on their own to reach it. On their way down the mountain, Ling Xia was worried that the bumpy road may affect Ling Jue’s wound, so he closely held him in his arms.

They finally got home, and Da Bai’s lazy drooping eyes was invigorated when he saw Ling Xia. It flapped it wings as it flew down the roof top and perches on Ling Xia’s shoulder.

Ling Xia carefully assisted Ling Jue inside by holding his arm. He took his clothes off him, then cleaned the wound with warm water and applied the medicine once again.
He was standing by the door and was looking around, when saw a guard suddenly appearing behind a tree and quickly coming over, taking him by surprise.

The other person was wearing a silver mask, and spoke as if he didn’t have any emotions. Despite that, his manners was rather polite: “Do you need anything?”
Ling Xia explained that his younger brother was wounded, and requested for a light soup rich with blood(iron).

When he went back and sat on the bedside, Ling Jue was already asleep. Ling Xia was expressionlessly watching his angelic sleeping face, and can't help but heave a sigh.
Just what does that mysterious man want in the end anyway? Why does it sometimes feel like I have this strange familiar feeling? That man gave his word, but will he really not harrass me in the future?

As he continued to think more, his head started to become painful. He quickly kneaded his temples to relax his mind.

Very soon, someone came in and served the blood enriched soup. Ling Xia woke Ling Jue up, supported him in sitting up, and carefully spoon fed him while gently wiping the corner of his mouth. Da Bai was bored watching, so it flew to its nest and went to sleep.
Ling Xia suddenly remember the guard's instructions on taking care of the Two Headed Flying Serpent. Something like taking it down the mountain to the spiritual spring for a drink, and also to groom its scales….Thinking about it now, that was simply nonsense! Isn't that Two Headed Flying Serpent capable of hunting for its own food? Does it even need to be guided by other people? That serpent can even molt for a new layer of scales….

He took it seriously when he was listening that time. He didn't even doubt it one bit…Both master and pet alike sure have poor morals!

As if Ling Jue senses his annoyance, the boy quickly asked him: "Are you okay, brother?"
"It's nothing, you better rest properly." Ling Xia lays him down, and carried away the bowl of dishes.

He reckoned that they won't be able to runaway for the time being. And even though Da Bai could carry the two of them, it's clear that it won't be able to outfly that pervert's two headed monster! What's more, that man had great force under his control….He made up his mind not to feed that dangerous two headed serpent with Ling Jue, he couldn't care less about that man!

As night approaches, someone soon came and relayed a message, saying that the master was summoning him.

Ling Xia knew that it can’t be ignored, so he grudgingly bit his lips and went. He told Ling Jue to rest properly and not to worry about him. At this moment, he could only hope that lecher of a man would keep his word, and that he won’t do strange things anymore.
After half a stick of incense of walking around, they finally arrived at a room that seemed ordinary on the outside. Ling Xia breathes in deeply, pushed the door open, and walked in. That mysterious man was standing quietly by the window, and was wearing a half mask as always.

This time, he was wearing a white robe. The mask he was wearing has a dark colored orchid patterns in it, and his silky long hair was lazily draped over his shoulder, giving someone a mesmerized feeling for no reason at all.

Ling Xia stares at him and asked: “Why are you looking for me?”

“No need to be uptight, and call me ‘Yu’, ” Yu Zhi Jue smiled faintly, ” He pointed at a mat near them and gestured Ling Xia to sit there, “last time, I told you that I’ll be teaching you how to cultivate your spiritual energy and elemental abilities.”

He decided to teach Ling Xia first about the foundation of cultivating. Ling Xia’s condition now is much more fit to practice refining equipments. The original Ling Xia’s chain storage had also been preserved in perfect condition. The only thing Yu Zhi Jue didn’t like was for Ling Xia to be as tired as before.

Ling Xia stared distractedly. He looked around the room and discovered that it was unusually ordinary, with only a single mat on the floor. He silently sat down there, and raises his head to look at Yu Zhi Jue.

Being looked at with such focus, Yu Zhi Jue’s chest tenses. He restrained his thoughts and slowly started explaining.

While he was explaining how to use elemental abilities, Yu Zhi Jue slowly walked behind Ling Xia, and slowly slide his finger on Ling Xia’s back down to his lower waist, pointing the flowing chi along the way. Ling Xia unconciously starting to tense up. Fortunately, the other person was behaving well and aren’t doing anything perverted.

After discussing continuously for half an hour, Yu Zhi Jue slightly smiled and said: “Not bad. When you get back, practice as I have explained to you. Starting tomorrow, come here everyday for one hour. Then you may roam around as you please after, and make yourself at home.”

“About Ah Jue, can he also be relieved of duty?” Ling Xia hurriedly asked, then he mentioned with emphasis: “Another thing, find someone else to take care of your house pet!”

Yu Zhi Jue gave a forced smile and looks at him, the expression in his eyes were warm: “Will do. In exchange for the effort in teaching you, will you give me something in return? And as for that Ah Jue of yours, I don’t have any intention to teach him.”

Being gaze upon by him, Ling Xia’s face slightly warmed up. He unconciously avoided Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes: “Many thanks to your excellency for generously teaching me.”

Yu Zhi Jue grinned and said: “Just a thanks? And I’m not your excellency, nor do I want to be called master. You didn’t listen to me when I told you to call me ‘Yu’, are you?”

Ling Xia didn’t want to have an argument with him, and besides, the other person did made him a favor of teaching him. After a long while, he could out with a stiff voice: “Many thanks senior brother Yu.”

It was rare to see Ling Xia’s awkward appearance, that Yu Zhi Jue turned his face to the side, and almost bursts out in laughter.

It was already late at night when he got back, and Ling Jue was curled up into a lump, fast asleep. Ling Xia was worried for his wound if he squeezes in, so he places a chair on the bed side to make do for the night.

Despite his minimal movements, Ling Jue still woke up. He rubbed his eyes and asked: “Brother, you’re back? Did they make it difficult for you?”

“No.” Ling Xia quickly pets his head and said, “You take a good rest.”

Ling Jue looked up to him and pulled his hand: “Sleep with me big brother. My wound is already better. If you aren’t by my side when I sleep, I couldn’t sleep at all.”

Ling Xia only thought that the boy was talking innocently. And with the boy’s slightly weakened but heartfelt voice, he was unable to refuse. He had no other choice but to place down his outer robe by the bedside, and carefully lie down on the floor.
Ling Jue was quite dissatisfied with that. He strongly pulled Ling Xia up and pounces on his chest: “You really scared me today! Promise me, that you will not shoulder any danger on your own ever again.”

Ling Xia felt that the arms wrapping around his waist were warm, scalding, and powerful. He felt something weird about it, but he didn’t put much thought into it. He gently pats the boys arm and replied: “You didn’t listen. Next time you were like this again, I’ll get angry!”

“But if you were gone, I can’t live anymore.” Ling Jue buried his head in Ling Xia’s chest, his tone was very sincere, “I really mean it.”

Ling Xia suddenly turned stiff.

What is he saying?

Ling Jue didn’t say anything else. He only embraces Ling Xia’s waist firmly, his breathing gradually soften and even.

How could Ling Xia get sleep now?

His eyes were secretly wide open in shock, he really wanted to curse: Shit!

Am I just getting too nervous about it? By men….I was already confessed to twice.

The first one was his boss Ping Min Chang, the second one was this shameless hoodlum Yu.

So what does this boy meant with his words? Ling Xia became completely frantic.
He could only hope that he was just interpreting it wrong. He purely treat Ling Jue as his brother…But, at that time….the boy was masturbating in front of him. Now that he thinks about it, it causes him to be extremely skeptical at this point.

As he carefully think about it more, he realizes that the two of them are frequently in close contact and the boy would pull on his hands with a bashful smile on his face. And some of his actions were more intimate than usual…

He puts his stiff hand on Ling Jue's shoulder, and was thinking of shaking him to wake up so he can be clear about it. But he was worried that his questioning might hurt the boy's self-esteem. Honestly speaking, the two of them haven't known each other that long. His concern towards Ling Jue is only nothing but….a concern that one should have for a brother?

While he was dreaming in his sleep, Ling Jue reaches out to him, and presses his leg on his body. Ling Xia watches silently with a bitter look on his face.

Fine, just let it go. I hope I'm just overthinking things.

After letting his imagination run wild for quite some time, he was finally able to get some sleep.

Perhaps, due to that Yu training his spiritual strength, Ling Xia's five senses became even more sharp. He was bewildered as he felt his lips lightly touched by something soft, then he felt it once more.

What is it?

Ling Xia disconcertingly opened his eyes, and was greeted by the boy's blushing face in close proximity. He widened his eyes in surprise as he woke up.

The hell! What's going on?

Maybe Ling Jue didn’t see him woke up due to the darkness, as he slowly leaned his lips closer again. The boy was holding his breath, and his soft lips had the scent of a cotton candy. The other person’s touch was numbing, as if it generated a small current.

When he was kissed by that masked man, the sensations was entirely different….He could feel Ling Jue’s lips slightly trembling because of nervousness.

Ling Xia restrained the racing of his heart, and he forces himself to calm down. Ling Jue is just a boy. He is different from that deviant…..

He asked with the calmest tone he could muster: “Ah Jue, what are you doing?”
Ling Jue appeared to be scared as he lies on his stomach rigidly. His hands were clutching tightly on his clothes, his ears turned completely red, and his expression was as if he’s gonna lose his wits from fright. It took him a while before he reluctantly said a few words: “You were doing it yesterday morning…”

…….What the fuck! That’s CPR you brat!

Ling Xia weakly replied: “That’s to save you…..so why are you doing this?”

“I don’t know.” Ling Jue suddenly looked up, his pair of beautiful eyes stares at him without blinking. His eyes looked as if it was a starry night sky, pure and bright, “But when I did it to big brother today, my heart was skipping fast, and it felt very happy. You don’t like it brother?”

Ling Xia was inexplicably on edge being stared at by those pair of eyes. He averted his gaze and replied: “Ah Jue, you are too young. And this kind of thing is not possible between brothers.”

“Then I don’t want to be brothers anymore.” Ling Jue snuggled closely to Ling Xia’s chest and bashfully whispered with his head lowered, “I like you.”

The boy’s breath was softly blowing in his chest, his voice were as light as feathers. But its effect on Ling Xia’s heart was like it was pounded with a heavy hammer.

A similar scene suddenly flashes in his mind once again, where a voice similar to this boy’s clear and resonating voice repeatedly saying the same thing over and over again: “Ling Xia, I like you….”

Ling Xia’s eyes slowly starting to slacken, and his head perspiring with layers of fine beads of sweat.

The surging pain in his head couldn’t be alleviated, his breathing starting to hitch. He suddenly lurched on top of Ling Jue, thrusting his tongue in his mouth and sucking hard, as if it was the only way for him to continue breathing, the only way to attain salvation.
Yu Zhi Jue totally didn’t expect that it would turn out like this, and at the same time, a feeling jealousy he couldn’t contain started to blossom. His Ling…..this is the first time he had been so passionate….and its towards his disguise as the boy Ling Jue!

Whether Ling Xia feels affection towards ‘Yu’ or Ling Jue, it doesn’t matter to him as long as they are together. But it still puts him in a bad mood, very bad mood….

Ling Xia firmly held his head, and was practically biting him. Yu Zhi Jue felt that his lips were already split. But he didn’t mind it at all, rather, he forces his tongue over for Ling Xia to bite on. Blood started to slowly trickle on the space between their lips.

His mind cluttered in chaos is gradually clearing up, his rationality slowly starting to stabilize. Ling Xia immediately stopped moving, and suddenly became frigid as a puppet.

Crap. What was he doing! Was his upper body acting like a sex fiend just now?

He was flustered as he straighten his back. He clearly saw the saliva mixed with blood flowing at the corner of Ling Jue’s lips. The boy’s

handsome thin lips that was kissed and bitten by him were already red and swollen. In addition to that, the boy's clothes were shockingly teared open just now, revealing his attractive collar bone and smooth round shoulder….

Ling Xia's eyes popped out, he really wanted to give himself a slap. He's turned into a beast!

He was like that mysterious perverted man 'Yu'!

When he look at the boy, Ling Jue was hanging his head with his eyes slightly teary. He quietly said: "Brother, I really have fallen for you."

"N-no…that's…" Ling Xia hastily went away from him. After a long pause, he sighed heavily, and touches Ling Jue's lips, "My-my bite, was it painful for you?"

Ling Jue responded with a flinching 'hiss'. Nevertheless, the corner of his lips perked up: "It didn't hurt, big brother. You can bite me more if you'd like."

"……don't call me big brother anymore." Ling Xia wished he could hang himself with his belt.

How could I call a savage like myself, a brother! No, I'm much worse than that!
He stated, "Aside from Xiao Dao, you may also call me Ling Xia. It's better to call me Ling Xia, Ah jue."

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 15

Ling Jue's eyes immediately lightened up. There was a bit of tenderness in his voice as he spoke in outburst: "Ling Xia, I'm so happy."

The boy's voice was especially soft and lovely in this very moment. His pitch black eyes were gentle, and he was just bubbling with happiness.

Ling Xia looked down with unease as he checked the boy's wound. He sighed in relief once he determined that it wasn't bleeding. Right now, he felt guilty at the same time baffled. He couldn't explain what had bewitch his mind just now. To think he would do such a thing that would make him lose his morals!

Ling Jue held his hand, causing him to stiffen up as they lied down again. The boy comfortably snuggled by his side and held his hands tight, his face blushing from happiness and exhaliration. Ling Xia didn't have the guts to look him in the eyes. He was lying stiff as a board and was overcame with the sudden urge of wanting to cry.

Isn't he considered the worst man ever in the history that transmigrated?

When he arrived in this world, he didn't run into a cute girl to get along with, but encountered a pervert first. And now, he unintentionally involved himself with a boy who haven't reached puberty yet….And as for the current predicament, he had the obligation to take responsibility for Ling Jue!

The next day, Ling Xia got up with a pair of panda like eyes. That night, Ling Jue was actually well-behave and just went to sleep. But he still kept his tight hold on Ling Xia's hands without letting go. Ling Xia's hand went completely numb because of that.

He is not doubting anymore that the boy really liked him. But being exposed to that radiance of happiness from the bottom of Ling Jue's heart,

made it difficult for Ling Xia muster up the courage to look straight back at him.

Ling Xia changed his clothes in discomfort, then he fetches a clean basin of water. He moistened the towel and gently wiped Ling Jue clean. The boy was a bit embarrassed about it, but he obediently closed his eyes and allowed Ling Xia to do it. Seeing him like this made him look like a cute small kitten.

After he had fed Ling Jue, he quickly came up of a reason to go out. Right now, he needed a quiet place to calm down, and rearrange his chaotic thoughts. Truth to be told, this headache he had for three times already had been puzzling him. He never had this ailment before! Was too much stress causes it to happen?

Da Bai was perching on his shoulder with its head plumes as sparce as before. Both man and the bird was wearing the same expression.

It seemed like the guards didn't have any intentions to stop him. Ling Xia felt relieved and became confident enough to strut around freely till he found a secluded pavilion in the riverside and sat there. He watches the koi swimming on the water while he was deep in thoughts.

"Hey, Da Bai," Ling Xia mumbled, "a man going out with another man is not right."

Da Bai's eyelids lowered down. It agrees with its master's sentiments.

During its younger years, there was another male Bald Eagle that was always bothering Da Bai in its cave. Da Bai would claw and shriek at that Bald Eagle during those times. Despite that, that Bald Eagle persists on disturbing him for several months until it had enough fun and went away when it sustained a critical bruise.

Da Bai was under the impression that its because Ling Xia was too feeble and soft so he was being extremely troubled about it.

Ling Xia sighed depressingly. Da Bai suddenly became worried so it nestled on his shoulder to comfort him. While Ling Xia was mulling in confusion, a seemingly familliar pleasant voice rang behind him: “Ling, what’s the matter?”

He jolted and stood in a rush. Sure enough, it was that ‘Yu’ who was steadily walking in his way.

Ling Xia stared blankly. That man was still wearing a half mask like before. His figure carved like a jade that was passing beneath the shade of willow trees created a picturesque scene like a classical painting.

For a moment there, Ling Xia didn’t know how to greet him. It didn’t feel right to give him a smile, but glaring at the man also seemed to be very inapproriate…

While he was at loss, the other person had already went over to him in a casual pace. The man leaned his head closer to him with a studying look: “It looks like your in a bit of distress.”

Ling Xia is afraid. This mysterious man appears to be considerably attached to him, so if he discovered about Ling Jue and him….

He averted his gaze: “I’m not.”

What I really wanted to say to you was if you can let me and Ah Jue go. That what was distressing me to no end, but its better not to say it after all.

The other person didn’t talk anymore and merely stood besides the bamboo seat. He looked at Ling Xia and smiled: “Chatting in peace with you like this, is quite rare don’t you think?”

……..You motherfucker always drag this Lao Zi in a shady small hut to fuck with me, so how can Lao Zi talk with you in peace?!

Ling Xia’s face turned expressionless as he replied: “Yeah.”

“When it comes to me, you’re only replying with a short responses?” Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes and continued, “When I saw you together with

that Ah Jue, you were quite cheerful in chatting with him.”

Ling Xia was alarmed and immediately responded tensely: “He is my little brother. It’s only natural that we’re a bit close.”

“Only a brother?” Yu Zhi Jue slowly slanted his head, his eyes was faintly stabbing into him, “but when he met your gaze, it doesn’t seem like its only for a brother?”

Ling Xia was reminded of what happened last night, his look immediately turned a bit unnatural. He paused for a moment then replied with a slightly raised tone: “Your eminence is not entitled to imposed your beliefs on everyone else in the whole world.”

Yu Zhi Jue gave a faint smile, exposing a bit of his snowy white jade like teeth. Because of that, Ling Xia’s heart involuntarily skipped a beat. Good thing for him, the other person didn’t say anything more and simply patted the seat: “I’ll just sit here and stay with you.”

Ling Xia looked at Da Bai, who was at its child form and was firmly burrowed inside his robe on his shoulder, fast asleep. He sits down as well after a short while, but with the distance between them only three fist apart, his back posture was nervously taut and straight.

After a long while had passed the other man did not make any slightest movements, Ling Xia gradually relaxes. He secretly observed the man in the corner of his eyes, his gaze tracing along the fine lines of the man’s raised chin up to his captivating thin red lips. Together with that skin that has the quality of a jade, the man’s beauty was as precious as a jewel.

But the more he was absentmindedly stares at him, the more apparent his observing eyes becomes.

“You’re staring so much, you can’t take your eyes off me,” Yu Zhi Jue’s head turned to him with his hand touching the mole in the corner of his eyes while teasingly saying, “have you fallen for me?”

Ling Xia ignored the other man's teasing. He deeply inhaled a mouthful of air, then his hand suddenly lurched forward and reaches out for the man's mask.

But the other man soon caught his hand and stopped him. Yu Zhi Jue smiled sofly and said: "So you still want to see my appearance? I will show it to you in the future."

Ling Xia forcefully pulled his hand back, he was looking back at Yu Zhi Jue with an unwavering stare. His hand that was hanging in the air slowly blocked the view of the upper part of Yu Zhi Jue's face. He stared attentively at the man's lips and chin.

His breathing was unconciously speeding up, his hands was beginning to uncontrollably shake.

Same eyes, lips, chin and skin….

He always thought that this mysterious man felt very familliar. Even thought there were always a doubt and suspicions in his heart before, but the memory of the scent of this man's body is always concealed within the confines of the darkness. This time though, there weren't any incense to cover his scent, making Ling Xia realize……and assume that he and Ling Jue indeed had a very similar scent.

However one of them is tall and the other is small and weak. Their ages and voice is even more far apart from each other….Not only that, but their personality and temperament is too different aren't they?

Yu Zhi Jue noticed the suspicions in his eyes, but his expression was still calm and composed: "You're staring at me too much, you're making me want to touch you."

Ling Xia gritted his teeth in annoyance, the doubt in his heart was hard to shrug.

Why did Ling Jue appeared shortly after I ran into this masked man? And these two people never appeared before me at the same time…

Several thoughts flashes in his mind like sparks of electricity. Ever since he met this mysterious masked man, a lot of things keeps forming in his mind. It was like a spool of yarn rolled in a jumble, but was gradually being loosened into a very long string.

He suddenly bent down and clasp his head. His breathing rushed and he was groaning in pain.

Yu Zhi Jue pulled him in his arms in a flurry and was pouring spiritual energy to his body. It seemed like the pain rendered Ling Xia's body powerless so he let himself be supported in Yu Zhi Jue's embrace. For a long while, Ling Xia repeatedly muttered in delirium: "Ah Jue, Ah Jue…"

Yu Zhi Jue was comfortingly wiping the sweat forming and dripping on his temples. His eyes were filled with panic as he soothingly utter: "I'm here, Ling. Is it too painful?"

He had asked Shui Yue and a previous predecessor about this before. There was a likely possibility that Ling Xia can regain his memories bit by bit, but it would be a very painful process during the time that he does. He watches as Ling Xia's complexion turned deathly pale in an instance. He really hated that he could not bear that suffering for Ling Xia instead.

I'm ! such ! ! a ! ! ! big ! ! ! fool ! ! ! !

Ling Xia was shaking in anger from head to toe. He suddenly shoved Yu Zhi Jue away, and stood up while staring coldly at him: "Ah Jue?"

Yu Zhi Jue was stunned. Ling Xia slowly took off his mask and gasped in disbelief: "So during the night, you use your powers to transform into a disguise to decieve me. You even made use of that Ling identity so well —— it all went well for you."

If he had paid careful attention, he could have realized it. But his concern clouded his judgement.

Even though Yu Zhi Jue maintained his composure on the outside, his heart was already racing frantically. He didn't expect at all that Ling Xia

would find out about it so soon. He was so panic-stricken that he had a sudden urge to turn heel and runaway.

He was getting along well with Ling Xia in both of his identity that he got a bit carried away.

You shameless motherfucker! King of the silver screen! You deserved an Oscar! Why don't you fuck off and die!

Ling Xia was so angry he was speechless. He gritted his teeth and glared at the face before him.

Fucking hell! Isn't he evidently the adult version of Ling Jue? His youthful face was incomparably pure and handsome, his pair of pheonix eyes was shimmering and clear as a flowing water, and there was a small red teardrop mole in the corner of his eye. He was so undeniably good looking….I wanted kill him!

Da Bai went to hid in the corner and secretly peeked. Its master(Ling Xia) had just recently become its master, did Da Bai made him angry already?

Ling Xia found it hard to hold back the stinging of his eyes and the scene before his eyes steadily grew blurry.

He forces himself to open his mouth, but his voice was unconciously trembling as he speaks. It made him look like he was sobbing: "Your excellency played me so well. Just what is your purpose anyway?"

As he remembered the times he spent with Ling Jue, he couldn't wrap his mind around it. He really don't want to believe that the boy who was a shy and adorable teen that earnestly depended on him was actually this goddamn sexual deviant standing before him. Were all those times was just a lie all along?

His aching heart suddenly broke into pieces. Ling Xia clenches his fists tight.

Yu Zhi Jue saw big droplets of water spilling in the corner of Ling Xia's eyes. He felt sorry at the same time he didn't know what to do. He suddenly hugged Ling Xia and consoled him: "Ling, don't be upset….I swear Ah Jue has always been true to you! Ah Jue likes you, and that will never change!"

Ling Xia exhausted all his strength to struggle and spat out curses: "Screw you, you fucking pervert! Scum! Psycho! Bastard! Let go of me!"

He swung his fist towards the other man's nose, but the other person didn't have any intention to avoid it. It caught Ling Xia in surprise that he rigidly halted—-This man and the young Ah Jue's face are a perfect copy he didn't have it in him to hit it. Fuck!

Ling Xia then chose another place to hit. He abruptly punched the other person's abdomen, creating a loud thud sound. He felt the muscle of the other man's stomach winced at the end of his fist. He sneered coldly: "So you had the same wound there as well? Did it hurt?"

Yu Zhi Jue gave a shallow laugh as he loosened Ling Xia's hand: "It's fine—-as long as you won't get angry at me, you can hit me as you please, and as long as you want."

When Ling Xia saw that doting and indulging expression of his, his anger boiled even hotter. He gladly took the offer and threw a couple of punches. Even his feet didn't stay idle, he kept kicking Yu Zhi Jue from the waist below.

But no matter how much he beats him up, Yu Zhi Jue never resisted. He was like a wooden dummy that was standing in place. It comes to the point that a streak of blood started flowing down from the corner of Yu Zhi Jue's lips.

Once he had spent all of his strength, Ling Xia stopped and was panting heavily while he was dripping in sweat. He was immediately caught by Yu Zhi Jue's arms and was pulled into his tight hold.

Ling Xia angrily shouted: "Let me go! Shameless bastard!" He really didn't have any strength left, so he bit Yu Zhi Jue's shoulder, strong enough

for blood to ooze.

His head turned muddy due to exhaustion. A thought suddenly popped out in his mind, his eyes twitches because of it —— Did this jerk acted out a scene from Chiung Yao's romance novels? This fucker must've went into an acting school!

Da Bai's keen eagles eyes had completely turned dumbfounded. When it had flew away earlier, it kept flying on the side while cawing pitifully at Ling Xia.

His forceful struggling had pulled Yu Zhi Jue's clothes in disarray, revealing his bleeding shoulder and parts of his body that was filled with bruises. Ling Xia avoided his eyes, and said with a cold tone: "Just what is your intentions, really?"

Because he depleted his stamina, the intensity of his tone lowered down to the point that it seemed like it was feeble.

"Ling, my real name is Yu Zhi Jue." Yu Zhi Jue smiled helplessly. He let Ling Xia leaned on his arms, and adjusted him into a more comfortable position. "but its still better to call me Ah Jue."

Ling Xia suddenly laughed, his face flushed from anger. He sarcastically emphasized: "Ah Jue, you were calling me big brother sweetly before, why are you addressing me different now?"

Yu Zhi Jue held his hand and places it on his cheeks. He gazes back at him sincerely and replied in a gentle tone: "If you like that, I will still call you big brother. So don't be upset anymore okay?"

"…….How can I not?!" Ling Xia pulls his hand back but it wasn't budging. He coldly replied, "If being played by you doesn't kill me, then I will burn an incense and wish it will!"

The more he thought about it, the angrier he gets. What puberty crisis, what drowning at the lake and needing CPR, what was my tears from being

moved by his self-sacrifice for, what pure and innocent stolen kiss at the middle of the night…

Liar! Such a fucking liar! A round of applause for this damn pervert for completely fooling this Lao Zi!

He wanted so bad to bite this “Ah Jue” in front of him to death!

Fuck you, you con artist!

“If you’re still angry, just cut me up to your content.” Yu Zhi Jue leaned his forehead on Ling Xia’s shoulder and miserably uttered, “I just wanted to be with you so much….”

Ling Xia cut him off with a sneer: “Are you tired of living you fucker?”

Yu Zhi Jue contemplated, and replied in a deadpan way: “…..Very tired.”

Ling Xia chest was choked up with anger, he almost fainted from being unable to breath.

Bonbon translation notes:
This dialogue went a bit different in the raws. Ling Xia kept replying two chinese characters (Mei You and Shi Ah) and Yu Zhi Jue complained, “Why are you only replying two character(response) towards me.”

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 16

Ling Xia ranted to the other person whom he view as a king of silver screen with barrages of insult, then he shut his mouth.

His mind is in great turmoil, and his emotional state is spiking in an unprecedented level. But what's strange to him is himself, since those initial wrath and pained feelings, had actually eases up a lot when he blew up humiliatingly just now.

He did not know how long had passed, but Ling Xia finally calmed down. He suddenly felt all kinds of uneasiness —— Yu Zhi Jue was still acting clingy with love and kept hugging him without letting go.

This man named Yu Zhi Jue, just how much do I actually know him?

He absentmindedly studied the man before his eyes, the contents of the novel becoming clearer and clearer in his mind.

That fraudulent author Spinach Egg Soup focused on writing this 'Betraying the world and that person' on the year 2013 —— Ruling over the world while laughing defyingly !

The protagonist is Song Xiao Hu, the villain is Yu Zhi Jue!

The villain devoted himself in destroying the world!

……

Even though it ended in a plot twist, but the written nature of this stallion is sinister and blood-thirsty. Does this Yu Zhi Jue ends up not having that kind of nature?

Ling Xia accidentally blurts out: "Yu Zhi Jue, being the Qian Kun Sect Grand Master, are you the Demon King now?"

Yu Zhi Jue stared blankly. He smiled then let Ling Xia go: “Yes. Are you afraid, Ling Xia?”

Ling Xia didn’t reply. He merely examined the expression on Yu Zhi Jue’s face with vigilance and cautiousness. This novel’s character abruptly appeared in front of him, giving him that kind of unfathomable mystical feeling. Before him is a man that is breathing, who had a heartbeat, and have feelings…..He is a man who is living.

He recalled those past exhausting nights waiting for the novel’s updates! But then again, what is his role in this novel? Yu Zhi Jue’s nonsense of falling in love with him, is that…..what became the purpose of his transmigration? !

He was sure that in the novel, Yu Zhi Jue became more stubborn, and was intent on destroying the world, as well as an arrogant and conceited person. But when it comes to him, who is only a normal man, Yu Zhi Jue became a very thoughtful person and humors him with persistent endearing words?

When he came to that conclusion, Ling Xia’s face suddenly reddened. Did the other person truly like him that much?

Watching Ling Xia’s face turned red at one moment then turned pale at the next, Yu Zhi Jue felt incessantly anxious inside.

Ling Xia finally calmed down. He said in a serious tone: “I’m not angry at you nor I hate you, but if I ask the Great Demon King to give my freedom and let me go, will you grant me this at once?”

Yu Zhi Jue’s heart clenched. After a while, he raised his head with a smile on the corner of his lips as he replied: “Apart from that, I will grant you anything.”

Ling Xia lost the interest to talk with him again. He turned around and walks away.

Yu Zhi Jue watches Ling Xia’s back, the expression in his eyes were both tender and helpless. He remembered that before Ling Xia had a full

recovery(vol 3), he was forced by him to stay only at his side.

Ling Xia was depressed as he went back. He looked at Da Bai perching on the rooftop from afar with a distracted look in his eyes. He can’t stop himself from being irritated. He normally whine his griefs on Da Bai, and its no different this time. He came clean at Da Bai with all the crucial details. He couldn’t help himself from throwing some curses at Da Bai from the frustration.

Da Bai’s droopy eyelids quickly widen while trying to run away. A few of its tail feathers fell out because of the stress from Ling Xia who couldn’t contain his anger.

He was not aware of Da Bai’s plea for help, as well as the goosebumps appearing all over its body. For the sake of it’s remaining feathers, the Da Bai kept it in mind to avoid this kind of situation later on……

When he pushed the door open, the building was empty. Ling Xia stared blankly then walks in and sat on a chair disappointed.

Soon, some people went in and delivered a tub of hot water for bath. There were also a couple of steaming hot food waiting for him. Ling Xia discovered a bloodstain on a crumpled part on his clothes while his stomach grumbled from hunger. He remembered the blood came from the biting he did. It made him feel a twinge of guilt.

He was eating his food silently, then took off his clothes and started bathing.

His body felt muggy from what happened earlier. His body and mind was both very exhausted. He needed a hot bath to help him relax.

He forgot to bring towel with him, so Ling Xia called out of habit: “Ah Jue?” Afterwards he paused and stared dumbly.

He helplessly sighed. *For heaven’s sake! I need to forget about that king of silver screen.*

He wiped his body dry and wore his clothes. The sun was still up, and the time was around 3 PM. Ling Xia decided that he might as well spread his limbs and go to sleep, so that he'll free his mind from those unnecessary thoughts.

He thought that he'll have some kind of frustrating dreams from his agitated emotions, but in reality, he actually slept quite well. He didn't even had a single dream, and only sleep continuously till he woke up during the midnight, all his limbs gone soft.

Ling Xia caught sight of that familiar head that was on top of his stomach, he pats it out of habit, and mumbled 'Ah Jue' then closes his eyes again.

After five seconds, he suddenly opened his eyes and angrily kick Yu Zhi Jue away: "What the fuck are you doing?"

The young version of Yu Zhi Jue lies motionlessly as he let Ling Xia kick him. After a long while, Yu Zhi Jue looked up with his black and somewhat damp eyes: "Elder brother, are you still angry at me?"

"…….won't you please leave?" When he saw that slightly youthful and pretty face, he stopped kicking him. The corner of his mouth twitches as he said, "Are you planning to develop that acting into an addiction? To be frank, something stupid like that is not what a Demon King who destroys the world would do. You should fix your act, ok?"

Yu Zhi Jue didn't catch most of what he said, but he looked at Ling Xia while feeling slightly wronged: "Didn't you prefer this Ah Jue? I truly meant what I said before. If you are not by my side, I can't sleep at all."

Ling Xia's heart softened, but when that package of this young man below his waist surfaced in his mind, he could only think of him as a sex fiend. He suddenly had a feeling of disgust. He steeled his heart and said: "There's no other way, if you're here then I won't sleep."

The young man didn't speak anymore, and only huddled at the edge of the bed. That pair of beautiful eyes continued staring, and staring at him,

that Ling Xia uncomfortably pulled the bed sheet. His gaze makes Ling Xia wants to curse.

He knows that this image of Yu Zhi Jue is merely a pretense, but he still can’t have a single resistance to it at all!

He wanted to shout ‘What should I do with you?’!

But in the end, Ling Xia simply turned to his back and faces the wall. He coldly said: “Don’t come near me.”

Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes brightened. He just knows, that Ling Xia can still be soft-hearted in the end.

He hummed ‘En’, then closed his eyes with a smile on his lips.

Ling Xia had completely cooled his head down. He was carefully reflecting on what he should do after.

Yu Zhi Jue’s strength compare to his own have a very great disparity. The other person is a sect master, as well as a Demon Lord of the Dark Arts. He is destined to be play the role of the great Protagonist’s rival! Even if Ling Xia escapes and run away, he would still be in the territory of the Dark Arts Sect. He reckoned that he will be soon captured and taken back. So running away won’t work, and if he infuriated the other person, he guesses that he most likely won’t be able to defend himself.

He suddenly sat up, and then discovered that Yu Zhi Jue’s pair of beautiful eyes had been staring at him for ages. That gaze of him was so gentle and clear as a spring water, it makes Ling Xia’s face blush at once. He said stiffly: “I know I can’t leave, but, there’s something we should be clear with. I do not like men, and I also do not like being forced by someone, so you are not allowed to do those things in the future.”

Yu Zhi Jue was seemingly shocked as he replied: “Those things?”

Ling Xia coldly stared at him. He doesn’t believe that this beast don’t know what he’s referring to!

Yu Zhi Jue was stared by him for a long while, then he draws out a long sigh. He had an expression of ‘what should I do with you’. Ling Xia’s body shivered.

This shitty king of silver screen, Lao Zi will make you comply!

“I got it. As long as you won’t leave me, I’ll do everything as you say.” Yu Zhi Jue compromises in the end, but he still stubbornly said, “But we must get along like we did before, and live together.”

Did he honestly believe showing that pitiful face would make me back out?

Ling Xia was not interested in pointing that out. In any case, as long as one doesn’t touch themselves, men won’t have the appetite to do anything. He was contemplating on what else he wanted: “I want to continue cultivating, and also, can you not always confine me here? I want to go out to stroll and look around.

“Ok.” Yu Zhi Jue smiled and said, “I will properly teach you, and if you want to go out, I’ll go with you ok?”

For the time being, this agreements can also be regarded as an impartial peace treaty. Ling Xia breathes a sigh of relief and lies down again. He tried his best to imagine Yu Zhi Jue as a dummy. His nerves was originally tense, but afterwards, he surprisingly still falls asleep.

In the next three to five days, he completely ignored Yu Zhi Jue like he’s an air. He did not talk with him at all. He would only raise questions during the training in the afternoon, but those questions are only limited to his cultivation, otherwise he’ll just practice in silence.

There are times after his meditation, that he would find Yu Zhi Jue sitting in front of him, impatiently waiting for him to open his eyes. He would always look like an abandoned small kitten or a small puppy, but Ling Xia still steeled his heart.

Da Bai frequently shivered from the cold air that surrounded them. And every time Ling Xia petted its head, it felt a pair of eyes secretly stabbing at the back of its head? And that pair of eyes obviously expresses the desire to roast him?

Da Bai thought it'll be great if it could go back to its cave back at the mountains and stay there…..

One night, Ling Xia was woken up by Yu Zhi Jue.

Yu Zhi Jue still intended to cheat with that young version of his. He quietly calls out Ling Xia's name repeatedly with his gentle voice while jerking that lower part of his. His movements created small creaking noise in the bed along with his helpless moans, the speed of his stroking was absolutely astonishing.

Ling Xia watches in horror as well as embarrassment. The other person look at him from the side. His eyes are damp and his wet lips were slightly opened. The corner of his eyes up to his eyebrows was outstanding. It carried a young and innocent allure of the adolescent. Ling Xia shamefully blushed from it.

He stared distractedly before he could make a reaction.

Fuck! What are you calling my name for, what do you want me to do with your fake flirting?

He was a such perfect young man, why did he have to stoop to the level of the mentality of a cave man?

He turned his back with his face red. It makes him wonder if Yu Zhi Jue is deliberately doing this on purpose!

It was as if Yu Zhi Jue's promiscuous stimulation was not enough, he muttered with his deep and low sexy voice : "Ling, I want you….help me…."

Ling Xia's heart pounded hard. He couldn't take it anymore so he turned around. As expected, Yu Zhi Jue had reverted back to his adult version.

In terms of allure, the adult version exudes seduction thousand times more. His eyes were slightly heated up, his lips was pursed from feeling good, and his black hair was spilled on the pillow beneath his head. Countless women would practically pounce themselves on him.

Not only Yu Zhi Jue had pulled his underwear off, but his smooth and perfectly defined abs up to his collar bone is completely exposed. When he saw Ling Xia looking at him, his voice became even more husky: "Ling….."

Sweat drips along the fine lines of his chin down to his smooth chest, creating an extremely sexy look.

Ling Xia shot a glance down below, then he hurriedly raises his line of sight—— *Sheesh, that erect part of his could really make any man feel envy and hatred.*

He sighed, and glanced towards the full moon in the sky. He then simply raises his foot and landed a swift kick.

When it comes the the younger Yu Zhi Jue, he never raised a hand on him, nor cusses him out. But when it comes to the adult one, he didn't have any reluctance to do so?

But then there's this inexplainable pounding in my heart, did this Lao Zi completely turned into a girl in love?

The kick he gave was rather strong. Yu Zhi Jue expression didn't change, but he silently stared back at Ling Xia with a slight grievance in his eyes as if he was complaining. His hand even stopped moving.

Ling Xia's scalp felt numb being stared at by him. He still couldn't get used to the adult Yu Zhi Jue showing an expression similar with the young Ah Jue. It would've have been better if he had that image of a nefarious and mad demon tyrant….

“I want you….”Yu Zhi Jue sighingly confessed, ” thoughts of you makes my chest hurts….”

Ling Xia’s face blushes deep red. He felt like wanting to jump off the bed and leave, but his legs wasn’t moving like it was fixed in place.

He doesn’t know why, but his chest throbbed in pain as well.

At last, he finally replied with a stiffed tone: “All men have their needs, so I understand….but can you do that discreetly somewhere else?”

My name being called out by another man in that way makes me feel gagged, and even more stressed when its the freaking sect Grand Master!

“But I can’t come when I don’t look at you.” Yu Zhi Jue said in a comeback.

“….” Just that once sentence was enough to make Ling Xia choke on words. He picked up a pillow and ferociously threw it on Yu Zhi Jue’s face. He snarled at him: “Then don’t climax forever!”

This strange world had been increasingly turning him into a temperamental lady, Ling Xia had just had enough!

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 17

Ling Xia's head was aching from too much irritation. His morals and integrity was reaching a new low in this place. Yu Zhi Jue peeled off the pillow on his face, and looked at him quietly but tenderly for a while, then he slowly sat up, change his clothes, and walked outside.

Ling Xia was a bit baffled, his heart inexplicably sunk.

The next day in the afternoon, up to the third day….. Yu Zhi Jue never came back. However, there were sets of clothes and food sent to him finer than before. Yu Zhi Jue also sent people to bring several books related to his cultivation, and an old senior refiner who earnestly teaches him for a fix period in the afternoon.

With no one harassing him, it should be a matter his heart should be rejoicing to. And yet, Ling Xia would find himself lost in thoughts from time to time.

Habits truly are a terrible thing. He knew well that its just a pretense, but he still found the empty house unbearably lonely.

On the fourth day, during the night. Ling Xia hazily smelled a familiar scent getting closer to him. He abruptly opened his eyes, and saw Yu Zhi Jue's face few inches away from his cheeks.

Ling Xia jolted. He raised his fist and shouted: "What are you doing?"

Yu Zhi Jue didn't back out and just continued what he was doing. Ling Xia stiffly lowered his head, and discovered that Yu Zhi Jue had put on a silver necklace on his neck. There's a small, light blue, and translucent drop shaped gem hanging in the front.

Beside the watch Ling Xia took with him, he didn't bring any other accessories with him. On the other side, the gorgeous and evil sir villain

would wear a few eye-catching accessories everyday along with a green jade dragon carving that would never leave his possession.

So even though the necklace was exquisite, Ling Xia was quite used to seeing something like it.

It looked like it was satisfactory for Yu Zhi Jue. He gently stuffed the necklace inside Ling Xia's collar, his cold fingers accidentally touched a part of Ling Xia's collar bone. It was ice-cold and yet, Ling Xia didn't shudder from it.

Yu Zhi Jue quickly withdrew his hands. He was merely gazing back at Ling Xia.

Ling Xia suddenly felt at loss on what to do, his face was also slightly burning. The spot that was touched earlier was left with somewhat peculiar sensation. He sat up uncomfortably and asked: "What are you giving me this for?"

"I crafted it. There are equipment stored inside that can be used for self-defense." Yu Zhi Jue stared at him unwaveringly, "Tomorrow, you can leave and be free."

Ling Xia was dumbfounded. He could hardly believe what he had just heard. He repeated: "What did you mean by 'leave'?"

"Exactly what you wished for." Yu Zhi Jue smiled, "I don't want you to be unhappy."

The thing he had always yearned for had suddenly appeared before him, so Ling Xia was a bit doubtful. But for some reason, his heart didn't feel glad about it in the slightest. He could only ask apprehensively: "You… won't secretly stalk me?"

"No." Yu Zhi Jue handed over a jade ornament, his voice was soft as he spoke, "Traveling may be exhausting. Bring this jade with you and the Dark Arts Sect people won't give you any trouble.

Ling Xia stared distractedly at Yu Zhi Jue's back as he leave. He was staring at the jade ornament for a long while before he could raise his head.

He doesn't know what Yu Zhi Jue is playing at now, but, he probably wouldn't decieve him again, right?

He intended to leave anyway, and he didn't want to stay in an ambiguous relationship with Yu Zhi Jue. Since he weren't going to accept Yu Zhi Jue's feelings, how could he continue to depend on him? Now that he doesn't have a place to return to, he could only rely on his own strength to survive in this world!

Ling Xia puts aside the jade ornament. Then he tried to unhook the necklace. But the strange thing about the fragile and beautiful necklace was, there wasn't any hooks in it. It was perfectly mended in a circle that he didn't know how Yu Zhi Jue managed to put it in his neck.

Ling Xia became determined. He gripped the necklace and pulls at it. He continued to pull at it but it won't come off and the skin beneath turned red. He pounded at the bed with his fists like a hammer from the frustration.

The great demon king was truly generous. The contents stored inside the necklace were countless money, medicinal pills, books, clothes, etc… The space dimension inside was also enormous, but Ling Xia doesn't have any intention to use it.

He slumped down the bed exhausted. He glanced at the open windows, and saw that the outside was slowly starting to dim. The horizon in the sky is gradually rolling down.
He and Da Bai can see in the dark, so why wait for the sunrise to come?

An indescribable pain welled up in his chest. Ling Xia stubbornly believed that he was just feeling a bit sad because of the young Ah Jue.

Even though I can't help but find him cute, and I can't help myself from liking him. But in the end, it was just all fake.

It just like beautiful floating bubbles, bound to pop and disappear soon enough.

He must forget everything and start anew. He didn't like men, so he should stop giving him false signals and cut their relationship off. The sooner he leaves, the better for the both of them.

Ling Xia sat up and inhaled deeply. He walked outside and lightly nudged Da Bai in its nest: "Da Bai, we're leaving."

He decided to leave that conspicuous jade ornament behind. He wore his rugged blue clothes he owned before he came in this place and stuffed that cheap storage bag he bought before inside his robe. Da Bai who was already bored from maintaining his small form for many days was itching to transform. It impatiently squirmed in the ground until it reverted back to its original form.

Ling Xia jumped in its back and petted Da Bai's neck.

Da Bai shook its head and looked up in the sky as it gave a sharp eagle shriek. It spreads its wide wings, and soared straight up. The clouds in the sky was within reach in a short time. Ling Xia resisted from turning his head to look back. He was afraid that if he did, he would see those pair of eyes he knew well, those eyes that made him feel frantic and helpless.

So heartless….

Yu Zhi Jue watched as both the man and the eagle gradually gets farther away. His gaze never move even as they completely disappeared in plain sight. The passing breeze blows the strands of his hair in the air. He can't already remember how many times he had stood in a desolate place, waiting for that man to come back.

A shallow smile appeared in his lips. *Doesn't matter, Ling Xia will always be mine. I'll just wait for him like I used to.*

But this time, it won't be the same as before. This time, I won't lose hope.

—

Ling Xia was pulling Da Bai amidst the crowd as they wander in a small town. It has already been three-four days since they had left. Ling Xia decided to check the Righteous Sect territories. Since the Dark Arts Sect areas are under Yu Zhi Jue’s rule, he thought he would feel a bit awkward.

This small town is still under the jurisdiction of the Dark Arts Sect. All the people that comes and go are rowdy, their clothes and appearances are varying, and most people have different magic beasts along with them. Ling Xia still lets Da Bai to transform back to its chick form as to avoid catching attention. After all, a level five beast is still kinda rare.

He patted that common storage pouch in his waist. Inside it was the savings he had collected during his time in the Bai Shou Yuan. There are probably about ten level 2 energy stones, and around a hundred level 1 energy stones.

While they were walking about, Ling Xia was looking for a small inn. When he saw one that seemed clean and simple from the outside, Ling Xia walked inside. The price was not expensive, and he wasn’t that picky either. He immediately checked in in one of the rooms, then he went to the restaurant downstairs and ordered a porridge with a simple side dish. Then he ordered Da Bai a big plate of meat.

The food were quite coarse, and the porridge had traces of sand in it. The side dish was also barely saute’d and the meat was already cold. But on the contrary, Da Bai paid no attention to it and continued to savor the food. Ling Xia smiled faintly, and started to help himself with the food as well.

When he just arrived, he would always find himself depressed. But now he have money and Da Bai was accompanying him. It was a lot better compared to his first days in here. Even though he thought of it that way, there’s still an emptiness somewhere in his heart.

Suddenly, four brute, robust, and rough looking men walks in. All of their head was shaved bald and there were golden rings in their noses. There’s a

small red pony symbol tailored at the back on each of their clothes, and long swords fastened on their waists.

These men doesn't seemed to be the people to mess with. The inn server with experience hurried came over and politely guided them in then served them with liquor and meat. Ling Xia didn't pay any attention and just continued eating. Although the people of Dark Arts Sect loves to incite a scuffle, but as long as he remained low-key, he won't get caught up in the fights.

Not for long, another man came in. Ling Xia indifferently casts a glance at him, and was a bit surprise at what he saw. In this world, people commonly had black, brown, and yellow hair. This is the first time he had seen a blue hair.

The young man with the blue hair looked handsome and bright, with a cheerful smile in his face, and an earring in one of his ears with a purple gem hanging in it that was swings as he walks. Its glitter could almost blind someone's eyes. His sharp senses keenly noticed Ling Xia's gaze. The man's eyes shifted to him, and he walked towards Ling Xia with a polite smile.

"I'm Su Mu Zhe. May I ask what is brother's name?" Su Mu Zhe retained his cool. He carefully observed Ling Xia and asked, "can I share table with you?"

Ling Xia looked around his surroundings. It's currently lunch time so sure enough, there wasn't any available seats left. He nodded and smiled, "I'm Ling Xia. Please do so, brother Su."

Su Mu Zhe suddenly slammed the table. He looked at Ling Xia with a stupefied expression and mumbled: "Hey, hey! Are you kidding me?…"

Ling Xia jumped in surprise. He suddenly remembered the incident with the Yun Xiao Cheng people at the Bai Shou Yuan. When that girl heard his name, she also revealed the same shocked expression. But it was an emergency during that time, and the girl was in a confused state so he didn't have any chance to ask about it.

He cannot help but ask: “Do brother Su know someone of the same name?”

Su Mu Zhe didn’t reply. He only leaned closer and studied five features of Ling Xia’s face. Ling Xia wasn’t used in men getting that close to him so he became a bit disgruntled.

Da Bai suddenly rolled its eyes, grab a big piece of meat with its beak, and flings it towards Su Mu Zhe’s face.

Su Mu Zhe caught it between his chopsticks. He only then discovered that there was a small chick with a sparse head plumes eating in the table. He hasn’t seen a small Bald Eagle before so he was amazed: “Is this brother’s magic beast? It looks really ugly! Is Shan Rao or is it Bai Zhao?”

Shan Rao and Bai Zhao are level 2 magic beasts, their appearances are unsightly as well. Da Bai turning into a small chick conceals its power so Su Mu Zhe couldn’t recognize it.
When that man said that Da Bai is ugly, Ling Xia became even more annoyed.

Da Bai gets cuter the more you look at him you know?

He couldn’t tolerate it anymore so he spoke: “Brother Su didn’t answer my question yet.” Su Mu Zhe raises his head and chuckled twice. He continued to probe Ling Xia’s expression: “You really do resemble my old friend somehow, you even have the same name as him…”

Ling Xia instinctively creases his brows. *Is there really such a coincidence?*

His chest felt a bit jittery. He unconsciously asked: “Excuse me but, where’s that friend of yours now? He… what kind of person he is?”

Su Mu Zhe carefully examined his expression then giggled: “That said friend, had already died a natural death, I think. He… he is the most motherly like and the most long-winded person I know. Um, but he and I really didn’t get the chance to know each other that much, HaHa!”

Ling Xia suddenly became quiet.

Su Mu Zhe squinted his eyes and talked with a scratchy throat: “Although that old friend of mine didn’t have any strong points, but the new Demon King of the Dark Arts Sect was scurrying frantically around trying to find him when he was still alive. Isn’t that strange?”

“What?” Ling Xia’s face suddenly turned deathly pale, he accidentally toppled the porridge bowl with his elbow, causing it to fall down and smash into pieces. He asked with a hoarse voice: “Whose Demon King are you talking about?”

His voice was a little pitchy. Luckily, the voices of the other diners drowned the ruckus he causes so no one came over to check. Su Mu Zhe held back his arms and hushed him to lower down his voice. He replied in astonishment: “Of course its the current Demon King! Who else could it be?”

Ling Xia’s face turned flush at one moment, then he paled at the next. His heart became a block of ice.

So that’s why when that man asked for his name the first time they met and heard it, he went to such extremes after.

Damn it! Did he treated me as a replacement? That jerk of an actor!

He tried his best to keep his calm. He carried Da Bai and forces a smile: “So that’s how it is. I have to leave first thing in the morning, so I’ll go ahead and go back to my room to rest. Please make yourself comfortable, brother Su.”

He doesn’t know why but the scene before his eyes turned fuzzy. He doesn’t know either what’s making his stomach sour. But he only wanted to find a place he could be alone to think properly.

Su Mu Zhe was somewhat in thoughts as he watched Ling Xia’s back. He smiled and muttered: “How interesting. I better tell Xaio Hu about it.”

His original goal in coming here was, to obtain the belongings of those four clan members and give it as a present to his future wife. But now there's a change in his plans. After he had taken those men's stuff, he'll follow this 'Ling Xia' and see the fun for himself.

En! It's definitely not a waste of trip treading into the soil of the Dark Arts Sect!
The inn's room was dim and damp, and a moldy smell was wafting inside. Ling Xia's mood became even worse.

His mind unconsciously replayed the moments that happened after he transmigrated.

Shit! It's not like this Lao Zi is affected by that. But being treated by that man as a substitute and then be played with, its just…..it fucking put a bad taste in my mouth!

Ling Xia got angrier the more he thinks. He wished he could go back and find Yu Zhi Jue to confront him about it.

Screw your honest feelings! Treating someone as a replacement is the most despicable thing ok!?

The pit of his stomach seemed like it was burning hot. The flame inside gets hotter and hotter, until it almost burn his insides to ashes.

Ling Xia's breathing rushes. Only when Da Bai notices his unsettled state and started pecking at his arm did he relaxes.

As he rub his arm, he was feeling a bit stumped.

Why am I so angry?

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 18

Ling Xia packed up with Da Bai first thing in the morning. What he only wants now is to go in a far, far place that doesn't have anyone who would wrong him, or point fingers at him and say that they mistook him for someone else. He went to the storefront and ordered some rations to the waiter, then he inquired basic informations about the neighboring city so he could make preparations for the journey.

The waiter packed their rations and handed it to him. A hand then patted him on the back. A familliar cheery voice rang: "Senior brother Ling, you're up so early? What a coincidence though that we're going on the same route. We should go together."

Ling Xia silently turned around. Just as he expected, it was that young lad who had blue hair.

Ling Xia replied apathetically: "Oh really? What a coincidence."

Su Mu Zhe carefully studied his expression. He smiled and said: "It looks like senior brother Ling didn't have a proper sleep last night, what seems to be bothering you?"

"Many thanks to senior brother Su's concern. I actually slept well." Ling Xia walked directly pass him. He didn't have any interest to travel with this trashy mouth Su Mu Zhe. The other person also seemed to take delight in badgering him with questions which he really hated.

Su Mu Zhe was skipping as he followed him on the road, except that Ling Xia wasn't paying him any attention. He places Da Bai on the ground where Da Bai soon reverted to its full form. Da Bai rudely flapped its wide wings towards Su Mu Zhe, the latter being pushed a few steps back.

"Senior brother Xiong, I'm afraid we can't travel together. I'll be going first." Ling Xia gave Su Mu Zhe a nod then turned around and jumped at Da Bai's back.

Su Mu Zhe stared dumbly upon seeing Da Bai, but he quickly jumped to its back as well. He grinned: “Pardon my poor eyes. I didn’t expect that your small bald chick turns out to be a high level magic beast, Bald Eagle —- it should be able to carry me as well for the journey.”

Ling Xia didn’t think that his face was thick to this extent. He kept his annoyance in check and said: “Senior brother Su, Da Bai is not used to strangers. Do understand.” Da Bai’s feathers are already pricked up. If Ling Xia wasn’t on top of it, Da Bai would have threw Su Mu Zhe off ages ago.

Su Mu Zhe inhaled deeply then bellowed: “Gentlemen of Iron Ring Clan, you’re treasured immortal cauldron had been stolen by me! If you want to take it back, come find me!”

Ling Xia was stunned by his sudden outburst. Then he heard several rushing footsteps coming from the inn. It was those four burly men from yesterday. They jumped down directly from the second floor, wielding menacing long swords and was coming their way.

Su Mu Zhe’s face wore a panicked expression: “Senior brother Ling! Ahhhhh! This is bad!”

The corner of Ling Xia’s eyes twitches. If he continued to stall, he will get caught in the trouble as well. He was left with no choice but to pat Da Bai’s back and say: “Da Bai, let’s leave here first!

Da Bai quickly soared into the sky. Those burly men that was stomping and shouting in anger quickly looked like dots from above. Su Mu Zhe leaned back leisurely and laughed: “Thanks a lot for the help senior brother Ling.

Ling Xia asked sternly: ” Senior brother Su, just what is your real intention for following me?”

“How could you say it like that senior brother Ling?” Su Mu Zhe replied accusingly, “I felt close to you the first time we met, so I just want to get to know each other, that’s all.”

Ling Xia shut his eyes. He lost interest in saying more.

Nevertheless, Su Mu Zhe didn't care about his cold attitude. While on the road, Su Mu Zhe was humoring himself with humming and singing something about a romantic affair between a older brother and a younger sister.

It was almost noon when Su Mu Zhe gazes down and smiled: "There's a small town below. Shall we go down and eat something? For offending senior brother Ling, how about I treat you?"

Ling Xia couldn't make sense of the dialect spoken in that said small town at all, and yet, Su Mu Zhe didn't have any problems in conversing with the locals. It made Ling Xia admire him for a bit. Su Mu Zhe wasn't even stingy with his choice, he brought Ling Xia in the best restaurant in there. Ling Xia didn't show any reservations towards Su Mu Zhe. He went ahead and ordered the best dishes that filled their table, thinking that it would piss the guy.

But Su Mu Zhe was hardly phased by that. He even added an additional order of a jar of a hundred year old liquor, and pour Ling Xia a cup with a full smile: "Here, here, here, senior brother Ling! Let's drink to our content!"

Ling Xia toasted with him, downing small sips at a time. When it flowed inside his mouth, it was sweet and cool with a slight spicy aftertaste. The more he drinks, the more he finds the taste to his liking. On the other hand, Su Mu Zhe downed the cup in one shot then he would reveal the bottom of the cup for Ling Xia to see.

Su Mu Zhe smirked: "Senior brother Ling, you're kinda coy, like a young lady."

Ling Xia knew that he was provoking him on purpose, but he couldn't stop himself from being affected. He could only drown the sorrow for the time being by distracting himself with the intoxicating alcohol. He tilted his head backwards and drank the whole cup in one gulped: "I'm a bad drunk so I'll leave myself to the care of the young master!"

After three cups down, Ling Xia's face was already flushed and he was moving wobbly. His eyes was getting misty as well.

Su Mu Zhe was smiling and laughing as he drank. The liquor was called "San Wan Dao (Done After 3 Cups)", but it wasn't that strong for him. He smiled teasingly: "Senior brother Ling, are you drunk already?"

Ling Xia looked him up and down and replied with slurred speech: "I remember now! You are Su Mu Zhe!"

Su Mu Zhe laughed and replied: "Of course I am, I just told you my name a while ago. Senior brother Ling, just what is your relationship with the current Demon King?"

What relationship?

Ling Xia sneered twice. He stood up with unsteady feet when suddenly, his head was struck with something that felt like a thousand flowing electric current. Last time this happened, he remembered most of the plot of the novel. And now, the identity and roles of the characters slowly started to become clear in his brain. His eyes widened as he exclaimed: "You are Xiao Hu's junior brother!"

Su Mu Zhe paused then nodded: "You know Xiao Hu?"

His question suddenly made Ling stare back at him with a dumb expression.

Why did I call the protagonist's name in a familiar manner like its natural?

He clutched his head and thought hard, but his mind only became more erratic.

Su Mu Zhe observed Ling Xia with full interest. He knows that Ling Xia is already drunk. But the more he got to know Ling Xia, the more he became suspicious. His appearance and name are really similar to that person, such resemblance is too much of a coincidence.

During the time he spent with the other ‘Ling Xia’, even if it wasn’t with pleasantries. but he surmise that ‘that person’ and this man in front of him is too identical! But then again, he didn’t know that person that much….

He secretly checked the elemental energy flowing within Ling Xia’s body during their journey. And to his surprise, they had the same thing aswell!

It’s impossible to have that so much similarity with someone in this world! Can it be that there’s really a magic that can ressurect the dead?

He pinches his chin and perks his lips up. Song Xiao Hu and the others are about to arrive soon. So whether this person is real or fake, he’ll get to know for sure.

When Ling Xia became sober, he was greeted with a splitting headache. He had never been this drunk before. He opened his eyes while groaning in pain. His dulled awareness gradually clearing up.

He is currently lying in a bed at a small room. The interior of the room seemed like it belonged to an inn. He shifted to the side with great difficulty, and saw the sky outside filled with stars. It seemed that he had been asleep the whole afternoon.

Da Bai was lying by his side, unexpectedly fast asleep.

When he remembered what had happened while he was drinking with Su Mu Zhe, his expression immediately turned dark. He couldn’t take it anymore after Su Mu Zhe bombarded him with tons of questions so out of annoyance, he grabbed the cup of liquor and pour it on top of Su Mu Zhe’s head then snarled: “Lao Zi already told you that I don’t have any relationship with him, none! Say something like that again and I will cut you down!”

Su Mu Zhe gave a comical look after he was poured with liquor on the head. His face was dripping wet while he was making a dumbfounded expression…

Why did that scene gives me a feeling of de ja vu?

Ling Xia's mouth pulled into a straight line. It'll be strange if Su Mu Zhe didn't get back at him later!

He kneaded his throbbing head for a while, then stood up and pushed the window open. A gust of cold wind rushes in, rousing his drowsy state and improving his mood a lot better.

If Su Mu Zhe is the lord protagonist's junior brother, and if he continued to associate himself with the guy, he is bound to meet with Song Xiao Hu and the others. If he had met him when he just transmigrated to this world, he can't say for sure but he might have hugged the protagonist's thigh. But now….

Remembering the villain's ending in the novel causes a sudden gripping pain in Ling Xia's heart.

Although Yu Zhi Jue was a troublesome jerk, I didn't see him having any despairing thoughts towards the world….But the moment he finally realizes that that 'Ling Xia' is already dead, would he then seek to destroy the world?

Such thoughts made Ling Xia feel some kind of stiffling pain in his chest.

He woke Da Bai up, then started his preparations to leave. And as expected, he didn't have any intentions on telling Su Mu Zhe about it.

It doesn't matter whether Yu Zhi Jue will destroy the world or not, whether Song Xiao Hu will save it or not, I don't have anything to do with it. I'll go away from these major characters and go to a remote place to live in peace. Perhaps I may be lucky enough to survive the destruction of this world by then, hehe.

These people, these things, they don't matter to me….

Da Bai replenished its energy when the night time arrived so Ling Xia quickly jumped out of the window with Da Bai. The fee for his stay on the room, he'll leave it for Su Mu Zhe to handle.

The flapping of Da Bai's wide wings created a shockwave of gust, quickly alerting Su Mu Zhe who was staying at the next door. He hurriedly opened his windows and saw a man and a bird flying towards the direction of the bright moon. He yelled towards the two but they didn't even turned their head back. Su Mu Zhe slammed the windos open and jumped out. He summoned his earth-type beast and chases after them.

After half an hour had passed, Song Xiao Hu who was riding Ah Li arrived travel worned after rushing over. Su Mu Zhe who was leaning on a tree pointed at where Ling Xia is and said: "They went over that way."

Song Xiao Hu asked in a daze: "Are you sure he is big brother Ling?"

Su Mu Zhe grudgingly rolled his eyes: "Boss, do you really think I would be mistaken?"

He had sent a message to Song Xiao Hu beforehand, explaining his conjecture to him.

Song Xiao Hu suddenly laughed out loud, smacking Su Mu Zhe with his fist: "Thanks a lot, Mu Zhe! It seems that master's words were all true, he really didn't lie me!"

He remembered about that nameless master with a mask, Ah Li's former master's prophecy —- "Living may end with death, and death to living….The dead shall rise again, and destiny will bring us together…

He stroked Ah Li's head and solemnly said: "Ah Li, let's go and find big brother Ling."

Ah Li suddenly widened its amber eyes in excitement and roared with great ardour that the ground momentarily shook. It slowly unfurled its great white wings, and set its four paws ablaze. Ah Li readid itself to soar into the sky.

Su Mu Zhe stared in amazement: "I-it already transcended?"

From ancient up to the present times, the number of transcended magic beasts never exceed twenty. And now, the Dark Arts Sect's Two Headed Flying Serpent is the only one existing transcended magic beast. But to think that Ah Li had already reached that level!

Song Xiao Hu mounted Ah Li. He gave Su Mu Zhe a smile and waved his hand: "Mu Zhe, I'll be going now to find big brother Ling!"

Seeing Song Xiao Hu and Ah Li soar into the sky eagerly, Su Mu Zhe cupped his hands in respect and smiled. He then decided to go as well and look for his future wife!

"Da Bai," Ling Xia rambled, "I will continue to find ways for your feathers to grow back. En, we will also ask around where is the best place to get red medicinal pills….That's right, the Holy Maiden Peak! The goddess is in there!"

His eyes gleamed bright, but it soon dimmed after. When he mentioned the Holy Maiden Peak, it made him remember that scoundrel Yu Zhi Jue again….

Ling Xia depressingly sighed. He knows that this world is just a place written in a novel, that's why he shouldn't let himself be affected by the protagonist nor the villain!

Fuck!

He hung his head and petted the top of Da Bai's head while saying: "Why don't we find and meet the goddess of the Holy Maiden Peak, although that might be a very difficult task…."

Da Bai had already gotten used to seeing his dejected look while they were traveling, so it only blinked its eyes in response.

Da Bai suddenly turned nervous when it felt something dangerous approaching! It's overwhelming power is actually on par with that Two Headed Flying Serpent!

Da Bai cawed loudly as a warning, then it started to take Ling Xia towards the ground—- It’s very easy to conceal their presence beneath the cover of the thick woods.

Ling Xia became alarmed so he immediately watches his back. Even though his eyesight is amazingly good, but he can’t see from that far. He could only see a vague small figure that seemed to be in flames.

Is it another ferocious magic beast?

Ling Xia suddenly tenses up. He leaned forward to Da Bai who was flying downwards to hide his body from view.

But that unknown creature was flying too fast! Da Bai haven’t reached the ground yet and he could already hear an earth-shattering yell that echoes for several Li, frightening countless forest creatures and causing them to scatter and run wildly all over the place: “BIG—-BROTHER—-LING! WAIT—-FOR—-ME!”

Ling Xia was startled. He immediately looked back and saw a magic beast with great white wings and four blazing paws catching up to him from the distance. Riding it is a man with a spiky hair in high spirits.

He was struck with great astonishment, the pupil of his eyes shrank. He instantly recognized the identity of the man and the beast the moment he saw them: “Xiao Hu, Ah Li….”

Countless scenes and images suddenly appeared before his eyes. Ah Li protecting him within its bosom till it was covered with bloody wounds, Song Xiao Hu risking his life to protect him…and the last one where Yu Zhi Jue appeared.

Yu Zhi Jue was holding him, pressing his face close to him with a broken and despairing look.

That pained expression of Ah Jue that wrings his heart…

Its as if his memories started to play in reverse, like a movie that slowly run in a flashback.

Several scenes rolls by like a camera film, making his heart race, feel affection, pain, and suffering….

Some of them were brief, others are in long divided segments….

Until it finally reached the very beginning.

When he just transmigrated, he met the protagonist. And as he turned his head, he saw his Ah Jue.

The boy was clearly a little devil, leaning back with his arms crossed in his chest, his pair of beautiful phoenix eyes looking at him from the side. His appearance was arrogant and stubborn yet very attractive.

Perhaps at that time, he just wanted to take good care of this little devil….

But in the end, he was the one who was looked after instead.

Author wanted to say:
Don’t ask me why Ling Xia recovered his memories after he saw Xiao Hu. Just think of it as the effect of the golden halo of the protagonist.

OceanofPDF.com

Chapter 19

A lot of his forgotten memories came flooding in. His head was so painful it seemed like it was splitting open. Ling Xia's eyes shot wide open and he was gasping for breath. His face was soaking wet, but he didn't know if its from tears or sweat.

He struggled to hold onto Da Bai's neck, pulling Da Bai's head closer: "Da Bai…stop…..they aren't enemies."

Da Bai was confused for a moment, but it gradually lessened its flying speed. Ah Li raises its blazing paws all of a sudden and leaped in front of them.

Ling Xia took out a handkerchief kept inside his clothes and wiped his face. He then breaths in air until he finally calmed down. He said with a smile: "Xiao Hu, Ah Li."

Song Xiao Hu stared in awe as he looked at Ling Xia from head to toe. His mouth was left hanging open and he was absentminded for a while before he uttered: "Big brother Ling….."

"Xiao Hu." Ling Xia greeted him with a gentle smile: "It's been a while."

Ah Li glared at Da Bai with its fangs bared. Da Bai recognized its nemesis but with their strength now far apart, it didn't have the courage anymore to step up. Da Bai could only stood its ground in a defensive stance while cowering.

Ling Xia can't help but chuckle when he noticed that Da Bai was shaking. Da Bai was formerly following Chu Yin, but now, Da Bai is following him. Who could have thought that it would turn out this way.

He quickly gestured at Ah Li: "Ah Li, Da Bai is not an enemy. No need to be cautious." He then stroke Da Bai at the neck to calm it down.

However, as the two of them stand before their beloved master, Da Bai and Ah Li eyed each other like they were rivals, leaving Ling Xia helpless.

Having a talk midair is really not the appropriate place, so he said to Song Xiao Hu while pointing towards the ground: “Xiao Hu, let’s go down and have a chat.”

It was plain to see that Song Xiao Hu was stirred with emotions. He was staring distractedly before he would give a reaction. Ah Li was unwilling to fly behind Da Bai so it swoop past them and flew down first. Da Bai was enraged by that and catches up quickly.

Ling Xia stared at the back of the lord protagonist that was brimming with heroism. It made him feel deeply proud. And now, Ah Li’s form had reach a transcended level. It looks like Song Xiao Hu became more awesome from all those years that passed.

Right as they were about to reach the ground, Ah Li had landed on top of a hill first. When Da Bai reaches the ground as well, it folded its wings and transformed back in its chick form. Da Bai lightly perches on Ling Xia’s shoulder and rubbed its head intimately to his face.

Ah Li also reverted back to its small form. When Ah Li saw Da Bai acting like that on purpose, Ah Li jumped and kicked Da Bai down, its tail wagging haughtily. Ah Li then jumped into Ling Xia’s arms and snuggled to his embrace. Da Bai was shoved far by that kick so it flew back with bloodshot eyes and aimed its talons towards Ah Li.

Ling Xia was caught in surprise but he immediately held his hands out to separate the two. Seeing the two act like jealous little kids, the heaviness in his heart lightened up a lot. He kept coaxing and coaxing the two until they finally behaved. However, the scuffle between the two resulted into more feather loss for Da Bai.

Da Bai’s eyes droop down and depressingly curled into a ball so Ling Xia hastily stroked Da Bai soothingly in the head. When he glanced at the other one, he saw Ah Li looking up on him. Its sets of amber eyes was sulking, so

Ling Xia quickly petted Ah Li comfortingly as well. He became preoccupied in comforting these two pitiful creatures.

After a hard time of holding the two in each of his arms in place, he noticed that the lord protagonist has been staring at him the whole time. He unconsciously gave an apologetic smile.

Song Xiao Hu couldn't take his eyes off him. His eyes suddenly turned into an upward curve and his pair of shallow dimples appeared: "Big brother Ling, it's really you! You came back in great health!"

Ling Xia's chest warmed up, his eyes getting teary. He nodded and replied: "En, it's me."

The hill top's passing breeze was cool and refreshing. The two of them sat side by side in a leveled boulder and then they told each of their state of affairs. Ling Xia was surprised to find that Song Xiao Hu learned of his true origins from his mask wearing master in the past. He was truly shock but glad.

And of course, he didn't tell Song Xiao Hu about the matter of him being twisted around Yu Zhi Jue's little finger. He only told him about the time he spent living at the Bai Shou Yuan, taking care of Green Wings, and leaving that place with Da Bai up to this point. He told him when he met Yu Zhi Jue at that time, he still haven't recovered his memories so he didn't recognized him….

The expression on Song Xiao Hu's eyes turned melancholic: "That time, Ah Jue was really heart-broken. But now that big brother Ling is back, he will definitely be very happy."

When Ling Xia remembered all those experiences he had after he transmigrated this time, his face unconsciously turned red. That damn Yu Zhi Jue and his acting skills! He threw so much curses at him then, he felt sorry now. He wished he could to run to him now and see him at once….

Ling Xia breathes in deeply. His voice was about to choke with emotions so he hurriedly changes the topic with a smile: "Xiao Hu, in all these years,

have you found someone you like?”

Song Xiao Hu was stumped for words, his face immediately turning red: “I’m still not the most amazing martial artist yet, so how can I think about love and creating a family.”

Ling Xia can’t help but find it funny. It turns out that this lord protagonist still haven’t change in the past three years in that aspect, he’s still pure as a white blank paper…..Ling Xia smiled brightly: “Dating won’t affect your martial arts training. And besides, Xiao Hu is already at a marriagable age.”

He saw Song Xiao Hu became increasingly embarrassed so he immediately changes the topic. After all, love is something that is up to destiny, it cannot be imposed.

From the stories that Song Xiao Hu told him, he gradually got to know all of the other guys’ current circumstances. Mu Rong Xue had already rebuilt the Holy Maiden Peak and abolished several unjustly laws of the Holy Maiden Peak. Feng Shu Ming sustained a grave injury that happened from the conflict in her Sect. And Feng Luo already officially had half of the Shao Yang Sect under his control as well as getting a lover. Cui Yu also became the official successor to the Yun Xiao City….

Song Xiao Hu digressed: “Big brother Ling, now that you remembered Ah Jue, are you going to find him?”

He looked back at the protagonist’s eyes that seemed to see through him completely. Ling Xia blushes when he remembered that time where there were many people that had witness what had happened. There’s Song Xiao Hu, Murong Xue, Ke Lan MinErBai…..perhaps all of them already knew about it.

He breathes in and raises his head, his expression completely determined: “En. I’ll definitely will.”

Ling Xia petted Ah Li, feeling reluctant to part. He also can’t help but give Song Xiao Hu a tender hug. When they were still kids, he frequently do this to Yu Zhi Jue. But he rarely gave the same treatment to Song Xiao

Hu. The protagonist is now tall with broad shoulders, a man that is destined to stand at the top of the world.

He cried for a bit but his heart nevertheless feel happy. He patted Song Xiao Hu's shoulder and said: "Song Xiao Hu, take care of yourself."

Song Xiao Hu smiled cheerfully, his two dimples faintly discernible: "En, take care big brother Ling! I'll be seeing you and Ah Jue very soon!"

He mounted Ah Li and waved at Ling Xia. Ah Li was also reluctant to part ways as it extended its head and licks Ling Xia's hand. A pair of man and beast then soared into the sky and gradually faded into distance.

Ling Xia unconsciously smiled.

Da Bai was still perching on Ling Xia's shoulder with an upset look. Ling Xia comfortingly rubbed its head and said: "Don't bear grudges at Ah Li. I'll definitely find a way to make your feathers grow again so you can find a wife soon."

He raises his head and looked at the other direction. A spell of heat spreading in his chest.

"Ah Jue…." He whispered. He looked up and stared at the sky filled with glittering stars.

He traveled back to Yu Zhi Jue's temporary residence as fast as he could, but he was stopped by the guards at the foot of the mountain. Ling Xia regretted so much that he didn't bring with him that Jade ornament that proves that he is someone close to the Grand Master. If he tried to sneak in, he's afraid that he would get caught by the guards patrolling in the sky and he won't be able to meet with Yu Zhi Jue.

Right now, the safety of his life is what the matter the most. Even if he wishes to see Yu Zhi Jue at once, he thought he shouldn't make light of his own life.

Those guards have changing shifts, but they all warned Ling Xia to leave the mountain premises. He thought carefully of who could possibly help him, but as he did, the only person he knows in the Dark Arts Sect is Ke Lan MinEr Bai. However, that girl is most likely at her Spirit Snake Island or at the Righteous Sect territory creating trouble.

He let out a sigh. Could it be that he'll just have to continue to wait here till an opportunity rises? And besides, this place is just Yu Zhi Jue's temporary residence, so if he thinks about it, Yu Zhi Jue might not be in this place anymore…..

Ling Xia looked for a cavern nearby for a temporary place to stay. He carefully rummaged through the stuff Yu Zhi Jue sets aside for him inside the storage chain with blue drop gem he was given. Inside that pendant's storage space were unexpectedly filled with some of the stuff he had in the past, refining equipments and materials, and other things….

He was suddenly strucked with an idea. He begins to put his all on crafting and refining a magic device that could fire a firework that will display a message.

His refining skill started rough, but he slowly got comfortable with it. Ling Xia meticulously crafted a few characters out of fire stones, but he wasn't sure of what he wanted to write. In the end, he only installed in the device a short message——'Ah Jue, I'll be waiting here for you."

He put his focus on refining and testing that device. And when Da Bai went to asleep, he tookt that chance to go to the river to wash himself and his clothes.

He examined his appearance reflected on the water. It's been several months ever since he came here, his hair had already grown up to his shoulder. He didn't put his hair up so it became a bit tangled and messy.

He had already gotten used to seeing this appearance. He became a bit tan and his wheat skin complexion turned a little dry. It doesn't even compare to the original 'Ling Xia' who had snow white skin and pretty looks…

Ling Xia sighed. Anyway, this is his look now. And besides, Yu Zhi Jue was still pining for him even though he looked like skin and bones when he was ill in the past!

He clutches his chest and breathes in. He aimed the magic device towards the sky then fired.

A golden spark flew into the night sky, displaying his message in big characters the moment it exploded——‘Ah Jue, I’ll be waiting here for you.’

Ling Xia sat at the river bank. He stared at the golden characters in the sky with a gentle smile on his face. He was waiting for that man to come.

Yu Zhi Jue appeared faster than he could ever imagine.

Ling Xia heard a familiar voice behind him. And when he heard the sound of footsteps getting nearer, the pounding of his heart became so violent he couldn’t stay calm.

He slowly turned around and spoke with a solemn tone: “Ah Jue.”

Yu Zhi Jue stood awkward. He wore an expression of hesitation mixed with anticipation: “Ling….”

Ling Xia’s lashes fluttered down: “Since I left, I’ve been thinking. I felt that its better to ask and make everything clear.”

Yu Zhi Jue’s chest tightened, his voice strained: “Say it.”

Ling Xia immediately continued: “Since I’m going to leave, for what reason did you give me a pendant that cannot be untied.”

“Also,” He slowly raised his head, his gaze colliding with Yu Zhi Jue’s, “I heard that the Demon King had someone he loved before?”

Yu Zhi Jue didn’t answer. He only nodded after some time had passed: “I do, but I only ever loved one man.”

Ling Xia sighed and waved his hand in dismissal: “Is that so.” He slowly turned around, about to walk away.

But before he could, Yu Zhi Jue caught his arm and pulled him back.

Ling Xia raises his brow: “What’s the meaning of this, great demon king?”

The grass on the ground is a half feet tall, lush and supple. Ling Xia’s vision swooned in one swift moment when his body was pushed down. Before he realize, Yu Zhi Jue had already pushed him down on the bed of grass, and confined him between his arms. He was surrounded by the fresh scent of the grass and the smell of Yu Zhi Jue’s body. Yu Zhi Jue was catching his breath, his eyes focused on Ling Xia. His expression was filled with obsession and grief, causing Ling Xia’s chest to tighten.

With their eyes looking back at each other, only then did Ling Xia notice that in these past few days, Yu Zhi Jue unexpectedly lost a lot of weight. There were even a lot of red lines in his beautiful pheonix eyes.

His heart went soft so he put a stop to his act. He reach his hands out and touched Yu Zhi Jue’s face. He almost couldn’t hold his tears back as he uttered: “Ah Jue, you’ve gotten thinner.”

Yu Zhi Jue was taken aback. He thought he was still dreaming when Ling Xia stroked his face. He was tempted to make sure if it wasn’t just a dream but he held himself back.

Ling Xia couldn’t control himself anymore. He pulled Yu Zhi Jue’s head down and kissed him. Yu Zhi Jue’s expression turned blank like a piece of wood with his mouth remaining shut. Ling Xia wantonly nips his lips, his voice a bit hoarse as he grumbled: “Lao Zi wants to kiss you now, yet you won’t open your mouth?”

The next second, his mouth was frantically occupied by the other person. Yu Zhi Jue clutches the back of his head and pulled him closer. His tongue was sucked with great force that it felt like Yu Zhi Jue was gonna swallow

it, his breath was scalding hot. Ling Xia held on to Yu Zhi Jue's clothes tightly with his eyes close and gave his all to return his kisses.

He didn't know how long their lips and teeth clashes, but their fierce exchange of kisses slowly turned into passionate gentle pecks. Yu Zhi Jue's kisses trailed along Ling Xia's forehead, eyes, and landed back to his lips where he showered it with soft kisses. Ling Xia slowly opened his eyes and looks back at Yu Zhi Jue. He couldn't hold back his smile: "Ah Jue."

The strands of Yu Zhi Jue's long black hair fell down and sprawled across Ling Xia's body. It looks as if its spider web securely wrapping him.

"Ling, did you really remember?" Yu Zhi Jue asked warily while averting his gaze with an embarrassed look.

Ling Xia knew that this has turned into an awkward situation, so he replied with a poker face: "Yes——including how you bullied me! How are you going to make it up for me? Ling Jue? Yu?"

He saw the rare occurence of the great demon king blushing up to his ears, so he continued to push the matter: "You thought it was a good idea to turn into a young Ah Jue. He was so endearing."

Yu Zhi Jue complained with a sulking face: "Ling, you really do like Ling Jue more."

Ling Xia stared at him with wide eyes: "Of course I do! Ling Jue was cute and obedient while Yu was shameless and a rascal. Don't you think so?"

Ling Xia's heart griped. *Isn't Ling Jue and Yu Zhi Jue both him? Did he have to compare himself to himself?*

Yu Zhi Jue reacted with a chuckle upon hearing Ling Xia's response. His phoenix eyes turned gentle, his words spoken as if it was a matter of fact: "Ling may like the young Ah Jue more, but I know that Ling prefers me in bed——He can't satisfy you."

Ling Xia’s face flushed bright red. Did Yu Zhi Jue really became a complete pervert? The way he phrase his words sounded so shameless and uninhibited….

Yu Zhi Jue slowly raises his head, his eyes already burning with that familiar fervent heat as he looked at Ling Xia’s eyes. He leaned his lips close to Ling Xia’s ears and whispered amorously: “Ling, let me satisfy you….”

Ling Xia’s heartbeat can’t help but race. He turned his face to the side and protested: “I still have a lot to ask and say to you! Ah Jue! Wu….” Yu Zhi Jue’s lips leaned down and cuts him off.

You bastard, aren’t you the one who will get satisfaction from this ?

“Don’t…we’re outside…ah….”

“Then let’s go to my space dimension. Ling, I really can’t bear it anymore…”

“…..ow….can you turn into the young Ah Jue first, please!…ah!…”

“Don’t think about other men at a time like this!”

“Wu….but isn’t he you? You bastard!”

“Say that you love me most, hurry….”

“…..Slow down…..Ah….. please….I love Ah Jue the most!”

“Did it feel good?”

“…..Yes.”

The next day, Ling Xia woke up with panda eyes and a strained back while Yu Zhi Jue was fully invigorated he was practically glowing. Ling Xia hatefully gritted his teeth.

Isn’t this my first time in this body? And yet he did it four times, isn’t that too much even for beasts?

Even though the medicine was very effective, he still felt fidgety and his body was strangely uncomfortable.

The two of them sat besides each other, watching the sun rise up. The orange and red rays of the sun from behind the mountain range slowly peeks out, gradually became brighter until it was too dazzling for the eyes. Ling Xia turned to look at his side, his Ah Jue sitting besides him quietly. The expression on Yu Zhi Jue’s face was of tenderness, and his smile possesses a contentment as if he had everything in the world.

Ling Xia can’t help but smile as well.

Was the ending for this stallion character finally changed into a beautiful one?

The ending that I have changed may be a bit cheesy, but its all’s well that ends well.

OceanofPDF.com

Extra 1

Words just came out of his mouth when he got pulled into Yu Zhi Jue's space dimension.

He clearly remembers the inside of the house. A house with only a single room and a couch bed inside…..Ling Xia's face can't help but heat up. Those times he was with Yu Zhi Jue in this place, he was repeatedly toyed with until he was exhausted —- But it's been so long since he's been with Yu Zhi Jue, so he decided to settle the debt later.

Because he was scared and ashamed most of those times, he didn't clearly saw what the inside of the dimension looks like. But its not the same story anymore——Yu Zhi Jue's breathing started to become rough, he was shedding his clothes off as he gets closer to Ling Xia. While he was removing Ling Xia's clothes, Yu Zhi Jue was showering him kisses on his face and his body. His hot breath on his skin was making Ling Xia flustered.

He didn't intended to make it awkward for Yu Zhi Jue, but Ling Xia unconsciously reacted by placing his hands between them. He even use his full strength to create half a centimeter of distance between their body. He stared back at Yu Zhi Jue with an embarrassed look and said in a hush voice: "Slow down, Ah Jue."

Even though it was humiliating, but he still hinted to Yu Zhi Jue that it will be his first time in this body. If Yu Zhi Jue continued in this frantic pace, he well definitely die in bed.

Yu Zhi Jue stared vacantly but he soon understands it. The corner of his mouth perks up into a grin: "I'll be very careful. I won't make it painful for you."

The great demon king's undressing speed was fast as usual.

The moment his bare skin was exposed to the air, Ling Xia couldn’t stop himself from shivering. But when the other person’s skin sticks close to him, its warmth made him sigh comfortably. He was hard-pressed at the situation, while Yu Zhi Jue was getting rather spirited down there. Ling Xia could feel Yu Zhi Jue’s erection faintly twitching on his inner thigh.

Is he that eager to put it in quick?

“Ling, your body is so beautiful….” Yu Zhi Jue was staring fascinated at the warm skin he was feeling beneath his palm. He was adoringly touching every inch of Ling Xia’s skin. He lightly tease his lover’s nipples, making him feel pleasure from it. He only pinched and flicker it a few times before they quickly perked up.

Ling Xia sharply inhaled, the moan that escapes from his mouth made him embarrassed. He replied with disheveled breathing: “Ah Jue’s body is the beautiful one….”

Yu Zhi Jue’s complexion is fair as white jade, and his perfectly toned body creates a smooth line. His face also match his standing as the great demon king….Ling Xia can no longer control the wild pounding of his heart.

Yu Zhi Jue raises his head with a small smile on his lips. He trailed the tip of his nimble tongue on Ling Xia’s chest. His eyes was flickering with the heat of his arousal, increasing his enchanting allure.

A prickling numbness spreads from his chest and flowed to his brain. Ling Xia’s throat constricted, yet the moans keep coming out. His body was shaking all over from the rising heat.

Knowing that he was reacting, Yu Zhi Jue’s breath gets hotter. He wanted to possess this man at once, but his eagerness might hurt Ling Xia. He held himself back and continued with the foreplay. His kisses that had a bit of force in it left red imprints on Ling Xia’s chest up to his collarbone. His hands didn’t remain idle as they affectionately fondles Ling Xia’s body.

Ling Xia’s eyes became hazy, and he turned breathless on every place Yu Zhi Jue is making him feel pleasure. He unthinkingly took Yu Zhi Jue’s hands, and guided their movements across his body. Those pair of beautiful eyes became even more heated up and his hands was more vigorous.

Yu Zhi Jue was taken aback. He wanted to go slow at the beginning, but with Ling Xia twisting and turning beneath him, he simply could not resist this man’s unintentional hints of seduction…. The look on his eyes turned dark. He held the back of Ling Xia’s head, and swiftly puts his tongue inside Ling Xia’s mouth, pulling and tangling his tongue with his own. Hearing the stiffled moans coming out of Ling Xia’s mouth, his body immediately burns up. He loves the flavor of the inside of Ling Xia’s mouth. It was sweet and fresh, he just couldn’t bear to part with it.

Ling Xia’s eyes turned misty because of the kiss, his breath became shorter and shorter. As soon as Yu Zhi Jue finally parted their lips, his voice almost didn’t came out when he called out: “Ah Jue….”

Yu Zhi Jue’s face blushes and his heart was pounding intensely like it was being beaten by a club when he heard Ling Xia’s feeble voice. After struggling to contain himself, he suddenly grasp Ling Xia’s slender legs and parted them. He then took out a lubricant ointment he had beforehand.

His body being opened up by Yu Zhi Jue causes him to let out a low groan. That secret part of him that is being exposed in front of Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes made him unconsciously curl up and fold his legs but he was held down by Yu Zhi Jue.

“So beautiful….” Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes gleamed brighter, his gaze couldn’t move away from Ling Xia’s perfectly round and rather perky butt.

Because it was a part of Ling Xia’s body that wasn’t exposed to direct sunlight all throughout the year, it had a much lighter complexion than the rest. Yu Zhi Jue could hardly resist the temptation of feeling it up. The flexible sensation he felt in his hand from touching it was amazing, he was reluctant to let go. He inserted a finger inside Ling Xia’s anus, and covered the insides with the ointment. He slowly thrust his finger to find that

specific spot, painstakingly covering the walls with the ointment while pressing around.

Ling Xia curled up tensely upon the invasion of something foreign. But that place immediately relaxes after it got used to Yu Zhi Jue's finger while tightly wrapping around it. Seeing the aroused expression of Yu Zhi Jue, his whole body heats up and flushes deep red. He turned his head to the side with a shy but embarrassed expression, while trying his best to relax his tense lower back. Yu Zhi Jue soon inserted a second finger and repeatedly slides it in and out, still looking for that spot that would arouse Ling Xia.

Ling Xia's cheeks reddened. Two droplets of tears threatening to fall from his slight narrowed eyes. Despite his nervousness, he was still faintly anticipating for what to come.

His waist turned weak, when a sudden electrifying sensation ran up to his spine and shot through his brain. Ling Xia gasped in surprised, his body soaking wet from sweat like a fish that jumped out of water. He unbearably flexed his neck backwards, revealing his adams apple that was bobbing due to restlessness.

Now that he found it, Yu Zhi Jue rubbed that spot back and forth. He lowered his head and took Ling Xia's erect cock that was already leaking with pre-cum in his mouth, sucking it down to the base then back to the tip.

Ling Xia cried out 'Ah'. The feeling of being attacked simultaneously in front and the back with intense pleasure made his toes curl up, his head swoon, and his whole body limp.

"Ah Jue….you can now…" He struggled to spit those words out, his insides already coiling tightly but comfortably on Yu Zhi Jue's finger.

……he wanted it so much, he wanted his Ah Jue….

His soft silky small voice causes a feverish heat to wash over Yu Zhi Jue's body. He suddenly added one more finger and thrust it to the base and spreads it to widen his entrance. The suddenness made Ling Xia inhaled all the air he could take at the back of his throat.

Ling Xia’s pupils abruptly shrank, all the words in his mouth could not come out. He tried to struggle to push Yu Zhi Jue away, but he was firmly held down by him. His breath ran faster when he suddenly came. Even though this is not really his first time, but he was still extremely embarrassed. As soon as he recovered, he gave an apologetic look at Yu Zhi Jue with his lips still faintly trembling.

Yu Zhi Jue still had his finger moving about inside Ling Xia’s body while he was heedlessly licking Ling Xia’s dick. He smiled and replied with a low voice: “Very tasty.”

Ling Xia was so embarrassed he almost wanted to faint. He stared at Yu Zhi Jue, lost in thoughts, when he suddenly remembered something. It seems that, he never returned the favor to the other person….

Although his Ah Jue is sometimes overbearing and stubborn, but he is always gentle and considerate in bed. Even now that his head is soaking with sweat, Yu Zhi Jue is still giving his best to satisfy him.

He furiously blushed. Two drops of tears from both his eyes unwaveringly flows down. He really wanted to make his Ah Jue happy, but the reservations in his heart seemed to stop him from doing anything….

Ling Xia grabbed his own legs and parted them. He didn’t have to courage to look at Yu Zhi Jue’s reaction, and only urged with quivering lips: “Ah Jue, come inside….I want you…..”

Yu Zhi Jue stiffened, his eyes stared stupefied at the scene before him. His cheeks can’t help but blush.

Ling Xia very rarely took the initiative in bed, but now, he had this especially seductive look with that flushed face seducing him…..Yu Zhi gulped his drool, his erection becoming harder.

The walls inside Ling Xia is truly getting softer and hotter, his adam apple bobbed on his dry throat. He thrusts his fingers in and out impatiently with his body bent forward in between Ling Xia’s legs. His thirst for him almost made him come at any moment.

He held his erection with one hand, while the other is used to support Ling Xia's waist. He inserted it inch by inch, the feeling of being wrapped by that ravishing warm sensation causes his body to shudder as he slowly moves.

Ling Xia draws out a groan. In spite of the meticulous foreplay, and Yu Zhi Jue's adept experience from doing it many times already, as well as being supported by the other person, he still felt the pain like it was being tore. He forces himself to relax, bearing with it by tightly clutching on the sheets.

"Painful?" Yu Zhi Jue gently asked. He controlled the thrusts of his waist in a slow rhythm. He could feel the rough and difficult entering gradually becoming smoother, but it was still coiling around him very tightly. He can't resist adding a bit more force into it because of the pleasure it gives.

Ling Xia's vision went dark for a moment, only when he recovered that he complained with a weakened voice: "Y-you turn into young Ah Jue first…."

This bastard, that thing of his is too huge!

——He absolutely regretted saying those words later on.

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes, his heart suddenly felt bitter.

So Ling Xia does prefer Ling Jue over me?

He remembered those moments when he was just growing up. He suddenly attacked Ling Xia's sensitive spot ruthlessly, grinding at it repeatedly.

"Ah…" Ling Xia cried out in a loud high pitch voice, his throat being licked and bitten by Yu Zhi Jue. Yu Zhi Jue kisses him while adding more speed into his thrusts. Every time he pulls back, he will shove it back in with full force. Ling Xia's thoughts and feelings were scattered in every attack, his soul felt like it was being pulled from his body. He already came once but he was about to come again.

He couldn’t handle the immense pleasure he was feeling, his hands was unconsciously clawing at Yu Zhi Jue’s back. Unable to endure, he carelessly continue to claw his back while unconsciously pleading: “Ah Jue, slower….please….oh…”

Because Yu Zhi Jue loves hearing Ling Xia’s pleading and crying voice, and he was fascinated seeing his mildly damp eyes and flushed face, he thrusts with more force that Ling Xia’s butt up to his thigh turned red from the contact.

Yu Zhi Jue squinted his eyes in satisfaction. He grip Ling Xia’s dick that was hard once again, and strokes it along the movement of his thrusts.

Ling Xia’s breathing became chaotic, his mind can no longer process any thoughts. He can only moan at random and hold on to his man. The heights of pleasure continues to climb up till his brain about to fry up, his loud moans is like music to the other person’s ears. His toe curl up as he shot his cum into Yu Zhi Jue’s abdomen.

The walls inside violently contracted, and was squeezing Yu Zhi Jue firm and tight. He stop his movements and took a breath to wait for Ling Xia to recover. Once Ling Xia’s sober, he started moving once again once in a while, so that Ling Xia’s aftertaste from the climax will linger much longer.

After a strong surge of pleasure, is in fact, a lingering tenderness. Even though he puts up a front, but that rich numbing friction was making him feel really good. Ling Xia closed his eyes with a blush on his face the moment he came again. He couldn’t get hard in a short time, but he started feeling it again as he watches Yu Zhi Jue. Even though being pushed down by another man and trapped beneath is humiliating, but he can clearly see his Ah Jue in this view.

His Ah Jue was pursing his lips, drops of sweat rolling down his face along his elegant chin down to his broad chest. Him soaked in pleasure made him alarmingly erotic. He can’t help but raise his hand and wipe the sweat of his man and put Yu Zhi Jue’s strands of hair behind his ears for him. Ling Xia gently traces Yu Zhi Jue’s soft lips, wanting to hear his moans.

Its as if Yu Zhi Jue understood his urging, he soon lets outs a quiet and deep gasping moans. He took Ling Xia’s fingers into his mouth and rolled his tongue around it, sucking it while he was gently rocking below.

Ling Xia’s breathing rushes. His eyes is almost glued at Yu Zhi Jue and his heart throbbing violently.

He can’t refrain from raising his head and kissing Yu Zhi Jue’s throat and collar bone. He could vividly sense, that because of his action, Yu Zhi Jue paused for a moment but his movements got faster as he lets out a few low growl he couldn’t contain. Yu Zhi Jue’s timbre alone was enough to make his heart tremble.

He knows that Yu Zhi Jue is about to climax, so he encouragingly fasten his legs tightly around Yu Zhi Jue’s waist like he was clamping on it, accepting every fierce strike that was turning the scene before his eyes into broken pieces.

His inside suddenly burns up as thick hot liquid came spurting inside him, making him tremble all over.

Ling Xia’s neck curved backwards and fell back into the pillow like a falling ruined kite. His breath was chaotic, and his whole body was spent. A pleasant aftertaste washes over his trembling body.

Yu Zhi Jue sank on top of Ling Xia and stares at his face in daze. He just don’t want to pull out from inside him. His heart jumps wildly from their chest sticking close to each other and all their limbs tangled together.

Once Ling Xia regained his senses, he soothingly strokes the back of Yu Zhi Jue’s head like he was calming a child. Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes closed comfortably and sated, keeping their position in that way for a long while without saying anything.

“Ling,” Yu Zhi Jue slowly raised his head, his eyes revealing an alarming gleam, “Let’s do it again.”

When Ling Xia felt Yu Zhi Jue's dick starting to harden and rise again, he immediately became flustered and hastily flail his waist to pull it out. He just don't want to meet his end on the bed! Isn't Yu Zhi Jue's one climax worth to two climax for other people?

But before he could say anything, Yu Zhi Jue's dick inside him had already swelled into a huge size, making his scalp numb from the feeling of being stuffed again.

Ling Xia blushed in an instant: "Ah Jue, I'm already tired. Tomorrow again….okay?"

Yu Zhi Jue was sulking while looking back at him. Ling Xia's scalp tingled as he knew that expression of his very well. His heart was shouting inside that its far from good.

As he expected, Yu Zhi Jue's whole body was suddenly enveloped with white light and his size is slowly decreasing.

In a matter of seconds, Yu Zhi Jue raises his head with toothy grin on his red lips, his pair of limpid bright eyes carries a bit of longing for him. he bit his lower red lips and spoke like he couldn't hold himself back anymore: "Big brother, I still want you….."

Ling Xia immediately became flabbergasted, his face flushing once again while he was at loss on what to do.

What the hell is he doing? To think that he would even spoke in a childish tone….although, that part of Yu Zhi Jue also changed to his younger self…..but there wasn't that much of a difference anyway???

He could still feel that part of the other person pulsating inside his body once in a while, making him feel disconcerted.

Ling clearly knows that he was just faking it, but he was still vulnerable towards that innocent appearance of Yu Zhi Jue. Ling Xia was blushing uncomfortably while trying to push him away: "Ah Jue, don't be like this…..you….."

“Big brother….”Yu Zhi Jue slips his pink tongue into Ling Xia’s mouth and slowly rock inside, “You feel so good inside…”

Ling Xia felt exasperated and resentful, his body tense, and his nerves taut. He felt that he was guilty of forcing a minor. His tone was almost pleading: “Sure…..But Ah Jue, won’t you turn back first? And I told you don’t call me big brother….”

How can I refuse him? Yet Yu Zhi Jue’s heart turned bitter. He temporarily pulled out, then helped Ling Xia into a kneeling position in the bed, without turning himself back to his original body.

He parted Ling Xia’s butt and carefully thrusts in again, scraping his tip to Ling Xia’s sensitive spot. The adolescent asked him with deep but clear voice: “Ling, which Ah Jue do you like? The me right now, or the one before? Which one makes you feel it more?”

Ling Xia’s breathing hitch, he felt like laughing from anger. But his body was gradually reacting against his will, his temperature slowly starting to rise up. He retaliated back: “I don’t like either!”

Yu Zhi Jue was taken by surprise for a moment. He then thrusts with more and more force, while saying between his gasps: “Then I’ll just keep making Ling Xia feel good, until you finally realize which one you like better…..”

His nonstop attack there, the strength of his waist, speed, and rhythm…..I can’t differentiate at all…..both of them are just one person, how could there be any difference!

Ling Xia’s waist down to his legs went weak from being fucked. He was leaning on the bed in a kneeling position moaning and powerless, and yet, Yu Zhi Jue turned his head towards him and kisses him deeply.

“Say you love me most…..” Yu Zhi Jue gripped Ling Xia’s erection, his thrusts getting fiercer.

Ling Xia nearly went insane because of his forcefulness, as well as being teased by him while his appearance is the young Ah Jue. He hung his head while blushing with shame. He was leaning on the pillow, resisting weakly, and was left with no choice but too plead for mercy: “I want to come…… please…..I love Ah Jue the most…..”

The moment Yu Zhi Jue suddenly let go of his hold, Ling Xia immediately came and his whole body shuddered.

His mouth was gaping open to breaths in air. He just remembered that he was begging for mercy while Yu Zhi Jue was in his adolescent form. He really wished he could dug a hole and bury himself. Yu Zhi Jue pulled him up, wrapped his arms around his waist, and held him tight while moving faster and faster. Until finally, Yu Zhi Jue came for the second time.

Ling Xia let himself lean on Yu Zhi Jue’s body, staring in daze at his bright and clean forehead bathed with bead of sweat while his heart loudly thumping. He seriously thought, that if he came over and over, he will definitely go mental.

But he didn’t wait for Ling Xia for too long, nor he waited for his body to recover, before the reinvigorated young Ah Jue lifted Ling Xia’s legs and started thrusting again.

Seems like the spots of the leopard didn’t change, as though he just never get tired……..The fuck! The stamina of the youngsters sure is amazing!

After doing it, they went for a wash with no strength left in Ling Xia’s body. The young Ah Jue held him in his arms and was bathing him in lake while Ling Xia was looking at the moon with a glum look on his face.

I didn’t commit a crime, but strangely enough, I still felt like crying…..

He glared at the fake youngster and enunciated with grave tone: “Ah Jue, you really are too much, don’t expect you’ll be sleeping with me later!”

Seeing anger plainly written on Ling Xia’s face, he had no choice but to tone it down and console Ling Xia with kisses on his lips and chin: “I know

Ling likes both of me so don’t be upset anymore…..I won’t be like that again …”

Yu Zhi Zhe was still in his younger form so Ling Xia was easily swayed by his expressions and his urge to shout and yell at him ceased, the latter was keeping him tightly enclosed in his arms. It seems that he had been getting more and more lenient and forgiving towards Yu Zhi Jue. Though when met with Yu Zhi Jue’s jealousy, he can’t help but toy with him a little bit further.

Ling Xia snorted, and furiously kicked Yu Zhi Jue several times. He declared while panting in rage: “You are banned from touching me for one month!”

OceanofPDF.com

Extra 2

On the next day, Ling Xia shuts himself inside the refining workshop all day. He refined and cultivated till night fall without allowing Yu Zhi Jue to meet him. His physique is much better now and the medicine's effectiveness is top notch so he was more or less fully recovered. However, Ling Xia thought that the demon king's yandere tendencies is getting worse every passing day, so its a must to address it as soon as possible.

Speaking of this yandere of a demon king, Ling Xia felt that he was dating two guys at the same time, making him think that he was losing his morals!

At first, Yu Zhi Jue restrained himself from touching Ling Xia to earn his forgiveness. He merely hugged Ling Xia during their sleep. On the third day, his face was filled with frustration from being deprived of sex!

He grope and rub against Ling Xia while hugging him, pulling down his collar to reveal his collarbone and a bit of his pecs, while his pair of gleaming phoenix eyes wanders around coquettishly. His long slender legs enticingly reaching for Ling Xia's body, with an invitation seemingly written on his face "I'm very tasty, come and eat me~ please~"

Ling Xia swallowed his saliva, he just don't want to surrender more of his integrity. Yet in the end, he was pushed down half willing half unwilling.

The next day, he slept continuously and only woke up after three days, while the great demon king handled his work with a glowing, invigorated complexion. Ling Xia slammed his fist on the bed in irritation the moment he saw the red and purple marks scattered in his body. Yu Zhi Jue should just change his name, a man with a pile driver meat, powered with a small motor! And to think that there was even a time when he sees that kid as innocent and adorable….

His body was already cleaned up, but he felt that there was still a vague dull pain remaining. Ling Xia couldn’t move comfortably for a while as he took Da Bai with him to go for a stroll in the market down the mountains.

He don’t know why, but Ling Xia thought that Da Bai seemed different these past few days. The most obvious change is that its eyes no longer droop dispiritedly like it used to do. To be exact, its like Da Bai turned into a different breed of bird. Every day, its eyes widen in attention as if to catch a thief on run, its wings often spreads wide and was basks under the sunlight, staying like that without moving for a long while.

Ling Xia started getting baffled about it so he looked for some materials to research about. It turns out, it was a method for bald eagles to absorb spiritual energy. He was very relieved, though he could somewhat guess the reason for it.

Da Bai is a very proud bird in his younger years, so it became depress when it suffered major setbacks one after another. Da Bai considered Ah Li as its arch nemesis. But now, Ah Li is already a transcended beast and Da Bai’s level went down a lot because of what happened in the past. Now that Da Bai is ready to pick itself up again, Ling Xia is more than willing to help him find a way.

A magic beast’s magic strength is directly proportional to its bloodline, but how further its level will be is up to the beast’s efforts, as well as the relationship built between the magic beast and its contracted master.

Ling Xia decided that he will first find a way to restore Da Bai’s plumage, and then think of methods to help Da Bai increase his level. Its not important whether he make a contract or not, after all, when it times for Da Bai to make a family of its own, he’ll see if Da Bai still wishes to do so.

He researched the information he gathered but he didn’t get much. Although there’s a lot of capable people under Yu Zhi Jue’s rule, but he finds it awkward to ask the great demon king to order Da Bai’s previous master and the rest.

There were times that Ling Xia can’t help but wonder, if the great demon king’s legion views him like the great beauties of china and royalty concubines Bai Si and Da Ji? That fucker Ming Ze was really hard on him, though he don’t where he is now….

Their relationship will not go smoothly, him and Yu Zhi Jue have a long difficult path ahead. But these problems, they will always slowly face it together.

Ling Xia sat on Da Bai’s back as they travel back and forth. The breeze brushing against him makes him squint his eyes comfortably. He didn’t how long had passed, but there was a sudden high pitch noise whistling nearer and nearer. Ling Xia widened his eyes in surprise, why does it sounds like Da Bai?

His vision had gotten already much better. Now he can apply spiritual strength in his eyes and see a lot farther.

The moment he clearly distinguished a man and a bird from afar, his heart immediately skipped a beat. To his surprise, it was Chu Yin! Da Bai was obviously shook because its body stiffened up. Da Bai cowered in front of its former master, losing its courage to run away.

Chu Yin was still wearing his usual red robes, standing on top of a flying bald eagle. Except that the eagle had full and rich plumage unlike Da Bai whose head is almost clean cut.

That bald eagle excitedly flew in twist and turn when it saw Da Bai. If it not for Chu Yin being there as well, it would have already pounced on them. On the other side, Da Bai was looking at that eagle with disgust, viciously glaring at it with an expression as if it was itching to kill it.

Ling Xia didn’t notice what was happening because his full attention is directed to Chu Yin. He breathes deeply and slowly straightened his posture. Encountering these people is definitely inevitable in the future, he must brace himself to the confrontation.

Chu Yin quickly come to a stop, his pair of narrow and slanted eyes sizes up Ling Xia. He raised his nose in the air and spoke with his drawn out playful tone: “Your blood~ It still look so tasty~”

Seeing the other person lick his lips from his uncontrollable hungry appetite, Ling Xia’s scalp tingled and he unconsciously pulls his neck back, but he quickly calms himself down: “Elder Chu.”

Chu Yin smiled and replied with a dry and pitched voice: “Don’t be so serious~ It’s no fun like this~ I won’t do anything to you~”

The corner of Ling Xia’s lips twitches.

What’s with that playful expression in this blood demon’s eyes? The rest of the Dark Arts Sect legions seemed just fine, only this Chu Yin with an weird way of speaking I just don’t know how to handle.

A ball of thunder suddenly struck from above, hitting besides Chu Yin and burning the edge of his sleeves. A rumbling thunder is heard from the distance as thunder clouds surrounded by sparking electricity fleets over.

Song Xiao Hu riding Ah Li gave an impression of contrasting light and darkness as they valiantly rushes over. He then bellowed: “You old monster! Get away from big brother Ling!”

Ling Xia rejoices, he called out: “Xiao Hu! Ah Li!”

When Chu Yin saw Song Xiao Hu, the expression on his eyes immediately turned perverted and extremely fanatic, his pupil also got slightly bigger. He licked his lips in excitement: “Xiao Hu~ I always anticipated the moment we get to meet each other! This is so touching~”

Ling Xia shivered in fear. This Chu Yin fights like a madman, annoying the lord protagonist to death. Though he is not too worried because Chu Yin is no longer a match to Song Xiao Hu, but he dreads how Chu Yin readily sacrifice his life just to help level up the protagonist…..

That is unconditional true love right there!

Song Xiao Hu wears a blue short-sleeve buttoned Chinese jacket, skin tight top and pants beneath, and his hedgehog hair had been comb backwards in a dashing style. He cupped his hand towards Ling Xia then turned to Chu Yin: “I don’t have any spare time to deal with you. Is the lesson I gave you last time not enough?”

Ling Xia wiped his cold sweat. To not be provoked by the other person’s dubious and greasy voice, the protagonist’s innate mental strength….sure is amazing.

Chu Yin’s didn’t pay attention to what Song Xiao Hu said. His sleeves was already rolled as he throws an attack. Two people clashes in a battle in the sky in a split seconds. Their speed was too fast so Ling Xia could only see flashing blue and red lights smashing together and then separating.

As the fight gets more intense, those two people in the sky went lower and lower in altitude, violent slamming sounds can be heard from time to time. Ling Xia got worried and called out: “Xiao Hu!”

Unexpectedly, Ah Li was not in the least worried, it even change into its smaller form and jumped into Ling Xia’s shoulder, intimately nuzzling against Ling Xia’s face.

Ah Li was keenly aware that Da Bai seemed to be very hostile towards the other bald eagle so Ah Li decided not to attack it, let the two birds fight on their own, *hehe*.

Ling Xia hugged Ah Li in his bosom. He is worried about Song Xiao Hu after all so he commanded Da Bai to chase after flashing lights clashing against each other. What he didn’t expect, is that Chu Yin’s bald eagle would follow them closely and caw softly at Da Bai several times.

Da Bai was glaring at Ah Li first, but the latter was ignoring it. So instead, Da Bai flew nearer to that bald eagle then grabs and scratches at its wings. But because Ling Xia was sitting on top, Da Bai was limited to very slight movements. In fact, that bald eagle even diminishes their distance to each other, and uses its sharp and pointy beak to peck intimately at Da Bai’s

body and snuggle against Da Bai repeatedly, making Da Bai’s feathers prick up in an explosion of anger.

“Is it….a female bald eagle?” Ling Xia thought out loud while holding Ah Li in his arms. Male bald eagles have greater numbers than female ones. And despite Da Bai’s current bald look, this girl eagle pays more importance on what is on the inside rather than the outside appearance!

This bald eagle’s body is actually a bit bigger than Da Bai…..Even if Da Bai isn’t the type to be the first one to put effort, he still should respect the ladies! Ling Xia comforting strokes Da Bai’s head, thinking that it would calm it down.

Da Bai cawed loudly in anger. What female eagle, female eagles don’t have that much plumage in their head! That’s a freaking juvenile!

Ah Li shakes its head as it gloated over Da Bai’s misfortune. Ah Li burrowed deeper into Ling Xia’s embrace and look at Da Bai with insulting eyes. Da Bai felt more useless as an eagle.

That bald eagle kept its close distance flying besides Da Bai so Da Bai continued to shoot wind blades at its direction. The other eagle tried to dodge it as much as it can, but it couldn’t avoid it all. Despite being hit to the point that blood spilled from its beak, it didn’t get angry and was wholeheartedly resigning to its bloody fate.

Da Bai ultimately lost face and its fighting spirit deflated as it flies down. Ling Xia is undependable while holding my enemy Ah Li who's eyeing him covetously. I’ll just fly and fly till I throw off this damn gay! (Bonbon TN: Da Bai is talking about his bald eagle suitor)

When this bald eagle got critically wounded by Da Bai, it lost a few of its levels but its still one level higher than Da Bai. Furthermore, Da Bai was carrying Ling Xia on its back. So no matter how fast Da Bai try to fly, it cannot outrun the other eagle. Da Bai’s head spins from too much irritation. It didn’t leveled its head aiming straight to the ground until they were about to hit it.

It was clear that Chu Yin and Song Xiao Hu's battle ensues. Almost all the surrounding hills was flattened. Ling Xia knows that he'll just cause inconvenience staying close, so he went out of the battle's reach and waited for it to end.

He was watching with full interest and attention at the fight between those two, he didn't notice that Chu Yin's eagle was getting closer and closer to them while Da Bai was inching backwards. Da Bai got scared as it walks closer so it changes into its chick form and jumped into Ling Xia's embrace. Unfortunately for Da Bai, Ah Li who was in there as well mischievously kicked it out and Da Bai was thrown out. Da Bai got knocked against a tree and changes back again into its adult form in confusion.

Before Da Bai fully recovered, that bald eagle already pounced on Da Bai in high spirits. Watching another male on top of its body, Da Bai almost wanted to shed tears——Lao Zi is a genuine straight male, Lao Zi is not a homosexual….

"Caw!" That bald eagle exclaimed, the beautiful plumage in its head quivered as a sign of adoration——I like you, you should date me!

Da Bai admiringly at the same time hatefully stares at the other eagle's head feathers. Da Bai raised its claw and beckoned the eagle to come closer.

The eyes of that eagle shined brightly, it impatiently went closer. Da Bai's expression suddenly turned hostile. It strikes like a thunder and pulled on the other eagle's head plumage with great strength without listening to reason. Da Bai put all its strength in pulling: I will pull and pull! I will pull with both my mouth and claws!

"Ow! Ow! Ow!" The bald eagle screamed in pain. Even so, it merely gritted its jaw to endure and lowered its head with tears in its eyes as it allows Da Bai to continue wrecking its precious plumage.

After the feathers had been plucked, Da Bai looked at the other eagle who now looked bald like him with great satisfaction, the resentment in Da Bai's heart melted away.

That bald eagle looked at Da Bai miserably and answered with a caw —— I guess, you'll let me stay by your side now as a fellow bald.

If only Da Bai would clearly look at the eagle's expression, Da Bai could see that it turned red as tomato.

Da Bai glared at the eagle with new bald look. Da Bai was fuming with rage while thinking: Lao Zi is not homo, and Lao Zi is not this idiot's owner!

Da Bai tried to swat the other eagle off it, but when it pounces on Da Bai again, Da Bai didn't have enough strength to do so.

As soon as Song Xiao Hu and Chu Yin's fight ended, Ling Xia breaths in relief. It was only then did Ling Xia notice the strange interaction between the two eagles. That bald eagle keeps on sticking close to Da Bai. Da Bai seemed to be making small angry noises while smacking the other eagle with not much strength in his wings, then that bald eagle will quickly come close and nuzzle Da Bai. Their amusing commotion continues like a married couple having fun without ever getting tired of it…

The corner of Ling Xia's mouth twitches. It looks like, Da Bai finally found a wife?

Song Xiao Hu's clothes was completely tattered but he was still in great condition, while Chu Yin's body was filled with bleeding wounds, although his eyes was still bright.

Ling Xia hastily walked towards Song Xiao Hu with Ah Li in his arms: "Xiao Hu, are you hurt?"

Song Xiao Hu's pair of dimples suddenly appeared, he replied with a smile: "I'm all right, big brother Ling."

Song Xiao Hu glared at Chu Yin and declared: "If you seek big brother Ling to cause trouble again, I will not let you off easily next time, I swear!"

Ling Xia finds it touching yet funny. Is the lord protagonist still so hot-headed? I’m not actually that defenseless though…..

OceanofPDF.com

Extra 3

Chu Yin licked the blood spilling in the corner of his mouth. He didn't pay mind into as he glanced at Song Xiao Hu. He smiled and said: "I had so much fun today~ Xiao Hu~ I can't wait for our next meeting~"

Song Xiao Hu clenched his fist in a fearless epic pose and replied: "I could say the same."

Chu Yin waved his hand and that bald eagle sticking close to Da Bai instantly turned its head around and went over unwillingly while looking at Da Bai like they were about to separate forever. Chu Yin got impatient in waiting so he kicked that bald eagle and it fell down to the ground.

Ling Xia saw the faint worry in Da Bai's eyes. He can't help but step forward and say: "Elder Chu Yin, wait for a moment."

Chu Yin's eyes turned to him and replied with a smile: "Demon King's lady~ What seems to be the problem?"

Ling Xia was dumbstrucked, his face immediately turn red.

What's with that bullshit title?

He contained his anger and only pointed at the bald eagle: "Elder Chu, even though this feel a bit sudden, but I'm hoping to ask for your bird."

Chu Yin was slightly taken aback, but he had countless bald eagles in his

B

ai Shou Yuan (Hundred Beasts Park) so the importance of this bald eagle is as cheap as paper in his eyes. Naturally, he didn't mind and only teasingly replied: "It is the lady's demand~ this subordinate do not dare not to comply~"

Chu Yin spoke with devotion and proper courtesy, then his body blinked in a second and disappeared from where he was originally standing.

To think his request would go without a hitch. Ling Xia thought it was unbelievable, he didn’t know how to react and merely stared dumb.

That bald eagle knew that it had gained its freedom. It flap it wings in excitement and ran over, pouncing on Da Bai and affectionately rub against it. Da Bai flapped its wings in exasparation and tried to push it aside. But in the end, Da Bai stopped struggling and showed restraint as the other eagle closely rub against its neck.

Ling Xia decided to give this bald eagle a name ‘Xiao Bai'(small white) ——even though its body is a bit bigger than Da Bai.

He and Song Xiao Hu walked side by side while chatting, passing the time in a light pleasant mood. Song Xiao Hu also taught Ling Xia a few ways of cultivating. Even though its not as detailed and precise as Yu Zhi Jue, but his explanations was pure and simple so Ling Xia also learned a lot.

Ah Li was lying on Ling Xia’s shoulder and lazily taking a nap while Da Bai and Xiao Bai have fallen far behind. It looks like the two of them are having fun amongst themselves, so Ling Xia took consideration and didn’t turn back to disturb them.

Soon, they started a campfire. Song Xiao Hu skillfully caught a fish and killed it in a familliar manner, then places it by the fire to cook them up. Ling Xia helped in turning the fishes and seasoning it.

Ling Xia can’t help but feel a bit sorry for Song Xiao Hu as he watch him concentrating on roasting the fish. Even though Ah Li is very smart, it cannot talk. And despite the protagonist having plenty of friends, he was alone in his travels most of the time…Is he still not looking for a gentle and understanding partner?

“Smells good….Not going to invite me to eat?” A familliar deep and magnetic voice rang out from behind.

Ling Xia couldn’t hold back his smile as he turned around: “Ah Jue?”

Song Xiao Hu’s dimples appeared when he stood up and replied: “Ah Jue, its great for you to come.” Ever since Ling Xia left in the past, he haven’t caught a glimpse of Yu Zhi Jue for three whole years, so he was really pleasantly surprise at this moment.

Yu Zhi Jue slowly walked towards them and sat between the two. He then took the roasted fish in Ling Xia’s hand and took a bite: “It tastes delicious.”

Ling Xia’s heart felt happy, his eyes turned even more tender. These past difficult years, the three of them didn’t hang out like they used to in their childhood….Things have changed, and those boys had already grown so big, becoming dazzling and outstanding.

Ling Xia pinched a strip and feed it to Ah Li. He then took more and places it in a leaf to give to Da Bai and Xiao Bai.

Seeing Ling Xia busy himself in running around, Yu Zhi Jue’s heart turned more bitter.

While munching on the tasty food, Song Xiao Hu smiled and said: “Ah Jue, we haven’t had a match for so long. When will we have a bout?”

Black lines appeared on Ling Xia’s face. Didn’t the protagonist’s fight with Chu Yin ended just a while ago? But before he could even speak, Yu Zhi Jue already put down the half eaten fish and wiped the corner of his mouth with grace. He asked nonchalantly: “How about now?”

“That’s great!” Song Xiao Hu wiped his mouth slovenly then he looked at Yu Zhi Jue, “However, I have one condition. If I win, you must give me the Mu Xiao.

Ling Xia was stunned, he suddenly remembered that damn thing’s effect on Yu Zhi Jue. The memories of that time in the labyrinth made his heart palpitate by just thinking about it. Could it be that Yu Zhi Jue still possesses it?

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes narrowed, he replied with a cold tone: "Is that your true objective in coming here?"

Song Xiao Hu seriously explained: "Ah Jue, that thing is very dangerous. I understand that it has something to do with bringing big brother Ling back here. But if that thing went out of control, the consequences will be very grave! I must destroy it!"

Listening to them made Ling Xia very confused, the possibility of my transmigration had something to do with that thing? Hearing the serious words of Song Xiao Hu, he immediately became nervous. After all, he had seen its evil before. He pulled Yu Zhi Jue's sleeve and softly whispered: "Ah Jue, win or lose, can you still give that thing to Xiao Hu?"

Yu Zhi Jue replied indifferently : "That thing have no use for me anymore…but only if Ling would agree with me with one thing."

Yu Zhi Jue had already ordered Shui Yue to seal the Mu Xiao, but that magic device still calls out to his mind from time to time, enticing him to lift the spell. Even if it offered limitless power, but if it will bring Ling Xia danger, Yu Zhi Jue doesn't care what happens to it so he had thought about destroying it before.

Being sweet-talked in front of Song Xiao Hu, Ling Xia cheeks inadvertently heats up. He awkwardly asked: "What?"

The corner of Yu Zhi Jue's mouth hooked into a grin and he teasingly said: "I'll let you know later."

Ling Xia stared blankly for a moment, then his face immediately flushes. I'm sure Yu Zhi Jue is referring to that stuff, this bastard! But this is fine, rather than Yu Zhi Jue becoming the Yu Zhi Jue in the novel who is so fired up in destroying the world! I will definitely burn that pile of erotic illustration books and paintings in his study, I swear!

Song Xiao Hu pulled out in his storage pouch the "Ninth Heaven's Drop Magic Sword" Ling Xia crafted for him in the past and smiled: "Big brother

Ling, it will be my win. Ah Jue, why don’t we use the weapons big brother Ling made for us to settle this fight?

Ling Xia was startled, he said in panic: “Wait a minute.”

Song Xiao Hu draws the double edge blade with beautiful flower patterns and said with a smile: “Don’t worry big brother Ling, I got this.”

Yu Zhi Jue shot him a cold glance, then he slowly draws out his sword as well. It was faintly trembling as he coats it with a layer of pure water element energy that gives off a blue gleam.

Even though it was not a battle to the death between the protagonist and the villain, but the intensity of the battle continues to rise, the thunder and lightning even changes the color of the sky. Ling Xia couldn’t even keep his eyes open due to the blowing gale, so he took Ah Li as well as Da Bai and Xiao Bai far from the reach of the fight and watches there.

Unlike from the match between Chu Yin and Song Xiao Hu, the sound that can be heard from time to time are exploding thunder and splitting ice, as well as Song Xiao Hu’s bellowing voice as their swords clashes against each other. Even though Ling Xia knows that this won’t end up like the one in the novel where their life is at stake, but he still can’t stop himself from worrying.

Their fight lasted until the night fall, and then they slowly walks out of a mountain of ruins. Ling Xia hastily ran towards them to check every inch of their body. Once he’s certain that they didn’t sustain any injuries, he breathed in relief.

Song Xiao Hu dejectedly looked at his sword broken in half by Yu Zhi Jue. He yelled facing Yu Zhi Jue’s back: “Ah Jue, you’re too much! Just to win, you’d even break my magic sword big brother Ling worked so hard to fixed!”

Yu Zhi Jue slowly sheated his sword and impatiently replied: “Why didn’t you take away your sword then?”

Ling Xia inevitably gave Yu Zhi Jue a reproaching glare, but deep inside, he was laughing for a bit. It seems like the love and hate relationship between these two still haven't changed?

He hurriedly stepped forward and carefully inspected the broken sword. He contemplated and said: "Don't worry Xiao Hu, this could still be joined together. Leave it to me."

The upset look on Song Xiao Hu's face went away as he glared at Yu Zhi Jue: "Even though you are better in sword fight, but if its an actual battle, the current you will not be a match to me anymore, Ah Jue——The level of your spiritual strength and elemental energy is a lot less than before, what happened?"

Ling Xia was shocked, he hurriedly turned towards Yu Zhi Jue and anxiously asked: "Ah Jue, did you get hurt before?"

Yu Zhi Jue was hard-pressed by his stare, it took him a while to reply: "I didn't, don't listen to Xiao Hu's nonsense."

Ling Xia understands that he didn't want to talk about it now so he took note of it in his heart. He intends to question him about it again when they went back.

Due to the repairs needed for his magic sword, Song Xiao Hu will have to stay over for a few days. Ling Xia was actually happy about it, he and Song Xiao Hu was having a merry chat as they leisurely went back. Yu Zhi Jue was walking besides Ling Xia, his face getting darker and darker.

Ling Xia remembered something. He smiled and asked Song Xiao Hu: "That's right, we parted ways so soon the last time so I forgot to ask. Do you still have contact with miss Mu Rong, Xiao Hu? I want to ask if she know of a way to restore the feathers on Da Bai's bald head."

Song Xiao Hu shakes his head, his eyes showing of a suggestive shiny sparkle: "She and I haven't met either for many years already…..Why don't big brother Ling and I visit the Holy Maiden Peak together to find her?"

Yu Zhi Jue's brows crinkled. He pulled Ling Xia's hand, and shot Song Xiao Hu a cold glare: "I have countless more capable men here in Dark Arts Sect. Ling, you could leave this matter to me, why do you have to look for that woman?"

Song Xiao Hu suddenly laughed out loud: "I haven't heard of a dark arts cultivator more capable than the great miss Mu Rong though….."

Ling Xia looked at Yu Zhi Jue hesitantly, is he…..jealous? This great demon king usually have the front of a mysterious boss, but right now, he acts like a child bickering with Song Xiao Hu. Ling Xia can't help but chuckle. In the past, he treated Mu Rong Xue more special than the other girls, but he never considered her as a love interest.

Ling Xia estimated the time it would take to mend the sword, it'll probably take him about three days. It's been so long since he last refined a magic equipment, Ling Xia felt his hand already itching to start working on it at once. The place arranged for Song Xiao Hu to stay at was very far, and the lord protagonist didn't want to stay idle, so he stayed to help Ling Xia in fixing the sword for the time being.

Yu Zhi Jue held his anger back helplessly. He grabbed Ah Li clinging on Ling Xia's body and threw it out of the window, then he kicked Song Xiao Hu out of the door. Da Bai and Xiao Bai already sensed his bad mood earlier on and had long flew away.

Song Xiao Hu jumped back up and asked in confusion: "Ah Jue, what are you getting mad for?"

Yu Zhi Jue narrowed his eyes: "It's time to get intimate with Ling, unless you want to watch?"

After he said that, he pulled open Ling Xia's collar, turned Ling Xia's head upwards, and kisses him deeply. While kissing Ling Xia, he looked at Song Xiao Hu conceitedly.

Ling Xia felt his head spin, his mouth was suddenly occupied firmly. He didn't expect at all that Yu Zhi Jue will pull this act in front of Song Xiao

Hu. He got angry and opened his mouth to reprimand him, but Yu Zhi Jue used that chance to slip his tongue in. The only sounds that came out were his faint moans.

The sound of their lips and tongue overlapping gets louder and louder. Because Ling Xia became disoriented from the kiss and the slowly rising heat in his body, he completely forgot where he was. Ling Xia's hands clings on Yu Zhi Jue's clothes in desperation and unawaringly raises his head to start responding back.

Song Xiao Hu's eyes grew wider and wider. It's as if he crash his way into a dragon's pool and a tiger's den(a very dangerous place). He was really at loss on what to do, his wheat complexion face immediately turned as red as blood. He didn't know where to put his eyes, and as the ambiguous sounds entered his ears, he wasn't sure as well if he should stay or not.

Yu Zhi Jue finally stopped, his eyes is rather calm and collected. He embraced Ling Xia and coldly said: "Song Xiao Hu, do you still plan to continue watching?"

The pitiful lord protagonists had senses knocked into him. His eyes was averting as he replied while stammering: "I-I'll be going then."

He jumped out of the window where Ah Li was thrown and ran away in a mad rush as if something dangerous was running after him.

Ling Xia's breath calmed down and his misty eyes regained its clarity. When he saw the contented handsome face in front of him, he finally realize what he had done just now——Fuck! How can I face the lord protagonist later on!

OceanofPDF.com

Extra 4

Ling Xia's face turned interchanging red and green as he panic. The feeling of bitterness secretly bottled up so much in Yu Zhi Jue's heart, he couldn't take it anymore so he presses Ling Xia against the wall and imprisoned him within his arms. He narrowed his eyes and asked: "Earlier, you said something about hasty goodbye to Song Xiao Hu last time….Ling, when did you meet with him? I'm astonished that you've kept it secret from me."

Even though Yu Zhi Jue's tone was calm and deliberate, it still carried a hint of jealousy in his questioning. Listening to him, Ling Xia don't know whether to get angry or laugh.

This kind of trivial matter counts as secret? How can that even compare to a lot of secrets Yu Zhi Jue is hiding from me?

He raised his head and glared at Yu Zhi Jue: "I didn't held your debts with me against you! That one where you planned on deceiving me? And what's with you breaking Song Xiao Hu's sword? What's more, you even did that in front of Song Xiao Hu…..Song Xia Hu said that Mu Xiao had something to do with my return here, what did he mean by that?"

This time, it was Yu Zhi Jue's turn to be speechless. He was so afraid that he had to resort in putting an act and deceiving Ling Xia. Not only that, he even gave up half of his powers and Ling Xia's memory, a fact that he wished to be buried forever.

The great demon king hastily diverts the attention to swiftly removing Ling Xia's outer robe. He slipped his hands inside Ling Xia's underpants and gently rubbed his sensitive part while he nibbled and suck at Ling Xia's earlobes real passionate.

Ling Xia was caught off-guard when his sensitive member was gripped. His waist went soft and he almost couldn't speak. He was embarrassed and angry at the same time as he pushed Yu Zhi Jue away: "You already did it so many times the other day….Are you trying to avoid the topic?"

"….." Yu Zhi Jue paused, then looks at him with a glimmering moist in his eyes, "No, I just wanted you."

Ling Xia was speechless, isn't that such a poor of an excuse? However, he could no longer think clearly for Yu Zhi Jue's movements started to get more and more excessive, his hands and lips incessantly wandered around Ling Xia's erogenous spots. Ling Xia didn't even notice that all of his clothes had already been taken off by Yu Zhi Jue. His chest completely exposed, revealing his healthy and exquisite light wheat complexion skin.

Yu Zhi Jue's just wanted to divert Ling Xia's attention, but now he is totally aroused by the other person's body. He licked and bit Ling Xia's collarbone as he slowly goes down where his red nipples are and sucked them. His insatiable lips and tongue softly nip at it as his body gets hotter and hotter.

He looked up and stared fascinated at Ling Xia's flushed but restrained look, making his chest constrict.

Ling Xia breathing turned rough and that part being rub gradually hardened and rises up. The tip peeking out of his underpants had a small drop of moist forming on top. He can't help but grieved in defeat. His resistance against this great demon king grew weaker in each passing day.

He held onto Yu Zhi Jue's arms weakly, his face beet red as he tried to utter a few words: "Ah Jue, take me to bed…."

Doing it on the bed is truly more convenient. Yu Zhi Jue gulped and held his breath, then he carried Ling Xia and teleported in front of the the bed.

The neat and tidy bed turned messy soon enough, clothes strewn all over the floor…

Their skin that was touching closely, and the pleasure it generates cannot be explained. Ling Xia unconsciously entangled his fingers in Yu Zhi Jue's wet smooth hair, placing a gentle kiss on his forehead, nose and his lips.

While kissing Yu Zhi Jue, Ling Xia was watching his expression. The other person narrows his eyes immersed in pleasure. His long eyelashes faintly quivering. The tip of his red tongue slipping between his snow white teeth drips with stream of clear and shimmering saliva.

Ling Xia's chest tightened. It was always Yu Zhi Jue is the active one in bed, while he on the other hand was passive every time and is at loss on what actions to take. Still, whenever he takes even a little bit of initiative in bed, his Ah Jue became as happy as a merry child.

He didn't think anymore and just went forward and inserted his tongue inside Yu Zhi Jue's mouth. He sucked all the bodily fluids of the other person he could swallow as if he had a deep thirst to quench. He could hardly resist sliding his hands on Yu Zhi Jue's back down to his waist, lovingly feeling up the cool, strong and silky skin beneath his palm.

Hence, Yu Zhi Jue's body burned even hotter from his amazement.

When the sweet and intoxicating kiss finally ended, Ling Xia gasps for breath. He whispered something with a blush on his face.

He clearly witnessed how the tip of the ears of the handsome great demon king blushed a deeper shade of red and his eyes stares back at him dumbstruck. Therefore, he raises his bowed head and asked a little more loudly: "Ah Jue, let me….do it this time."

"Ok." In Yu Zhi Jue's deep husky voice, there was a trace of excitement he couldn't conceal.

Soon after, Ling Xia laid on top of Yu Zhi Jue's body.

Ling Xia was half-sitting on Yu Zhi Jue's body, his pair of strength-less and tense hands touches Yu Zhi Jue's broad and solid chest. Only then did

he find the different feeling it gave from its impression, his eyes practically stared dumb.

Yu Zhi Jue's black glossy hair lie scattered on the bed, his light youthful skin seemed fairer against the white sheets. His facial features exquisite, the lines of his muscles perfect, and the breath he blows can seduce anyone.

Those sets of clear and beautiful black eyes now watches him without blinking……Ling Xia was motionless for a moment, then he realized the other person was relishing in watching Ling Xia drooling all over him, making him furiously blush.

He quickly made a move, bowing down to slowly kiss Yu Zhi Jue's collarbone. His chest felt a bit stifled when he recalled how Yu Zhi Jue did it before. Sensing Yu Zhi Jue's body faintly trembling, he knows that he hit his sensitive spot and puts more effort there.

Yu Zhi Jue caresses Ling Xia's back as if to encourage him. The other person's lips and hands made him feel an inexplicable pleasure. His body that was already burning hot seemed like it even heated up into a higher degree. But he kept his control in check so he could savor this rare enthusiasm of Ling Xia.

Ling Xia gradually understands why Yu Zhi Jue likes kissing and fondling his body all the time, since he is the same now as well. He could hardly stop kissing the other man's body intimately. He felt immense delight because of the other person's reactions on every move he makes. That familiar mixture of Yu Zhi Jue's aroma and salty sweat made him intoxicated.

His lips slowly wanders down Yu Zhi Jue's lower abdomen, taking in the tip of the other person's erection in his mouth. Just the hardened tip was enough to stuff his mouth.

Ling Xia breaths in deeply, closed his eyes, and braved himself to take it in deeper into his mouth, his cheeks was bulging from the sheer size. Though difficult, he took care not to let his teeth scrape it as he moves

about. The mature flavor of his man's sex filling his mouth made him a bit lightheaded.

"Ling….."Yu Zhi Jue gasps, then Ling Xia felt that his throat was burning when hot bitter fluid pours down his throat.

Yu Zhi Jue pulled out fast with a slight embarrassed look, hot fluid continued to spray on Ling Xia's face. The two of them looked at each other flabbergasted.

Ling Xia was finally able to breath, his face turned steaming red. He complained: "Why so fast?"

It goes without saying that he had silent criticism in his heart, but Ling Xia didn't mean to say it out loud. Black lines immediately appeared in Yu Zhi Jue's face. He wasn't expecting Ling Xia would unexpectedly get upset, the thing he was most afraid of…..But seeing his scent smeared all over Ling Xia's upper lip up to the side of his lips, he felt sorry at the same time, there was a strange sense of satisfaction he couldn't fathom.

Without waiting for Ling Xia to wipe the cum off his face, Yu Zhi Jue pushed him down. The burning fire of passion in Yu Zhi Jue's eyes was once again reignited and invaded Ling Xia's line of sight, making him involuntarily shudder.

Yu Zhi Jue's fingers, lips, and tongue soon caresses Ling Xia's body, creating a slightly painful but faintly prickling sensation. Ling Xia's breath hitched and his neck bent forward, giving him a defenseless and bewildered appearance.

Yu Zhi Jue's finger flashes with light, the chain pendant in Ling Xia's neck started to grow longer until it reaches his arms and started coiling around his arms. By the time Ling Xia reacted, his hands were already tied up tightly together with the smooth, cold, and delicate chains. His hands was then pinned on top of his head and tied into the bed canopy.

"What are you doing?" Ling Xia widened his eyes in astonishment while looking back at Yu Zhi Jue.

His eyes still slightly tearful, his voice slightly trembling, and his tied up body was involuntarily shuddering, making him appear fragile and captivating.

Yu Zhi Jue's eyes turned dark, his dick quickly swell and rise up again.

He closed his hands on the vigorous part of Ling Xia, slowly rubbing it up and down. He then reasoned out: "Even though Ling Xia really wanted to be on top, but I think it's better to do that next time….This time, want to do it like this?"

The illustrations he saw in Yu Zhi Jue's books is much more extreme. Though does Ling Xia hate those sort of things? On the contrary, what is happening now heightens his arousal.

"Why would I like it?!" Ling Xia blushes up to the tip of his ears, "Ah Jue, let go of me now! Wu….."

His mouth was occupied by Yu Zhi Jue's fervent kisses while the other person's hands started moving faster.

For a while, soft and frail moans reverberated. Ling Xia was gasping weakly, his body limpid like he was about to collapse. The next second, his cum spurted all over Yu Zhi Jue's palm.

Yu Zhi Jue enthralled at Ling Xia's dazed expression as he came. He reaches towards the opening in Ling Xia's ass and inserted a finger then prod around inside. His was loosening him up gently yet impatient.

Ling Xia's eyes gradually clears up, he squirmed his feeble hands to get free. Yet despite the loud clanking of the metal chain, he couldn't take it off. He kicked Yu Zhi Jue's leg in frustration but the other person seized that chance to press him down and position himself between Ling Xia's legs. He inserted another finger and thrusts it at the same time, creating a faint squelching sound as it enters and exit.

The pleasurable sensations was ignited once more and slowly courses through his spine. Ling Xia's bare chest undulated nervously and the red

cherries on top swells again. His mouth couldn't contain most of his sweet and trembling moans, the thing between his legs hardened and rise up once again.

Yu Zhi Jue stopped his hand. He took a deep breath to keep his control in check, then continued to loosen him up. As soon as he feels that Ling Xia is soft and slippery inside, he impatiently aimed his erection at the entrance, and ruthlessly shove it inside in one move.

"Ahh!….." Ling Xia's breath flinched and his throat shrieks in a high pitched voice. His mind went blank as the other person opened him up. The feeling it generated was painful, and at the same time, frighteningly pleasurable as he stretch him further.

The light in Yu Zhi Jue's eyes flickered when he felt the tight and wringing feeling around him. He raised one of Ling Xia's leg and propped it in his shoulder. While kneeling in between, Yu Zhi Jue rammed with more force.

Ling Xia's whole body gone limp, he could barely withstand the endless violent thrill. The corner of his eyes gradually turned moist, his body get's involuntarily rocked in every thrust. His dried up throat uncontrollably lets out a slightly pleading moans: "Ah Jue, slower….."

Yu Zhi Jue's throat squeezed when he heard Ling Xia's soft moans pleading at him which Yu Zhi Jue's loves the most. It makes him feel, that this person is truly his……His thrusts became even more violent, he leaned closer to Ling Xia's ears and whispered: "Ling, feeling good?"

The pupil in Ling Xia's eyes contracted, his feeble hands tied above his head is swaying, and chaotic emotions painted his expression. He weakly nodded his head, constantly holding his trembling moans from leaking out of his throat: "Nn…..Ah Jue…..ah……"

In this person's eyes, there is only me……the glow in Yu Zhi Jue's eyes was frightening. He removed the bindings on Ling Xia's hands and wrapped his arms around his back. He pulled Ling Xia up and have him sit on his legs.

The tip of his stiff member keeps rubbing at Ling Xia's prostate, once in a while he would apply more force in his thrust. He kept whispering: "Ling, don't you ever set your eyes on someone else again, only look at me…."

Due to the thrusts reaching deeper in this position, Ling Xia cried out 'Ahh', his rationality completely shattered. The words Yu Zhi Jue keeps repeating doesn't register in his ears at all but he still nodded his head helplessly.

His supported his weakened body by hanging on tightly on Yu Zhi Jue's neck, he was drag along the undulating pace of the other person. The excessively violent pleasure flows down to the sole of his curled feet, his heart skipping in the same beat as Yu Zhi Jue's fast movements.

Knowing that Ling Xia was unconsciously following his tempo, the corner of Yu Zhi Jue's lips perked up in content. He slowed his movements slightly and kisses Ling Xia's lips, a kiss that is gentle yet madly in love.

Ling Xia catches his stolen breath when their lips parted, his weak disjointed moans landed on Yu Zhi Jue's forehead. The persisting ceaseless stimulation made him feel like he is high on the clouds. Electricity courses through his body turning it limp and tingling.

Due to their movements and Yu Zhi Jue's incessant rubbing of Ling Xia's prostate with the tip of his erection, Ling Xia was already approaching his climax. He can't resist wanting to touch himself with his trembling hands.

Yu Zhi Jue swiftly catches his hands and intertwined it with his own. He consoled him with a whisper: "Don't be anxious…..we're together."

When he said that, Yu Zhi Jue increases his speed. He pulled out and enter with great force, the tip of his member scraping that one spot.

Ling Xia was urgently gasping for breath, tears drips down on his face without him noticing. His abdomen heats up and his erection is one step to reach its peak only to fall short. The entrance in his backside was exceedingly stretched open, yet the contrasting feeling of pain and pleasure

makes him move and twist his waist together with Yu Zhi Jue, hurried breaths puffs out of his mouth.

He couldn't restrain himself from pleading: "Ah Jue, I want to cum….."

"Almost." Yu Zhi Jue's eyes increasingly darkened. He supported Ling Xia's waist with his arms and presses him firmly against his thighs, the rhythm of his thrusts suddenly shortened. The heights of ecstasy climb higher and higher until Ling Xia finally reaches his climax. Ling Xia couldn't hold back moaning loudly, his back suddenly pulled into a taut posture and then he slumped weakly on Yu Zhi Jue's shoulder.

The fluid shot in Yu Zhi Jue's abdomen was scalding, Ling Xia's entrance squeezes him tightly. He gritted his teeth as he speeds up his movements and also came in a sudden moment.

Ling Xia's body that was still under the spell of the lingering pleasure can't help but shudder, his waist remained weak and feeble. Yu Zhi Jue's cum flowing inside him actually made him unable to show his face in disgrace.

Yu Zhi Jue didn't pull out and only embrace Ling Xia to savor the after taste, both of their body's are dripping with sweat.

For a long while, Yu Zhi Jue kisses the sweat and tears in Ling Xia's face. He regretfully massages the red marks on Ling Xia's wrist. Even though the chains he created was sleek, but it still left bruises when Ling Xia was struggling.

Remembering how he just got fucked around with by force, Ling Xia blushed in anger and pushed Yu Zhi Jue away. When that thing suddenly slipped out of his body, the sticky fluid it squirted out and came flowing out, making him even more ashamed and embarrassed.

His waist and his legs are still unbearably limp and painful. This time went for a lot longer, it also seemed to have used up more of his physical energy.

Yu Zhi Jue hurriedly took Ling Xia back to his arms and whispered appeasing words. It was the first time Ling Xia took the initiative on his own accord and yet he interrupted him. Just remembering it made Yu Zhi Jue regretful.

Ling Xia looked at the marks on his wrist in embarrassment and said: “Ah Jue, I really don’t like these……”

“I won’t do it in the future…..” Yu Zhi Jue kisses him in the lips and said, “As long as you won’t get angry, how about you tie me up next time?”

Ling Xia originally thought about cursing out “I can’t do something so perverted!”, but imagining the appearance of the Great Demon King tied up with a red rope beneath him, Ling Xia nodded his head: “Okay.”

To Ling Xia’s answer, the Great Demon King was dumbfounded.

OceanofPDF.com

Extra 5

Ling Xia gave a smile that is not really a smile at Yu Zhi Jue who had remorseful look in his eyes. This guy's thing, cannot be underestimated at all in the bed. Pei! I really want to curse myself too for giving in to it.

He raised his hand and touched the chain pendant in his neck then poked Yu Zhi Jue's shoulder with his fore finger: "This thing, what is it really? Why did it do that?"

"Did what?" Yu Zhi Jue fiddled with the gem hanging on front of the pendant with his long slender fingers and said: "It really look good on you Ling."

When he saw Ling Xia brewing an unpleasant mood, he reaches his hands out and pulled Ling Xia to his embrace. He massages Ling Xia's sore and limp waist and gave a simple explanation: "This ornament is capable of protecting you."

This item is actually crafted with a forbidden dark art, and on top of that, Yu Zhi Jue imbued it with his own blood mark. So no matter what kind of danger Ling Xia runs into, Yu Zhi Jue can sense it and the pendant would activate its protective spell in time as well.

Yu Zhi Jue lowered his head and kissed the top of Ling Xia's head. He softly whispered with his deep and magnetic voice: "Ling still haven't told me, when did you last meet with Xiao Hu……"

"……" Ling Xia was speechless. When it was him asking, he didn't get any answers. Yet Yu Zhi Jue wouldn't let this simple matter go. He still jealous even though its Xiao Hu, just how shallow his bottom-line is?

He replied with an exasperated tone: "I ran into them when I left the last time. It's thanks to meeting Xiao Hu and Ah Li, I recovered my

memories…..”

After a moment of silence, Ling Xia shot a worried glance at Yu Zhi Jue. All of a sudden, he jumped in fright. The Great Demon King is now wearing a distorted and brokenhearted expression like a husband who had accidentally witness an extra-marital affair.

“I tried so hard at that time, but Ling didn’t remember anything at all.” Yu Zhi Jue’s voice slipped out in between his gritted teeth, “Why did that guy, Song Xiao Hu, made you remember when you met him?”

“…..How would I know?” Black lines appeared in Ling Xia’s face. He can’t say for sure but maybe it’s because of the protagonist’s golden halo?

He was deeply troubled seeing that hurt and disappointed look on the Great Demon King’s face. He comfortingly said: “It’s not that important! And I was already recalling my memories little by little before that. It just happened that I met Xiao Hu when I suddenly remembered it all, it’s just a coincidence, that’s all…..”

Yu Zhi Jue’s face remained melancholic, but in his heart, he already decided to give that damn thing to Song Xiao Hu so he can quickly kick him out!

With that in mind, he turned Ling Xia facing him and pushed him down: “It’s still early right now, let’s do it one more time?”

Ling Xia’s waist is still sore so he hurriedly tried pushing him off with all his strength and said in exhaustion: “Aren’t you tired yet? It’ll be bright outside soon…..”

“Then let’s do it in my dimension.” Yu Zhi Jue kisses him on the lips and spoke in a slightly husky voice: “I won’t tire Ling out….”

Yu Zhi Jue’s actions were indeed a lot gentle. He did it in the most comfortable position for Ling Xia. He didn’t move too rough and only thrusts and stirred inside tenderly and slowly, as if he could do it till the end of time if he wanted to.

Ling Xia opened his hazy eyes and discovered Yu Zhi Jue staring straight at him. In Yu Zhi Jue's eyes was single-minded devotion and tenderness, and in his clear and bright pupils is a small and clear reflection of him, no one else but him.

His heart pounded erratically, Ling Xia couldn't resist coiling his legs around Yu Zhi Jue's waist and match his movements. He could barely endure as he clutches on the bed sheets tightly.

The pleasure creeps up from his tailbone up to his spine bit by bit until it reaches his head and bursts. Yu Zhi Jue turned Ling Xia over and presses him down with his body. He embraces him and suddenly speeds up his movements.

Ling Xia gasps for air as he leaned on Yu Zhi Jue's sweating chest. The sudden intense pleasure made his body jerk as if he was trembling. He couldn't stop himself from moaning loudly and clasped Yu Zhi Jue's arm as he climaxed.

"You are mine." Yu Zhi Jue whispered with unsteady breathing. He grasped Ling Xia's butt and presses him closer to himself, supporting the two of them with his straightened back.

Ling Xia felt that he had quickly turn soft as boiled noodles, his legs kept shaking uncontrollably. While Yu Zhi Jue was washing him in his arms, he was entranced in staring vacantly at the Great Demon King's face.

Sigh, this shortcoming of Yu Zhi Jue's fondness of flying into jealousy indiscriminately….

Bonbon TN: Original phrase was 'eating vinegar indiscriminately' but I notice not all of you understand that term hehe~

Good thing that the time inside the space runs much slower. Ling Xia felt that he taken a very long sleep, though his strength almost fully recovered when he wakes up. His pitiful appearance doesn't seemed like it had gone through an excessive indulgent in debauchery. But his exposed neck was

filled with densely packed love bites, trailing down to his neckline that was concealed in his clothes.

When Ling Xia was about to give him a reproaching look, the Great Demon King leisurely turned around to reveal his back. On the toned muscles of his back, in contrast of his fair jade like skin, are distinct bloody scratches piled on top of each other. Ling Xia's face immediately burned up, he hurriedly pulled up Yu Zhi Jue's clothes. He couldn't remember at all when he made those scratches…..

The sealed Mu Xiao is located at the abyss of the Dark Arts Sect. It is confined behind layer upon layer of spell arrays and surrounded with a miasma that wards off cultivators alike in approaching it.

Yu Zhi Jue didn't want to take Ling Xia along with him, but Ling Xia persists on going as well for fear that Yu Zhi Jue may be influenced by the voice of that object once he takes it out and then break into a fight and so on with Song Xiao Hu again. Yu Zhi Jue considered it for a moment then he agreed. Right now, he don't even want to part with Ling Xia even for a single second.

Yu Zhi Jue embraces Ling Xia's waist as they ride the Two Headed Flying Serpent's back. Meanwhile, Song Xiao Hu was riding Ah Li and following closely besides them. Even though the scene yesterday was somewhat embarrassing, but thanks to Song Xiao Hu's rather open-minded optimism, it was evident that he already overlooked it.

Ah Li shot a provocative glance at the Two Headed Flying Serpent, but the Two Headed Flying Serpent tilted its eyes to the side and merely returned a quick glimpse with its lazy slit eyes, its wings flapping unhurriedly.

Ling Xia found it funny witnessing a wave surge up between these two magic beasts. The difference in temperament with these magic beasts are, Ah Li closely resembled that of a haughty child, Da Bai is more or less a moody teenager, and this Two Headed Flying Serpent, is without a doubt, imposing an air of an adult.

Ling Xia could feel that the Two Headed Flying Serpent is not at all as vicious and brutal as it appears to be in the surface. Most of the time, it would always be in a state of laziness as if it was hibernating.

He suddenly remembered that time the Two Headed Flying Serpent formed a partnership with Yu Zhi Jue to deceive him. He snorted loudly and jabbed Yu Zhi Jue whose behind him with his elbow. He quietly said: “You guys’ acting sure is impressive.”

Yu Zhi Jue pretended that he didn’t hear anything. He kept his composure and calmly embraces Ling Xia’s waist.

He didn’t know how long had they been flying, but a thick red-purple fog emerges ahead of them. Yu Zhi Jue casts a protective circle on Ling Xia but him and Song Xiao Hu doesn’t need to do so as their body both have a sufficient resistance. Ah Li and the Two Headed Flying Serpent continues to overtake each other onward without a slightest bit of fear.

Nothing can be seen through the thick purplish mist, moreover, it was like they’ve been flying since forever yet not getting nearer to their destination, making Ling Xia’s heart feel heavy. Yu Zhi Jue noticed his distress so he held Ling Xia tighter into his embrace. Ling Xia blushes, nevertheless, his restless heart also calmed down.

At last, they passes through the thick fog. A dense forest shrouded in mist appeared before their eyes. Maybe because the miasma is blocking the sun’s rays, but the place’s vegetation seemed to be washed out, without any of their bright and beautiful pigments.

The Two Headed Flying Serpent clearly knows its way around here. It soon leads everyone pass through a ravine, then landed in front of a gigantic closed metal door.

Ling Xia can’t help but start to let his imagination run wild. In the original version of the novel, this must be the place where Yu Zhi Jue unleashed the spell that destroyed the world. This Mu Xiao, it’s better to destroy it as early as possible…..

The were numerous cultivators guarding the entrance, all of them standing still like a puppet. They bowed at Yu Zhi Jue as their salutation and then unlocked the mechanism of the door. Yu Zhi Jue pulled Ling Xia's hand and went in first while the Two Headed Flying Serpent and Ah Li was left outside.

The place they went into looked very similar to an underground palace. The three of them went straight into a passage that leads down and continued climbing the stairs downwards for a long time. Not sure how long had passed but they finally reached the exit and arrived at a hall. There, Yu Zhi Jue finally halted.

He poured a vast amount of his power to a mechanism in a wall, and very soon, the gear of the mechanism started to move. A magic device slowly rises up from the ground, a faint blue flame shrouding it. That magic device on the center is different from what Ling Xia remembered seeing before. It is now a beautiful crystal ball, emitting a bright silver light.

Although it looks very beautiful, Ling Xia could still feel that it can evoke evil feeling into someone so much so that he can't help but shiver. He quietly asked: "How to take it out?"

Yu Zhi Jue pointed at that bright shroud and said: "First we will undo the protective spell, then we will lift the seal. There's nothing for you to worry Ling."

Three years ago, Shui Yue took the Mu Xiao, Darkened Stallion, and the Crest of the Dragon and perfectly fused them together. The three magical items counters each other so their effectiveness was reduced. Even though Yu Zhi Jue lost half of his strength in the past, he is still capable of taking the magic device out by himself.

Song Xiao Hu's body is a light type, the foreboding evil influence barely affects him. When he heard what Yu Zhi Jue said, he pulled his arm back: "Ah Jue, I'll do it——If you get affected by it again, me and big brother Ling will be in danger."

The protagonists isn’t even aware that his words had hurt the ego of the great demon king. Yu Zhi Jue’s face turned gloomy and he ferociously glared at him. He quickly undo the protective spell and walked towards the magic device.

Ling Xia felt restless but the tension in his heart dissipated when the protagonists talked to him with simple yet straightforward words. He cannot even help himself from smiling.

The spirit of the thousand years old magic device felt the incoming danger with its keen senses, hence, it tried to call out to Yu Zhi Jue in his mind with that same familiar voice: “Destroy us, and you will never be able to conquer the entire world! And then you will never be a match to Song Xiao Hu! Will you still destroy us then?”

Yu Zhi Jue smiled in disdain. He turned his head around and gaze at Ling Xia, while the other person’s nervous gaze focused on him. When their eyes met, Ling Xia’s brows and eyes turned soft all at once, his expression very gentle.

Isn’t the answer very clear? If I could rule over the world but not have this man, would there be any joy in it?

What he always seeks, what he always had in his sight, from the beginning till the end, had always been only this man!

Song Xiao Hu saw a purple haze faintly flickered in Yu Zhi Jue’s eyes, he anxiously called out: “Ah Jue!”

Yu Zhi Jue glanced at him from the corner of his eyes: “Xiao Hu, let’s see who can take it out first?.”

As he said that, the silhouette of his body flashes. And in an instant, his hands are already about to reach out for the magic device’s external barrier. Song Xiao Hu exclaimed and hastily ran over while saying: “You are too sly as always Ah Jue!”

Ling Xia unconsciously chuckled. Sigh, now I understand a little why those girls(aka fujoshis) like to ship the protagonist and the villain as a couple of pairing.

The two of them evenly exudes their power. One is the power of darkness(yin), the other is the power of light(yang), and yet they fuses together flawlessly, like those times in their childhood where they fought together side by side. The blue flame condenses together with the bright light, and after a long while, the transparent crystal ball created several miniscule shattering sounds. From levitating in the air, it fell into the ground after losing its luster.

Song Xiao Hu hurriedly grabbed it and proudly declared with dimples appearing in his cheeks: “Big brother Ling, Ah Jue, it’s my win!”

Yu Zhi Jue didn’t even give him a passing glance. He slowly walked down and held Ling Xia’s hands tightly. A shallow smile he couldn’t contain appeared in the corner of his lips: “Ling, let’s go home.”

“Okay.” Ling Xia smiled back at him.

The place where he is together with Yu Zhi Jue, is the place he calls home.

OceanofPDF.com

Disclaimer

There is no guarantee the translation is 100% correct.

Archyr Kentaurosa wishes to emphasize that this translation is for review purposes only. We do not claim this intellectual property or any rights whatsoever.

Under no circumstances would you be allowed to take this work for commercial activities or for personal gain. Archyr Kentaurosa does not and will not condone any activities of such, including but not limited to rent, sell, print, auction.

OceanofPDF.com